

SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 04

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Volume 10: *Emergence in the Universe*

Chapter 1 – Dealing with the treasures

The entire excavation of the world within a world on Cang Lan star had left the entire Black Dragon Mountain starfield in a state of unrest.

“Have you heard, recently there was a star traveller level idiot on Rockna star that took out a heavenly priced treasure to sell. And later it was taken away by a universe level warrior, however…that universe level warrior not only lost his life later because of this treasure, but his entire family too was razed to the ground!”

“A universe level warrior lost his life? Family razed to the ground? What treasure was it?”

“I heard that a world within a world was discovered on Cang Lan star recently, this heavenly priced item was one from within. The treasure from the world within a world…those were items that attracted even the four large organizations and two sacred lands to fight for them. Taking anyone of them out would be worth a few tens of thousands of life planets!

“A few tens of thousands of life planets? My god, just how highly priced are they?”

“Anyway right now the entire Black Dragon Mountain star field, many large and small families, organizations, are all closely watching…the moment anyone tries to sell these items, they’ll rush into it.”

“These sorts of heavenly treasures are really scorching to the hand.”

“Still, countless people want them!”

……

Madness.

The many families and organizations within the Black Dragon Mountain star field had gone mad, one had to know that the largest power within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, the 16 large families, was first created by 16 sector lords. This means… that in the Black Dragon Mountain starfield, the sector lord’s power was the highest, the other large and small organizations, having a domain lord warrior was considered not bad already.

And the treasures from the world within a world, any one of them, had terrifying enticing powers towards any domain lords.

So…

Occasionally 1 or 2 treasures leaking out, drawing the attention of the various powers, that wasn’t strange at all.

“Those star levels, they don’t have any good routes to sell at all, the moment they try and take the treasures out they’d be easily discovered. Watch closely for me, watch carefully at every important planet within the Black Dragon Mountain starfield! The

moment anyone tries to sell these heavenly items, immediately report to me.”

“Yes, president.”

These treasures were scorching, without the power or route to sell them, they would bring only tragedy to oneself! And these treasures were so valuable…that even universe level warriors who wanted them, could still easily lose their lives in the process.

……

Within the dark universe, Luo Feng’s little team sat on the universe ship and continued on their journey, it was already the 12th day of the flight, they still required about 9 days more to reach earth.

As for the news of star level explorers from the Black Dragon Mountain star field already trying to sell the heavenly items, they didn’t know yet.

Within the resting room of the universe ship.

The resting room was sorted out like a study, with a desk and chair, there was even a very comfortable bed beside.

“It’s time to deal with these treasures, they are really dangerous to have.” Luo Feng sat at the chair, opening the laptop on the table, this was a product of earth, there was no way around it, Luo Feng

was used to earth's lousier models, "The treasures I exchanged for, along with what the cloud contact vine stole, there's a total of 48 of them."

48 treasures!

There were some cheaper than the air cutter knife, while others more expensive than it. An air cutter knife alone was enough to make the domain lord Mingyu extremely excited...even to the point where a sector lord bought it immediately.

These 48 treasures added together, could probably match up to the wealth of a sector lord altogether.

As for the dead Sector lord Kabu, that was the wealth level of a poorer undying. The entire 312 items, Luo Feng only acquired 49 (1 given to Mingyu), one could see how big an earning Luo Feng had acquired!

"Connect to the virtual universe network." Luo Feng closed his eyes, his consciousness connecting straight to the network.

.....

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay.

When Luo Feng appeared before his own house's door, there was Luo Hua walking about casually, his eyes gleamed, shouting, Big brother!"

“Luo Hua, what’s the matter?” Luo Feng smiled as he looked at his little brother.

“I wanted to look for you earlier, however I didn’t get the chance to meet you.” Luo Hua pulled him, “Big brother, sit here, I have important matters to tell you.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng sat time, looking curiously at his brother.

“It’s like that.” Luo Hua explained, “The earth’s 5 governments have discussed and they really want to enter the universe, making contact with some of the people within the universe.”

“Can’t they enter the virtual universe?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, “In the virtual universe, they can communicate with other people.”

“No…they want to make contact in reality.” Luo Hua said.

“Reality?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows even more.

Luo Hua saw the situation and said helplessly, “Big brother, don’t you know how the countries on earth are? They were initially satisfied with being able to enter the virtual universe, however as time passed, their ambitions got bigger. This ambition cannot be controlled, if you let them enter the real universe now, they might request for more after!”

Man's ambition, could never be quelled. Once he had something good, he would naturally want something better.

"No problem, allow them." Luo Feng said seriously.

"Allow them?" Luo Hua was so shocked he stared wide eyed.

"Right." Luo Feng nodded, "Even though earth is very safe, we cannot let the humans of earth just stay on there forever. It's time to let them make contact with the universe...let them go through some hardship and adversities, only then will they realize how the humans of earth are going to survive within the universe."

Luo Hua was suspicious, "But brother, which planet can they go to? Will those planet management people agree to a large scale immigration?"

"If those people don't agree, I'll just have to buy the planet!" Luo Feng smiled, "What's more, I have 100 life planets under my name, as a leader, the immigration would definitely be much easier."

"100?" Luo Hua stared wide eyed, "Big brother, you..."

"I'll tell you when I return." Luo Feng smiled and stood up, "As for the humans of earth wanting to move to the universe...I'll discuss with them when I get back. Oh, we'll end it here today, I still have matters to attend to."

"Ok." Luo Hua stood up too.

“Di!”

“Mail?” Luo Hua curiously opened the mail, this was a notification from the bank, they informed him that his account had a transfer of 4 billion universe dollars.

“4 billion universe dollars?” Luo Hua was shocked.

“That’s for you, good luck and work hard.” Luo Feng’s voice could be heard in the distance.

Luo Hua looked up, the distant Luo Feng was already walking out of the 9 stay bay district, looking at his back, Luo Hua felt extremely shocked, “What has my brother been up to these few days, how did he get 4 billion universe dollars to give me so quickly, and these are universe dollars, even more valuable than ganwu dollars!”

At the entrance of the 9 star bay district, Luo Feng waved his hand in the air.

Immediately, a carriage pulled by 2 horses with wings descended, Luo Feng jumped up into the carriage and sat.

“Sir, where to?” The chauffeur asked.

“To the universe galaxy bank.” Luo Feng said.

Immediately, the wings of the horses flapped and the carriage swiftly rose into the air, flying with shocking speed, the carriage however remained steady and comfortable in the breeze.

In the virtual universe, usually distant places were travelled to using coordinates delivery, closer places were travelled to with these carriages, that was because everybody's body structure was comparable to a student level 4 in the virtual universe, hence they were unable to fly and movement was fast, hence relying on these flying horse was much faster.

Of course...

Sitting in these carriages required money!

"So beautiful." Sitting in the carriage, looking down on the enormous Black Dragon Mountain island, it was indeed magnificent.

"What's that." Luo Feng looked shocked at the sky.

Among the clouds, there was a floating city, and as it floated way high up in the skies, if one were standing on the ground below, he wouldn't be able to spot it with the naked eye. Only when sitting and flying in these carriages would one be able to see through the clouds the faintly discernible city.

"Floating city." The chauffeur laughed, "Our Black Dragon

Mountain's floating city. Every island, every continent has a floating city."

"Floating city?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Usually only larger powers or at least universe level warriors had the rights to enter the floating city." The chauffeur laughed and explained to Luo Feng as he controlled the flying horses, "Sir, we've arrived at the universe galaxy bank."

Hu!

The flying horses rushed downwards and their wings gently flapped, their four hooves floating in mid air, gently landing at the entrance of the universe galaxy bank.

"Thanks." Luo Feng laughed as he got off, the carriage swiftly rushed towards the skies again, the fees were automatically deducted from the person's account.

Virtual universe Black Dragon Mountain island, universe galaxy bank.

"Welcome."

Luo Feng stepped into the bank, heading straight to the side self service path and entered, following which he entered into a self service booth room.

Entering into the private room.

“Please enter your account.” The automated voice sounded.

Luo Feng swiftly entered, this was his teacher’s 5 star account, immediately the signal within the room scanned Luo Feng and as Luo Feng had once withdrawn money on Jade rock star before, it had already left a basic record.

“Pass code authorized.”

“User authorized.”

Rumble!

What was originally a normal room immediately transformed into a luxurious room, an extremely beautiful female AI stood beside, respectfully saying, “Respected 5 star client, how do you do, I am AI #008231, here to service you.”

“How do you do.” Luo Feng smiled as he looked at the female AI, secretly happy.

Everything was going according to how Babata had mentioned...

As he had successfully opened the 5 star account before, he was already regarded as a 5 star client in the universe galaxy bank. One

had to know...Luo Feng had acquired 20 billion universe dollars from Mingyu, this was more than many domain lords' entire wealth. However he had only become a 2 star client then.

5 star client, how high was that? This universe galaxy bank, as a 5 star client, had many very detailed services.

Of course...

These services required money too!

"I need to deal with a few items." Luo Feng looked at the female AI before him.

The female AI gently bowed, "Respected 5 star client, our universe galaxy bank has 'item selling' services, we have many many routes and networks to sell off any items in the vast universe, in all of the universe countries. We can definitely help you sell them off in the shortest amount of time possible, we only require a thousandth of the deal."

Luo Feng laughed.

This was how a 5 star client was treated, selling off these dangerous and scorching items was just that simple.

Chapter 2 – Increase in Wealth

“Other than the goods selling services, our universe galaxy bank also has the goods buying services, however our purchasing prices are based off of the normal prices.” The female robotic voice was clear and crisp, she smiled and was incomparably respectful.

“I pick the goods selling services.” Luo Feng said.

Even though the selling services required the thousandth commission fee, the selling prices were usually not bad, even giving away the commission would still far exceed the original buying price of the bank. Beside him was the experienced and knowledgeable Babata, making sure Luo Feng wouldn’t make any losses.

“These are the 48 items I need to sell.” Luo Feng swiftly processed through his AI Babata, passing along the detailed information of the 48 treasures to the female AI.

“48 items, our universe galaxy bank can immediately begin posting and selling through the virtual universe.” The female AI smiled, “Please confirm…the location of these 48 items and the time of transfer to our bank.”

“Ganwu star sector, Black Dragon Mountain starfield, Milky way’s Bai Lan star.” Luo Feng reported the details and time.

The time was 8 days from now, after he reaches Bai Lan Star.

“Time and location confirmed.” The female AI smiled, “Please sign the selling release form.”

A contract floated before Luo Feng.

It was very detailed, including both parties’ responsibilities and liabilities, along with the violation penalties etc...

“Di.”

“The selling release form has been completed.” The female AI smiled, “Respected 5 star client, is there anything else I can help you with.”

“Nothing.” Luo Feng laughed as he stood up and turned towards the entrance, leaving immediately.

Rumble!

The luxurious room immediately vanished and returned to its original self service booth.

5 star clients, as the most absolute and important clients of the universe galaxy bank, the bank had made many privileges and services available for only them.

However, since they were services, they required money too.

However in the universe, if one didn't have a proper route, even if one had money, one couldn't do certain things. For example, selling these 48 treasures...if he tried to sell them in the Black Dragon Mountain star field, it would simply result in chaos. However through the universe galaxy bank, he could sell within many large universe countries without creating any commotion for himself.

48 treasures, they could just about reach up to 10 or 20% of sector lord Kabu's entire wealth.

However sector lord Kabu, compared to the Yun Mo planet's master, was incomparably poor.

.....

After 7 months, Luo Feng and his brothers returned to Bai Lan star...a life planet very close to earth.

Luo Feng and his group spent 3 months within the world of thunder. In the world within a world, first excavating for universe crystals and later for thunder stones for a month, after which battling for another 1.5 months. Including the time returning to Cang Lan star from the world within a world and later from Cang Lan star to earth...

It was about 7 months in all.

Year 2063, Mid april, Luo Feng left earth.

China time, Year 2063 November 16 1.16pm, a universe ship entered Bai Lan star.

Within the ship's control room, Luo Feng and his brothers surveyed the warehouse below, in front of the warehouses was an exquisite and beautiful universe ship with the universe galaxy bank logo, it was streamlined shape and gave off an incomparably dreamy feeling.

"Thirdie, the deal with those treasures, just that simple?" Thunder God looked at the ship below.

"Right, just that simple, I just have to pass the treasures to them and it's over." Luo Feng smiled.

"They won't kill and rob?" Thunder God looked uneasily at the ship below.

"Haha..." Luo Feng laughed, "2nd brother, this is the universe galaxy bank, and you've seen that ship, it's a grade 3 ship...this represents incredible wealth! For entities like the universe galaxy bank, the universe 1st bank, these 2 super large banks, they emphasize trust the most."

"Even with items thousands and and tens of thousands of times more expensive than our 48 treasures, they wouldn't even blink an eye. Don't be petty. What's more...when I go make the deal, the

entire scene will be recorded by the bank's AI system, those bank workers wouldn't dare kill and rob us." Luo Feng smiled, "The moment they dare betray us, they would simply go 'pop' and explode!"

During their conversation, the ship landed on the surface.

Hua!

The cabin door opened, Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder God and Ao Gu jumped out, immediately flying straight towards the dreamy looking ship, the door on the streamlined ship opened and 3 men in universe galaxy bank uniforms stood there, one of which was a domain lord, the other 2 were also universe level!

"Sir, please pass your goods to me." The domain lord smiled humbly and respectfully, even though he could see easily that the ones before him were only star levels...

However, the level of this deal was extremely high, and every move he made was being recorded by the bank's AI system, hence he had to act according to the bank's requests...humble and full of respect, and he had to smile!

"These are the goods." Luo Feng passed over a storage ring.

"Chi!"

A dreamy blur beam of light shot out from the universe ship onto

the storage ring, within a second, a voice resounded, “Goods confirmed.”

“Sir, the deal is a success, thank you for your support of the universe galaxy bank.” The domain lord bowed slightly, his face slightly twitching.

A domain lord bowing to a few star levels?

“Haha, then I won’t send you, we’ll be leaving.” Luo Feng laughed and turned to go.

The domain lord and 2 universe levels returned to their ship, within the ship, their expressions were strange and puzzled.

“It was actually a few star levels dealing with us, what a joke!”

“We even had to bow to them earlier! How uncomfortable.” The 2 universe levels were incredibly dissatisfied, the domain lord beside them creased his green eyebrows, “Our service level is incredibly high, usually we deal with undying beings. Occasionally we deal with sector lords. This time we actually dealt with some star level punks...however they may be from some ultra large families or even disciples of some super power.”

The other 2 universe levels nodded.

Right.

Their teams' dealings were usually with much higher leveled customers. All either 4 star or 5 star clients, and under normal circumstances, 4 star clients were normally undying or lucky sector lords who struck windfalls. As for 5 star clients, those were without a doubt super powerful beings that could easily shake and tremor countless galaxies.

"Whining about it for a bit is okay, but never reveal any bit of information about the client, otherwise we'll be dealt with by the bank, don't say I didn't warn you." The green haired domain lord exclaimed.

"Yes sir."

The 2 universe levels complied.

After Luo Feng and his team had finished the deal on Bai Lan star, they sat in the universe ship and left, engaging in universe travel heading towards their home, Earth!

Within the control room.

"Hahaha, a domain lord bowing to us?" Thunder God laughed satisfied.

"Unbelievable." Hong exclaimed.

“1st and 2nd brother.” Luo Feng laughed as he looked at them, “The money has already been transferred to my account, everything according to our old distribution agreement.”

“Stop.”

Thunder God shook his head, “I don’t want it, you gave me the 5 set thunder techniques, just getting that spent a large amount of thunder stones, about 20% of our entire stock. What’s more within that set there was even a living AI, that Old Wu, allowing me to gain the inheritance of sector Lord Kabu, accurately speaking, I’ve had the greatest earnings! Don’t give me anything!”

“What a stroke of luck actually getting sector lord Kabu’s inheritance.” Hong smiled, “That sector lord must have prepared everything for him.”

Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

He himself had acquired an inheritance from his teacher, split into 3 different accounts. What his 2nd brother acquired shouldn’t be too far off.

“Big brother.” Luo Feng looked at Hong.

“I have enough money, if you want to give me anything...get me another life fruit next time.” Hong said, “One life fruit would be about 20%.”

“Life fruit?” Luo Feng nodded.

Life fruit, even though within that world within a world, it required a total of 800,000 thunder stones.

However in reality outside, it was hard to even buy one if one wanted, and if one acquired one, the price was extremely shocking, the 20% he acquired would maybe even be insufficient.

“Very well.” Luo Feng nodded, “Then I’ll first enter the virtual universe network.”

……

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay.

Luo Feng’s study, a screen was before him.

“So many messages.” Luo Feng sat at the chair, opening the 1st one.

“Respected client, how are you.

Your account with us has just received 1.123 trillion universe dollars, your accounts has passed the 10 mixed element units threshold(1 mixed element is the highest denominator, each mixed element is equivalent to 1 trillion universe dollars), automatically rising to a 3 star account. You also automatically rise to become

our respected 3 star client. As a 3 star client, you have several special privileges.

The bottom of the mail displays the special privileges and their explanations.

Universe Galaxy bank”

The 1st email, was a huge transfer email.

“Over 11 trillion?” Luo Feng looked and held his breath.

11 trillion universe dollars, what concept was that?

Normally within the universe, one galaxy was worth about 100 billion...1 trillion. In other words, Luo Feng’s wealth was equivalent to about tens of galaxies! And a sector lord usually joining any empire would only receive 1 galaxy, of course as long as they worked hard, getting a few of them wasn’t hard.

11 trillion universe dollars, equivalent to tens of galaxies!

It was definitely comparable to a sector lord’s wealth level.

Within the universe, the true forms of currency are mainly 2, one is the universe crystal (universe dollars). These are energy crystals condensed by a sector lord’s power and formed. The other is the undying crystal (Undying dollars). These are special energy

crystals condensed by undying and their power of the universe origin sources, they are even more valuable."

"However, the universe dollars works as currency more within the market and deals, as for the undying dollars, they are used within war and battle equipment, no matter which human race, or other races, they are all unwilling to sell their undying crystals." Babata's voice resounded in Luo Feng's mind, "As for the 'mixed element unit', it's a large amount used frequently by the superpowers during their deals"

Luo Feng blinked his eyes hard.

Within a blink of an eye he had suddenly become a wealthy person capable of owning tens of galaxies.

"Don't get excited, this little bit of wealth doesn't mean much in the vast universe. You are only a 3 star client. In the vast universe, you are only a small shrimp, a few tens of galaxies? Just moderately affluent." Babata said, "Work and train hard, when you reach the domain lord and inherit your teacher's 5 star account, you'll be rich."

Chapter 3 – Record

“Alright, I’m just a little shrimp.” Luo Feng smiled, looking at the screen.

Including the letter he was looking at, there were a total of 7 messages, of which 5 were from the universe galaxy bank, the 6th was from the virtual universe company, the 7th from the Battle-axe Coliseum,

“Di.”

Luo Feng gently tapped the screen, opening the 2nd message.

“Greetings, respected client.

Are you constantly putting large amounts of money into your account and having to withdraw when you need it? I have to remind you that this is an extremely low efficiency way of utilizing your money. As long as you pass it to us to circulate, you will constantly receive increases and rewards, we can guarantee, there’ll be no losses!

As for the rewards, according to the trends, there will be slight differences in the amount every year, our highest record for a user in history has been over 100% before.

Right!

As long as you pass 1 trillion universe dollars for us to handle, 1 year later, it could very likely become 2 trillion universe dollars! Even in bad situations, we can guarantee no losses!

Here are some of the ‘achievements’ randomly picked out by our investment department.

……”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh, raising his finger and gently opening the 3rd.

“Greetings, respected client.

Our team has the greatest planet management skills, do you have a large amount of planet territories, however, they are not giving you enough rewards and earnings? As long as you pass them to us to manage, we will cultivate the highest and most elite warriors, loyal soldiers, at the same time ensuring the earnings of every planet, the efficiency will greatly increase.

Also, we can help set up a sect or a large and strong family…

A sect, family, dynasty, school…

You can pick any plan and allow us help you manage your territory.

……”

Luo Feng read all five messages in one go.

“The 2nd message, is from the universe galaxy bank’s investment department, they want me to allow them to use my money to invest and trade stocks!”

“The 3rd message is a service, saying I can pay to allow them to help manage my planets, helping me cultivate loyal underlings. Also with different plans like a sect, family etc.”

“The 4th, is asking to help me invest and trade in the stock market, the higher the percentage of returns, the greater the risks.”

“The 5th, is just for my relaxation, providing different forms of services!”

Luo Feng shook his head, two of the five above messages were about investment and stock trading, one with a guaranteed no loss policy while the other had uncertain risks, and according to what he understood from his little brother, the financial market in the universe was very dark, the 2 super banks would absorb lots of ordinary people’s money to form a large power and battle the tides.

They normally used ordinary people’s money to specially ‘raise themselves into a sedan chair.’

“Luo Feng, the 6th and 7th mail are important, you should take a look.” Babata said.

“Hmm?” Luo Feng was shocked, very important?”

The 6th mail was from the virtual universe company.

Luo Feng raised his finger and opened it.

“Greetings.

The moment you became a 3 star client, you gained the right to participate in the Ganwu auction. In the universe, several treasures and items belong to an extra high level and grade, and many others are hard to purchase even if one had the money. And the auction our virtual universe company organizes is specially to allow people to be able to purchase such items.

The Ganwu auction is organized once every 3 years.

The lowest requirement to enter the auction is to be a 3 star client in either the Universe 1st bank or the universe galaxy bank.

The next Ganwu auction will be in 2 years, as for the specific details, please look at the attachment below.

Virtual universe company”

Luo Feng looked seriously at the screen before him, the requirements for this Ganwu auction were indeed high, the lowest actually being a 3 star client at either of the 2 super banks! And 3 star clients were normally sector lords, or large wealthy people with great amounts of power.

To allow a group of sector lords to take part in an auction...

“Luo Feng, in the Ganwu auction, there will be many incomparably valuable treasures, like the life fruit, along with some level 5 weapons that only undying could forge, and other high level weapons, all these can be seen at the auction. To the strong, this auction is very important.” Babata reminded, “Only through this auction will you be able to get certain items.”

Luo Feng nodded.

“Of course, this is only the most basic auction.”

“The auctions the virtual universe company organizes are split into the basic, middle and high level auctions.”

“The basic auction, the lowest requirement is to be a 3 star client and normal 3 star clients are sector lords.”

“The middle level auction, the lowest requirement is a 4 star client and normal 4 star clients are undying. Hence, the middle level auctions are usually filled with undying participating. Every

treasure at the auction…I'm afraid even your entire fortune won't be enough to buy even one."

"The high level auctions, the lowest requirement is to be a 5 star client. Hm, these auctions…the ones participating are the large organizations, the leviathans. Or some super powers within the Ganwu universe country or other universe countries, or some super undying's who work alone. The high level auctions, every treasure is incomparably expensive. However, one high level auction, just the preparation time is usually very long, and the items are what undying would risk everything to get, some trying hard but not getting them, like your teacher…"

Luo Feng was shocked.

His teacher the master of the Yun Mo Planet, lost his life back then for a certain item.

"A 3 star client, within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, is quite impressive."

"However in the entire universe, it's just average. As for the auctions, you can only participate in your own empire's auction, the Ganwu auction. You don't have the rights to enter others." Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded.

These auctions had huge requirements, people without

background or money wouldn't even have heard of them. Even the basic auction, the lowest requirement was to be a 3 star client.

"The next ganwu auction will be 2 years and 1 month from now." Luo Feng secretly anticipated, this level of auction, he definitely had to participate.

Luo Feng sat in his study, finishing up the introduction of the auction, feeling even more anxious, there would indeed be many valuable treasures there.

"The last message is from the Battle-axe Coliseum?" Luo Feng raised his finger and opened it curiously.

This message was a notification.

When he became a 3 star client, he automatically gained the title of bronze member, he could go watch the battles of the Battle-axe Coliseum.

"Battle-axe Coliseum? A membership, is it important?" Luo Feng asked suspiciously.

"The membership himself isn't, however, the live broadcast of the Battle-axe Coliseum battles are important." The little devil the size of a huge fist on Luo Feng's shoulder emphasized, "Every battle the Battle-axe Coliseum organizes are life or death! At least one must die before the battle will end. Hence these battles...are very valuable to watch. They are very important and rewarding to

one's training and realization."

"Hm?" Luo Feng nodded.

Along with this message came an attachment of the list of the upcoming battles, Luo Feng opened it.

"Death battles within the next 7 days?"

"A total of 6201 battles?" Luo Feng stared wide eyed, "there are 6,118 universe level battles, 82 domain lord battles and 1 sector lord battle."

Luo Feng took a deep chilly breath.

Within the short span of 7 days, there were so many death battles? And even a sector lord level death battle?

"That's normal, the Battle-axe Coliseum spreads over every empire in the universe! One empire alone is vast and enormous. With all of them added together, with so many death battles in the next 7 days, that's normal." Babata explained, "Look, of these 6201 death battles, the ones belonging to the Ganwu universe are only these 3!"

On the list, the universe death battles, 6,118 of them were arranged according to the number of viewers from highest to lowest.

The most anticipated life and death battle was one where both fighters were at the level 6 stage!

“Universe level 6 stage, so many people spectating?” Luo Feng curiously opened the battle to view the details.

Both of them came from the Desolate Peaks universe country.

One was named Genji and was from the Lu Xiu clan.

The other was Hanks, a slave from a slave owner.

Genji was born on planet Lu Xiu and their living environment is extremely hostile, with many wild beast roaming the land killing weaker and smaller Lu Xiu people, only the strong survived. And the genius of the clan Genji very quickly rose from the planet and reached star traveller level, even star level, arousing the attention of the leaders of the planet. Genji later became an elite soldier of one of the leaders.

He constantly worked hard and his position rose greater, with the leader later giving him more benefits and privileges.

Genji became the leader of the Lu Xiu planet and the hero of the Lu Xiu clan.

However later, the leader angered a large enemy and came under

attack, many of the planets he owned including Lu Xiu were robbed away with many Lu Xiu clan people becoming slaves.

Genji worked hard to reach the universe level, after which he sold himself to the Battle-axe Coliseum. The Battle-axe Coliseum bought him over from the original leader, and Genji had to experience 1000 battles within the Battle-axe Coliseum, if he survived, he would recover his freedom.

……

Hanks lived on a very normal planet, leading a normal life.

Many youths on this planet, including the young Hanks was taken by a slave trader forcefully. This slave trader took many slaves and began his hellish training, with many failed subjects being eliminated and sold off as slaves, while the elites continued training…Hanks was one of the elites.

Becoming star level and breaking through to the universe level!

However because of the microchip, he remained a slave! Later on he grew incredibly strong, being sold off as a simple universe level alone wasn’t worth it, hence the slave trader made a deal with him…As long as he could survive through 1000 death battles in the Battle-axe Coliseum, he would be returned his freedom!

This was because the longer one survived within the Battle-axe Coliseum, the higher the appearance fees! And this was much more

than simply selling him off.

The slave trader was very clear...only by allowing the slave to truly wish and anticipate his freedom, would he truly unleash his strongest abilities within the battles. Hence he gave him the deal that if he made it through 1000 battles, he would regain his freedom.

.....

Genji, 691 wins!

Hanks, 821 wins!

Both universe level 6!

This battle was the highest profile battle within the upcoming 7 days, out of the over 6,000 battles within the universe's Battle-axe Coliseum!

Chapter 4 – Battleground

Genji, fighter, with a domain level 5.

Hanks, spirit reader controller with a domain level 4.

To be able to have domains level 4 and 5 within the universe level 6, these 2 were definitely considered geniuses! The most important thing was these 2 had high battle abilities, many other similar level 4, 5 and even 6 level domains geniuses had all lost their lives to them. 691 wins, 821 wins…these 2 were definitely veterans within the Battle-axe Coliseum!

“These two people.” Luo Feng exclaimed softly to himself.

Looking at their back story, Genji was doing it for his family and clan. Hanks was a slave forced by his trader.

And amongst them one definitely had to die!

“This battle, we definitely have to watch it.” Luo Feng carefully looked at the information on the screen, “one Hour?”

Universe ship, via universe travel, from Bai Lan star to earth, took about 8 hours.

Luo Feng immediately dragged Hong and Thunder God along to watch the battle.

……

Battle-axe Coliseum, one of the five leviathans of the human race.

In the virtual universe network, a space was specially created here, on it was a wide river that travelled throughout the entire space, it's strength was shocking, and on this seemingly endless river floated several islands, on each of them were dojos.

Island number 08921.

This was a snow covered island, it's most daunting construct was a huge dojo, at the center of it was an empty plot of land, surrounding it were blurred large amounts of seats. The 2nd, 3rd, and 4 level of the dojo were all private rooms.

Only members were allowed into the private rooms.

And normal spectators could only watch from the bleachers far away.

"I've got my eye on Genji, his blade skills are impressive, everytime I see his skills, I get a very dreamy feeling…one filled with the energy of life. He'll definitely win."

"Betting on Genji? His payouts are very low."

“So what if they are low, his payouts are 1:1.31, and Hanks is 1:2.68, from the management side of the Battle-axe Coliseum, it’s obvious they too are betting on Genji. Who cares about the low payout, as long as I earn money. If Genji wins, I’ll have earned a lot, I’ll bet on him!”

“I’ll bet on Hanks, there might be an upset. I bet 600,000 universe dollars!”

“Only 600,000 universe dollars, I bet 2 million universe dollars that Genji will win!”

“I bet 1 million universe dollars, just for fun.”

Three beastmen with green horns dressed in luxurious clothes set in the spectators’ seats and discussed. Suddenly in the alleyway beside them, a silver haired handsome man carrying a child walked towards the staircase beside and swiftly climbed up.

“Going up?”

“The bank account must be at least 3 stars. Who is that man with silver hair?”

“No idea, we 3 brothers only recognize people from our star field, in these places, many others, including us aren’t from the same empire. Who would know.” The 3 with green horns discussed.

At the same time, another 5 went upstairs.

As the start of the battle drew closer, more people filled the arena, levels of blurred silhouettes of guests had filled over half of the seats, with at least 100,000 people, and many others upstairs! To be able to enter the private rooms upstairs, one's bank account had to be at least 3 stars or even higher.

"Look at those three punks, those eyes filled with curiosity, that demeanor, one look and one can tell they are country bumpkins that have never seen such things before."

"I agree with big brother, from the interactions and gazes that I've had with people before, these three seem lowly and uneducated, can't be anyone big."

"I agree too."

The three beastmen with green horns looked at three youths walking in the distant alleyway, the three were chatting and laughing, looking around curiously at the arena's construct, following which, the three too began their climb upstairs.

The three beastmen immediately stared wide eyed, they had actually miscalculated!

"3 star clients?"

"I've seen ghosts! How could I actually misread them!"

……

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God swiftly went upstairs, entering their private room according to their ticket. As a member, one had a private room to himself and he could bring his family, friends, servants etc to enjoy the match.

As for how many he brought, it was totally up to the member.

However the private room was only that big and the more people one brings, the tighter it got.

“3rd brother, this Battle-axe Coliseum is indeed forthright. From what I saw earlier, to watch a match like this, the ticket prices are very expensive! And a member can actually watch like this for free.” Thunder God exclaimed, “And from walking in earlier, from the crowds of people in the seats, I heard from their discussions that all of their bets were at least in the hundreds of thousands of universe dollars, up to millions, so rich.”

Hong smiled, “To be able to come here, even those on the first level, many must be planet leaders.”

“Right.”

Luo Feng smiled and nodded, “Right, 1 trillion black dragon dollars was akin to 300,000 universe dollars. Meaning to say those people were casually betting up to tens of planets at a go. They were definitely people with background and money from their

own star fields.

No matter how much background and reputation, they still weren't members.

Battle-axe Coliseum members, the lowest requirement was at least a 3 star client! Normally only sector lords had this sort of status...in the black dragon mountain starfield, only the 16 large families had such people, and even though they had sector lords, they weren't definitely 3 star clients.

"Welcome ladies and gentlemen from the universe."

"This death battle is about to begin immediately, please everyone hurry and make your bets, there isn't much time left."

"Genji winning, payout 1:1.31."

"Hanks, payout is 1:2.68. If both die together, payout is 1:81. Yes 81 times payout, for opponents who are so evenly matched, there might very likely come a situation where both perish." A booming voice, using perfect universe language reverberated around the room and in everyone's ears, "Only 5 minutes remain to bet, everyone please hurry and bet."

Within the private room.

"1st time here, we should make a bet." Thunder God smiled, "Big brother, thirdie, who are you going to bet on?"

“I bet on Hanks.” Hong said seriously, “Looking at him, I remember back when I was a youth and trained as an assassin…His struggles are tens of millions of times greater than mine. Slave traders make their slaves go through hell, I believe he should win. I bet on him…one hundred million universe dollars.”

“One hundred million?” Luo Feng looked shocked at Hong.

How much money Hong had, Luo Feng was very clear, he had given him 4 billion universe dollars before, and with the universe crystal separation, he had another 1 billion universe crystals. In terms of wealth, Hong’s exceeded only 5 billion universe dollars. Throwing one hundred million down like this, it seems like Hong was really into it.

“I choose Genji, one hundred million universe dollars, I feel like his chances are bigger.” Thunder God said, “Thirdie, how about you?”

“Me?”

Luo Feng looked through the window of the private room, right at the center of the Battle-axe Coliseum, a large screen displayed the two warriors and their information. That Hanks…was extremely cold, as though he stepped out of hell. That Genji, his eyes seem firm and solid, with a sense of anticipation, smiling frequently.

“I choose him, Genji!” Luo Feng said, “Also one hundred million

universe dollars.”

He didn’t know why but as he looked at Genji, thinking about how this warrior was fighting for his home and clan, fighting to regain his home planet’s freedom and to never let them become slaves again, selling himself to the Battle-axe Coliseum when he couldn’t deal with the enemy and fighting for survival…

Luo Feng somewhat resonated with him.

He too had such huge pressure on him, and the threat of the Nuolan Shan family still hasn’t been extinguished. However, unlike Genj, Luo Feng had several more trump cards in hand.

“I wish for your success, to be able to survive 1,000 battles.” Luo Feng thought to himself.

Virtual universe, arena 08921.

“Betting end!”

“Ladies and gentlemen, this death battle will begin immediately.”

“The warriors in this death battle are the fighter Genji and the spirit reader controller Hanks. They are both universe level 6!”

The location of this battle is in Desolate Peak universe country,

Red bird star field on a normal uninhabited planet."

"Right now, we'll begin the live broadcast of the battle."

Following which, the entire dojo became dark and a snow white planet appeared in the center of the arena, it constantly expanded and on its surface, the winds howled with hail and snow dancing about in the wind. Vaguely, one could see among the winds and rubble, 2 human silhouettes.

One dressed in a dark blue robe, in boots and carrying a battle knife and round shield, a cold looking youth. He was Genji!

Opposite, dressed in black armor, long hair flying, his face with a scar, with 2 sabers at his waist, a long white dragon flying about his body. He was Hanks!

Death battle, location on a desolate planet.

Among the 2 of them, only one would live and leave the planet!

"Begin!"

A thick voice resounded from space, hitting the 2 warriors' ears on the planet.

On this planet's incomparably thin atmosphere, one dressed in golden armor and boots, a bald warrior surveyed below, he, a

domain lord warrior, was the overseer of this death battle, if anyone of them dared to flee before the battle was decided, he would immediately kill him!

A universe level battle, with a domain lord overseer.

Domain lord level battle, sector lord overseer.

A sector lord battle, undying overseer!

This was the rule of the Battle-axe Coliseum, the moment one signed and agreed to battle, there was no way out.

“Lu Xiu.” The blue robed youth muttered to himself, following which his eyes gleamed and like 2 lasers, gazed hard at the distant black clothed man.

“822 victories!” The black clothed man Hanks, his eyes filled with incomparably strong killing intent, like a devil from hell.

“Rumble!”

“Rumble!”

The howling winds and rubble were blown apart, however the Huger Axe dojo’s camera was swift and incomparably clear, capturing every bit of the battle, also transferring to the virtual universe network, displaying at 08921 arena. Everyone at the arena

could clearly see the entire battle scene.

Chapter 5 – The Grassfield of His Dreams

“Seal!”

The black clothed man Hanks floated in mid air, the earth and sand dancing about him, with a shout, the snow white dragon circling about him stopped, what was originally complex silver white embroidery on the surface began to glow and form that long dragon.

“Peng! The large amount of embroidery dispersed, swiftly filling up the surrounding land and skies, every bit glowing brightly, turning the entire world around silver white in an instant!

Hank’s domain,…snow ice domain!

“This can’t stop me!”

Dressed in a blue robe, the man took one step at a time towards Hanks, while it seemed slow, it was actually fast as lightning, while walking, the blue robed silhouette actually created three mirror images, making one unable to discern immediately which was the true body. All three of them were staring hard together at Hank, their gaze sharp as needles.

“It’s no use!” The black clothed Hanks stared coldly.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

39 needles swiftly formed into a silver thin snake, as fast as lightning piercing towards the three blue robed images, following several ‘chi’ sounds, two of the images were destroyed while the blue robed Genji remained with a strong aura emanating around him. Genji held a shield, that shield swiftly formed a tight defense about him, making the silver thin snake unable to get around it.

The blue robed man walked one step at a time, his formless aura getting stronger and stronger.

His battle knife in his other hand, hadn’t even been used yet.

Virtual universe, within the private room of the dojo.

Luo Feng and his brothers watched with anticipation, beads of perspiration falling from their foreheads, Hong exclaimed softly, “Unbelievable, relying on the shield, he can actually defend like that. Almost as though there are no openings at all from all directions completely sealed in. This, this is simply too exaggerated. His methods and skills have already reached such an unbelievable level.”

“It is unbelievable.” Thunder God held his breath.

“Impressive.” Luo Feng too used a shield, hence he was even clearer of how terrifying that Genji was, “That Hanks too is impressive, he actually fused his spirit weapon with his domain, forming an invincible snow ice domain.:

There was always someone above.

Luo Feng and his brothers always thought they were pretty strong, however watching these two warriors in this death battle, whether it was their mental state, domain level, shield skills, spirit reader skills, they far exceeded that of themselves.

“However from the looks of it, Genji might win.” Thunder God creased his eyebrows.

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Right, “Hong exclaimed, “That Genji’s aura has totally suppressed his opponent, and his shield skills make him impenetrable, and he hasn’t even used his sword, the moment he unleashes it, it would definitely be invincible.”

……

Desolate star.

The youth dressed in blue armor Genji, seemed to move slowly, however in a blink of an eye he actually closed in a few kilometers of distance, floating in mid air and using all his power to control the spirit weapon to attack, Hanks seemed frantic, gritting his teeth: “3 dragon…break!”

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Needles swiftly gathered and formed 3 silver thin snakes, madly surrounding and attacking Genji.

“Hmph!”

Genji snorted softly, using strength from his legs, leaving behind a crater as he jumped, his entire battle knife in his hand had already become a blurry green image, engulfing Hanks who was in mid air. And Hanks simultaneously drew both his swords on his waist, holding each in one hand and becoming a beam of light.

Qiang! Qiang! Qiang! Qiang! Qiang! Qiang! Qiang!

The exchange between the 2 universe level warriors, the impact from their clashes created immensely strong ripples, immediately causing large scars and wearing down the first layer of the ground, then another few tens of meters lower, the entire area around them, tens of kilometers immediately was reduced to waste, the waves spread and dispersed in every direction. With every heavy attack and clash, the ripples spread further and violently in every direction, causing the area around them to get swept away.

“Block!”

“Block!”

“Block!” Genji muttered below his breath, the sword in his hand maintaining it’s incomparably graceful elegance as it slashed

towards Hanks, forming a dreamy green sword silhouette, looking at it, it's almost as though one was looking at a little blade of grass breaking through from the ground, getting stronger as it grew. That continuous thriving life force, gave off the feeling of limitless energy.

Hank's forehead began to perspire with beads dripping down.

He grit his teeth and continued to dodge, at the same time parrying the attacks and controlling his spirit weapon to attack violently at Genji, occasionally using spirit attack techniques too...

Helpless...

Genji wasn't affected at all! That knife work which was so full of life parried and attacked over and over, getting stronger and stronger, again and again...

Within the private room.

"Genji has won, Hanks can't take it anymore." Luo Feng said, looking at the virtual screen in the center of the dojo, those eyes filled with hope, knife work filled with limitless life energy, Genji.

"Thirdie, if Genji wins, we'll earn big money." Thunder God smiled.

"It's not over yet." Hong's expression was serious.

Amongst the three of them, Luo Feng resonated with Genji's life and story, Hong however resonated with Hank's. The two were watching with anticipation at their champions, of course, if Hanks died, Luo Feng would still feel sorrow and regret. However in this death battle, one of them had to die, there was no other way.

"Hm?" Luo Feng's expression changed.

"There's hope!" Hong's eyes gleamed.

"That's weird." Thunder God stared wide eyed.

"Wa!"

"A special situation has arised."

"Haha, the tables are about to turn."

Shocked cries filled the entire dojo suddenly, all engaged in discussion. One had to know that surprise situations within the death battles were rare! These death battles relied on the exponents' strengths, and Genji's was indeed above that of Hanks, whether it was shield or sword skills, while defending and attacking simultaneously, it was incomparably perfect.

And Genji's mental state was extremely strong, his soul's defense was strong too, soul attacks or hypnotism didn't affect him at all.

Hence, even the payout given by the Battle-axe Coliseum was much lower to Genji, obviously they had deemed that he was much stronger than Hanks.

However now…

“He’s evolved.”

“This Hanks, in the face of death, actually managed to realize part of the origin laws?”

“It’s indeed the origin laws, it should be the water origin laws. Even though he’s just come to understand it, he’s still stepped through a very large door.”

“Haha, this death battle, we actually managed to see something like that, it’s worth it.”

……

Luo Feng and his brothers listened to the discussion from the bleacher stands, they knew very little about the origin laws, however at this time, they could clearly see a large change in the situation of Genji and Hank’s death battle.

The clashes causes ripples that tremored the ground greatly, creating incomparably large shockwaves below.

The two silhouettes moved as fast as lightning.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

Hank’s eye’s gleamed, his snow ice domain had engulfed the entire land and earth, his three silver thin snakes seemed alive again, almost as though three slippery thin snakes, they surrounded Genji and madly attacked. Genji used his shield to defend, however, he seemed frantic, no longer as relaxed as before.

“Qiang! Qiang!” Genji not only used the shield, but also his battle knife to defend.

“No.”

“NO!” Genji began to perspire profusely, his defense with the shield and sword had already reached their limit.

Floating in the distance, the black clothed Hanks surveyed over this scene, his eyes flashed and the 3 silver thin snakes’ attack speeds actually rose and grew again, causing Genji to be unable to defend, a thin silver light brushed through the shield and it actually caused this silver thin snake to explode.

However it’s front half, with needles that had formed a silver light actually pierced through Genji’s head.

Silence!

All the needles stopped their attacked and floated in mid air, they swiftly gathered together, along with the surrounding needles, forming a round disc, landing beside Hanks.

Dressed in a blue armor, with a smashing sound, his knees landed on the ground, following which his body fell gradually.

“Hahaha…”

“Run quickly, here to daddy.”

“Daddy, daddy.”

Genji, in his dazed eyes seem to clearly see that beautiful grass field, on it were his adorable 5 year old daughter who was laughing, chasing large silhouette, shouting, “Daddy, daddy…”That grass field in his dreams, his, Genji’s most beautiful grass field.

His home!

The place he had to protect.

“Lu Xiu…Lu Xiu…” At the instant his soul shattered, he muttered his home’s name.

Peng!

His body crashed on the ground, blood seeped out from his forehead, even though it didn't seem like too much of a wound, in truth his brain and consciousness had already been pierced through, his soul was broken.

The winds howled loudly!

The black clothed man Hanks flew over from far, landing on the ground beside, looking at the blue robed corpse.

Hanks slowly knelt down, gently rubbing Genji's eyes to closing them, however…he felt his hands get a little wet.

Hanks looked at his hands, the liquid was clear, "Tears?"

"I'm sorry."

Hanks lowered his head to look at Genji's body, saying softly, "I, just want to go home!" During every battle, Hanks always seemed vicious and unfeeling, however, after every battle, he would apologize…

Hanks closed his eyes.

The beautiful memory of his planet, his home…he, it has already been thousands of years since he has returned.

“822, another 178 matches and I can go home.” Hanks stood up.

Rumble!

He rushed towards the sky! Only the ice storm was left around the skies, the snow and ice storm quickly covered Genji’s corpse. A Universe level 6 warrior, one that may have actually had a very bright future, a warrior with boundless paths ahead, had died like that on a desolate star.

Within the private room.

The Battle-axe Coliseum’s camera equipment was incomparably advanced, even the 2 tears that Genji had left behind were clearly captured.

The end, Genji’s death, Hank’s victory.

Luo Feng and Thunder God had both lost their bets, Hong won.

However, All three of them were deep in thought for a long time, even Hong who had won watched solemnly at the final scene of the corpse being covered by dust.

“Genji has died.” Luo Feng said solemnly, “Hanks, just requires another 178 victories to return alive.”

Hong and Thunder God were silent.

In the universe, to rise and struggle to a position of power was indeed extremely hard! Any genius, getting careless in any situation, could result in death. And the entire earth's strongest... were just them three, watching this scene, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God felt immense pressure.

Chapter 6 – Return to Earth

Leaving the dojo and returning to reality from the virtual universe network.

Within the universe ship control room, Luo Feng and his brothers' moods were heavy.

"This brutal universe!" Thunder God could help but curse.

Luo Feng was silent.

"Don't bother, there's no point in cursing." Hong shook his head, "Where there's light, there will be darkness, and with power and levels, there will be competition. Even on a small planet like earth, assassins, prostitutes, liars, robbers, corrupt officials, scammers, what type of people do we not have? Much less the incomparably vast universe."

"The vastness of the universe only means even more brutal and scheming people. However, there are many more with light in their hearts, people chasing after their dreams."

"It's a myriad of types, encompassing everything."

"The only thing we can do now is to prepare ourselves and protect our community on earth. Only when we become powerful people within in the universe will we have the power to actually do something. As for now, let's not think or act rashly." Hong shook

his head.

Luo Feng and Thunder God nodded.

……

The ship continued to fly, after 8 over hours of flying, the ship finally reached the dark universe coordinates within the solar system.

The coordinates here were totally camouflaged by the Yun Mo Planet Master's space techniques, hence other ships that wanted to come here could only come through the wormhole, and fly for a long period of time before being able to reach here. While Luo Feng and his group could easily just engage in universe travel.

"10, 9, 8, 7, 6…3, 2, 1!" Universe travel!"

Within the dark universe.

Following the universe ship's halt, it then began to engage in it's universe travel and return to their original solar system.

China time year 2063, November 16th, late night 22:08pm, a triangular universe ship entered earth, landing in the continent of Asia, China, Jian Nan headquarter city's Yang Zhou city skies.

Hong and Thunder God had already been sent home earlier by

Luo Feng when they arrived.

Yang Zhou city, Westlake yard.

“Daddy!”

“Daddy!”

When Luo Feng, dressed in his alloy armor and battle boots arrived with his slave Ao Gu at the castle’s entrance, his family had been waiting having received the news earlier, especially his 2 sons, Luo Hai and Luo Ping, immediately shouting excitedly and running directly towards Luo Feng.

“Haha, Ping Ping, Little Hai.” Luo Feng looked at his family, a contented smile spreading across his face.

“Oh, wa, much heavier than before.” Luo Feng hugged his two sons and laughed happily.

“Daddy, your armor is so hard.” Ping Ping waved his fist and punched it, peng, peng, peng, knocking on Luo Feng’s alloy armor.

“You don’t even change when you return.” Xu Xin walked up to him, smiling, “Dressed in this metal lump.”

“I got so used to wearing it outside, didn’t get the time to change.” Luo Feng smiled.

The alloy armor had indeed been worn for too long.

Actually, while the armor outside was hard and solid, it was still very comfortable within, of course it couldn't compare to the pure cotton sleeping gowns, however as time passed, one would naturally get used to it.

"Little Feng, dinner is ready, we've been waiting for you." His mother Gong Xin Lan smiled.

"Yes, mother's cooking is the best." Luo Feng smiled, "Let' me go change and take a bath and we'll eat immediately."

Changing from his alloy armor and boots into a comfortable nightie, Luo Feng had dinner with his family.

Breathing in that aroma of home, watching the moon with family and having dinner and chatting with them...

After travelling in the universe for a long time, one would indeed miss this feeling.

The news of Luo Feng and his brothers' return was very quickly known by the 5 great countries, on the 3rd afternoon from his return, the 5 great countries sent 15 representatives to Luo Feng's house to discuss about the universe migration.

Within the meeting room.

Hong and Thunder God rushed over too, the main event was the discussion between the 15 representatives and the three of them. These 15 representatives could already represent the entire powers of the 5 great countries.

“Mr. Luo, cowardice will not solve the problem. We are all very clear that there are many dangers within the universe, however... we cannot just wait till the dangers come knocking at our doorstep before we face them. The best method is to communicate and make contact with others in the universe as soon as possible and make preparations.” A lady chairperson from the European union political party said seriously.

“Yes. Please understand that our countries have all made ample preparations.” the new white prime minister from the American side watched Luo Feng and his group.

The Chinese, Indian, and Russian representatives all stared at Luo Feng and his brothers, whatever could be said has been said already.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God exchanged glances and finally, Luo Feng nodded.

The three had already made their decision.

“I understand your thoughts.”

Luo Feng looked towards the leaders of the 5 great countries, “I admit, whatever you’ve said does make a lot of sense.”

“If you want to migrate into the universe, that’s possible!” Luo Feng emphasized.

The leaders of the 5 great countries could barely hold back the excitement in their eyes.

“However, I must warn you all.”

“The 1st point, reaching another life planet in the universe, I will provide the migrants with the most basic of living guarantees. However you must understand that one has to reach the star traveller level before earning the right to be a universe citizen, hence, the moment these migrants leave the planet that I control, I cannot guarantee their safety.”

“The 2nd point, leaving earth is very easy, returning is very hard. Returning to earth from the other life planets in the universe, just travelling alone takes 3 years!”

“The 3rd point, as for the information of earth, they have to keep it totally secret, no divulging of any kind.”

Luo Feng emphasized.

Actually, there wasn't much important information of earth, the only important thing was about the golden horned beast. However normal citizens of earth didn't even know the swallowing monster was the golden horned beast, and these migrants, Luo Feng would definitely not allow any of them to bring any pictures or footage of the golden horned beast.

The moment the migrants left earth and reached a planet Luo Feng controlled.

Firstly, there were other human races on that planet, all normal people, who would know of the swallowing monster or golden horned beast?

"However if anyone divulges any information of earth and betrays the humans of earth, he or she will be executed." Luo Feng emphasized.

"No problem."

Agreed."

"Agreed."

"Mr. Luo, it seems that you don't require three years to return from the universe?" That American lady asked looking at them.

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows and stared at her, that formless mental pressure caused her to start perspiring profusely with cold

sweat, Luo Feng said, “This 1st batch of migrants, is the first contact from earth to the universe, I don’t want any accidents! The moment an accident occurs, then all of you will be guilty of sabotaging the humans of earth!”

“Remember the three points that I said, agree and I will agree to the migration.”

“If you don’t agree to them, then you can work hard and build your own spaceship.” Luo Feng said coldly.

“Oh, sorry My Luo, I was just curious, I didn’t mean anything else.” That lady said.

“That’s how it is, the migrants will officially depart from earth half a year later. Within this half a year, you all should choose the people wisely. Remember, just the trip back requires 3 years.” Luo Feng said.

The 15 representatives of the 5 great countries left, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder God couldn’t help it.

“There are good points to this, we cannot always take all the weight of earth on ourselves, we should let them head out and deal with problems. Without pressure, there’ll be no movement. Always under our protection, the humans of earth would naturally evolve slower.” Hong said.

“Right.”

Luo Feng nodded, “These people wouldn’t be able to make a mess even if they wanted to, what’s more, divulging information of earth would make them traitors of earth. Everybody is from earth, so they wouldn’t dare to reveal anything. And even if they did, it would still be within our control, that is, after all, my territory.”

Luo Feng currently had over 100 planets as his territory, however, for the migrants of earth...he was actually prepared to specially buy a few others.

To the current Luo Feng, buying a few planets was indeed easy.

After staying a few days on earth, Luo Feng sat in a universe ship and headed to mars.

He also ordered a Nutrition Cabin via the virtual universe network.

“Sir, you sure you want to buy an E grade nutrition cabin? This nutrition cabin, as the highest 3 grade cabin is most for the recovery and evolution of a sector lord warrior. Also, it is also a evolution cabin capable of immediately producing a universe level warrior.”

“However, it will only make the body of the warrior into a universe level.”

“Any further breakthroughs will be dependent on his own

comprehension of domains etc, just relying on the cabin alone is futile. Also, relying on the cabin to breakthrough might result in one's foundations not being solid, unable to realize domains, naturally unable to ever breakthrough to the domain lord level."

"Also..."

The cost of usage for the nutrition cabin is shocking. 100 years of usage, creating a universe level, the amount of money can be used to buy over 100 universe level slaves. Hence using it to evolve is not worth it at all."

It's best and mostly used function is to heal a sector lord's body and to recover it. It's best point, it's healing abilities. I have to emphasize this point, if you still think that it's fine, then sign below."

"E grade nutrition cabin, requires 86 billion universe dollars."

"As for the nutrition liquid you require, 1 ton requires 10 billion universe dollars. A ton of nutrition liquid can totally create a universe level, of course, 10 billion universe dollars can also buy over a 100 universe level slaves. Oh, you require 10 tons of nutrition liquid, understood. This is the agreement!"

A sector lord's battle, there are many which inflict damage straight on the soul, some on the body outside. At this time, relying on the nutrition cabin to recover is the best.

Hence the nutrition cabin was very expensive.

It had a secondary effect...warrior evolution! And what Luo Feng bought it for was to increase the speed of evolution of his own human body.

As for being unable to breakthrough?

“With the golden horned beast’s body as the root, Luo Feng, you have no bottleneck at all, and no problem of your foundations not being solid. Also you have money, of course buying is the best option! This 3 grade nutrition cabin generates the fastest evolution speed.” This was what Babata had told Luo Feng.

.....

Luo Feng took the nutrition cabin and stationed himself on Mars, beginning a long period of isolation within.

This was because...

Luo Feng’s golden horned beast body was about to breakthrough to the universe level, and breaking through had several very important problems, naturally he would pick mars where no one could bother him to breakthrough.

In the world of thunder, the golden horned beast was already a star level 9.

For the star level 9 to breakthrough to the universe level, it required over 50 years, and Luo Feng's metal groupings had a maximum efficiency of 89 times, hence in a little over half a year, it was already ready to breakthrough.

And Luo Feng was at point of time where it was just about to do it!

Chapter 7 – Crossing into the Universe Level

Solar System, Mars.

This was an extremely dry, desert-like planet. And now, a jet black disc-shaped universe spaceship was inside a deep hole with a diameter of a few hundred meters.

This spaceship was one of Luo Feng's reserve spaceships, which now became Luo Feng's headquarters during his temporary stay on Mars.

Inside the gigantic resting room of the spaceship, a long rectangular dark blue 'nutrition cabin' lay within. The entire nutrition cabin was 21.6 meters long and 8.3 meters wide. The main body of it was dark blue. At the same time, on the metallic surface were a lot of complicated flower markings and a few simple buttons.

An E grade nutrition cabin, the highest quality nutrition cabin in all of the human races of the universe.

Just the price reaches 86 billion universe dollars, which is equivalent to three or four galaxies that are a bit desolate. The dark blue metal on the surface is a F8 grade metal comparable to the 'hybrid copper essence'—— 'bluestone essence', which is extremely expensive.

Of course, the weapon that Luo Feng uses—— the hybrid copper essence shard, even though it's small, also has an astonishing price

because of its craftsmanship!

It, is valuable in its ‘edge’.

To make an extremely tough metal like the hybrid copper essence into something sharp, is an extremely difficult task! The higher the grade of a metal, the harder it is to work with. The ‘hybrid copper essence’ is something that even an undying being can only make a small mark on after punching it.

Back then, the master of Yun Mo planet indeed sacrificed a lot to make his spaceship into the shape of a sharp triangle.

This is why the ‘Yun Mo Planet spaceship’ is so powerful.

.....

Because of the bluestone essence surface, even an undying being will need a lot of time to break this nutrition cabin.

Inside the cabin.

A young, black haired youth with a naked body that was essentially perfect lay within the dark gray nutritional liquid. Energy filled with the force of life swiftly sweeped into his body through each of the pores in his skin. The energy containing the force of life immediately triggered the transformation of the genes after his cells absorbed it.

A ton of nutritional liquid, could purchase over 100 universe level slaves and over 10,000 life planets.

His hair continuously grew longer, his skin became more crystalline, his bones became tougher, his muscles became denser, his battle ability amplifier rose.....

“Turn off” Luo Feng commanded the AI in the nutrition cabin.

“Chichi~~”

The nutritional liquid steadily decreased and became empty. It was also extremely dry. Waves of high pressured heat wiped across Luo Feng’s body like a towel. After that, the nutrition cabin automatically added in water to rinse off Luo Feng’s body, and then finally dried it again.

Luo Feng stood up and leaped out of the nutrition cabin which was three meters tall. At the same time, a deep red battle uniform set automatically formed on his body, and battle boots around his feet.

PA!

His battle boots stepped onto the alloyed floor of the spaceship.

“This nutrition cabin, just what you would expect from an E

grade nutrition cabin. Its effects are indeed amazing" Luo Feng's eyes glowed as he looked at the dark green nutrition cabin in front of him.

"No matter how effective it is, your body needs to catch up with it. After laying in the nutrition cabin for nearly half a month, you have to rest for at least half a month before you can enter it again. Oh yeah..... Luo Feng, how is your《Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal》going?" a nonchalant voice reverberated across the spaceship, it was the living AI Babata.

"I can cast out 226 soul seal blades simultaneously" said Luo Feng.

Of course Luo Feng won't relax on his《Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal》training.

Since the only way to cast the 'slave seal' is by completing most of the Ten Thousand Blade Soul Seal. And by doing so, he'll finally have made a tiny bit of progress on the path of the《Soul Seal》.

"TOO SLOW, still a long way to go until you can cast ten thousand soul seal blades, and don't even mention merging all ten thousand into one" yelled Babata loudly.

"I understand" smiled Luo Feng.

After half a month of evolution and bitter spiritual force training, Luo Feng was very tired. He walked out of the universe

spaceship, flew out the deep hole, and arrived at the surface of Mars.

The cold, red gravel extended into the horizon. Sandstorms charging towards the sky could be seen in the distance.

Luo Feng, who was completely covered in his cloud contact battle uniform set, gazed at the land. Suddenly, a gigantic image swiftly approached from the raging sandstorm in the distance. This was a gigantic monster that was as large as a mountain. Its body was covered in black scales. Its two horns which pierced towards the sky were covered in golden engravings. Its neck and back were also covered in golden engravings.

“WU——” the Golden Horned Beast in the distance roared towards the sky, its cold eyes looked towards the human Luo Feng in the distance.

Luo Feng also looked towards the Golden Horned Beast in the distance.

“It’s time to break through to the universe level” Luo Feng frowned.

The Golden Horned Beast’s body and his human body can appear in the outer world at the same time, or one of the bodies can appear in the outer world alone, or neither of them!

When both bodies aren’t in the outer world, then, the core will

appear in the outer world.

No matter what——

The core must be in the outer world; it cannot enter the ‘inner world’. As for the bodies, whether the Golden Horned Beast body or the human body, they can be repaired no matter how damaged they are! Because to Luo Feng, the core of his life is the core that contains his soul!

Of course.....

The core is his ‘weak point’. Luo Feng wouldn’t dare to leave his core outside; that would be asking for death.

In the battle before, the only reason his human body hid in the inner world while the Golden Horned Beast appeared was because Luo Feng didn’t want anyone to discover the relationship between his human body and the Golden Horned Beast. As of now, since a defense system has been installed throughout the entire solar system, he definitely doesn’t have to worry about anyone discovering that he and the Golden Horned Beast are on Mars.

“The universe level!”

“It’s time to break through” Luo Feng shook his head and waved his hand. All types of valuable metal appeared on the ground. Luo Feng then transformed into a flowing light as he flew towards the universe spaceship in the distance.

However, the mountain-like body of the Golden Horned Beast lay on the desert ground. It extended it claw to cover the pile of metal.

Space warped, and the pile of metal shrunk and then disappeared within the Golden Horned Beast's palm.

.....

Mars was as quiet as always.

It had two extra living beings. One of them was the human hiding in the spaceship, while the other one was the space beast laying on the ground of the desert.

Time passed day by day.

Even though Luo Feng was anxious, he could only wait.....

Time in China: 2063/12/26. On this day, beneath the surface of a certain area of the desert in Mars lay a Golden Horned Beast.

"AO——"

A thick sound filled with excitement echoed around the sky.

BOOM!

A human image swiftly flew out of the spaceship and hovered in midair. He looked at the area where the Golden Horned Beast lay and was filled with happiness: “The inner world finally broke through!”

Inside the inner world of the Golden Horned Beast.

The continent which was covered in a golden mist was gigantic. Its length and width was 90 km long. However, at this moment, the entire world was shaking violently. The originally spread out golden mist crazily flowed across the entire continent, which caused the golden continent to crazily absorb the mist and crazily expand.

Its length and width expanded continuously, and its height continued to expand! This caused the continent to become thicker.

The golden mist dramatically shrunk. In return, the golden continent expanded continuously.

A jaw dropping expansion!

In just a few short hours, this continent went from a length and width of 90 km, to a length and width of 1,000 km! Its area expanded by around 100 times!

The center of the Golden Horned Beast is its core!

And the core of its core, is the inner world! The Golden Horned Beast swallows large amounts of metal to make the inner world expand and become more perfect. Only by expanding its inner world can the Golden Horned Beast break through!

As of now——

From a length and width of 90 km, it broke past the length and width of 1,000 km in an extremely short amount of time! Its inner world has completely transformed.

“RUMBLE~~”

Deep within the desert of Mars, without the suppression of the inner world, the Golden Horned Beast that has been stuck at the peak of the star level nine stage finally began its transformation. With an extremely excited howl, the Golden Horned Beast’s body slowly began to expand. Its bones and scales became tougher and harder. A third horn even began to appear on its forehead.

The armor-like golden engravings covering most of its body also began to let out a mysterious glow, which continuously seeped into the body of the Golden Horned Beast.

.....

Inside the core.

In a gigantic tower which basically covered the entire

surrounding space, nine unbelievably hot fireballs were following a peculiar trail as they orbited around each other and formed a natural, unusual structure.

This was the physical structure of Luo Feng's soul!

Without the suppression from the inner world, the nine fireballs that have long reached their limit instantly started to absorb the pure energy within the universe. As they absorbed, the nine fireballs started to vibrate and expand.

"RUMBLE~~~"

Within an instant, all the energy in the space in the sky above Mars had been crazily absorbed, forming a scary whirlpool of energy. Such an astonishing level of energy caused the nine mini stars to swiftly expand. In just moments, their area expanded by 10 times. The nine fireballs were still vibrating. At the same time, the largest star reached its limit in expansion!

"PENG!"

The largest star ferociously exploded!

PENG! PENG! PENG! PENG! PENG! PENG! PENG! PENG!

The other eight mini stars exploded on by one. After they surpassed their limit, they exploded, forming countless star pieces. Even a large nebula was formed. After a long time, everything

went silent.

In the core.

The large amounts of nebulae, star dust, star clusters, and extremely small planets formed a gigantic spiral galaxy. The mini stars were most common within the very center of this gigantic spiral galaxy, tens of millions of them. At the same time, the entire spiral galaxy had eight spiral arms.

However, there was an extremely tiny black area within the dense center of the spiral galaxy.

Over there, was the first ‘black hole’ of the entire spiral galaxy. This mini black hole was slowly swallowing the stars and space dust around it. At the same time, at a place that cannot be reached, it generated slivers of pure energy.

“CHICHI~~”

The mist-like spiritual force seemed to appear out of thin air as it appeared in the surroundings of the gigantic spiral, causing a layer of light to cover the entire galaxy.

What formed this bright, mysterious mist-like energy was indeed what universe level spirit readers rely on——spiritual force!

An extremely pure spiritual force!

.....

The Golden Horned Beast, has officially stepped into the universe level!

Chapter 8 – Domain, Laws

On the desolate Mars, deep underground.

Luo Feng's face was flushed with excitement, swiftly piercing underground, "Breaking through to the universe level, that's the real mark of becoming a real strong warrior, as the most elite bloodline in the entire universe, entering the universe level, only then can the Golden Horned Beast actually unleash its true potential!"

Shua!

Luo Feng vanished completely as he entered his internal world.

Even though its body had become much bigger, with its length exceeding 1km, from the tip of its 3 horns, head portion, neck, continuous back, wings, 4 claws, tails...all of these had golden engravings on the scales since its birth, and now they were all glimmering.

The dreamy golden domain engulfed the Golden Horned Beast's entire surroundings.

"This, this is a domain?"

Luo Feng's soul could clearly feel that peculiar form of energy, this only happened when it just broke through to the universe level, with the help of the natural engravings and energy, spirit

reading, genetic energy, willpower, physical body, they all naturally reached an incredible and harmonious state, the energies all began to fuse, and the golden energy that resulted from that actually affected the surrounding space.

"It's as described in the bloodline inheritance. The Golden Horned Beast, even when it eats or sleeps, with its natural growth, will still naturally gain a domain, and it would constantly evolve, 1 layer, 2 layers until 9 layers, and finally breaking through to having its own world energy, stepping into the sector lord level. Even to the point of reaching the universe origin's origin laws of gold, reaching the pinnacle of sector lords!"

"The inheritance memories, indeed, not lacking, not lacking at all!"

"It's, it's too heavenly!"

Luo Feng's excitement surged.

The difference was aggravating! Humans compared to the space beasts, the most elite of the bloodlines, and the one above them all, the Golden Horned Beast, that was even more aggravating!

Owning a domain was hard!

Like Hong and Thunder God who were either masters of martial arts or yoga masters, these two experienced a lot during the Great Nirvana period before finally being able to break through the

levels of martial arts and Yoga, reaching the pinnacle of harmonious fusion, before finally attaining their domains!

And the Golden Horned Beast, as the pinnacle bloodline of the vast universe!

Was set to achieve the universe origin laws and become the pinnacle of sector lords just from reaching maturity.

“What are you satisfied about? What are you excited about?”

“Hong and Thunder God had their domains when they were at the star traveller level! You only attained it after reaching the universe level and you are excited and content?”

“As for the laws, that battle arena Hanks and Genji’s fight, that Hanks was even able to realize a little about the universe origin laws. Also! Last time within the slaughterhouse, you and Thunder God were both easily defeated by a white robed lady. That white robed lady was only star level 1, and she could already feel the laws.”

“There are many geniuses among the human race in the universe, what are you so proud of?”

“Talent doesn’t mean that your achievements will be high!”

“The inheritance passed down from generation to generation for the Golden Horned Beast, there have been many of them in

history! However their achievements and levels have all been greatly different.”

“Some Golden Horned Beast just bank on their inheritance and reach the pinnacle of sector lords, living out their life spans and dying!”

“Other Golden Horned Beast, rely totally on their talents and waste their life spans. Only through experiencing setbacks will one realize and work hard and train! However as the time wasted before was too long, many have been unable to become undying beings.”

“Only very few Golden Horned Beasts realize early enough that talent is just one side of it, hardwork was important too! Only these Golden Horned Beast will actually train techniques like Absolute space and Nine Layer Space Ripping to a high level, and eventually stepping into the undying level! And some Golden Horned Beast undying even create new techniques and become the heroes of the entire race.”

“Sector lord pinnacle! Undying! Absolute peak even amongst the undying!”

“Which do you want to become?”

“If you only want to reach the pinnacle of sector lords, then just play around everyday. Back in the Pacific Ocean when you risked it all and gambled to possess the Golden Horned Beast body, it was already set for you to become the pinnacle of sector lords, it’s not

hard at all for you.”

“Wanting to become an undying? Then you have to be incredibly hardworking!”

“An absolute warrior even amongst the undying, stronger than your teacher! That requires hard work, ferocity, comprehension etc, all the elements.”

“Which do you choose?”

Babata berated Luo Feng, causing him to realize and awaken.

What he said was indeed correct, Hong and Thunder God had their domains when they were in the star traveller level, back then he was easily defeated by the white robed lady, a star level 1 who already understood the laws!

In terms of talent, maybe humans couldn’t be compared to the Golden Horned Beast.

However the amount of human races in the universe were too many, with such numbers, this meant that the amount of geniuses with incredible comprehension was extremely high too!

“The Golden Horned Beast’s talents, are heavenly by themselves! I have to compare myself with the pinnacle of geniuses amongst the human race in the universe!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“Golden Horned Beast?”

“There have been many generations of Golden Horned Beasts, I want to become the strongest of them all.” Luo Feng felt a surge in ambition, the beast’s large golden pupils gleamed with golden light, “My teacher back then actually managed to possess a ‘Long Ke’ youth’s body, I actually managed to get a Golden Horned Beast’s body! My teacher relied on himself and created the Soul imprint technique. I have the Golden Horned Beast and the Yun Mo Planet’s techniques, all of their information!”

“Talent, information, I have everything!”

“Willpower, I have it too!”

“Comprehension, I’m not too bad!”

“I have everything, then my most basic point will be reaching the undying level first, after which, becoming an absolute warrior amongst the undying! Stronger than even the undying that killed my teacher!” Luo Feng looked to the future with anticipation.

The Golden Horned Beast lay underground on Mars, with its entire body covered in scales and on them the peculiar engravings, this made the Golden Horned Beast which had calmed down emit a peculiar ripple of energy!

This was a kind of ripple from the vast universe!

However, this ripple seemed to be covered and obscured by layers and layers of gauze, making it very hard and tedious for Luo Feng to feel it completely. However, this alone made Babata very shocked because under normal circumstances, only after reaching a 8 or 9 layer domain will one be able to vaguely feel these ripples.

And Luo Feng, who only had a 1 layer domain, was already able to sense it somewhat.

……

Golden Horned Beast, it could feel the origin laws in the internal world, the golden continent, that universe origin's ripple, it seems it became clearer within.

Time passed like flowing water.

One month after another…

In the later days.

The 1st batch of earth's migrants form the 5 great countries summed up to about 80,000 people. Luo Feng had bought a planet called Jade Rainbow star within the Silver Blue Empire galaxy, and it had about a hundred million natives. This first batch of earth's humans were arranged to be sent there.

……

Once the arrangements were all settled, Luo Feng immersed himself deep in his training.

His human body was focused on the 10,000 blade soul imprint, also spending time and energy on the soaring shuttle. As for the Golden Horned Beast, it was completely immersed in the domain and laws.

In a flash, it was already year 2065! 2 years had passed.

China year 2065, October 25th, Luo Feng's training grounds on Mars.

Within the universe ship's spacious study, a dark green nutrition cabin was placed there, suddenly, the doors opened and a human body...a full nude human body with three inches of black short hair, a man! Luo Feng quickly put on a layer of armor and boots and flew out of the nutrition cabin.

"2 years of work, finally stepping into the star level 7." Luo Feng smiled, "This e grade nutrition cabin is indeed not bad."

"How's your training on the Spatial Techniques?" Babata's voice resounded within the ship.

"No headway."

Luo Feng shook his head “The Spatial Techniques are too hard, I haven’t made any progress at all.”

Two years ago in the world within a world, Luo Feng began working on the 10,000 blade soul imprint, this technique belonged to the Yu Mo Planet Soul Imprint techniques as was one of the more basic ones, it still however took more than a year, close to two, for Luo Feng to make a big step with it!

Training the 10,000 blade soul imprint made the training of the Slave soul imprint much easier to achieve!

And during this time, Babata had passed Luo Feng another technique, saying this: “Luo Feng, even though your teacher didn’t fully comprehend the origin laws of space, he still made huge achievements with the space laws! Even to the point of travelling through dark universes and being able to shroud them and camouflage. This, even amongst the undying, only very few can do that!”

“Even though you have the Golden Horned Beast, however you can only feel the origin laws of gold now!”

“What’s more, the space laws, are originally the hardest law in the universe to feel and comprehend, just like the time laws, they are the 2 deepest and hardest laws in the universe.

“Hence…”

“Right now you’ve had a little step in the soul imprint, the 10,000 blade soul imprint and slave soul imprint has succeeded. You even have your own domain! You can barely begin to feel the spatial techniques, start from the simplest, the spatial techniques, right from the entrance, every step will be tedious and hard.”

“However, you’ve trained in the Golden Horned Beast’s Absolute space, maybe that’ll make your entrance into this spatial techniques somewhat easier.”

“Work hard!”

“The origin laws are the main path!”

“The origin laws of gold, you can let the Golden Horned Beast train. The spatial techniques, will be your future main training!” Babata was filled with anticipation before, he thought that with the Golden Horned Beast’s talents, it should be easier.

But what a pity, after months of training, nothing was achieved.

Even the entrance wasn’t reached, accurately speaking, he never even touched the door.

“Babata, this spatial technique, the entrance alone is incomparably tough.” Luo Feng said.

“Don’t get discouraged, if a few months won’t do, then take a few years! If a few years won’t do, then take decades and hundreds of years! Take your time.” Babata smiled, “Maybe I was too demanding, the spatial techniques, normally only sector lords would find it easier to train. However the earlier you succeed, the stronger it will be later.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Right, Luo Feng. The army from the Nuolan Shan family, according to time calculation, should reach within the next 10 days! Including discrepancies and errors, their universe ship may still very likely appear in the solar system in the next few days.” Babata reminded.

Chapter 9 – Luo Feng And Bai Kaluo

"Nuolan Shan family?" Luo Feng smiled, "I've been waiting for them for too long."

2 years 8 months ago, they had already known about the Nuolan Shan family passing through the wormhole, headed towards earth!

With so much time, Luo Feng had made ample preparations.

"Full of confidence!"

Babata's mocking voice resounded within the universe ship, "Right, Luo Feng, it's time we returned to earth."

"No rush." Luo Feng shook his head, "The golden horned beast is currently training Deity of the World, it can't stop at this time, let's wait awhile more, I'll take the chance to go train a little in the slaughterhouse battle arena, it's been sometime since I went there."

"Slaughterhouse Battle arena? There's no challenge there for you."

"Against higher levels, there's going to be some challenge." Luo Feng smiled, sitting down cross legged and closing his eyes, his consciousness entered the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe network, Black Dragon Mountain island, within one of the battle arenas of the slaughterhouse.

It was an endless desert.

In it stood 2 men, one of which had green scales on his face, a single horn on his forehead and he had 2 battle knives crossed on his back, he stared coldly at his opponent. His opponent was one dressed in a white battle robe, with silver long hair and silver eyes, a handsome man.

“100 blades?” The silver haired man chuckled, “You actually dare to battle against someone of a higher level, I will let you know…the difference between a universe level 8 and 9!”

“Hmph.” The green scaled man snorted and this made the silver haired man’s expression change.

Rumble! Rumble!

The green scaled man and the silver haired man suddenly became 2 beams of lights and clashed.

……

Within one of the quiet rooms of the slaughterhouse.

Nuolan Shan who was dressed in dark green battle uniform was

chatting with another in a grey long robe, a screen floated before them and it was displaying the fight between the green scaled man and the silver haired man.

“Bai Kaluo’s strength has risen a lot from before.” The man in the grey long robe complimented, his eyes long and narrow, smiling as he said.

“Bai Kaluo’s talent, willpower and comprehension is the highest and best amongst all my disciples.” Nuolan Shan said proudly, “Even though I have the Battle-axe title, back when I was universe level 8, I probably didn’t even have his current strength.”

“Such a high assessment?” The man in the grey robe said shocked, “Then you think he can win this battle?”

“He can win!” Nuolan Shan nodded.

“His opponent is a universe level 9.” The man in the grey robe said.

“Just watch!” Nuolan Shan said confidently.

On the screen, the green scaled Bai Kaluo was engaged in an extremely intense battle with his opponent.

Strong green winds were circling about, Bai Kaluo was almost like a child of the wind, his entire body had become a spinning top, constantly spinning, his knives in his hands became flashes of

light, cutting at the silver haired man. The silver haired man's form was extremely elegant, white light surrounded his body and his entire being was almost like a sun, he controlled a thread like spirit weapon and constantly surrounded Bai Kaluo.

"10 blades!"

The green scaled man's expression was malevolent, shouting out.

The knives suddenly became 10 beams of light!

"50 blades!" Another shout.

That snow white light of the knives duplicated even more, flashes of light from the blades seemed to form a lotus flower, every blade and its reflection like a petal of the lotus.

Hiss...

The thread like weapon was dancing about in the surroundings, attacking at Bai Kaluo time and again.

"100 blades!!!"

Bai Kaluo shouted.

"Rumble..." An extremely glaring flash of the blades, suddenly

formed, almost like a tsunami, one that was formed from the reflection and flashes from a 100 blades, immediately swallowing up the silver haired man, his eyes were filled with shock and fear, he couldn't believe what was happening and with a crash, his entire body was destroyed.

Bai Kaluo, the man with green scales all over his face snorted coldly and vanished from the battle arena.

……

"Beautiful!" The silver long robed man revealed an expression of delight as he shouted gleefully.

"What do you think, I didn't exaggerate did I." Nuolan Shan smiled.

"It is indeed beautiful, your disciple is too powerful." The man's face was flushed red with excitement, "His knife skills and wind domain, have already fused perfectly together. Also the speed of the blades get quicker as time passes! The later it gets, the stronger his attacks become, finally crushing that universe level 9 altogether!"

"Right."

Nuolan Shan nodded, "Bai Kaluo's strong point, is that as he unleashes this technique and time passes, it would get stronger and stronger! However his weakness is very obvious... during the time

it takes to reach its full power, its strength isn't too powerful. If the opponent takes that opportunity, he would have a high chance of beating him!"

"Haha, don't be too harsh! Your disciple uses two blades which spin continuously. And with his wind domain, and his agility... wanting to attack him at the start is hard too. And the moment his blade technique is unleashed, it'll be over." The man in the grey robe laughed, "Not bad, not bad at all."

"Can he pass?" Nuolan Shan looked at him.

"No problem! I'll pass this footage to the lord when I get back. I believe...placing Bai Kaluo as one of our special elites in the Hundred Tiger Building shouldn't be a problem." The grey robed man smiled.

Nuolan Shan's smile deepened.

After awhile.

There was only Nuolan Shan left in the room, "Peng! Peng! Peng!" There were knocks on the door.

"Enter." Nuolan Shan shouted.

The door opened, a black robed Bai Kaluo, along with the pointy eared De Wen entered.

“Ancestor (Teacher).” De Wen and Bai Kaluo bowed respectfully.

“Hm.”

Nuolan Shan looked up at the two before him, the black robed Bai Kaluo with a face full of green scales, made his entire exterior look cold. However Nuolan Shan fancied it more as he looked, “Bai Kaluo, I’ve just arranged with the Hundred Tiger Building to place you as a special elite to be nurtured.”

“Thank you teacher.” Bai Kaluo bowed slightly.

“Yes.”

Nuolan Shan turned to look at De Wen, “De Wen, you and Bai Kaluo should be reaching earth soon.”

“Ancestor, we are really close to earth now, I estimate that we will reach in 3 days.” De Wen’s eyes were filled with anticipation, after travelling for 2 years and 8 months, naturally he was anxious.

“Very good.” Nuolan Shan was excited.

“Bai Kaluo, “Nuolan Shan looked at him.

“Teacher.” Bai Kaluo replied respectfully.

“Remember, the first goal of heading into earth...acquire that automaton ship! Don’t arouse or disturb the armies of earth, or even that Luo Feng. First acquire that ship! That is the priority!” Nuolan Shan’s expression was serious, “When you’ve acquired that ship, if you get the chance, get rid of that Luo Feng.”

“Yes!”

Bai Kaluo and De Wen replied respectfully.

“Go on, I’ll await your good news.” Nuolan Shan smiled.

Bai Kaluo and De Wen left immediately.

Simultaneously when Bai Kaluo had just concluded his battle, within the slaughterhouse battle arena.

“Break!”

Luo Feng looked at his opponent, a golden swordfish formed a beautiful arc, leaving people enticed from its shocking beauty, the swordfish had already pierced through the opponent’s head.

Crazy, victory!

“Break!”

Covered in the golden domain, the gold swordfish was extremely excited, it jumped around, shook about and waved its tail, immediately forming a beautiful arc, easily piercing through what seemed like an impenetrable defense, right through the opponent's forehead.

Crazy, victory!

"Break!"

"Break!"

"Break!"

.....

The reputation of Crazy was widespread within the Black Dragon Mountain island slaughterhouse.

"Crazy, is a powerful nine star rated fighter, battling against higher levels in every battle!

His earlier self was only a star level 6 spirit reader, he however had already cleared and demolished all within his level, when he stepped into the star level 7, he swiftly reached the 9 star grade and was invincible within his own level, even when he battled against higher levels, he had a 99% winning percentage.

Incredible terrifying!

Within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, there were already many powers taking note of this genius! Whether it was the 4 leviathans, or the 2 sacred lands, they all extended their invitations and hands to this absolute genius...

However, this genius called Crazy didn't bother with them at all.

"It's over, I'll stop here." Luo Feng smiled, vanishing from the battle arena.

Mars.

Within the ship, sitting crossed legged, Luo Feng opened his eyes.

"The slaughterhouse in Black Dragon Mountain starfield, not much of a challenge at all." Luo Feng exclaimed.

"What are you proud of? You use the golden horned beast, with a 4 layer domain, and comprehension of the golden universe laws. You must know...even in the huge axe dojo, like that universe level death battle, if any one began to comprehend the universe laws, it would be instant victory!"

"You comprehend the laws and have a 4 layer domain!"

“Even more importantly, your consciousness level far exceeds those of the same level, because your consciousness is that of the golden horned beast.”

“Domain, universe laws, consciousness level, all incredibly strong. What’s so strange about being invincible within the same level in the Black Dragon Mountain star field?”

“If you want to compete, compete with all the geniuses in the Ganwu empire, compete with all the geniuses of the universe!”

Babata can’t stand it when Luo Feng gets cocky, so he jumps in to knock him down time and again.

Luo Feng grinned, immediately flying out of the universe ship and landing on the surface of Mars.

“Rumble…”

In the distance was an incredibly huge, beast that was hard to see end to end, covered in black scales, breaking out from the ground! It’s eyes were cold and brutal, they gleamed gold as it looked at Luo Feng, after which, the space beast vanished and entered into Luo Feng’s internal world.

“Deity of the World, it’s really hard to train!”

“Luckily from the world within a world, I got a shocking amount of wealth and was able to afford all these valuable materials. No

wonder so many golden horned beast only manage to finish the first level with their entire life span.” Luo Feng exclaimed and shook his head before flying swiftly back into the ship.

Rumble...

The universe ship took off and left mars as it headed towards earth.

Chapter 10 – Master

Earth, Asia Continent, China's Yangzhou city.

Luo Feng put away the universe ship and headed towards the lower end of the Westlake courtyard, it was about the evening, the red sun was in the west side of the sky, shining down on the yellow grass patch below. On the grass patch however was an extra large alloy stage, on it were two boys with knives in their hands, engaged in battle.

Rumble! Rumble!

The air exploded about, their speed alone created sonic booms.

"Stop!" Beside the stage, a bald simple and kind man with thick lips smiled, there was even a peculiar marking on his bald head, similar to Buddhists with various types of markings on their heads.

The two boys stopped.

The bald headed thick lipped man slightly bowed, their eyes filled with pure respect, "Master."

"Di Fan, it's been hard on you." Luo Feng descended, his boots landing beside the stage.

"Daddy!"

“Daddy!” Luo Hai and Luo Ping, their eyes gleamed as they shouted in glee and ran towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng laughed as he looked as his two children, two years had passed and his two children had gotten even more exceptional. With enough capital to nurture them with the best, along with the techniques from both the Golden Horned Beast inheritance and the Yun Mo Planet, his two children received the optimum training and nurture.

Right now, the two children were already comparable to advanced level wargods.

This level may seem exaggerated on earth, however in the universe, it wasn’t much.

6 or 7 year old children with better bloodlines, even without special nurturing, would usually reach the star traveller level at this age.

“How have these two’s performance recently been?” Luo Feng smiled as he looked at the bald thick lipped Di Fan.

“The two masters have been working hard, their knifework foundation is very solid.” Di Fan complimented.

“Daddy, you heard it.”

“We have been working very hard.”

The two children said proudly.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh, “You two go play first, I have something to discuss with uncle Di Fan.”

“Ok.”

The two nodded and exchanged glances, their eyes filled glee as they headed swiftly towards the castle. To them, to be able to enter the virtual universe and play games was an extremely happy time. There were many other children similar in age to them.

“Di Fan, how has your training recently been?” Luo Feng smiled and asked.

“The soul cutter technique master has given me is incomparably deep, I just made a little progress recently, but...I still have many areas which I haven’t understood.” Di Fan said respectfully.

“Tell me.” Luo Feng said.

“Please shed some light on these.” Di Fan said respectfully, “This soul cutter first level, concerning the spirit reading energy fusing with the blade...”

Di Fan asked and Luo Feng answered.

Accurately speaking, it was Babata answering, because the soul cutter technique was an extremely strong technique from the Yun Mo Planet, it was something the Yun Mo Master had come across by chance at a historical remain, so there weren't any particular requirements to train it. And the soul imprint technique required him to transfer his soul first.

The soul cutter's training experience, Babata remembered it all clearly.

Hence when Di Fan met any problems, Babata could answer and Luo Feng would communicate on his behalf.

"This Di Fan..."

After Luo Feng had finished, he pondered deeply while looking at Di Fan before him, exclaiming within, "I got lucky to be able to buy such a slave."

Yes!

Di Fan was a slave Luo Feng had bought, a universe level 9 slave!

In the vast universe, relying on the living microchip control technique, one could at most control up to a universe level 9 slave, that was because the moment one broke through to the domain lord level...a domain lord could easily break the microchip within his brain and not die, hence, the highest level available was only

universe level 9.

Of which, a universe level 1 slave's price was usually around 10 million to 30 million universe dollars. Comparable to about 10 life planets in price.

And a universe level 4 slave was priced around 1hundred million to 3 hundred million universe dollars.

Universe level 7 slaves were priced around 1 billion to 3 billion universe dollars.

Universe level 8 slaves were about 3 billion to 10 billion universe dollars.

A universe level 9 slave too was about 3 billion to 10 billion universe dollars.

As to why there was hardly any difference between a universe level 8 and 9, this was because...buying a universe level 9 slave came with risks! Even though it was extremely hard for a universe 9 to breakthrough to the domain lord level, there was still a possibility...one never knew and the universe level 9 slave might just breakthrough.

Breaking through to the domain lord level, regaining control from the living microchip!

It was very likely that in his rage, he would kill the master that

controlled him! In the universe, universe level 9s that broke through and killed their masters out of rage, has happened many times, which resulted in the price of a universe level 9 and 8 not having much difference in price.

Di Fan, a universe level 9 slave, to be able to train until universe level 9, it showed that his talent was indeed high.

Back when Luo Feng bought Di Fan from the slave trader, the slave trader even warned him, “Sir, these universe level 9 slaves come with high risks, the moment he breaks through, no one will be able to control him. Why not you first by a universe level 8 slave. Even though its 1 level down, it’s much safer, when it actually rises up to universe level 9, you can sell him and you wouldn’t have made any losses!”

“I’ll buy him!” Luo Feng didn’t even hesitate.

After buying Di Fan, Luo Feng unleashed his Golden Horned Beast body, through that body he used his newly trained Slave Soul imprint on him, ordering Di Fan and making him unable to resist.

As a slave, Di Fan naturally wouldn’t resist!

Just like that...

Luo Feng used the slave soul imprint and planted it within Di Fan’s soul, deep in his very essence. From that point on...Di Fan would become Luo Feng’s most loyal slave, because this was a

loyalty from the depths of his soul!

"Using the slave soul imprint to control people also affects your soul, your teacher, could only control 9 great undying slaves, hence, you have to value quality over quantity!" Babata reminded Luo Feng.

"Understood."

Luo Feng trained the soul imprint technique, carefully reading everything about it and its uses along with its effects etc, of course he was clear…choosing a slave, he had to be extremely prudent and cautious. This was because he was controlling this slave via his soul, with the link between their souls, the master could completely control the slave, but the slave could also affect the master.

"Di Fan became a slave from early on, as a slave, he trained under very poor conditions, but he still managed to train to this level. I've also checked on his background…he is worthy of becoming one of my soul slaves."

Di Fan, Luo Feng's 1st true slave!

The Nuolan Shan family's universe ship could arrive on earth at any time, hence Luo Feng didn't return into the nutrition cabin again, patiently waiting on earth for their arrival.

……

China, Year 2065 28th October, Solar system area.

A streamlined ship with an axe head, a d3 grade universe ship, was almost like a shooting star, heading towards the solar system.

Within the control room of the ship.

Dressed in a black robe, Bai Kala was with the blue robed De Wen, they stood side by side at the control board. The external image simulator allowed the 2 to clearly see the beautiful solar system outside, surrounding that glaring star, planets orbited around perpetually, one of which was a very small and unremarkable blue planet that drew their attention.

“Earth!” Bai Kaluo said coldly.

“Yes, earth, we’ve arrived.” A smile appeared on De Wen’s face, he turned to look at Bai Kaluo, “Bai Kaluo, you remember what teacher said, we’ll first avoid arousing the humans of earth and secretly acquire the automaton ship!”

“I know.” Bai Kaluo replied coldly.

De Wen wasn’t too happy with the response but he smiled and nodded.

……

At this time, within the solar system, on a few scattered asteroids, there were a few of them that were actually installed there. Actually throughout the entire solar system, there were many installed with surveillance systems. One could say...that the entire solar system was incomparably secure. Unless something like an automaton ship with that level of technology arrived, otherwise to go through the solar system undetected...that was impossible!

On one of the asteroids that was randomly placed.

“Du, du du...”

The signal swiftly captured the scene and was sent to the core of the entire planet’s defense and surveillance system...Luo Feng’s castle.

Signals came in from everywhere.

This d3 grade ship was scanned and it’s image captured entirely and clearly.

Earth, China night time, about 7pm.

The sky had long gone dark.

The entire Yang Zhou city was bustling, the lights glaring, and as

the the sacred land of countless fighters...Luo Feng's Westlake courtyard was filled with laughter.

Luo Feng and his family were surrounding the table and having dinner.

Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan and his younger brother Luo Hua with his wife and kids, along with Luo Feng's wife and 2 children, also there was also his 1st slave Di Fan, altogether.

"Uncle Di Fan, I really did train my knife skills for an hour this afternoon, right." Little Hai shouted.

"Yes." Di Fan smiled and nodded.

"Mum, you heard it." Little Hai moved his eyebrows, looking at his mother beside Xu Xin.

Luo Feng looked at his son's adorable behavior, he couldn't help but smile, suddenly his quantum computer on his arm started beeping, "Di, di, di..."

"Hm?" Luo Feng's expression changed.

This was an alarm system he had set up long before, the moment something happened within the planet's surveillance system, it would alarm him.

Luo Feng looked down and a screen appeared from his quantum computer, a streamlined shaped universe ship with an axe head was swiftly flying through the solar system, heading towards earth.

“They’ve arrived.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“Dad, Mum, you all eat first, I have something to attend to.” Luo Feng stood up.

“You have so many things to do.” Luo Hong Guo said,

Luo Feng smiled, at the same time patting his two childrens’ heads, holding his wife’s hand, saying softly, “Xu Xin, I’ll be going out for awhile, probably be back tomorrow morning.”

“Be careful.” Xu Xin said.

His family were all clear that Luo Feng would occasionally have important matters to attend to, and times when he would shut himself away for half a month, hence for him to be able to have dinner with them was a rare occasion. As for Luo Feng leaving suddenly, they were used to it already, the only thing was...dinner wasn’t finished yet, hence his father Luo Hong Guo had to mention it.

“Di Fan.” Luo Feng gave him a look.

Di Fan stood up too.

The 2 swiftly left the castle.

Sou! Sou!

The 2 rushed into the sky, heading straight towards the air above Yang Zhou city, a black disc shaped universe ship suddenly appeared in mid air and Luo Feng and Di Fan entered it, immediately changing into their alloy armors and boots etc.

Rumble!

The universe ship accelerated and headed straight through the atmosphere, swiftly leaving earth and into space.

Battle!

If it were to happen, it would have to happen in space. A universe level battle...to a small planet, is a disaster.

Chapter 11 – Intense Space Battle

The black disc shaped universe shipped became a beam of light and swiftly pierced through the stratosphere of earth and into space.

Within the universe ship's control room.

Luo Feng stood expressionless at the control board screen, behind him stood his slave Di Fan. The 2 had on their alloy armors…They gleamed under the light of the control room.

"How much longer before they arrive." Luo Feng said towards the screen.

A little devil head appeared on the screen: "If that d3 grade ship maintains its speed, it will take about 8 hours 49 minutes to reach earth."

"8 hours 49 minutes?" Luo Feng smiled, "Then let's go welcome them!"

"Yes!"

The entire ship immediately began to accelerate, even though its acceleration was extremely fast, because there was an automatic gravitational force adjustment within the ship's system, it made it as though it maintained earth's gravity force all the way.

The ship headed towards the outer rims of the solar system!

And the ship that the 2nd ancestor head De Wen and Nuolan Shan's most exceptional disciple Bai Kaluo, that d3 grade ship was heading towards earth.

The two were swiftly closing the distance!

……

Within the d3 grade streamline shaped ship within an axe head's control room.

"Senior, have you informed teacher?" Bai Kaluo said coldly, entirely dressed in a black robe.

"Yes, the head ancestor knows we've reached the solar system, he's extremely happy." De Wen's handsome face revealed a smile, "The head ancestor even said…he will maintain communication and stay on the line in the virtual universe network as he awaits our good news."

"Ok."

Bai Kaluo nodded.

"Di! Di! Di!"

An ear piercing alarm resounded within the control room, immediately De Wen's expression changed.

"Warning, warning, the surveillance system has detected a universe ship flying towards us! It's heading towards us!" A loud and piercing voice resounded within the control room.

"What!" De Wen's expression changed greatly.

"Universe ship?" Bai Kaluo was shocked too.

The universe was too vast, for a structure like a universe ship, if it were too distant from one's location in space, it was simply like specks of dust. Bai Kaluo and De Wen had no way to see with their eyes or discover tens of millions of kilometers away there was another ship with a diameter of a 100m.

.....

The disc shaped universe ship's control room, Luo Feng calmly looked at the screen.

"Rail gun cannon activate." Luo Feng said.

"Understood!" The demon Babata on the screen began its activation.

Immediately the entire upper front portion of the ship's surface

moved, below its first layer of energy shields, its alloy material moved and formed an indentation, revealing a silver, malevolent 6m wide cannon head. The cannon head began to extend out past the energy shield.

Du...

The cannon mouth began to make slight changes, light began to gather at the depths of the tip, the space around seemed to slightly begin to warp.

“Energy activation, countdown, 60, 59, 58, 57...10, 9, 8, 7...3, 2, 1! Activation complete!”

The sound reverberated from the control board throughout the entire control room.

“Babata, grab the chance and destroy them in one blow!” Luo Feng ordered.

“Haha, leave it to me.” The little demon on the screen was extremely proud.

Rail gun canon!

This was one of the presents Luo Feng had prepared for the Nuolan Shan family army, with the early detection, he had known that the ship was only a d3 grade universe ship. Hence over these 2 years, Luo Feng spent a large amount of wealth...and bought a 260

billion universe dollar d5 grade rail gun cannon.

d5 grade rail gun cannon!

Any technological based weapon that reached the c grade would already belong to the heavenly grade. It was hard through normal routes! Also these technological based weapons had very exorbitant prices. Even though he could obtain it from the upcoming auction at a lower price, he couldn't wait any longer.

Hence...

Through a very well connected with a huge back ground company that dealt with special items, he spent 260 billion universe dollars and bought a d5 grade rail gun cannon.

In a galaxy like the milky way, to be able to reach the price of 260 billion universe dollars was already not bad.

It was obvious that Luo Feng had spent a lot of money! And this was also after Luo Feng had spent a large amount of money before at this place, hence... they agreed to help him get a d5 grade rail gun cannon. Otherwise without the earlier patronage, this shop wouldn't even have helped Luo Feng get such a high level weapon.

As for the huge amount of money spent before...

It was for Luo Feng's training of Deity of the world, buying all the incomparably valuable materials!

The money spent on those materials was much more than the amount spent on the cannon.

Many Golden Horned Beasts, till death, only managed to train to the 1st level of Deity of the world, obviously the price and wealth required to train this was extremely high! The Golden Horned Beast, normally were the pinnacle of sector lords, with 3 separate bodies! Hence Luo Feng could buy these materials through the human world markets, these Golden Horned Beasts too would naturally create a human body and use it to buy metals in the human market!

As for the pinnacle of sector lord strength, the wealth behind it was shocking, however most were still only at level 1 of the technique!

The training of the deity of the world was to allow the Golden Horned Beast to shrink its body, it's bone and muscle density etc increasing in density too, causing its strength to rise greatly. Normally the younger one began to train, the easier it was. Similar to human children being more malleable in training, the stronger and bigger the body, the harder it was to shrink after.

Hence...

For a universe level Golden Horned Beast, training was a little easier. However even so, to fully complete the 1st level alone required a large amount of valuable materials and Luo Feng was still short of 2 of them.

These materials were more valuable, extremely rare!

Luo Feng had bought these 2 materials at the Rare items shop and spent a huge amount of his wealth on them, hence the shop valued this super client of theirs! Thus they were willing to help get him the d5 grade rail gun cannon!

“Railgun Cannon!”

“Fire!”

Within the control room, Babata’s excited roar resounded about.

……

Space.

The d3 grade universe ship had already detected the black disc shaped universe ship drawing closer and closer.

“It’s a c9 grade ship.” De Wen creased his eyebrows, “Can we shake them?”

“Master, we are flying towards earth, they are flying from earth, no matter where we change our direction to, they’ll still easily get closer to us, we cannot shake them!” On the screen, the voice of the AI spoke, “Also, for us to change our speeds too would require

quite a bit of time.”

Even though a universe ship could reach light speed, it would still require quite some time to accelerate to reach the limit speed, light speed.

And for the ship to accelerate or reduce its speed etc, it couldn’t do it immediately.

This made it easy for the other side to close in!

“If we weren’t heading to earth, it’d be easy to shake them.” The AI said.

“Don’t bother with that ship!” Bai Kaluo ordered coldly, “A c9 grade universe ship cannot affect us.”

“This ship must be under Luo Feng.” De Wen creased his eyebrows, “Right now, I’m afraid he already knows we are here. The head ancestor ordered us to secretly acquire the automaton ship.”

“Since we’ve already been discovered, there’s no longer a need to hide.” Bai Kaluo said coldly, “Continue advancing towards earth.”

Bai Kaluo and De Wen had only debated for a few seconds.

“Rumble!”

A rail gun cannon wave that was hard to see with the naked eye, leaving only a slight wave behind it in space, hit the d3 grade universe ship at light speed. Without any preparation or defense, getting attacked by the rail gun cannon...the d3 grade universe ship's scanning system, which was only at max light speed!

At the same moment the d3 grade ship receives the signal! The shot will have already hit the universe ship!

"Pu!"

The streamlined ship with a huge axe head immediately got torn a big hole in its side, piercing right through the mid portion of the ship and exiting the other side, which caused the ship that was still flying at high speed to tear apart with large amounts of alloy scrap dispersing in all directions, making a pile of rubbish within that area of the solar system.

From the control room scraps, 2 human silhouettes swiftly flew out.

Floating in space.

It was De Wen and Bai Kaluo.

"How can that be?" De Wen stared wide eyed.

“We got shot by a cannon, how is that possible!” The black robed Bai Kaluo raged.

“A light speed long distance weapon that exceeds the d3 grade, this, this is definitely a heavenly grade, in price, it’s even comparable to the level 5 spirit weapons or genetic energy weapons! Even sector lords...normally wouldn’t be able to spend such money, buying such a d grade rail gun cannon!” De Wen shook his head, his face in disbelief, “On earth, how can there be a d grade rail gun cannon that even sector lords cannot afford to buy?”

The d grade rail gun cannon, to a sector lord, even though they could afford it, they still hardly ever bought one. That was because a sector lord’s strike alone far exceeded that of a d grade cannon.

And without a sector lord’s strength, those that could afford a d grade cannon were extremely rare.

“That’s not possible!” De Wen’s face was filled with panic.

“Let’s not worry about this. Without the ship...for us to fly to earth would take a good half a year!” Bai Kaluo said coldly.

Rumble...

From the distant space, at light speed a ship closed in.

“De Wen, the enemy is here!” Bai Kaluo communicated via

genetic energy.

“Hm?” De Wen looked up.

A black disc shaped universe ship swiftly closed in, the peculiar thing was however..the ship was constantly slowing down, finally stopping a few hundred km away from their position, the cabin door then opened automatically and a human silhouette swiftly exited and rushed towards them.

A few hundred km, he closed it in a blink of an eye!

This was the bald headed thick lipped, seeming kind and honest man dressed in black armor.

“So fast.” De Wen was shocked.

“Rumble...”

A silver arc knife sliced through, so swift the universe level 6 De Wen couldn’t dodge, his eyes filled with fear, staring wide eyed.

“Tear!”

His head exploded!

Nuolan Shan’s 2nd ancestor head De Wen Nuolan Shan, has died!

The silver knife’s speed didn’t slow down at all, immediately heading towards the black robed Bai Kaluo.

Chapter 12 – Sword Clan

Without a sound or trace, Bai Kaluo's black robe flowed like water swiftly and vanished within his body, revealing his intrepid and malevolent body, he, with a green alloy armor, with scales as its construct, layers and layers of scales added together, and his face too was covered in green scales, without a single strand of hair on his head, only green skin.

His forehead had a peculiar arc, sharp and almost like a blade!

His entire body from head to toe was all green! On his back he carried two battle knives crossed!

"Clang"

His lightning fast draw created a dreamy after image, at the same time, with the knives in his hand, he parried that silver sword attack, immediately slowing it down.

Within the universe ship control room, through the external image simulator, Luo Feng could clearly see the exchange between the two, when Bai Kaluo revealed his true face, Luo Feng was shocked.

"Sword clan!" From the screen of the control board, the demon Babata was shocked.

"Sword clan?" Luo Feng said with shock.

“Right, sword clan, this person. His features seem to match that of the sword clan.”

“Sword clan, a very renowned and famed race, initially, the sword clan planet was an aboriginal planet! However, even though they were an aboriginal planet, when they were discovered by a universe empire, they already had a domain lord and 12 universe levels...the sword clan people, as long as they reach maturity, they’ll become star travellers.

This was a very strong planet.

However, as they hadn’t developed their technology, they didn’t have universe ships and hence the sword clan people had always remained on their planet. And after entering the universe, they slowly grew. Even before they entered the universe, they had explorer experience and traditions, every mature member had to explore and risk their lives on the planet.

And after entering the universe, every matured clan member would explore the universe and go through life or death missions!

The sword clan people don’t seem to bother much about power or luxury, they seemed to only chase the path of getting stronger. Some would become disciples of absolute warriors, or go to other powers to learn techniques...

This made many absolute warriors within the sword clan!

In the history of the sword clan, undying beings, sector lords, they were all there. Hence the sword clan was a race very renowned within the human races of the universe." Babata explained in detail.

"Oh?" Luo Feng was somewhat shocked.

"Star traveller at maturity, in the human races, that wasn't too strong a race. However the sword clan, the reason why they had such a reputation was their personality!" Babata said, "Because of their unwavering determination, working hard to constantly grow stronger. This personality and trait is within their bones, hence they've produced so many powerful warriors."

While Luo Feng was shocked at the sword clan, simultaneously in space, The universe level 9 Di Fan was engaged in a mad battle with Bai Kaluo.

Di Fan stood in space controlling his spirit weapon!

A green violent wind surrounded Bai Kaluo's surroundings, causing his body to appear blurry, his two battle knives had already reached their limit speed, mixed in with the ferocious wind domain, forming a continuous blade storm.

"Clang clang clang!!!"

That arc blade clashed with the snow white blade over and over,

causing Di Fan's face to reveal shock, the sword clan man was obviously only a universe level 8, however relying on these two knives he's managed to block all his spirit weapon attacks.

"100 knives!" Bai Kaluo shouted malevolently.

Rumble!

A large amount of snow white blades overlapped each other, forming a bladestorm that filled the surroundings, quickly engulfing Di Fan, with a peng sound, the huge wave of blades came crashing down on him, Di Fan's face was pale.

"Hm?" Bai Kaluo revealed shock, Di Fan had managed to block his final attack.

"This bastard..." Di Fan squinted his eyes, shouting, "Soul blade cutter!"

A formless spirit attack immediately formed a blade that was invisible to the naked eye, swiftly piercing through Bai Kaluo's consciousness.

Chi!

Bai Kaluo's eyes seemed to dim a little before recovering, staring hard at Di Fan.

“He actually blocked it.” Di Fan was extremely shocked.

Within the universe ship, Luo Feng too couldn’t help but exclaim.

“He actually blocked it.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

This Bai Kaluo was a true genius!

A universe level 8, able to rely on two blades to forcefully block a universe level 9’s spirit weapon. This in itself was incredible! However...at that, Luo Feng was only complimenting, not too shocked. This was because Di Fan’s true skill wasn’t in his control of a spirit weapon, he was best at his soul attacks.

Along with the training of the soul cutter technique, even though he had only barely grasped it, its power was shocking.

A universe level 9 spirit reader, unleashing the soul cutter, and it was actually blocked by a universe level 8!

“Shocking willpower.” On the screen, the demon shouted excitedly, “His willpower is too shocking, this Bai Kaluo is a universe level 8 fighter, and also a universe level 8 spirit reader. However that Di Fan’s soul cutter’s power is huge, even same level opponents would find it hard to block, but he actually managed it.”

“Willpower! He has incredible and shocking willpower!” The demon said, “Luo Feng, quickly, use the slave soul imprint and

keep him! He will definitely be a slave even more exceptional than Di Fan!”

“Keep him?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Every single slave had to be considered greatly before.

“I can guarantee that he definitely has the standard of the Battle-axe fighter, even compared to his teacher, if they were the same level, his teacher Nuolan Shan may not even be his match.” The demon Babata howled, “His domain is strong, his knife skills are powerful, these don’t mean much. But his shocking willpower, it shows he’s resolve is very strong, he definitely has the potential and makings of an absolute warrior, as long as you nurture him well…Luo Feng, these opportunities are rare!”

“A Battle-axe fighter standard, stepping into the domain lord, they even have up to a 50% chance.”

“What’s more, with his shocking willpower, along with the techniques of the Yun Mo Planet, stepping into the domain lord level, there’s an even higher chance.” Babata shouted, “And, you lack a fighter slave!”

Luo Feng nodded.

Di Fan was proficient in soul attacks!

His underlings, he indeed lacked a fighter slave!

In space.

“Your spirit attacks are very strong.” Bai Kaluo’s eyes were cold, he gritted his teeth and shouted, “However, the final victor will be me!!!”

Rumble!

Moving within the ferocious winds, Bai Kaluo’s body floated and became an arced line, the green mad winds about him covered the two swords that were madly cutting towards Di Fan! The blades carried in them genetic energy, strength, willpower, and they all reached a perfect level of harmony.

“Blade…cycle!!!”

There was madness within Bai Kaluo’s eyes, the two blades became two snow white lights, madly cutting towards Di Fan! They seemed untiring and continuous, very quickly forming a huge light cycle, pressuring down on Di Fan.

“Chi.” The spirit weapon was knocked away and Di Fan spit out blood, a flash of pity appeared in his eyes and he unleashed his final technique his master Luo Feng had prepared for him.

“Peng…”

A dark blue light swiftly knocked and broke the light circle, causing the large amount of light that the blades had formed to crumble, this too had caused the dark blue light to bounce back, this shard that seemed broken and small...the hybrid copper essence shard! This immensely sharp shard formed an arc and headed towards Bai Kaluo.

“Spare his life.” An order resounded within Di Fan’s consciousness.

The soul imprint that penetrated the soul, that was Luo Feng’s connection with Di Fan, to be able to communicate directly through their consciousness, just like an AI communicating humans, or like the cloud contact vine with Luo Feng’s consciousness.

“Chi!”

The dark blue light formed an arc and immediately slashed both of Bai Kaluo’s arms, they split open and his blades fell!

There was silence in space, the ship remains were scattered and floating in the distance, the universe level De Wen’s body was still floating in the distant space, and Bai Kaluo was standing still in space.

“Destroy his AI.” Luo Feng ordered.

“Hu!”

The dark blue light cut past Bai Kaluo's arm, immediately destroying the AI, and Bai Kaluo's stared at the distant Di Fan, communicating solemnly, "Why are you not killing me?"

"It's an order from my master." Di Fan looked at him.

"Master?" Bai Kaluo creased his eyebrows.

The cabin door of the distant disc shaped universe ship opened and a human silhouette flew out, it was the cloud contact vine clad Luo Feng.

"Luo Feng!" Bai Kaluo squinted his eyes.

"Bai Kaluo, you've lost." Luo Feng looked at Bai Kaluo before him.

Even though his wrist flesh had been sliced open, it was regenerating, he however stared hard at Luo Feng, obviously it was clear to him...his lost this time was and utter defeat.

"I didn't expect you to have a universe level 9 slave, my teacher didn't expect it too. You even have a d grade long distance light weapon...I've lost completely." Bai Kaluo laughed coldly, "Luo Feng, just kill me if you want to! With your slave here, I have no resistance at all. In this space, I have nowhere to escape to also!"

The vast space, without a ship, where could he escape to?

“I think highly of you.”

Luo Feng looked at Bai Kaluo, “I’ll give you two options right now, one is to serve me, the other is to die.”

“Serve or die, you can choose.” Luo Feng looked at him.

“Serve you?” Haha…”Bai Kaluo laughed loudly, “Luo Feng are you joking, just you, a star level punk, actually want me to serve you, if it were that baldy asking me to serve him, I might still consider, he is truly strong, that last technique easily defeated me.”

“But you…a star level punk, wanting me to serve you…”Bai Kaluo shook his head.

“Think carefully before you answer.”

Luo Feng’s voice was ice cold, “The moment you reject, that means death! Once you die, everything will be void! Your warrior dreams, whatever you are chasing, nothing.”

“This is the last time I’m asking!” Luo Feng said coldly.

“Death, or submission!” Luo Feng stared at Bai Kaluo.

Chapter 13 – Luo Feng's Strength

Within the vast space, 3 human silhouettes stood in space.

"Luo Feng, you really want to kill him?" Babata's voice resounded, "He definitely has the potential and makings of an absolute warrior!"

"Hmph!"

"I admire his backbone, but I'm not about to grovel and beg him to submit. Since he came to kill me…originally, I should kill him!" Luo Feng's expression was cold, "I admire him, giving him the chance to submit but if he refuses…I'll just kill him! Makings of an absolute warrior? Don't even say the makings of, even absolute warriors now, like sector lords or undying! There are many in the vast universe!"

Luo Feng looked at Bai Kaluo, waiting for his reply.

Bai Kaluo stood in space, his eyebrows creased.

"The moment you reject, that means death! Once you die, everything will be void! What you are chasing, your dreams, everything will be gone." Luo Feng's words reverberated within his mind, causing him to unconsciously reminisce his struggles from back then.

That beautiful planet, his home.

That wide and flowing river, he'd seen it countless times in his dreams.

"Grandpa, I'm leaving."

"When I return, it'll be the day my name goes up in the temple! I'll definitely make our Iron Stone Mountain clan proud of me!"

That dark night, the young Bai Kaluo bid goodbye to his grandfather, beginning his long journey.

Leaving his home and entering the universe.

Wave after wave of adventures in the galaxy, his strength grew continuously. After witnessing Nuolan Shan in the battle footage from the Battle-Axe Coliseum, he idolized Nuolan Shan. Nuolan Shan was a definite pro-war faction, from the moment he became a disciple he had to endure life or death battles, and Bai Kaluo fought extremely hard and quickly became the most exceptional amongst the others.

Breaking through to the universe level!

Having his own domain!

Creating his own knife techniques, a path of continuous growth, even to the point where his old teacher Nuolan Shan couldn't

teach him! His battle experience, skills etc, were comparable to that of his teacher!

Becoming one in the Nuolan Shan family with a status similar to that of Nuolan Shan himself!

However he never relaxed, always covered in the black robe, focusing his entire self on his techniques, his domain...

“The temple!”

“The Sword Clan’s temple!” Bai Kaluo roared within, “I, Bai Kaluo, must have my name in that temple. I must make the Iron Stone Mountain Clan proud of me! I will become a legend amongst the Iron Stone mountain clan of the Sword Clan!”

The sword clan’s temple.

All of the sword clan’s males, this was their most dreamt of achievement, engraving their name in that temple was their biggest pride!

But to actually get one’s name engraved up there was really difficult. Since the numbers of warriors grew, the conditions required to get one’s name engraved became harder and harder.

During its aboriginal period, one only had to reach the universe level to get up.

After the Sword clan entered the universe, it got risen to domain lord level.

And a few hundred million years ago, it once again rose to sector lord level. Even in the Sword clan, it still took a long time before a name would get engraved, it was their greatest honor.

Getting one's name engraved meant becoming one of the sword clan's legends.

"Engraving my name and becoming a legend!" Bai Kaluo raised his head and stared at the dark red armor clad youth.

"Have you considered properly?"

Luo Feng stared coldly at Bai Kaluo, "Submit or death!"

Hu!

Bai Kaluo knelt down on one knee in mid space, lowering his head, "Sword clan Bai Kaluo pays his respects to the lord!"

"Lord?" Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

"When the lord's power exceeds mine, I will willingly greet him as master." Bai Kaluo said respectfully, "And right now, I'm willing to be one of Lord' soldiers, a bodyguard."

“Soldier, bodyguard?” Luo Feng looked peculiarly at Bai Kaluo, “You can call me master right now!”

Bai Kaluo creased his eyebrows.

“Haha…” Luo Feng laughed loudly in the universe.

Rumble…

Luo Feng vanished, at the same time with movement, an enormous mountain like beast appeared in space, it’s scales alone were bigger than ordinary tables, their edges sharp like knives, it’s entire length exceeded a shocking 6km, four claws 2 to 3 km long, almost like the legendary pillars supporting heaven.

That long tail waved about in space.

It’s huge head, was almost like a mountain, its dark gold eyes looking down on the little speck Bai Kaluo.

“Gold, golden…” Bai Kaluo stared wide eyed, “Golden Horned Beast!”

“Right, it’s me.”

A powerful sound, imbued with large amounts of genetic energy pierced through the space, ripples of power dispersing throughout,

reverberating in Bai Kaluo's ear.

Rumble!

The Golden Horned Beast vanished and Luo Feng appeared, seemingly laughing at Bai Kaluo.

Rumble!

Luo Feng vanished and the enormous Golden Horned Beast once again appeared in space.

"Do you understand?" The Golden Horned Beast's voice was like thunder, his gaze sharp and staring straight at Bai Kaluo. It was physically impossible to speak in space, however with it's large amount of genetic energy medium, along with the massive amount of genetic energy from the Golden Horned Beast itself, its voice reverberated throughout space.

"You, you are..." Bai Kaluo was extremely shocked, "So all this while Luo Feng is the Golden Horned Beast!"

"Accurately speaking, the Golden Horned Beast is Luo Feng!"

The Golden Horned Beast vanished and Luo Feng stood in space staring at Bai Kaluo, before when he ordered Di Fan to destroy Bai Kaluo's quantum computer, it was all for his revelation...the secret of the Golden Horned Beast had to be kept, hence he couldn't get careless. As for revealing its body, it was for the sake of unleashing

the slave soul imprint!

“Since its like that, this...” Bai Kaluo was extremely shaken, looking at Luo Feng, “You will be stronger than me, I admit, however the Golden Horned Beast now should still be weaker than I currently.”

“Weaker than you?” Luo Feng laughed.

“Bai Kaluo, even I am no match for master. You? You’ll only become a sandbag!” Di Fan laughed mockingly via genetic energy on the side.

“What!” Bai Kaluo shook his head, “That’s impossible!”

“You can try it and you’ll know.” Luo Feng curled his lips and smiled.

Rumble...

Luo Feng vanished and the Golden Horned Beast once again appeared in space, the Golden Horned Beast had currently already reached the universe level 6.

Around December of 2 years ago, The Golden Horned Beast had broken through to the universe level.

As of now, the end of October, it had already been a total of 20

months. Within these 20 months, because he had a large amount of wealth, he could afford the expensive and valuable metals, allowing the internal world to grow with maximum efficiency, however even the optimum efficiency and metal groupings at the universe level could only raise the rate to 56 times!

56 times!

20 months, normal evolution would take 93 over years.

The Golden Horned Beast during the star level period.

Stage 1 to 3 required a year and a half.

Stages 4 to 6, every stage required 2 years each, a total of 6 years.

Stage 7 to 9, every stage required 12 years, a total of 36 years.

And stage 9 to the universe level required over 50 years. The entire star level period required close to a hundred years.

And the universe level period required close to 1,000 years!

Stages 1 to 3 required about 15 years.

Stages 4 to 6, every stage required 20 years, a total of 60 years.

Stages 7 to 9, each one required 120 years, a total of 360 years.

And finally universe stage 9 to the domain lord stage, required over 500 years.

This was the evolution speed!

And with Luo Feng's optimum groupings, normal evolution would take 93 years, the Golden Horned Beast was currently already at the end of the universe level 6! As the genius and extremely talented Golden Horned Beast, at the star level 7, it already had the ability to kill star level 9 fighters already.

In space.

Like an enormous black mountain, the Golden Horned Beast fiercely waved its claws and the tip of every claw was like a huge battle knife swinging at Bai Kaluo.

"Roar!" Bai Kaluo roared, green wind dancing about his surroundings, flowing with his gathering of genetic energy, the 2 battle knives became a blade storm wave that was 10m high, directly clashing with the Golden Horned Beast's claw!

Rumble!

The clash ripples exploded, the immense force of the waves became shockingly powerful ripples that dispersed in all directions, knocking and shaking the distant corpse of De Wen and

sending a large amount of the ship debris into a mess.

“You, are not bad!” The Golden Horned Beast’s voice rumbled, almost like a god.

Rumble!!!

The Golden Horned Beast’s 3 horns emitted a glaring light, following which the gold light swiftly flowed through the peculiar golden engravings throughout the Golden Horned Beast’s body, its scaled wings, its claws, its horns, even its tail seemed to all undergo changes, even the scales seemed to condense together, its claws getting even sharper.

One of the three natural talents, strengthen!

The Golden Horned Beast’s power raised immensely in an instant!

“Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!”

All that could be seen was the claws that were almost like the heavenly pillars stomping and scratching downwards, under its strengthening, that incomparably powerful force caused Bai Kaluo to be unable to defend at all.

“Howl!”

The Golden Horned Beast let out an excited howl.

Weng weng weng...

The Golden Horned Beast began to emit strange ripples, the peculiar thing was its entire body was swiftly shrinking, every scale of it was shrinking, and at the same time, the structure of the scales themselves seemed to change! It's bones too were shrinking, what was once a 6km long beast had shrunk to just 2 to 3km long, its density had increased greatly, its vertebrate bone had undergone a peculiar change.

Its 3 horns on its head too had shrunk! Its density even greater than before!

Yes!

The entire Golden Horned Beast, from a body length of over 6km had shrunk directly down to only 3km.

Deity of the world, the 1st stage!

After the 1st stage had been completely mastered, the body length would be shrunk down to 1/3 the size, increasing it's power by 3 times. And right now, with all the huge amounts of wealth buying the precious materials to train it, Luo Feng had managed to achieve a shrinking of 2 times, increasing its power by 2 times!

Strengthening increased its power 2 times!

Deity of the world increased it another 2 times!

“Rumble!” It’s claws slashed, causing Bai Kaluo to spit out blood immediately.

“Xiu!”

A quick as lightning tail brushed past, so fast Bai Kaluo didn’t even have time to dodge, getting knocked so hard his blades were thrown out of his hands and his arms split open immediately, fresh blood splattering all over. Luckily the Golden Horned Beast had held back, without attacking with its full force, otherwise it would have easily killed Bai Kaluo.

The Golden Horned Beast vanished and Luo Feng appeared in space.

“Di Fan.” Luo Feng looked at him floating in space, the heavily injured and unable to resist Bai Kaluo, “Go, send him into the nutrition cabin to recover.”

“Yes.” Di Fan’s simple and honest face revealed a peculiar smile.

He had been his masters sparring partner and bullied many times. Now, he finally had a ‘partner’ to suffer with him.

“Strengthening talent, deity of the world, unleashing both

together! Di Fan and Bai Kaluo couldn't defend against it at all." Luo Feng shook his head and smiled, "And I haven't even unleashed a bit of the origin laws of gold with my attack."

Sleeping and eating and vice versa, he naturally grew and became one with the Golden Horned Beast, worthy of the name invincible among the same level. Even in the vast universe, it was hard to find a close enough opponent in the same level, should there be any human that could put up a fight, he would definitely be elite amongst the entire universe, the entire human race, from countless universe countries, an absolute genius.

And Luo Feng this Golden Horned Beast, spending lots of wealth to train deity of the world, and to comprehend the origin laws of the universe!

Just hard work alone wasn't enough...

To be able to defeat the Golden Horned Beast, it was extremely difficult!

Within the universe ship.

"Master." Bai Kaluo who was tossed into the nutrition cabin shouted willingly.

"Alright, hurry and heal up." Luo Feng said casually, once he was healed, he still had to use the slave soul imprint.

Chapter 14 – Automaton Ship

“De Wen and Bai Kaluo, why haven’t they reported back after so long?” Within the virtual universe, black dragon mountain island, within a luxurious villa’s guest room, dressed in a long robe, Nuolan Shan creased his eyebrows, blinking his red eyes and stared at the screen, serious and severe as he said, “Contact them one more time for me.”

“Yes, master.” The fist size AI helper on Nuolan Shan’s shoulder shouted out loudly and clearly.

Du…du…du…

“Not right.”

“Something’s up.”

“I’m trying to contact them, they wouldn’t dare not answer my call invite.” Nuolan Shan’s eyes were filled with shock and fear, “unless…”

“That’s impossible, with Bai Kaluo’s strength, the 2 of them shouldn’t have met with any trouble at all.” Nuolan Shan shook his head, “Definitely not!”

Waiting in the virtual universe, for any news at all from De Wen or Bai Kaluo, Nuolan Shan began to suspect that something must have happened. However he had too much confidence in his most

exceptional disciple Bai Kaluo, against earth, this level of simplicity, he shouldn't have met any trouble at all.

Minutes and seconds passed.

5 minutes, 10 minutes, half an hour...

1 hour, 2 hours...

Nuolan Shan's expression grew uglier by the minute, he initially still held onto hope, however after 2 hours had passed and he hadn't received any news from his disciples. It was clear that something had happened...

"Ah!"

Nuolan Shan growled from deep within his throat, violently waving his hand, knocking the wine glass on the table in front him away, the pots and cups flying in all directions, either smashing against the walls or on the art around, even on the chairs, basically breaking apart loudly all over.

"Luo Feng." Nuolan Shan's eyes grew cold, he bit down hard, squeezing out 2 words from within,

"You are vicious!"

"To actually be able to get a universe level 9 or even a domain

lord to help you.” Nuolan Shan’s gaze was cold, clenching his fists so tight, his fingers were jabbing at his palm

This loss was tragic!

One, he lost 2 important members of his family De Wen and Bai Kaluo.

2, he was clear that if the opponent could easily deal with Bai Kaluo, then he, Nuolan Shan would have no hope of acquiring the treasures of earth anymore.

“To be able to deal with Bai Kaluo, the opponent must at least be a universe level 9. And a universe level 9...can totally be able to take away that automaton ship.” Nuolan Shan pondered in rage, “Even if I spend 3 years of time and reach earth. It most probably will be just a waste of time! And what’s more on earth, there’s that thing...”

Solar system, mars.

When Nuolan Shan was thinking of Bai Kaluo being killed off, gritting his teeth in rage...

“Do not resist.” A booming rumbling voice reverberated across the sand, the Golden Horned Beast’s enormous body was lying there, its head high and huge like a mountain, gazed down at the little Bai Kaluo.

“Yes.”

Bai Kaluo stood respectfully there.

The Golden Horned Beast began to unleash the Yun Mo Planet’s slave soul imprint. Gradually, a transparent liquid, almost like a droplet flew out from the left eye of the beast, swiftly descending downwards, this crystal like droplet, if one examined it carefully, would discover that there were complex prints within it, floating within the center of the drop!

“Chi!” The droplet entered Bai Kaluo’s forehead.

It immediately seeped in and entered deep within Bai Kaluo’s consciousness.

Within his consciousness.

This was a vast miniature galaxy, it was the place where Bai Kaluo’s soul resided. This mini galaxy was continuously revolving, and the 8 arms of the galaxy similarly spiraled outwards. A drop of water suddenly appeared and immediately entered into the galaxy, a silver sparkling and translucent beam of light swiftly entered and permeated in, everything happened naturally.

……

After about half an hour, standing in the desert, Bai Kaluo opened his eyes and looked at the Golden Horned Beast, his gaze

filled with a sense of idolization and worship from within his soul.

“Master.” Bai Kaluo bowed.

The Golden Horned Beast’s eyes too had a slight darkening in its eyes, using the slave soul imprint was akin to cutting off a small piece of its own soul, the damage was huge.

Rumble!

The Golden Horned Beast vanished and Luo Feng appeared.

“The slave soul imprint is indeed mysterious.” Luo Feng looked at the sword clan Bai Kaluo before him, clearly feeling his sense of worship from deep within his soul, almost as though he was looking at his king, “For the teacher to be able to create this slave soul imprint, is really impressive.”

“Di Fan, Bai Kaluo, let’s go, return to earth.” Luo Feng said.

“Yes master!”

Di Fan and Bai Kaluo replied respectfully simultaneously.

The black disc shaped universe ship was heading back to earth from mars.

Within the ship's control room, Luo Feng and his 2 slaves were conversing.

"Master, all the AI and quantum computers from the debris have been brought over." Bai Kaluo said respectfully, "There definitely won't be any leakage of the scene of the Golden Horned Beast revealing its body."

"Ok." Luo Feng nodded.

Caution and prudence was the utmost importance, the secret of the Golden Horned Beast indeed couldn't be leaked out.

"Bai Kaluo, just what trump card does that Nuolan Shan have, and what does he know about earth?" Luo Feng asked.

"Trump card?"

Bai Kaluo shook his head, "That Nuolan Shan doesn't have any trump card at all, the entire foundation of the family is shallow, except for Nuolan Shan himself as the pillar, the family doesn't have any big powers at all! This time he sent De Wen and I over, one was to grab the automaton ship and two was to kill you! That bastard, actually thinking of killing master, he deserves death!!!"

Bai Kaluo's words were filled with killing intent for Nuolan Shan. The slave soul imprint had altered his consciousness and his worship for his master was from within his soul, his master's life was the most important thing to him.

Hence for Nuolan Shan to try and kill Luo Feng...The current Bai Kaluo was filled with intense hatred from within.

“Haha...”

“That Nuolan Shan, is only a little clown.” Luo Feng laughed.

“Right, you talked about the automaton ship earlier?” Luo Feng’s eyes lit up, these 2 years, he had almost completely immersed himself in comprehending the universe origin laws. Comprehending these laws wasn’t necessarily tedious, it was actually akin to a mother’s hug when one was an infant—a very comforting feeling on the soul.

Two years spent immersed in deep training had caused Luo Feng to forget about...that automaton ship sitting in the Bermuda area of earth.

“Right, that Nuolan Shan has been harping on about that Automaton ship since before, that ship is definitely worth much more than his entire fortune.” Bai Kaluo said respectfully.

“Haha...”Luo Feng laughed.

“Babata.” Luo Feng shouted, “The ship will not return to home yet, we’ll head over to the Bermuda area, it’s time we took that automaton ship.”

“Understood!” The little devil shouted excitedly.

……

The universe ship pierced through the earth’s atmosphere, immediately heading to the Bermuda ocean, after which the universe ship vanished and Luo Feng and his two slaves became three beams of light flying into the ocean.

Within the cold sea waters, there was an enormous white silhouette.

“Hm?” Luo Feng flew closer.

Floating in the ocean, the enormous white pyramid reached a shocking height of 1,200m, larger than any skyscraper on earth. Luo Feng could clearly feel that the floating pyramid slightly warped the surroundings

“Automaton universe ship.” Di Fan’s eyes gleamed.

“This is my first time actually seeing an automaton universe ship in reality.” Bai Kaluo too was shocked, “The automaton race’s technology is too advanced, from the appearance, it’s hard to tell what grade this ship is.”

The technology of the humans of the universe was far from that of the automaton race.

The human constructed universe ships could easily be determined by grade, and a scan would also easily tell what metal or alloy it was built from. However, with the automaton alloys, humans were completely unable to detect the grade from the outside.

“However, according to what Nuolan Shan told me, this automaton ship is at least a D grade.” Bai Kaluo pointed at the huge pyramid, the triangular pathway, “That pathway’s defense should be at the C grade too, the lowest grade of this kind of universe ship is D, hence its price is extremely expensive, many domain lords can’t even afford it.”

“Hm?” Di Fan looked shocked at Bai Kaluo, “That expensive?”

“You can’t just look at its appearance! And that’s on D grade, if it were E grade….that would be too shocking. It’ll definitely be even crazier than the treasures from the world within a world that shook the entire Black Dragon Mountain empire star field.” Bai Kaluo shook his head, “However the chances of it being an E grade is too low.”

“It’s an E grade.” Luo Feng said.

“Master.” Di Fan and Bai Kaluo both turned shocked, Di Fan couldn’t help but ask, “Master, it’s completely impossible to tell the grade from its appearance.”

“It’s an E grade! I’m very sure.” Luo Feng looked at the huge

pyramid before him, before turning to looking at his two slaves, “You two, what grades are your armors?”

“Master, I’m wearing an inner level 3 genetic armor, outside a d3 grade alloy armor.” Di Fan said respectfully.

“I’m wearing an inner level 3 genetic armor, outside a d5 alloy armor.” Bai Kaluo said respectfully.

Luo Feng nodded.

Genetic armors were similar to the black god sets from back then; it could easily cover one’s body. However the defensive abilities of the genetic armor was related to the level of the genetic energy. The stronger the genetic energy, the stronger the defense of the armor. These genetic armors were extremely expensive, similar to genetic energy weapons.

The alloy armors were alloys outside, their skill tolerance was very low, just like a huge shield, the prices were cheap...the only drawback was the alloy armors had many openings, not able to protect the body 100% completely.

“Bai Kaluo, how about you enter the automaton ship.” Luo Feng ordered, “This is an AI chip, enter the control room and insert it there.”

“Yes master.” Bai Kaluo respectfully received the chip and flew straight towards the pathway.

Chi Chi...

Within the automaton ship pathway, 3 colored lasers immediately shot out. However, Bai Kaluo's speed didn't seem to slow down at all, rushing in straight ahead.

The automaton ship." Luo Feng looked at the pyramid ship before him, exclaiming within, "This ship's owner was that automaton undying fighter!"

Chapter 15 – Dumbfounded

“Automaton undying!” Luo Feng felt pressure.

Undying. The word itself represented the absolute peak. An undying being alone was enough to topple the entire Black Dragon Mountain star field.

One punch alone from an undying being could destroy an entire planet.

And with a physical body capable of reaching light speed and travelling through universes!

Even interuniversal travel between the actual universe or the dark universe, was as easy as having a meal.

“Babata, would we have any difficulty taking control of a ship owned by an undying?” Luo Feng asked, “Undying beings shouldn’t let others take their ships so easily right.”

“But of course, just like the Yun Mo Planet Ship, if I controlled and shut the door forcefully, even sector lords would be unable to barge into the Yun Mo Planet Ship!” Babata said, “As for that automaton ship, it’ll just be up to your person and luck. Because automaton undying are different from other races of undying.”

“Different?” Luo Feng.

“Right, Luo Feng, let me ask you, what do people normally use to control the ships?” Babata asked.

“AI.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Right, AI. Your teacher used me to control the Yun Mo Planet ship.”

“However the automaton race, every one of them is a living AI! More advanced than any AIs about...as for the most powerful of them, the automaton undying, that’s something even more powerful than someone like me, a living AI.” Babata said, “What do you think he’ll even need an AI for in a ship?”

“You mean...” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“For automaton undying, riding in a ship only require a trillionth of their processing ability to be able to perfectly control a universe ship.” Babata said, “Hence the automaton undying usually don’t even need an AI specifically to control the ships, they can easily handle it themselves.”

“But he’s dead!”

“So there’s no one to control this automaton ship anymore.”

“Now it’s just up to your luck, if this automaton ship has any locked down gates or doors from the entrance to the control room and is hard to open, then that’ll be troublesome.”

“If there are no blocked passages, then that’s lucky.” Babata said.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but hold his breath.

……

Luo Feng and Di Fan, a master and his slave, stood in the deep sea, patiently looking at the huge pyramid ship. Waiting.

About 5 minutes later.

“Master, success.” A thought was communicated over.

“That’s great.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“My auxiliary AI can begin hacking into the control system of the ship. Oh, hacking success! Cutting power to the cabin door! Success!” Babata cheered, “Luo Feng, let’s go, we can enter into the ship now without any worry about the pathways defenses, I’ve already cut off the power.”

“Di Fan, let’s go.” Luo Feng ordered, flying first into the entrance of the pyramid ship.

Entering through the passageway, that area belonged to the lower level of the entire pyramid.

The passageway was quite spacious, as it was 10m wide.

With an alloy armor outside and cloud contact vine armor within, Luo Feng's defense was completely solid. With but a thought, a long vine extended into the passageway.

"It's completely safe." Luo Feng flew in and Di Fan followed beside him.

"What a unique layout."

Luo Feng entered the ship and was shocked upon his discovery: the entire layout of the pyramid ship was completely different from a human race's universe ship. Within this ship, there was one main pathway, spiraling upwards in a single helix! Almost like a mountain path going up.

The spiraling pathway was 30m wide, spiraling up the center of the pyramid.

The pyramid ship's control room was located in the center about 800m from the bottom.

The control room itself was circular, the floors were sparkling and translucent, altogether beautifully made. There actually was no control board in the room, only a large floating crystal ball in the center.

“Master.” Bai Kalo looked at Luo Feng.

“Well done.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Babata, check this ship.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Yes.”

“Energy shields, perfect condition.”

“Damn, the energy shield levels are actually this high, even if we don’t rely on the ship for defense, just the shields alone can block an E9 grade attack. This means...if one didn’t reach the undying level, they couldn’t even break past one level of the energy shields.” Babata’s voice resounded across the control room.

Luo Feng, Di Fan and Bai Kalo were all shocked. Just the energy shields alone were this extreme...

“This, just whose ship is this? Who was the original owner of this ship?” Bai Kalo couldn’t help but ask. “It’s.... it’s too crazy. Even the E9 grade ships in the universe aren’t this extreme.”

“Its owner was an undying!” Luo Feng said, “An automaton undying!”

Bai Kalo and Di Fan’s eyes almost popped out of their sockets.

Undying? And an automaton undying at that?

Any undying was extremely valuable. And the automaton represented the most technologically advanced race in the entire universe. Ifan automaton undying were to control this ship to its fullest, the transformation would be extremely terrifying.

“Offensive weapons, perfect condition.”

“Damn, it’s really crazy, this automaton ship’s technological weapons are even crazier than your teacher’s ship, indeed worthy of the name automaton ship. The ship of an automaton undying, it’s simply…too luxurious, it’s pure madness. It actually has three star master grade star annihilator cannons and nine E3 grade laser cannons.”

Luo Feng was stunned.

Star annihilator cannons?

The legendary technological weapons, the star annihilator cannons were unrivaled, as the name spoke for itself.: just one shot could destroy an entire planet! In terms of power…it could compete with an undying altogether. Of course the star annihilator cannon had its flaws. First one was that its attack radius was huge, it couldn’t concentrate its attack on a single point like an undying. Second was that it consumed a shocking amount of energy.

However despite its weakness, it couldn’t diminish the human

race's longing for such a weapon.

"Movement systems, perfect condition!"

"Luo Feng, you've struck lottery, this automaton ship's movement system is completely sick. It's no wonder the entire layout of the passageway was a spiraling pathway, actually the entire core of the automaton ship, seems to be a huge movement system.

"A 1,200m tall ship, over two-thirds of it is a movement system."

"Sick! this ship's momentary acceleration, dodging and other movements definitely aren't lousier than your teacher's Yun Mo Planet ship."

"I'm dizzy."

"According to the data from this ship, the ship's main body's alloy reaches E grade. It even has self repairing functions! Along with the energy shield ...it definitely belongs to the pinnacle of E grade ships. Plus, its movement is extremely shocking, making it incredibly valuable."

"And this is without including the cost of the star annihilator.

"Luo Feng, you've truly struck it big this time. Just this automaton ship alone is more valuable than all the treasures in the world within a world put together!!!" Babata said.

“Expensive?”

Luo Feng who was within the round control room however wasn’t as excited as he was when they first began, his expression was that of suspicion, “Even though it’s expensive, no matter how expensive it is, it’s still only an E grade ship, compared to the Yun Mo Planet F9 grade ship. Normal domain lords use D grade ships, sector lords use e grade ships. This undying should be using an F grade. And this ship is only at the pinnacle of E grade, it shouldn’t be that crazy right?”

“Wrong, completely wrong.” Babata shouted.

“Master, it’s not like that.” Bai Kalo said.

Luo Feng was suspicious, beside him Di Fan was dumbfounded too.

“Luo Feng, when you go out, don’t ever mention that you are a disciple of the Yun Mo Planet, it’s a total disgrace to your teacher’s face. Actually saying such stupid things! That Di Fan, who was a slave before, nevermind that he’s stupid. But you, after reading so many books, learning so much about the universe and common knowledge, however you missed out on such an important piece of information…” Babata began to criticize him.

“Where was I wrong?” Luo Feng cut in while Babata was speaking.

“Firstly, human universe ships, the only reason why they aren’t that expensive is because they are made from alloys!”

“A pure metal ship is viewed as a luxurious item. Hence, alloy ships are the way to go. This you know right?” Babata said.

“I understand, alloys are cheap, but cost-effective.” Luo Feng nodded.

WIthin the same C5 grade, the alloys were cheaper by at least a hundred times to the pure metal.

“However…”

“Within the entire universe, the strongest alloy is only E9 grade! Whether it is the human race or the even more advanced automaton race, the strongest alloy constructed is only E9 grade. Hence to actually build a F grade universe ship, one can only use pure metals, like your teacher used the hybrid copper essence. This is because there are simply no F grade alloys!”

“F grade pure metals are extremely rare!”

“Take the hybrid copper essence, for example. There may be occasional veins of ore for the hybrid copper, but after digging them up, the amount of hybrid copper essence may only amount to a palm’s worth, maybe 1 or 2 tonnes.”

“1 vein of ore may result in only a palm’s worth. To actually collect enough to build a 800m diameter universe ship, that’s… that’s simply an unbelievable thing to do. Even if you sold off the entire black dragon mountain star field, you wouldn’t even be close to having enough money. Hence, even among undying beings, the majority of them cannot afford to make one!”

“Undying beings, most of them only use the pinnacle of E grade ships.” Babata said, “And the difference between the E grade ships of the undying and sector lords is…the size, and with the bigger size one needs a stronger and more powerful engine, allowing it to have greater mobility!”

“100m long and 1000m long. The difference in size, if it were a 1000 times, the price difference will be a 1000 times too.”

“That is the main difference between undying beings with E grade ships, compared to sector lords with E grade ships.”

“Your teacher was an absolute warrior even amongst the undying, hence he could afford to build the Yun Mo Planet ship. Even so, he still spent a large amount of his wealth along with countless treasures to acquire it.” Babata said, “And this automaton undying, this ship that he used, is even more advanced than many human undyings!”

“The main thing is that its mobility is off the charts.”

“I’ll give you an estimate, a normal sector lords E grade ships would cost about 1 trillion universe dollars, which is about one

mixed element.”

“And a pinnacle E grade ship used by undying would be normally valued at few hundred trillion universe dollars, which is equivalent to a few hundred mixed elements.”

“This pinnacle E grade ship, a 1,200m tall automaton ship, is worth about one to two thousand mixed element units!”

“And the treasures you acquired from the world within a world before, all added together would only add up to about 11 mix element units. Hence, I said all the treasures in the world within a world added together…don’t even compare to this automaton undying’s ship!”

Chapter 16 – The Auction has Arrived

Only an accurate appraisal could clearly express just how valuable this automaton ship was. Babata had calculated earlier that the entire wealth of treasures in the world within a world was priced at about 200 mixed elements, comparable to a poor undying!

And this automaton ship alone was worth about 1 to 2 thousand mixed elements!

“My god!” Bai Kalo’s eyes stared wide, his dream was to have his name engraved in the sword clan temple, only after becoming a sector lord will he be able to do so, “Even a sector lord wouldn’t be able to buy this ship!”

“This, just how many universe level slaves can you buy with this.” Di Fan opened his mouth wide, looking silly.

They were utterly flabbergasted!

The 2 universe level warriors had totally lost it. Such a valuable automaton ship, enough to even make the undying vie for, enough to make the sector lords go crazy for, much less the domain lords and universe levels...

Just the ship’s star annihilator was enough to make a medium level civilization become interested. This was definitely a mass killing weapon that could be used to intimidate and threaten.

“Luo Feng, you must never divulge any information about this automaton ship.” Babata said, “It’s just like the Yun Mo Planet ship you have, this ship too belongs to one of the things you must never leak out.”

“Of course, it’s impossible to determine its grade and true value just from its appearance, most people would think that it’s a D grade automaton ship. However, you are only a star level, using a D grade automaton ship would just invite trouble. Hence, the greatest use this ship has to you is…”

“One it can protect your life in dangerous situations. While hiding in this ship, even sector lord pinnacle level warriors won’t be able to break through. You can ride it and escape.”

“Two killing your enemies, you can use the three star annihilators or the nine E3 grade laser cannons to kill your enemies. Especially when combined with the mobility of the automaton ship, you can swiftly approach your enemies and withdraw as you please. While relying on the nine laser cannons to attack, even domain lords will definitely die!”

“Three: sell, you can sell the entire ship.”

“The first and second options have their flaws. The moment you use it, others will know that you have an E grade automaton ship. That would easily attract the attention of sector lords and even undying! Hence you shouldn’t use it, but the moment you do, you have to kill all the enemies, leaving none behind.”

“If you want to sell it, there’s no problem, you can sell it through your teacher’s 5 star account service.”

“However, the moment you sell it, if you want to buy it back, it’ll be difficult, extremely difficult!”

“That’s because an automaton ship with star annihilators can easily enter a mid level auction to be sold. And the mid level auction’s lowest requirement is to be a 4 star client. Luo Feng, even if you sell the ship, you still wouldn’t be a 4 star client. The lowest requirement for the 4 star grade is to have 10,000 mixed elements, the people are mostly comprised of undying or a few large powers.”

“Hence, the moment you sell it, within a short time span, you wouldn’t be able to get it back.” Babata said.

Luo Feng understood.

This ship may be valuable, however for it to actually be worth a tenth of an undying’s wealth was already considered not bad. Undying beings require money for weapons, armors, treasures, manuals etc. Even after selling the ship, Luo Feng would still be unable to become a 4 star client.

“I won’t sell it!”

“I’m not lacking in money right now.” Luo Feng laughed, “After

all, this is hot property. It'll be easy to sell anytime, and it'll act as a trump card in my back pocket! The nine laser cannons along with the ship's mobility, even domain lords would definitely die. Hiding in it, even the pinnacle of sector lords can't break it open."

"When I actually lack money, then I'll sell it."

Luo Feng's eyes suddenly gleamed, "Babata, can we detach the ship's star annihilator? Since there are three of them, selling two off would be ok."

"You wish! This automaton ship's construction work is too exquisite, the entire ship is a perfect whole body, even the star annihilator, the laser cannons have been fused within the ship... detaching it, in your dreams. Even though the material isn't like the Yun Mo Planet ship, the work and craftsmanship on it is of a much higher value than the Yun Mo Planet ship. The Yun Mo Planet ship's strongest point is mainly its material and its incomparably sharp edges! Once it accelerates, it can slice through planets and even sector lords like vegetables."

"As for its construction and craftsmanship, it's definitely lower."

"So it seems that I can't detach it, It's not a big deal. After all, I currently have enough money." Luo Feng laughed. "Babata, keep this pyramid ship in your storage space, let's return home."

Even though he had acquired the automaton ship, it was still of no use to him at the moment! This was because the moment he uses it, the information would be leaked...hence the automaton

ship was similar to the Yun Mo Planet ship, Luo Feng very clearly knew they were valuable but he could only store it in Babata's storage space.

"At least the pyramid ship is in perfect condition and undamaged."

"Even though the Yun Mo Planet ship is much more expensive than the pyramid, it is damaged and unusable." Luo Feng muttered as he flew from the Bermuda ocean towards the Asia continent.

Behind him Di Fan and Bai Kalo exchanged glances.

This master...

He leaves others completely speechless!

The pyramid ship, even amongst the undying ships, was considered not bad.

Even the Yun Mo Planet ship was something many undying wouldn't be able to afford. An F grade ship was incomparably expensive, much less an F9!

"Having such a powerful teacher is good." Di Fan looked at Bai Kalo, communicating, "Bai Kalo, why'd you cherish your Nuolan Shan teacher so much? A universe level 9 teacher, there's no future in that. Look at my master who's so powerful, his teacher was an undying, and a powerful one amongst the others! And, he's dead!"

“A dead teacher passes all his wealth to master. If his teacher was alive, master probably wouldn’t be able to get much.” Di Fan communicated.

Bai Kalo shot a stare at Di Fan and said, “Get lost!”

Days passed.

Back then the surveillance system had already detected movement from the wormhole in the dead space. The first was a D3 grade ship from the Nuolan Shan family, the second was a D1 grade ship and the third was a C8 grade ship. After Luo Feng had dealt with the Nuolan Shan army and acquired the pyramid ship, not long after...

China year 2065, Nov 12th, the 2nd D1 grade universe ship arrived on earth.

Space outside Earth.

Dressed in armor, the bald Di Fan stood in space, watching the dark purple disc shaped universe ship approaching.

“Sir, how are you, we are from the Porterly family from the Black dragon mountain empire...” From the ship flew out twelve star level humans, of which ten were star level 9s and two were star level 3 and 5. The star level 5 was a tall and sturdy youth.

Porterly family, one of the 16 big families of the Black dragon mountain family.

“Porterly family? Hpmh, right now Earth falls under the protection of Three Axe Mountain, forbidding any visitors.” Di Fan’s voice resonated via spirit reading energy to the twelve of them.

“Three Axe Mountain?”

The tall and sturdy youth’s expression changed. Three Axe Mountain was one of the four large organizations, even the two sacred lands had to be courteous to them.

“If you barge into Earth, don’t blame me for being disrespectful.” Di Fan roared loudly, after which he turned and flew back immediately.

And in space, the twelve exchanged glances.

“Lord, what do we do?”

“What can we do?” The tall and sturdy youth grit his teeth and ordered, “They sent out only one person and he’s a universe level 9, do we go in and commit suicide?”

The universe ship could only leave dejected.

……

The same method was used on the C8 grade universe ship 6 days later, which was also scared away by Di Fan.

After all, these two ships were scout teams from two different families, who would dare mess with a universe level 9?”

After scaring away those two ships, Luo Feng’s life became incredibly peaceful, however he was awaiting that crucial date… December 16th!

Chia year 2065 December 16th, was the triennial Ganwu auction date.

……

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain 9 star bay.

Within the tea room.

Luo Feng sat in a chair, lifting a glass cup filled with an amber colored tea.

“Tomorrow is the Ganwu auction, the lowest requirement for the auction is a 3 star client.” Luo Feng gently sniffed the tea, “However, my account already has less than 10 mixed elements because of the recent expenses, which is lower than the

requirement to become a 3 star client. Is the invitation sent to me by the Ganwu auction still valid?”

“Luo Feng, your thinking is wrong.”

“Your account reached 11 trillion universe dollars before, (11 mixed elements), thus becoming a 3 star client. Right now you’ve used up quite a bit, just because you haveless money now,you think your account will get degraded from being a 3 star client?”

“For several wealthy owners, their assets and capital get cycled very regularly. One day they may have 200 mixed elements, becoming a 3 star client, and another they might use everything until they only have 1 mixed element left. The following day, others might transfer 300 mixed elements in. Will these large wealthy people change constantly from 3 star clients to 2 stars?”

Luo Feng was stunned.

“Usage is normal. Like your teacher, for the Yun Mo Planet ship back then, he had almost used up everything. And sometimes just by selling a few treasures, the amount in his account would fly again, sometimes empty, sometimes full!” Babata laughed, “The bank won’t easily degrade an account.”

“Only if your account has stayed short of funds for a long period of time will they degrade it.” Babata said, “The higher the level of account, this low period will be longer. Like a 5 star client, even if the money inside has been emptied, within 100 million years, their grade will not be dropped!”

Luo Feng laughed and nodded, that made sense.

Sipping his tea, Luo Feng was looking forward to the auction. The triennial Ganwu auction would gather countless sector lords, even undying from all of the Ganwu universe country and the lowest requirement was a 3 star client.

Various items that would otherwise be hard or impossible to purchase, including saint level items would appear there.

“After purchasing the nutrition cabin, the d5 grade laser, treasures required for the deity of the world training and usage of about 5 mixed elements, also giving 2 mixed elements to my brother Luo Hua to invest! Right now, I only have about 4 trillion universe dollars left.” Luo Feng thought, “I wonder if I can actually afford anything tomorrow.”

“I’ll return and ask my brother to see how his investments have been doing these two years.” Luo Feng thought.

Chapter 17 – Ganwu Universe Country

Black Dragon Mountain Island, Nine Star Bay. Besides Luo Feng's villa, there was a wooden villa. Luo Feng followed the staircases along to this three level villa, and its glass door was shut.

"Creak!" Luo Feng pushed open the door and entered.

This was a room with at least a 100 square feet, in it were several computer desks and on every desk there was a laptop. Before each laptop was a person typing away on the virtual keyboards, looking for information. There were a total of 21 workers in that room.

In the seat closest to the back, at the largest desk was a youth who looked very similar to Luo Feng. The only difference was that he was skinnier.

"Big brother!" Luo Hua yelled out shocked.

"It's quite bustling in here." Luo Feng smiled as he surveyed the work room.

"Mr Luo, how do you do!"

"Mr Luo."

The people within quickly got up and down bowing, these group of workers were all Luo Hua's partners and fellow investors. As he

was accustomed to their work, he had brought them into the virtual universe. Even though he had AIs to assist him, there were still differences between AIs and humans.

"Big Brother, why have you come here, come, let's go over there to chat. Er...hold on!" Luo Hua swiftly returned to the computer, entering a few commands before running over, "Let's go!"

Beside the workroom, was a tea room.

Luo Feng and Luo Hua sat down.

"Big brother coming over to visit while I'm working is a rare sight." Luo Hua laughed.

"It's like this." Luo Feng smiled, "Tomorrow, there's a triennial Ganwu auction."

"Ganwu auction?" Luo Hua seemed stunned after hearing, following which he revealed glee and excitement, saying, "Is it the legendary highest level auction in the Ganwu universe country? During a conversation I had with investors before, I heard them mention it. I heard the requirement for the auction is extremely high!"

"The lowest requirement is a 3 star client." Luo Feng nodded.

"Damn!" Luo Hua stared wide eyed, "3 star client? The level of this auction is really high!"

3 star client, the total amount of 3 star clients in the black dragon mountain star field was simply pitiful.

They were all huge figures!

Luo Feng laughed and said, “The reason why I’m here is to ask, the 2 trillion universe dollars I handed to you 2 years ago, how is it going?”

“Talking about that…” Luo Hua revealed an expression of glee and excitement, saying, “The two trillion universe dollars, even within the universe financial markets and many other investments, is considered large capital! There are many pros and cons to large capital, the good is that we can actually influence the markets to a certain degree, the bad is that it’s not as mobile, wanting to liquidate it may be hard sometimes!”

“Last year during the exchanges, it peaked up to 50% more. However, during the bad times, we cut even. We’ve definitely accumulated large capital experience, perfecting our investment tactics.”

“This year, the highest point peaked with profits at 3.6 trillion universe dollars. However recently it hasn’t been as good, we still have three trillion in capital, however, don’t worry, we must be patient…right now I’m just waiting for the market price to explode.” Luo Hua laughed.

Luo Feng nodded: “I need some money to use, how much can you

take out?”

“If you need money, then we have to liquidate. After all, my capital isn’t in cash.” Luo Hua emphasized, “However to liquidate now, big brother, honestly, my plan is just about to finish over this half a year! Right now it’s just about waiting for the price to explode and to earn a large sum. Selling off right now…it’s simply not worth it. Big brother, if you are rushed, I can sell them all off in a day. However, selling off such a large sum will easily topple the prices, I estimate a return of 2.8 trillion would be considered not bad already.”

“Oh…”

Luo Feng nodded, “No rush, this auction will continue for 10 days. If I don’t have enough money, I’ll contact you.”

“Ok.” Luo Hua nodded.

The largest gathering in the Ganwu universe country, the Ganwu auction!

Luo Feng had already been anticipating the triennial event for a long time.

“Big brother, I’ll be reachable at any time. If you need large amounts of money, immediately inform me. I will immediately sell off for cash, and if it’s truly urgent, I’ve already talked to a friend, he can lend you some cash first, using my investment capital as

settlement.” Luo Hua said.

“Luo Feng.” Beside him Xu Xin smiled, “When you return, you must tell me all about the auction. I too have an interest in this Ganwu universe’s greatest gathering.”

Luo Feng nodded, bidding farewell to his family and immediately leaving Nine Star Bay.

Waving down a flying horse and riding it to the transmission belt.

“Transmission.” Luo Feng stood within the transmission spot, in his hand was the invite to the Ganwu auction.

Hu!

Luo Feng immediately vanished from the Black Dragon Mountain Island and was sent to the Ganwu continent, into a floating city above. The invite shot out several beams of light causing the floating city’s defenses to automatically open a pathway and allowed Luo Feng through.

……

This was a continent that was incomparably elegant amongst the clouds, the city was exquisite and beautiful, the flowers and plants were scattered and easily seen all over, and the most eye catching and enormous construct of the entire floating city was…the

auction hall!

Once every 3 years, the Ganwu auction, would always be held here at the auction hall!

“Sir, how do you do? Welcome to this year’s Ganwu auction, this is your seat number.”

“Miss, how do you do? Welcome to this year’s Ganwu auction, this is your seat number.”

People were all dressed in luxurious, or ancient clothing, some with snake bodies while others were as tall as seven to eight meters. The number of people here to attend the auction was simply massive; there were already two long lines formed at the entrance of the auction hall.

“So many 3 star clients?” Luo Feng too was in line,. In front of him was a huge cold looking man that seemed like a raging fire and behind him was a one meter tall gloomy and cold dwarf. However he emitted a natural aura of strength, causing Luo Feng to feel the pressure.

“3 star client, most of them are sector lords! Very few are big businessmen or youths with large backgrounds.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

“Most of them are sector lords?”

Luo Feng gazed around.

These two long lines awaiting to enter had at least a few thousand people. A few thousand sector lords?

“This auction, there’s a total of sixteen entrances. Hence…it isn’t just here where people are queuing, there are fifteen other lines formed around. Right now the number of sector lords queuing should be about 100,000.” Babata said.

“100 000?” Luo Feng gawked.

100,000 sector lords?

That was madness.

“Puda, there were over 1.31 million in the previous auction, do you think there’ll be more this time?” The huge iron faced man that seemed like a raging ball of flames in front of Luo Feng said softly.

“Yea, it’ll definitely exceed this time. It’s been said that this year there is a quota for entering the primal universe…and this quota is a sector lord quota. The highest level allowed is for sector lords to enter. Many undying have come here wanting to buy this quota. And because of this, many sector lords have come here.” In front of that iron faced man, a man with a hoarse voice, dressed entirely in a robe spoke.

Luo Feng was stunned.

1.31 million?

Primal universe?

Standing in line, he naturally heard many of the discussions of the sector lords, the content of these discussions completely shocked Luo Feng. Because, many of the topics they mentioned left Luo Feng completely bewildered.

For example...

“This time at the star field border, we had a total of eighteen sector lords, only three were lucky to return. The other fifteen... they may come out after a few tens of thousands years, a few million years, or they may never come out at all.”

“Your Tuoda army, has made a huge contribution in the battlefield outside the starfield this time, congrats.”

Beside him, the sector lords recognized each other, discussing these sort of topics. Luo Feng was just simply blinking his eyes and stayed silent as he listened.

“This brother, which family or organization are you from?” A team beside Luo Feng, one of them, a skinny single eye man smiled as he waved at Luo Feng.

“No family, no organization.” Luo Feng replied frankly.

“Oh!”

The single eyed man nodded as he heard, not asking anymore.

Just from their auras, one could easily determine the power levels of people around...the surrounding large group of sector lords, could easily see that Luo Feng was a much weaker little fellow amongst them. However, in this group, the weaker one was, the more others couldn’t offend him. It was because a person with weaker power being able to become a 3 star client, meant his background was usually extremely terrifying!

“Sir, how do you do? Welcome to this Ganwu auction, this is your seat number.”

Luo Feng received the ticket, looking at the black slip of paper, half of it was translucent with a screen on it, on the screen displayed...knd99286.

.....

“It’s really huge!” Entering the auction, Luo Feng was half dazed.

The entire auction was akin to one of earth’s soccer fields, the surroundings were a blur with a large number of people...however

the number of seats in this auction hall was simply too many.

“There’s a total of 3 million seats here, every seat is six meters wide and ten meters tall.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

Luo Feng nodded.

Every seat was 6m wide and 10m tall, such a huge seating space, with a total of three million of them. With just a glance, it was impossible to see the end of the hall. It was as though a world was formed just from putting these countless seats together. The reason behind the huge construction of seats was to accommodate the large physically structured guests.

“knd99286.” Luo Feng found the engraved number on the seat and sat in it.

6m wide, even bigger than his bed.

Countless seats...

Discussion filled the entire hall, as though countless gods were in conversation.

“So many sector lords?” Luo Feng held his breath.

“The Ganwu universe country has a total of 13,000 star fields!

Like the Black Dragon Mountain star field, there's close to a 100 sector lords! Then the entire Ganwu universe country...on estimate, has over a million sector lords! In truth because of the teachings of many undyings, the Ganwu universe's chances of having sector lords growing largely. There's a total of over a million sector lords in the entire Ganwu universe country.

Luo Feng felt his heartbeat race.

Over a million sector lords?

The Ganwu universe country, just what you would expect from a universe country. At such a level, it was simply enormous.

Chapter 18 – Breathtaking

“The Ganwu Empire is extraordinarily powerful. Even your teacher cannot compare to it. Undying beings can only lower their royal heads in front of the gigantic Ganwu Empire! After all, there are numerous fighters in Ganwu empire! Of course, the Ganwu Empire wouldn’t wantonly anger people like your teacher who aren’t tied to any organization and are also extremely powerful. However, if they do actually start fighting..... after paying a certain price, there will be no problem with eradicating people like your teacher.” sighed Babata, “There’s nothing that can be done. That’s the power of numbers!”

Luo Feng nodded.

As he looked at the auction, the countless number of seats, and the countless number of sector lords..... he understood what the ‘power of numbers’ meant.

Three hours later.

“Guests!”

A clear sound instantly spread around and echoed around the auction. Everyone in the vast auction quickly settled down and became quiet.

Luo Feng looked towards the center of the auction.

A bald old man with a black turtle shell on his back stood in the center of the auction. Above him was a 3D projection of this old man that was a thousand meters tall.

“Everyone, welcome to this time’s Ganwu auction! I hereby thank the fantastic support of the Virtual Universe Network company, the Universe First Bank, the Universe Galaxy Bank, the Battle-Axe Coliseum, the Universe Mercenary Alliance, and the Ganwu Empire.” smiled the old man. “I’m sure many of you recognize me. You can all call me old Batuo. Once again, Old Batuo will be your host for this marvelous banquet!!!”

“In our last Ganwu auction, there were 1,316,038 participants. We just finished tallying up the number of participants in this time’s auction. Does anyone know….. how many people there are?”

“1,823,959 people! 1.8 million, 500 thousand more than the previous one!”

The entire auction suddenly went into a wave-like uproar.

The lowest person here was a 3 star client…..

Within the densely packed seats, Luo Feng smacked his lips and sighed to himself, “Within the Black Dragon Mountain starfield, my wealth can rank within the top 100. However, across the entire Ganwu empire…..”. After reaching a different position, the things you see also change. Before reaching the minimum qualification of a 3 star client, you don’t even have the right to participate in this Ganwu auction.

“I’ll cut the small talk!

“The time to officially begin this time’s auction is soon. Same as always, we’ll first have an auction as warm up before we officially start.” the turtle shelled old man pointed to the side. Within an instant, a gigantic screen appeared. A beautiful, mesmerizing galaxy appeared. Galaxy after galaxy flashed past. Each of these galaxies had many life planets, and there were many powerful fighters within the life planets.

“This is the Tana starfield!”

“Out of the 13,000 starfields in our Ganwu empire, it is one of smaller starfields. There are a total of 668 galaxies in the entire starfield. Before, it was the land of an undying being. However, this undying being is preparing to embark on a life and death adventure, so he wants to sell the entire starfield. So, the warmup auction for our auction will be this starfield——Tana starfield!” yelled the turtle shelled old man loudly.

The auction went into an uproar.

Luo Feng, who was sitting on a large chair, was also shocked: “Tana starfield? Auctioning off a starfield right off the bat?”

Keep in mind that a low level civilization like the ‘Silverblue Empire’ only contains eight galaxies. Even though this Tana starfield is a smaller starfield, it still contains 600 galaxies.

“The warmup item is a small starfield. Looks like many valuable, expensive items will appear in this time’s auction!”

“I heard that the most valuable item is a spot to head over to the ‘Primal Universe’. This time’s auction is definitely one of the best auctions within the past 10,000 years.” A few voices of discussion carried over from the large seats beside Luo Feng.

The Ganwu auction was once every three years.

However, each auction was a bit different. Every thousand or ten thousand years, an auction with ‘higher level treasures’ would appear. Usually, you could tell the level of the auction from how many participants there are.

“The Tana starfield!”

“As long as you don’t establish your own empire within the starfield, you can enjoy the protection from the Ganwu Empire”

“A starfield like this can definitely become the foundation of a family that will go on for thousands of billions of years! It can become a place to nurture warriors and raise slaves. There are only so many starfields within the Ganwu empire, and fewer and fewer of them are appearing in auctions. Now, everybody cast your bids. Starting price——”300 Mixed Element units”

“400 mixed element units”

The price immediately soared.

This scene confused Luo Feng in the distance: “Babata, the price of a galaxy is around 1,000——10,000 universe dollars. This starfield contains a total of 668 galaxies, so technically 200 or 300 mixed element units should be enough”

“Luo Feng, you’re talking about a single galaxy!”

“And this, is an entire starfield! This is a completely different case. If galaxies are spread out, they can easily be picked on by surrounding organizations which will thereby inhibit their development! And an entire starfield, is united” said Babata, “Every galaxy within a starfield supports each other, so it will be hard for surrounding organizations to pressure them”

“So, a single starfield is worth a lot” said Babata.

Luo Feng held his black card as he looked towards the large screen in the center. The numbers on the screen constantly refreshed——

400 mixed element units! 420 mixed element units! 460 mixed element units! .....

Within the blink of an eye, the price changed to ‘860 mixed element units’!

861.....868.....876..... the rate of increase slowed down.

“1,000 mixed element units!”

“1,000 mixed element units!” the number that suddenly appeared caused the entire auction to go silent and nobody bid again.

“1,000 mixed element units, counting down 3 seconds! 3, 2, 1..... Congratulations, customer id kbr38293, you have just become the owner of the Tana starfield!” The turtle shelled old man’s voice was extremely bright, “There isn’t much time left until the auction officially begins. 58, 57.....10, 9, 8, 7, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1!”

His voice rumbled like a deity.

The center of the auction became extremely bright. Light shone on the faces of the powerful fighters in their seats.

“This time’s auction, officially begins!”

“For our first batch of goods, our customers can see the first 1,000 items being auctioned off on their auction cards. Please make the necessary preparations if you wish to purchase something” yelled the turtle shelled old man, “Now, for our first item—— 92 metallic lifeforms of the Bona clan!”

“Metallic Bona clan lifeforms can merge with spaceships and grant them self regenerating and self upgrading abilities.”

“Metallic Bona clan lifeforms, a total of 92. The starting bid is 200 billion universe dollars! The 92 highest bids will receive these metallic bona clan lifeforms!” yelled the turtle shelled old man.

Within moments, many started to cast their bids.

Luo Feng sat on his throne within the crowd and lowered his head to look at the black card in his hand: “92 items right off the bat, quite fast. This metallic life form can actually merge with spaceships, and as this life form increases in strength, the spaceship will also continue to upgrade? Interesting!”

Luo Feng watched the continuously increasing bids, shook his head, and stopped bidding.

Auction item after auction item was being auctioned off like flowing water.

The lowest final bid was a few dozen billion universe dollars. Normally, the final bids were around a few hundred billion universe dollars. After all, the initial items of the auction all fell under this price range.

1,000 mixed element units. Probably only four star clients could offer such a price.

“The lanke fruit, is the best item to raise monsters and plants. Even if you are heavily injured, consuming the lanke fruit can heal

you. Using 100 lanke fruits as a single unit, there are 39 units of lanke fruits. Each unit has a starting bid of 100 billion universe dollars”

Once again, the bids began.

An average galaxy with a few dozen thousand planets was priced around 100 billion to a trillion universe dollars.

“Luo Feng, purchase the next unit! This lanke fruit is very beneficial to the cloud contact vine”

And so.....

Luo Feng finally spent 180 billion and 181 billion universe dollars to purchase two units of lanke fruits.

“An automaton race battle uniform. It perfectly protects your entire body. The most outer layer of the automaton race battle uniform set naturally forms an energy shield, and the source of energy for that shield comes from the energy crystals in the interior of the battle uniform set. This automaton battle uniform set is a D8 grade battle uniform set. Even if a little star traveller kiddo puts it on, even a domain lord level five or six stage fighter wouldn’t be able to break it open. Even their spiritual force won’t be able to penetrate it. There is only one automaton race battle uniform set. This is definitely something you would want to buy for your favorite disciple or your grandson. With it, they will be much safer.”

“Starting bid of one mixed element unit!” yelled the turtle shelled old man.

This item shocked Luo Feng.

The wearer doesn’t need any sort of his own power to block an attack. This automaton race battle uniform set..... Luo Feng has never heard of it. However, it’ll be useless if a sector lord wears this thingy.

“Damn, the price is soaring.” Luo Feng looked at the result which caused his jaw to drop——”9.8 mixed element units”

This is the final price, nearing 10 mixed element units.

An item purely for gifting your favorite disciple or grandson, actually neared the price of all the treasures Luo Feng obtained in the world within a world!

“Luo Feng, it’s rare to encounter an automaton race battle uniform set with such a high defensive capabilities. Don’t mention a D8 grade one, you probably haven’t even seen a C grade one. This kind of thing is purely a luxury good. The person who purchased this battle uniform set is probably an undying being.” said Babata.

Item after item passed.

All sorts of items caused one to get dizzy. Any of those items would cause domain lords to go crazy. However, in the most

important ceremony of the Ganwu empire, there were around a million sector lords and even a few undying beings who wouldn't go soft on their bidding.

Three batches of items, a total of 3,000 items, were swiftly sold.

"Now comes the fourth batch of items. Everyone can see the next 1,000 items on their auction cards. If you see something you want to purchase, please make the necessary preparations." the turtle shelled old man remained smiling as he spoke.

The auction suddenly became silent.

A countless number of powerful fighters on their thrones watched their cards to see the next 1,000 items to be auctioned off.

"NAN SHEN ARMAMENT! THE NAN SHEN ARMAMENT! IT'S ONE OF THE NINE GREAT WEAPONS FOR THE CONTROLLER TYPE SPIRIT READERS, THE 'NAN SHEN ARMAMENT'! Luo Feng, this is the most suitable spiritual weapon for you. You must buy this Nan Shen Armament!" Right after Luo Feng finished looking, Babata's energetic yelling rang in his mind.

Chapter 19 – Nan Shen Armament

Controller? One of nine godly weapons? The Nan Shen Armament?" Luo Feng looked curiously down at the black slip in his hand, the screen on the slip had a detailed explanation of the 1000 items.

"It's most suitable for you Luo Feng, it's usually extremely difficult to buy one Luo Feng, you definitely have to buy it."

"I understand, let me take a look first." Luo Feng looked carefully at the screen on the slip.

Luo Feng was swiftly able to spot the item Nan Shen Armament.

Gently tapping, he accessed the detailed explanation of the item.

Nan Shen Armament: One of the nine godly weapons for the controller type spirit reader. It's full name is the Hun Tian Yan or the Nine Layer Hun Tian Yan. The Nan Shen Armament's normal form is that of a dark golden elongated l rod. Within it lies 10,081 golden blades as thin as cicada wings Every blade is infused with profound engravings and energies of the origin laws.

The nine godly controller weapons, which are the embodiment of origin laws, of which eight of them are gold, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder and light. These eight origin laws can then be combined to form the majestic laws of either time or space,.

The last of the nine godly weapons was created from the fusion of time and space; the two most profound of the origin laws.

And the Nan Shen Armament, is a mixture of gold and time. As these two origin laws are fused to form the godly weapon, its power was immense.

Nan Shen Armament has a total of nine forms.

Each form is stronger than the other. Similarly, the difficulty to wield each of these forms soars as one goes up.

The nine layer Nan Shen Armament is incredibly difficult to master!

The First form: To a star level, it is incredibly difficult. To be able to unleash the first form during the star level, one would be deemed invincible in within that level!

……

The Third form: To be able to unleash it during the universe level, one would be deemed invincible within the same level! It will not be too difficult to acquire a 1000 match winning streak even in the huge Battle-axe Coliseum.

……

The Sixth form: To be able to unleash it in the domain lord level, one would be deemed invincible within the same level. Widening the field to the Ganwu Universe country, even the entire human race...a domain lord that could unleash the sixth form would be considered as one of the pinnacle warriors in the same level and even comparable to the same level golden horned beast.

The Seventh form: If it were a level nine sector lord who is able to unleash it, that person would be at the pinnacle of sector lords.

The Eighth form: This form is incredibly difficult to achieve. A level nine sector lord who is able to unleash the eighth form would be deemed invincible amongst the sector lords in the entire Ganwu Universe country.

The Ninth form: The highest form. From time immemorable within this vast universe, no sector lords have ever been able to unleash the ninth form! This is because sector lords who are able to unleash the ninth form usually would have broken through to the undying level already.

.....

Nan Shen Armament is incredibly strong, but it also had its weakness.

It was strong because of it’s nine forms, each more powerful than the one before.

It was weak because of its difficulty. People with poor comprehension skill would be better off with normal spirit weapons.

……

The auction started at 500 billion universe dollars. There were a total of nine of them!

“Nine Layer Hun Tian Yan? Great!” Luo Feng muttered. At this moment, sitting on the large seat to the left of Luo Feng, a black scaled man that was close to 60m tall said softly to him: “This brother, you’ve taken a fancy to the Nine Layer Hun Tian Yan? That Nan Shen Armament isn’t for normal people’s usage! The nine godly weapons are all incredibly difficult to use, as their utilization is mostly based on the the understanding of the origin laws. Without that ability, it’s better to buy normal spirit weapons, as it’ll be better for unleashing one’s true strength. Remember…in buying weapons, it’s not about buying the best, but what’s the most suitable!”

“Makes a lot of sense.” Luo Feng smiled as he glanced at the huge black scaled man.

The black scaled man chuckled and opened his big wide mouth: “The difficulty of the nine godly weapons is immensely tedious. Like that Nan Shen Armament, a sector lord who is able to unleash the eighth form would have normally broken through to undying already. Little brother, even if you have money, you shouldn’t waste it like that. Buying something that suits yourself would be better.”

“Thanks.” Luo Feng smiled and didn’t speak more, thinking within, “This Nan Shen Armament is best suited for me.”

Luo Feng currently already had some comprehension of the gold origin laws!

As for the space laws, even though Luo Feng didn’t have any progress, he was working hard on it.

With such qualities, he definitely had to work hard to use the Nan Shen Armament.

“Luo Feng, the maximum potential of the soaring shuttle is only until universe level. Right now, your golden horned beast’s body is completely able to unleash the full power of the soaring shuttle. It’s not much of a challenge to you anymore. And the Nan Shen Armament isn’t afraid of you using it, just worried that you currently do not posses the ability to unleash its full power. The nine forms are awaiting your breakthrough.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng felt super ambitious and pumped.

Nine forms!

I’ll breakthrough one layer at a time!

“Babata, how much do you think the Nan Shen Armament will go

for?” Luo Feng asked.

“There’s a total of nine of them. Amongst the sector lords here, only spirit reader controllers will vie for it, and only those along the path of gold and space origin laws will go for it. However, since the size of the hall and number of people is huge, according to my calculations, the price will rush pretty high. However, the amount of money you have should be enough.”

“Ok.” Luo Feng nodded unconsciously.

At this point, the current amount he had was about 3 .986 trillion, getting the Nan Shen Armament shouldn’t be hard.

As time passed, expensive and valuable weapons aroused bidding wars, swiftly being bought and auctioned off in the incomparably vast auction hall. 99% of the the people present were sector lords, the others were either people with huge backgrounds or undying!

“The next auction item is the Nan Shen Armament!”

“It’s one of the nine godly weapons! As for the Nan Shen Armament’s power, I’m sure everyone is clear on it! Many sector lord controllers constantly fret over it, however once they begin to comprehend the origin laws and breakthrough, their current spirit weapons are unable to unleash their full strengths! With the Nan Shen Armament however, one would never have to worry about that.”

“It’s not afraid of you using it, just that your ability might be inadequate.”

“Nan Shen Armament, nine forms. If you are able to unleash the ninth form, in the vast universe, not just among the human race, but even the automaton race, the beast race or even the space beasts, you’d probably find it hard to find an opponent.” The turtle shelled old man’s voice reverberated about, “Alright, we’ll begin the bid now, there’s a total of 9 of them, the highest 9 bids will be chosen. The lowest starting bid is…500 billion universe dollars!”

……

Immediately, without an end in sight, the blurred images of the huge king size seats, millions of sector lords and even undyings, many of whom began to bid.

Countless king size seats, one of which, Luo Feng sat within, he too began to key in his bid: “600 billion universe dollars.”

“Damn.” Luo Feng stared.

The numbers on the screen constantly jumped, the screen displayed all of the top 9 bids.

550 billion…600 billion…660 billion…700 billion…

The prices flew rapidly.

“800 billion.” Luo Feng keyed in again.

890 billion…900 billion…960 billion…

The numbers beside swiftly rose past Luo Feng’s numbers.

1.5 trillion…

The number reported on the screen jumped up violently.

“Madness.” Luo Feng stared.

“Luo Feng, the Nan Shen Armament bidding price usually will go up to at least 2 trillion universe dollars.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

It was true…

2 trillion…2.1 trillion…2.11 trillion…

The speed slowly began to decline.

“2.18 trillion.” Luo Feng entered the price, staring at the screen, the number of the 9th highest price, the speed of increase gradually slowed down.

2.19 trillion…2.6 trillion!

“It jumped again.” Luo Feng was beginning to panic, even though he was able to see many items that would normally be hard to obtain in reality, however the number of powerful people gathered here was simply too many, he would easily encounter people willing to give unreasonable prices just to obtain these treasures.

Indeed, the price continued to rise.

3 trillion…3.08 trillion…3.1 trillion…

The rising prices caused Luo Feng to hold his breath, his eyes turning slightly red, “Babata, why have the prices raised to such unreasonable numbers.”

“It’s an auction after all, it’s impossible to completely predict it. Sometimes there might be 10 people who really want the Nan Shen Armament, and these may be warriors with lots of capital, hence the price would rise a lot. After all, there’s only 9 items in total! After it’s over, if you wish to buy a Nan Shen Armament, it would be up to luck altogether. After all, not every Ganwu auction would have Nan Shen Armaments.” Babata said, “Just bid, you must get it.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng gritted his teeth, looking at the current bid price, entering another price…3.2 trillion!

However following the shocking bidding, the price quickly broke

past 3.2 trillion.

“Babata, send a message to my little brother, tell him to immediately borrow some money.” Luo Feng asked, the exchange of funds wasn’t immediate after the deal was sealed. Rather, after all the 1000 items of the auction were auctioned off, they would do a mass exchange.

“Your brother has replied, saying that with just a phone call his friend will immediately transfer the funds, right now he can at most transfer 2 trillion universe dollars.

Luo Feng relaxed a little.

The bidding increases had begun to slow down, obviously even the sector lords didn’t have bottomless wells of money.

“3.6112 trillion universe dollars.” Luo Feng keyed in.

On the screen the number changes began to slow down, 3.6081… 3.6085…3.6090…finally the numbers stopped.

Finally the 9th highest bidding price was 3.6101 trillion universe dollars.

The 9th highest bidding price is 3.6101 trillion, after a 3 second countdown…3…2…1, congrats to the 9 guests, you have become owners of Nan Shen Armaments!” The turtle shelled old man shouted loudly, “We will continue, the next item is…”

Luo Feng looked at the black slip screen in his hand, the words appeared on it...”Congratulations, guest number knd99286, you’ve successfully bid for the Nan Shen Armament, please prepare to sign off and exchange the funds for the item after the end of the auction.”

“Luo Feng, this Nan Shen Armament will always accompany you into the universe level, domain lord level, sector lord level and even after you’ve broken into the undying level! It will accompany you for 10,000, 100,000 years or maybe even longer. This will be your most important partner, accompanying you through life or death, you have to work hard to bring out its fullest potential.” Babata encouraged.

Luo Feng nodded, he couldn’t help feel extremely excited within.

Nan Shen Armament...

His own weapon!

After about an hour, this batch of auction items had been sold off.

Luo Feng too exchanged the funds and scheduled for the exchange location of the Nan Shen Armament in reality.

“Right now it’s the 5th batch of auction items, everybody should be able to see in their screens. The next 1000 items up for auction,

whatever you wish to bid for, please get ready." The turtle shelled old man's voice reverberated about in the vast auction hall, countless sector lords in the king size seats all looked down at their slips.

Luo Feng too lowered his head to look, and with a glance.

"Damn! Life fruit?" Luo Feng couldn't help but force a smile, of the 1000 items there was a life fruit within.

Life Fruit, lowest price 500 billion universe dollars, a total of 12 of them.

"My balance...I've only got about 374 billion, not even enough for the starting bid." Luo Feng rubbed his head, blinking his eyes, feeling somewhat helpless.

Chapter 20 – The End of the Auction

"The lowest price for the life fruit is 500 billion universe dollars. However, the life fruit is akin to a sector lord's second life. Hence the price will rocket even higher! It normally exceeds 2 trillion, and if more people are fighting over it, it may get even higher!" Babata said.

"Hm, no way around it." Luo Feng shook his head and gave up on the life fruit.

Even though Hong wanted a life fruit for himself, he too was prepared to use it to nurture his cloud contact vine.

In truth, nurturing the cloud contact vine with the life fruit was an extremely wasteful action because the life fruit was as valuable as a sector lord's second life, things that were used to nurture the plant life form were items that were far below the life fruit in value, like what Luo Feng had purchased before, the Swelling Water fruit.

"Back then, you fought for the thunder stones in order to exchange for treasures in the world within a world, that exchange was valid for using the life fruit to nurture the cloud contact vine. However in truth, eating too many at a time is not good for the vine, the life energy of the life fruit is simply too much and huge. Swallowing all at one go will make the vine bloated, wasting a lot of its other beneficial effects, it's simply a waste."

"The life fruit, it's most optimal usage isn't to nurture plant life."

“Didn’t you already buy 200 swelling water fruits?”

“The swelling water fruit is used to nurture spirit beasts and plants. It even has medicinal properties, and its portions are smaller than the life fruit, making it easier to absorb. The cloud contact vine may still get bloated but it won’t ever implode internally like it would from eating the life fruit.”

“By using one swelling water fruit every 10 days for 3 years, thereby using a 100 of them, your big brother Hong’s cloud contact vine will be able to grow to universe level 3 or 4. This would be much better than swallowing one life fruit immediately.”

The life fruit finally reached a bid of 2.8609 trillion! It was still cheaper than the Nan Shen Armament, but still extremely expensive.

The next batch of items began to show themselves, causing Luo Feng to drool over them. However, he had insufficient funds in his pockets.

“Even if I don’t buy, looking is not bad too.” Luo Feng smiled as he held onto his slip, on it displayed were the 1000 items. He casually browsed through them and looked at their details.

The details and information of each valuable item were indeed eye openers.

It allowed Luo Feng to gain knowledge about many secret items of the universe.

When Luo Feng participated in the universe's greatest gathering...the Ganwu auction, his little brother Luo Hua was in his work station.

9 star bay, within that work room of the villa.

"It's boring."

Laying in a chair, there were 6 laptops on the table before him.He was observing every one of them, which had a webpage displayed on their screens with information about his important investments.

"After half a day of virtual wrestling games and another half of gun games, there's nothing else to do, so boring." Luo Hua lay down, his legs on the table.

The other workers in the room were all seriously engaged in their work.

As a financial investor, the rest days could be half a month, a few months or even half a year without having to do anything. However, once the ball started rolling they would get extremely busy.

"My god, xphf000891-9279 has suddenly appeared with a huge

price!!” A young lady shouted.

“Oh!”

The initially bored Luo Hua sat up immediately, pulling his chair and sliding towards the desk, staring hard at the 2nd laptop screen on his left. The screen obviously displayed the new higher price. Luo Hua smiled, “ I’m not afraid of the troubled waters, just afraid of the stagnant ones! The opportunity has come!”

In such investments, Luo Hua’s initial investment had already dropped 35%. For such high risk investments, these sort of returns were already considered high.

The only reason he could do this was because he had confidence!

From the initial 700 billion universe dollars, after these 2 years of investments, it had grown to 800 billion. It may seem like an incremental increase, but that was only because he hadn’t sold anything, as he was waiting for a good chance!

“The longer one waits, the higher the returns! It just depends on who’s more patient, I hope this time everything will come through!” Luo Hua was like a venomous snake, staring hard at the screen, the universe large investment markets included not just him or an investor with 2 trillion universe dollars, it even included 4 star and 5 star clients.

He had to be extremely cautious!

As he was dealing with the bigger financial market, it was easy to encounter the high level players. They may be the investment department from universe countries, maybe the universe galaxy bank, or the universe 1st bank, or even some large organizations. The moment he encounters a high level player and isn't careful enough, he could not only not reap his rewards but also may lose his life.

"3rd level financial security risk, this ensures that they stayed within the safety level."

"1st group, 2nd group, 3rd group, keep an eye on xphf000891-9279, you know the drill!" Luo Hua shouted.

"Yes boss!" A group of youths from earth all were extremely excited.

Luo Huas investment this time, each deal period had a window of 12 hours and every exchange lasted about 4 hours.

"Boss, the price is swiftly rising, it's already risen 6%, do we sell?"

"Wait." Luo Hua ordered.

"It's begun to fall, only left with a 5% increase, and it's continuing to fall!"

The moment the prices began to move, it indeed made people worried, because the moment it loses 1/3rd of its value, with their 3 level security, it would already implode. Then the 700 billion capital would be reduced to null, returning to nothing!

Luo Hua was expressionless, like a venomous snake, staring hard at the screen before him.

“We still have 2 minutes until the collection time.”

“It’s rising quickly, violently rising.”

……

During the first exchange period it rose 12%.

During the 2nd it rose 8%.

During the 3rd it fell 6%.

During the 4th, it slightly shook falling 0.8%.

From the previous stagnant state, it had completely gone volatile. Even a high level player wouldn’t dare get careless here.he larger the investment one plays with, the moment it falls, it would be hard to sell even if one wanted to! When compared, a large investor would actually have a harder time with higher turnover than a smaller investor.

During the 5th period, it began to rise again, rising all the way to 15%.

“In different batches sell off 30% of the goods.” Luo Hua ordered coldly.

“Boss, the condition is good right now.”

“Looking at today’s madness, even with all the smaller investors, it will go crazy again tomorrow. It will definitely have a period of rise again.” Immediately someone from below shouted, however they didn’t dare delay their actions at all.

The boss’s order, one could have an opinion about it but still had to carry out the order!

This was because in times of crisis, even a small delay could result in heavy losses.

“1st group’s goods completely sold.”

“2nd group completely sold.”

“3rd group completely sold.”

The 3 little groups shouted loudly, Luo Hua who was sitting in his chair before the desk smiled, “Very good.”

……

During the 6th period, the price continued to rise! making it seems like Luo Hua had sold off too early.

“This batch of investment had a total of 700 billion as capital, selling off 30% of the goods, that’s 210 billion, even with the 3rd level security risk, it’s still rising today. we’ve lost the opportunity to earn 20 to 30 billion universe dollars in a short period of time.” The young people were engaged in discussion, however despite their discussions, they didn’t dare go against any of Luo Hua’s orders.

“Sell off 10% of goods.”

“Continue with another 10%.”

During the 7th period, Luo Hua actually did 2 exchanges, and during this 7th period, it was still rising.

During the 8th period, it began to rise initially but fell by a lot after! Finally falling throughout the period.

During the 9th period, the moment it started it continued falling.

“Sell 10%.” Luo Hua ordered.

……

Under these volatile situations, Luo Hua still maintained clear orders, throughout the dangerous situations he gave his orders, however with the rises he still made profits.

During the 12th period, it continued to rise!

And after which it still continued to rise.

Throughout this entire process, Luo Hua maintained his position and continued to sell!

“The target has been met, sell off all remaining goods.” Luo Hua ordered.

“Yes.”

Amidst the chaotic situation, Luo Hua managed to sell off all goods under his hand.

“2 years of waiting, half a year of arrangement, finally it’s over.” Luo Hua smiled, no matter how much the price would continue to fluctuate after, it didn’t mean anything to him anymore, his required target had been met and that was enough.

“After the final exchange, the initial capital of 700 billion had ballooned to an enormous amount of 4.681 trillion., it could be

considered 6 times that of the initial investment.” Luo Hua was very satisfied. Using the moderate security risk levels, it indeed allowed him to increase his gains. However it was also easy for the security risk levels to cause considerable losses, it was like a double edged sword.

……

This investment, during the next 3 exchange periods, it continued to rise and fall. However, it’s entire movement continued to gradually rise, making the countless investors to be extremely anxious. This was followed by a fall after, this investment continued to fall continuously another 3 times causing others to dump all their stocks, but with no one to buy.

“Even if you wanted to sell now you can’t sell, everything will be stuck.” Luo Hua sighed at the situation, “Who knows how many have had a considerable loss of funds and forced to commit suicide.”

“The boss is indeed formidable.”

“The boss sure is calm.” Within the work room, looking at the 4 continuous falls, they all were covered in cold sweat. Every fall fell by 15%, until finally it hit only half of its previous highest price. Within 4 short exchanges, or 2 days time, this sort of mad drop was too extreme.

“Some win, some lose.” Luo Hua shook his head, “The ones who know how to buy are formidable but the ones who know how to

sell are the true winners."

"Once you've reached your target that's good enough, don't get too greedy."

"With this batch of money, I was initially prepared to have 20%-30% that we wouldn't have been able to be sell. Who would have thought it worked out better than my expectations." Luo Hua ordered, "Alright, with this the prices should be solid, in this 1% category and investing 100 billion, there's no need for the security risk levels, and normally these prices will still fall."

"Understood."

The workers under him immediately began to establish and invest , even if it continued falling they continued, even if it rose they invested. Whether it was a smart move or not, they would only know after the entire exchange was done.

"Calm down!"

Luo Hua was very clear that he could succeed. The main thing was to have absolute nerves of steel. This was something that his long years as a handicapped and depressed youth had trained out of him. Capturing the opportunity while remaining calm, plus talent and knowledge of investment from earth, all these made Luo Hua the man he is!

"Big brother, I have 4.2 trillion here." During the 13th exchange

period, Luo Hua had transferred this money to Luo Feng.

Ganwu auction, normally it would go on for about 10 days, sometimes longer while sometimes shorter.

Every batch of 1,000 items lasted about 3-6 hours, while the items themselves were not similar to each other.

On the 10th day of the Ganwu auction.

In the enormous auction hall, a million king sized seats with large amounts of sector lords sitting in them, looking at the host in the middle.

“A total of 50 batches of items, 50,000 items, have all been sold.” The turtle shelled old man laughed, “Right now, we’ve reached the climax of the entire auction…the final 100 items, every one of these items are unique and only one of each is available. They are usually extremely valuable, but their starting bids are all 0!”

The end of the auction marked the beginning of the final auction.

“4.2 trillion universe dollars?” In a particular seat, an inconspicuous Luo Feng had an expression of extreme shock, “Luo Hua said in his message that these are the profits? His capital wasn’t affected at all?”

10 days ago his little brother hadn’t earned much.

With a flash, he had already earned this much! Luo Feng was stunned.

“Haha, Luo Feng, your little brother’s really skillful. Even if I was the one handling the accounts, I wouldn’t compare to him. The higher the capital, the harder it is to earn, the other larger powers wouldn’t let you take a piece of the pie. I seriously respect him.” Babata complimented, “With this over 4 trillion universe dollars, you might be able to get something from this last auction.”

Chapter 21 – The Second Clone

“The next item is the beginning of our final auction. To be able to start our conclusion, this item is definitely one of the top 3 valuable items—— the golden leaf of the ancient Klass tree” yelled the turtled shelled old man. At the same time, an image of a seemingly normal golden leaf appeared on the screen beside him. However, the entire leaf seemed to have a peculiar feeling to it. The fighters on the millions of seats throughout the auction started discussing in confusion.

“What is the ancient Klass tree?”

“What is that?”

“No idea.” Out of the over a million sector lords present, basically 99.9% of them had no idea what this item was.

Luo Feng was also confused: “Babata, what is this?”

“This auction sure can do it. This auction is definitely the best one of the Ganwu auctions in the past 10,000 years” sighed Babata, “This golden leaf of the ancient Klass tree, even in the vast universe, is an extremely valuable item. Don’t bother asking about it until you reach the undying level; it ties into a lot of complicated matters”

“Carry out my order, tell the empire’s investment branch to give me as much money as they can.” On one of the various thrones in the auction, a long-haired middle aged man with long eyelashes

gave his order through his virtual assistant.

.....

“Oh? The golden leaf of the ancient Klass tree? I came here this time just for a spot to study in the primal universe, but who would’ve thought I would run into the golden leaf.” A fat man was wearing some peculiar armor. As he stood there, it seemed like an infinite amount of lightning was gathering around him. He seemed to be the avatar of the universe origin laws themselves.

.....

“Those who know about this golden leaf knows how much it’s worth. For those who don’t, nevermind. The authorities have requested that I don’t go into the specifics.” yelled the turtle shelled old man, “Bidding begin, starting bid ... 0!”

The first item of the finale of the auction—— the golden leaf of the ancient Klass tree, started to be auctioned off.

“1,000 mixed element units!”

A number appeared on the cards of the million sector lords, the various rich people, and even the undying beings, which caused Luo Feng to gasp “1,000 mixed element units right off the bat?”. Such an amount can purchase a few hundred life fruits and a small star sector.

“2,000 mixed element units!”

2,200 mixed element units..... 2,800 mixed element units..... 3,300 mixed element units.....

The rising price caused everybody to widen their eyes in awe.

Even for undying beings, this was a gigantic amount.

“My lord, there isn’t any money left in the royal reserves of the entire empire”

“Bastard!”

Cold darkness was currently emanating from the eyes of a bald, handsome, tall man as he cursed. As of now, the bids have already reached 5,000 mixed element units.

“This is too amazing.” Luo Feng was shocked.

“The requirement for a four star client is 10,000 mixed element units, which is above average for an undying being” said Babata, “The ones still bidding are probably all undying beings.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Sector lord Kabus wealth could rival a poor undying being, which

is around 200 to 300 mixed element units. And now, the bids have reached 5,000 mixed element units. Sector lords could only stare at this price in awe.

"The first and last item of the finale are extraordinarily expensive" introduced Babata.

"8,900 mixed element units! Any higher?" the turtle shelled old man smiled as he yelled. This price was already above their accepted standard. If nobody bid above the accepted standard, then the organizers of the auction will arrange for someone to purchase the item.

"8,950 mixed element units!"

Another higher bid.

"8,960 mixed element units!" the price went up only by a bit every time. The price continued to rise, but the frequency lowered by quite a bit.

"Everyone, we're at 8,990 mixed element units, any higher?" the turtle shelled old man looked around, "Beginning countdown, 10, 9..... 3, 2, 1! Congratulations customer bue52522, you just received this extremely valuable golden leaf of the ancient Klass tree"

Luo Feng was shocked, even his top quality E grade automaton race spaceship is only worth around 1,000 to 2,000 mixed element units. This price of 8,990 mixed element units, is enough to

purchase five or six of those automaton spaceships, and that price was used just for a golden leaf?

As the rest of the items appeared, Luo Feng became calm.

It seems like not all of these items were absurdly expensive. Out of the 100 items in the finale, only two or three were extremely expensive! 20 of them were a bit expensive. As for the rest of them, they could only count as ‘extremely rare’; their price is within reason.

“22,000 universe dollars, counting down, 3, 2, 1! Congratulations customer ypr20445, you just received this Tian Luo crystal”

“This next item, is even more rare than the rest. Even in the auctions held in the various empires, one would rarely have the chance to encounter this item—— the skin of a Mosha clansman!” yelled the turtle shelled old man. Instantly, the over a million sector lord fighters on their thrones started to go into an uproar.

“Yes, the skin of a Mosha clansman, you didn’t hear wrong” the turtle shelled old man was extremely excited. A peculiar black piece of skin appeared on the display beside him. On the skin was some dark golden engravings.

“Humans, monsters, etc. are all flesh type beings”

“But the Mosha clans people are energy type beings. As long as their energy core doesn’t extinguish, they won’t die. Even if they

die, the energy of that Mosha clans person will dissipate, leaving behind just a shattered energy core. Killing them is already extremely difficult, but to try to obtain their skin..... is even more difficult."

"As a clan specializing in assassination, as the ones that space itself favors, their skin contains the 'universe origin laws of space'."

"I'm sure everyone understands the price of this skin"

The million sector lords in the auction started discussing with each other. 'Luo Feng', who was sitting on one of the many thrones, was also excited.

"The Mosha clan, Luo Feng, THIS IS THE SKIN OF A MOSHA CLANSMAN! If we say the Golden Horned Beast is naturally talented in the universe origin laws of gold, then the Mosha clan is talented in the universe origin laws of space. If you use its skin to nurture your second clone, this, this is like a dream combo" Babata was extremely excited.

Luo Feng froze, his Golden Horned Beast could have a total of three clones. The first clone is his 'human from earth'. Now that his Golden Horned Beast has reached the universe level, he could indeed nurture his second clone.

Since he could only have three clones in total, Luo Feng didn't dare to take it lightly.

If he couldn't find a suitable one, he would rather hold it off temporarily.

"Mosha clan?" Luo Feng was a bit expectant and confused.

"There are many races throughout the vast universe. The most powerful ones are the flesh type ones. However, other life forms cannot be underestimated. For example, there are peculiar races that can live forever. There are metallic life forms, energy life forms, soul life forms, plant life forms, etc. Metallic life forms can be divided into 10 million different kinds, and there are billions of plant life forms"

"Some life forms are naturally favored by the universe"

"The 'Mosha clan' of the energy life forms are one of the most elite races! The Mosha race has the title of the most powerful assassination race! Their only weak point is that they grow extremely slowly. However, once they grow, they'll become one of the most horrifying assassins. They are naturally talented in comprehending space, so their appearances are extremely peculiar and their escaping methods cannot be predicted."

"Luo Feng, with your Mosha clan clone, your studies in the《Spatial Techniques》will be two times easier." followed Babata.

Luo Feng nodded.

Yes, he had to choose the best choices for the three clones of the

Golden Horned Beast. This skin of the Mosha clan was indeed a suitable choice.

"And their most valuable part is their skin."

"Since they are an energy life form, their bodies would normally dissipate like energy on death, leaving behind just a shattered energy core. Only when they are killed under special circumstances are their bodies preserved. So its skin is extremely valuable..... oh yeah, the price of this skin is quite high, probably at least a few hundred mixed element units. You can't afford it." said Babata.

Luo Feng was speechless.

Can't afford.....

Such a good choice for his second clone, and he couldn't afford this piece of skin.

"I actually don't need that much, I only need a tiny bit of the skin." thought Luo Feng to himself. However, he understood that nobody would be stupid enough to give just a bit of the skin to Luo Feng.

"Unfortunately, I must inform you all that this is not a complete piece of Mosha clansman skin" the turtle shelled old man pointed to the display beside him, which displayed the black piece of skin with the peculiar dark golden engravings on them, "This skin is

only a tiny portion of the skin of the Mosha clansman. The rest was either torn apart or destroyed during the battle”

“Man!”

“What was I expecting.”

“Trying to learn from the engravings on the piece of skin is already an extraordinarily difficult task. One out of ten thousand people would already have trouble succeeding. If you could just trigger some thoughts, that would be good enough already. As for an incomplete piece of skin..... there’s basically no chances of success”

“Got all excited for nothing.”

Discussion was rampant across the auction. The difference between a complete portion of skin and an incomplete portion was as large as heaven and earth. This disappointed many of the people here, but one youth was extremely excited.

“Incomplete! The more incomplete the better, the more the better!” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed. Babata followed: “Luo Feng, the price of an incomplete portion is much lower than a complete portion. According to my estimations, you should be able to get it with two or three mixed element units. However, if some undying being wants this and randomly bids, it could raise up to 10 mixed element units, if not higher.”

Luo Feng was speechless.

Out of the roughly a million participants, there were indeed some undying beings. If an undying being wanted it, then the price could soar. To an undying being, 10 mixed element units was indeed not too big of a number.

“They probably won’t fight over it.” thought Luo Feng to himself.

“That is up to your luck. Most undying beings wouldn’t fight over some incomplete engravings, but one of them just might.” said Babata.

Luo Feng clenched his teeth.

He had to go all out.....

And also leave it to fate!

This Mosha clansman skin was definitely an extremely suitable choice for his second clone. As one of the peak energy life forms and the most powerful assassin, even if it was slightly inferior to the Golden Horned Beast, it wasn’t inferior by much. Even a sector lord’s entire fortune could not afford its skin, which was a testament to its value.

“Even if it is extremely hard to learn something from the engravings on a Mosha clansman’s skin, there still exists a chance.

Furthermore, the skin of a Mosha clansman is very rare. The numbers of the Mosha clansman are extremely few, so this piece of skin is definitely one of the most, most valuable collection items. Just its worth for collection purposes is already quite high" said the turtle shelled old man loudly, which caused Luo Feng to grind his teeth.

"Alright, let the bids begin. Starting bid is also 0!"

"One mixed element!"

The first bid appeared on everyone's auction cards.

The auction for the Mosha clansman skin, begins!

Chapter 22 – Primal Universe

The elite of the energy race beings, the Mosha clan, with the title of the most powerful assassination race. In numbers, even though the Mosha clan wasn't as few as the golden horned beast, the value of their skin didn't seem any lower than a golden horned beast's body.

Pity...

A partial damaged skin of a Mosha clan, it's training value was very low, the main thing was just the price. This was what made Luo Feng happy.

"Let's hope the undying don't get excited about it." Luo Feng secretly prayed within, 1 mixed element was a huge amount even for sector lords, without any special situations, they wouldn't waste their money, the only thing he was afraid of was the undying spending.

1.1 mixed elements...1.15 mixed elements...

The numbers on the screen constantly rose.

1.5 mixed elements...1.51...1.56...1.59...

The numbers continued to jump, within a flash it had broken past 2 mixed elements.

“Just a damaged piece of skin, is there a need for this?” Luo Feng gritted his teeth.

“That’s a skin with space origin laws engravings.” Babata said.

“But it’s damaged!” Luo Feng bit down, entering another higher price.

The price continued to jump at a dazzling speed, especially with a few large jumps, causing the price to swiftly go past 3 mixed elements. After which it was clear that the jumps began to slow down, after all, this was still a damaged piece of skin from a Mosha Clan demon.

“3 mixed elements, any higher and there’s no point.” In the millions of king sized seats, one of the guests, dressed in a peculiar silver armor, with white eyebrows, white pupils and bald. He was all smiles, giving off the impression that he had a personality as warm as a sun.

Even though it was warm, he still needed to be respected.

“3.6 mixed elements. Even if I get it, this Mosha clan’s skin will just go in my training room.” A silver haired black robed old man looked at the price break past 3.6 mixed elements and shook his head, giving up on the bid.

……

“Enough, enough, don’t rise anymore.” Luo Feng stared at the screen of the bids, gripping the slip so tight crunching noises could be heard.

“3.9 mixed elements.” Luo Feng bit his teeth and entered yet another bid.

Others could simply not buy it, but he had to grab this opportunity.

After entering the bid, he continued to stare hard at the screen, the screen continued to display 3.9 mixed elements, after a few seconds of no change, Luo Feng began to grow excited.

“3.9 mixed elements, any higher bids? Countdown 3 seconds, 3... 2...1! Congratulations to guest number knd99286, you’ve acquired the partial piece of skin from the Mosha Clan.” The turtle shelled old man said, his voice resounding across the endless stream of seats within the vast auction hall.

“Phew!” Luo Feng looked at the screen holding his breath, finally releasing a long sigh of relief.

“Haha, Luo Feng, you’ve succeeded.” Babata too was extremely gleeful.

“My luck is good, I was so afraid it would exceed my capacity.” Luo Feng was all smiles.

It was enough. By participating in this Ganwu Auction, he had seen tens of thousands of valuable items. At the same time, he purchased several important items: the Swelling water fruit for the cloud contact vine, the Nan Shen Armament to be his weapon for an extremely long time, and the skin of the Mosha clan to act as his next body."

The 2nd clone... was going to be of the Mosha clan!

"Right now I'm just worried about one thing..."Luo Feng thought.

"What are you worried about?" Babata asked.

"I'm worried about the owner of this skin, what level of power he was at." Luo Feng thought, "The golden horned beast's cloning process doesn't work on one that is more powerful than itself. Right now the golden horned beast is at universe level 6, that means the nurturing process can only do up to a universe level 6. The owner of this skin...let's hope it doesn't exceed universe level 6."

"We can only rely on luck, however Luo Feng you should relax, the Mosha clan specializes in assassination, the stronger they are the harder they are to kill, much less kill and save a piece of their skin. Hence...the chances of it being a sector lord is close to zero, chances of it being domain lord or universe level are higher. Of course...it'll still rely on your luck."

This Ganwu auction had attracted a good number of the Ganwu

universe country's strongest warriors. Even undying from other universe country's had come to participate!

Whichever emperor, or head of organization, even the undying from whichever god country, they were all but guests within this auction, and Luo Feng was one of them too...many other very high ranking people, their main purpose in joining this Ganwu auction was to get the finale items from the final auctions.

"Attention all, the auction has reached this point, where we've sold 99 of the finale items." The turtle shelled old man was all smiles, his voice resounding across the auction hall, "We are left with the final item of all! Once this item has been sold, it'll mark the end of the entire Ganwu Auction."

"I believe everybody cannot wait any longer, actually even I, Old Ba Tuo, am anxious." The turtle shelled old man's voice suddenly got louder, "Right now!!!"

"I officially declare, the final item for the entire auction...the name list to enter one of the primal universe!" The turtle shelled old man's eyes were glaring, his voice bright and loud, "Sector lord namelist! This is the namelist to enter the primal universe, I believe all the sector lords here, even the undying are extremely clear of just how valuable this namelist is!"

Hua...

The entire auction hall had erupted, even though many had heard news of it before, however actually hearing it as the final

item, the entire hall had simply erupted!

"Primal universe."

"The legendary primal universe, to be able to enter and see, even if one reaches the limit of his lifespan, it would be worth it."

"I heard the primal universe is different from our original universe."

"The five great leviathans had long taken control of the the namelist for the primal universe, so even the universe countries would have a hard time getting on it. Much less the sector lord name list...it's going to be crazy, the auction is going to be crazy."

.....

The discussions were rampant, Luo Feng could feel the mixed feelings within them, passion, envy, anticipation, excited.

"Babata, the name list for the primal universe, what does it mean?" Luo Feng asked, "Primal universe, what place is that?"

"Luo Feng you should know that the extremely vast universe that we live in with countless races and all is actually called the original universe. The original universe is a very perfect universe, wanting to actually to make changes to any of the origin laws is extremely difficult." Babata said, "However the primal universe is different."

“Primal…meaning as beginning, represents a universe that is still evolving and in its early stages.”

“Legends say that there hasn’t been any life produced in the primal universe.”

“Legends say that because the primal universe isn’t perfect, so there’s constantly disasters.”

“Legends say that because it isn’t perfect, it’s a lot easier to feel and comprehend the origin laws!”

“In the universe, a few powerful organizations, like the virtual universe company, the universe galaxy bank, the huge axe dojo and the other 5 great leviathans will occasionally send a few important elites to enter the primal universe.” Babata sighed, exploring in the primal universe, it’s a lot easier to evolve in there.”

“Luo Feng was getting more curious as he listened, “Where did the primal universe pop up from? How do you go over?”

“No idea.” Babata said.

……

Within the auction, the turtle shelled old man said loudly,

“Sector lord pinnacles, the chance to enter the primal universe, the chances of reaching undying level is over one half! This name list is extremely valuable, right now, the auction begins! The lowest bid starts at 0!”

“1000 mixed elements!”

Over a million guests had their slips light up once again with numbers, causing many sector lords to exclaim secretly. So much wealth!

Suddenly the numbers jumped again...”10,000 mixed elements!”

Silence!

The entire auction hall went silent, all the sector lords were stunned, this was the first time during the entire auction the number had actually hit 10,000 mixed elements! This was the requirement for a 4 star client, even amongst the undying, having 10,000 mixed elements was considered not bad.

Throwing out 10,000 mixed elements for only a sector lord namelist, it was indeed extravagant.

“My god, this is only a sector lord name list, if it were an undying namelist...how expensive would that be?” Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

“The undying namelist wouldn’t even appear in this entry level

auction. Normally it would be a rare appearance at the middle level auctions, or at the higher level auctions. Even your teacher's entire fortune wouldn't be enough." Babata exclaimed.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was stunned.

"Back then your teacher went to participate in that auction, however in the end his fortune wasn't enough." Babata shook his head, "Hence, even your teacher hasn't visited the primal universe."

"Even teacher hasn't gone before?"

"Even though he's never been, however...that is but a special place. The primal universe belongs to a universe in its early stages. In terms of size, it's much much smaller than the original universe!" Babata said, "The original universe hosts countless clans and life forms, countless life, and humans are but one of the many!"

"The original universe is the true core."

"Other secret places, god countries, worlds, primal universe, and other special places, many are attached to the original universe in nature!" Babata said, "Or, correctly speaking, they are parts of the original universe!"

"A part of?" Luo Feng was suspicious.

“Even if I tell you now, you won’t know! Cough…actually, regarding this, even I don’t know that much!”

“Even though your teacher was considered a powerful warrior amongst the undying, however in the vast universe, strong warriors are like the clouds. There were many more that were even more powerful than your teacher.”

“And the universe is simply too vast, even undying, spending trillions of years would find it hard to actually have travelled through the entire universe, hence, even your teacher only knew just a little bit of this universe. Naturally what I know isn’t too much either.” Babata said, “As the most ancient and most mysterious original universe, if you want to know more, you have to rely on yourself.”

Luo Feng smiled.

Right now he was only messing about in the Black Dragon Mountain star field, not even entering the Ganwu universe country yet, much less exploring the entire universe. After all, the human race was but one of the many countless life forms in the vast universe.

“36,530 mixed elements! Any higher?”

“36,550 mixed elements, oh, 37,000 mixed elements, right now it’s at 37000 mixed elements!” The turtle shelled old man’s voice cut through the entire auction hall, “Any higher? We’ll begin the countdown…10…9, oh, 37,500 mixed elements! A new high price, a

new bidder, until the final moment, if you miss it it'll be hard to get an opportunity like this again! 10...9...8..."

"3...2...1! Congratulations to guest number tuf49903, you've acquired the chance to enter the primal universe sector lord name list! We congratulate and wish you be reborn as a new undying!" The turtle shelled old man's voice got louder, "This auction...all of the items have been sold, we thank everyone for their support, I, Old Batuo officially announce that this auction is officially over!!!"

Chapter 23 – Final Days of the Lunar New Year

In the Ganwu Universe Country's territory, an incomparably beautiful light red colored renowned planet called Fula planet existed. This was a notable planet because this is where a great undying stayed. This undying had a high position even within the virtual universe company.

On the planet.

Soldiers from the universe army that belonged to the virtual universe company were stationed here, and the most basic soldiers of this army were at least universe level.

"Hurry!"

"Hurry! the Ganwu auction is about to end. The 100 brothers that won the duels before, quickly enter the network and get ready to receive the important people."

"Haha, the auction has finally ended, the brothers have all been waiting."

Within the enormous army base, it suddenly got busy.

"Second brother, I heard that this auction has gathered all of the important figures in the universe country. I heard there are over a

million sector lords! Even many undying, along with several youths with huge backgrounds. You have to help me look and tell me about it when you return. This time, even when we went outside the star field to the battlefield, we didn't see many undying."

"Relax! Over a million sector lords...tsk, I'll tell you about it slowly when I return."

"When the military service limit expired and we returned to the planet's territory, I didn't expect to get the chance to go take a gander at such a scene. I heard the lowest requirement for this Ganwu auction is to be a 3 star client, I may never get the chance to participate in my whole life. This time, for the army to send me along with the other 99, I really am lucky."

"What's the requirement to be a 3 star client?"

"I heard that the savings must reach 10 trillion universe dollars."

"My god! 10 trillion universe dollars? This...my entire territory only has a few hundred life planets. Even the number of digits doesn't match."

.....

Amongst the discussions of the universe level soldiers, 100 of the winners were proudly chosen to enter the virtual universe network.

……

Virtual universe, Ganwu continent, on one of the floating islands.

The main construct of the entire floating island was that enormous auction hall. At this time, under orders, human silhouettes began appearing there, swiftly dispersing and stationing throughout the important locations of the island. Among the total of over 1,000 people, even the service staff were all at least universe level!

“Carter, I heard these guests are mostly sector lords. Over a million sector lords.”

“I’ve never seen so many sector lords together in my life.”

Two male staff members dressed in service uniforms stood beside a small bridge, discussing in hushed voices and suppressing their excitement.

Universe level warriors…

Even though they could be considered tyrants and kings in several galaxies, when compared within the entire star field, their position was still very low. And in the vastness of the universe country, they didn’t amount to anything! Just the Ganwu Universe country alone with over a hundred million galaxies, there were

over a million sector lords, just how many organizations were there?

Under the large amount of sector lord's tutelage, the percentage of universe levels had grown much more.

The entire universe country with over a hundred million galaxies would have a minimum of 1 billion universe levels!! The soldiers that made up the armies sent outside the star field to battle were all at least universe level!

The universe soldiers were all very clear that within the entire universe country they were considered to be at the lower rungs of the ladder. Those participating in the universe country's greatest gathering...the guests of the Ganwu auction, those were the upper echelons of the universe country.

"The auction has officially ended and all the guests will be leaving directly. All staff members in charge of guiding them, remember your responsibilities. Your performance and contribution will be linked together." A cold voice swiftly resounded across within every staff member's mind within the floating island. The two male staff members who were discussing before immediately stopped and stood at attention.

.....

Hua!

All that could be seen from that distant, enormous, and totally beautiful auction hall's exits were the large number of people who began to flow out. There were over 1.8 million guests, with over 99% of them being sector lords(a group of them even undying) along with several youths with huge backgrounds and wealth.

"Sir, this way to the teleportation spot. The other spots are used to sight see our floating island." The staff member said with a respectful smile.

"Ok."

Three huge tall and sturdy men walked side by side, glancing just once at the staff member. Their gaze however was filled with an immense willpower, causing the staff member to tremble within. "And this is only in the virtual universe. If it were in reality, with the huge willpower of the sector lords, just a gaze alone would be enough to make my spirit crumble."

The Sector lords exited one by one...

A sector lord here wasn't worth anything. One would occasionally spot an existence even more terrifying than a sector lord, even though within the virtual universe they all had normal bodies. However, what made the staff respect them even more was the willpower of the undying infused within their bodies, the power that held the universe origin laws within it.

"There are too many sector lords, the two that passed by were too scary. They must be undying!" All the staff members held their

breaths.

“There’s a youth ahead, doesn’t seem like a sector lord though, much less an undying! Oh, he must be a youth with an enormous background.” The staff grew even more cautious. When the black haired youth walked over, they smiled respectfully and said, “Sir, head this way to the teleportation spot, other directions will allow you to sight see our floating island.”

“Ok.” The black haired youth nodded slightly, smiling as he glanced at the staff member while heading towards the teleportation spot.

“He actually smiled at me? This youth really isn’t arrogant at all.” The universe level staff member was excited. He was used to the cold expressions of the sector lords, occasionally getting greeted with a smile made him feel warm and appreciated.

……

Luo Feng followed the directions of the staff member and quickly reached the teleportation spot.

“Most of the guests here are sector lords. Even though it’s within the virtual universe, with their gaze that’s infused with their willpower,, they are still terrifying. These staff members have to be at least at the universe level or else they’ll lose their composure.” Babata said.

“I didn’t feel that terrified.” Luo Feng said.

“First of all, your will power is quite strong and your golden horned beast body is at universe level 6. Second, those sector lords will look at you as their equal. After all, in the universe, there are two types of people that are never to be offended. One is an absolute warrior and the other is those with huge background.” Babata said, “And those who are weak but still come here as guests, usually are people with huge backgrounds.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Without background and acquiring the treasures, one wouldn’t have a path to sell them!

“Sir, we welcome and thank you for attending this time’s auction. We also thank you for your support.” An incomparably beautiful young lady with reddish brown hair smiled, that smile had within it a peculiar mesmerizing ability.

Under the gentle sound of her voice, Luo Feng stepped into the teleportation spot and during the time, he turned to glance at the floating island...

On the island were extremely courteous and respectful universe level staff members, along with many sector lords and undying!

“Coming here really does make one feel nervous.” Luo Feng smiled and shook his head.

Shua!

His silhouette vanished.

To Luo Feng, joining this great gathering of the Ganwu Universe country, the Ganwu auction, it felt very much like a dream. And within the dream...those treasures and their worth were each comparable to a galaxy at least. Now, awakening from the dream, Luo Feng returned to his home, the Black Dragon Mountain star field within the Ganwu Universe Country, the Milky Way, within which was the little and unnoticeable plane Earth.

Fifteen days after the Ganwu auction ended, Luo Feng brough Di Fan in a universe ship and headed towards Bai Lan Star.

Bai Lan Star’s every peak was covered with snow.

Luo Feng walked ahead while Di Fan followed behind him. They were walking towards the beautiful ship while stepping on the snow., It was a ship belonging to the virtual universe company.

“Guest identity confirmed, we can begin the exchange.”

A robotic voice spoke.

The virtual universe company’s workers placed a huge box on the floor, Luo Feng waved and kept the box within his storage ring.

“Respected client, thank you for supporting our virtual universe company.”

Luo Feng shook hands with a silver short haired youth, following which the two separated.Luo Feng and Di Fan swiftly flew back towards their ship.

“We’ve got the goods, let’s return to Earth!” Luo Feng ordered.

The ship rose into the sky and rushed out of the Bai Lan Star atmosphere, engaging in universe travel into the dark universe and heading towards the coordinates of Earth.

……

Within the ship’s control room.

A large box was placed there.

“I’ve spent close to 10 galaxies worth of wealth to buy these treasures.” Luo Feng sighed. Beside him Di Fan smiled, “The more you invest, the more your returns. Master spent so much wealth this time, I believe he will get a hundred to a thousand times more in the future.”

“Haha.”

Luo Feng laughed as he walked boldly forward, opening the box. Pa! The first box was opened. Within it were several translucent boxes, every box had tender and lovely fruits with dew drops on them, which was the swelling water fruit. Even though it wasn't one that could save a life, the swelling water fruit was still worth a few thousands of life planets.

"Pa!" The second box was opened. Within it was a large number of translucent boxes, and within them were more swelling water fruits.

Pa! The third box was opened.

Luo Feng's eyes lit up.

What lay within it was a peculiar dark golden long rod, one of the 9 godly weapons for the spirit reader controller, the Nan Shen Armament! Luo Feng squatted down and extended his hand to touch that dark golden long rod, feeling its extreme cold, his heart was filled with anticipation.

This Nan Shen Armament...will accompany him for the next thousand to ten thousand years!

"Pa!" Luo Feng turned around to open the last box, within it was the dark golden peculiar partial piece of skin that had peculiar engravings on it.

"The second clone!" Luo Feng's eyes lit up, his heart burning

with excitement.

In the universe, even though hard work and comprehension was important, talent and resources too were just as important.

One who was incomparably hardworking with high comprehension may be powerful within a galaxy.

However those with talent, back support, with wealthy resources, putting in the same amount of hard work and with comprehension, will definitely accomplish more!

“My aim, is to become an absolute warrior, one even amongst the undying, one that surpasses even my old teacher! This foundation, naturally the stronger it is the better.” Luo Feng’s gaze burned, this partial piece of skin was going to be the conduit for his second clone. Once his second clone was formed, the golden horned beast could then focus on training the golden universe laws while the second clone could strive for the space laws.

Luo Feng’s human body could then focus on the Nan Shen Armament skills.

With the three combined...

His accomplishments wouldn’t have a limit.

“I wont think too far ahead. Right, today is the 12th lunar month, there’s only a few days till the Chinese New Year. I should find

presents for Ping Ping and Little Hai.” Luo Feng rubbed his nose.

Chapter 24 – Movement

Earth, Asia, Hong Ning base.

“Third brother, why have you come here?” Hong was still dressed in all black.

“Big brother, didn’t you ask me to get you a life fruit the last time?” Luo Feng sat before Hong, picking up a cup of tea, his eyes gleaming as he drank, “Oh, good tea.”

“Life fruit?” Hong seemed anxious with anticipation.

Back then he witnessed for himself how Luo Feng’s cloud contact vine had grown immensely in strength after eating a life fruit.

“I didn’t get to buy a life fruit. However, I bought a hundred Swelling water fruits.” Luo Feng explained, “This swelling water fruit has medicinal properties which are more gentle and your cloud contact vine will definitely absorb it well. These one hundred fruits, use one every ten days for the next three years. Once you finish all one hundred fruits, I guarantee that your cloud contact vine will be able to reach universe level 3 or 4.”

“Oh?” Hong seemed delighted and surprised.

His cloud contact vine, first off, was weaker than Luo Feng’s.

Even Luo Feng's cloud contact vine only became universe level 2 after eating the life fruit.

"Big brother, the main thing is when I went to participate in this time's auction, I had to spend quite a bit on a spirit weapon. Hence, I didn't have enough to get a life fruit." Luo Feng apologized, "Of course, in terms of nurturing, these one hundred swelling water fruits added together do not pale in comparison to one life fruit."

"Haha...alright, I understand." Hong laughed, "We are brothers, there's no need for so much talk."

Luo Feng laughed too.

With a wave of his hand, he took out a box and placed it directly on the table before them. Pa! The box was opened and in it were one hundred swelling water fruits.

"Looks very peculiar, they indeed are treasured fruits of the universe." Hong's eyes gleamed.

"Without a doubt! The price of these one hundred swelling water fruits is comparable to an entire galaxy." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, curious, "Right, why haven't I seen second brother around recently?"

"Thunder god? Ever since he acquired the inheritance of sector lord Kabu, these past 2 years he's been training under that Lord Wu." Hong smiled, "His strength has been growing quite quickly.

Luckily, the training you've given me from the Yun Mo Planet has been fruitful and I've made some breakthroughs, otherwise I would have been surpassed already."

Luo Feng realized that the fighter training and techniques from the Yun Mo Planet weren't weak at all. One had to know that the Yun Mo Planet master had 9 great undying underlings and a big half of them were fighters! Undying fighter techniques, how could they be weak?

The only difference was that the Thunder god had the living AI Lord Wu's guidance, along with maybe some treasures and assistance!

And Hong, could only rely on his own comprehension and skills.

However, Hong's comprehension had always been very high. Back then Mingyu had determined that Luo Feng and Thunder god belonged to the level 3 elite geniuses while Hong was a level 1 elite genius. Of course it has only been two years since then. Yet, ever since the golden horned beast broke through to the universe level, Luo Feng's comprehension in the gold origin laws had huge improvements.

"Right, third brother. Recently, the number of skilled opponents within the slaughterhouse battle arena has increased by a large number. I don't know what's going on." Hong creased his eyebrows.

"Increased by a large number?" Luo Feng was shocked.

Recently, he had been busy with the auction. Hence, he had not been able to keep up with the situation at the slaughterhouse.

“Right, before I could easily defeat many opponents. However,these days, a large number of powerful geniuses have popped up. And these people rarely showed themselves before at the slaughterhouse battle arena.” Hong said, “If a couple of geniuses popped up here and there, It would be nothing. But, with so many of them suddenly appearing, I feel like something might have happened.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng was suspicious, not knowing what the reason was.

That battle arena, Luo Feng didn’t actually go to investigate it. Instead, he immediately began nurturing his second clone.

……

Within the vast golden continent, high above in the sky there was a layer of golden fog in the atmosphere, permeating through to the surrounding continent too.

With an area reaching 6,000km, right in the middle of sky, a black peculiar piece of skin suddenly appeared. This was the damaged piece of skin from the Mosha Clan that Luo Feng had won in the auction, albeit being only a small portion of it.

“Talent, cloning, nurture!”

With a thought the entire world began to rumble. As the tremors ran through, the huge land began to quake.

Chi!

That peculiar black skin immediately vaporized, leaving behind only a peculiar liquid. Amidst the mad quakes happening throughout the continent, the gold fog immediately began to gather towards the center, seemingly wrapping itself around that black liquid left behind by the vaporized skin, in an instant coagulating into an oval shaped golden egg.

“The nurturing process has begun, I don’t even know how long it’ll take before it completes.” Luo Feng thought.

According to Luo Feng’s conversation with the auctioneer during the exchange, he came to know that the original owner was a universe level 2 Mosha Clan demon, and because of that Luo Feng could begin the nurturing.

The natural talent cloning, the golden horned beast only had three chances within its lifespan.

Right now it was the second time!

“The Mosha clan’s nurturing, compared to the initial nurturing of the earth human body, was tens of thousands to even hundreds

of thousands times harder. And back then the internal world was a star level 1.Yet, right now the internal world was universe level 6. It was tens of thousands of times stronger than before." Luo Feng calculated, "After the first day, I should be able to deduce how long the nurturing will take."

Theoretically speaking, the stronger the original owner, the more elite the bloodline was. This also meant that it would require longer and more shocking the amount of time for the nurturing.

However...

"Weird, weird."

"Originally, I guessed that the nurturing would require decades to a hundred years. However, I never thought it would only require 3 years and 9 months." Luo Feng waited a day while using the information he gathered from within the internal world and the mysterious energies that surrounded the continent, he completely figured out the length of time required for the nurturing of the Mosha clan body.

Mosha clan, they weren't of flesh and blood!

The rules for nurturing a flesh and blood body didn't apply here.

As an energy life form, as long as the internal world was able to nurture the life crystal core, it would automatically unleash the energy and form its body! And as a special feature of the energy life

forms...it could not only take human form, but also other forms and able to transform to almost anything easily.

“All it takes is to nurture the life crystal core, this Mosha clan is indeed special.” Luo Feng thought.

.....

The natural talent cloning, the moment it began, Luo Feng didn’t need to think twice about it, he only had to wait patiently.

The 12th lunar month, Chinese New Year came around quickly.

The entirety of China was engaged in ceremonies. Even during the Great Nirvana, with constant attacks by beasts, the citizens of China never forgot their most important celebrations...Chinese New Year. Luo Feng too had to stop reluctantly from his training and spend a few days with his family.

On the 9th day, early morning.

Outside of the Jiang Nan base, in the wilderness region, there were dilapidated and broken cities., Within a city which had been deserted for over 10 years, there was one skyscraper which was 28 levels high. On one of its loft, with a glimmer of light, a human silhouette appeared.

Dressed in dark red armor, feet in boots and carrying a peculiar dark golden long rod.

This dark golden long rod was over 2m long and was quite wide, to the point that 2 hands could barely grab it. With a diameter of about 15cm. The entire rod gave off an aura that made hearts palpitate. The aura it gave off occasionally caused the surrounding concrete city's large amounts of beasts to steer clear of Luo Feng.

No beast dared to approach him.

"Wearing this Nan Shen Armament feels like carrying a mountain." Luo Feng could feel the pressure from the Nan Shen Armament he carried.

Normal level 1, 2 or 3 spirit weapons were fairly simple to use.!

However, higher level weapons were different. For example, unleashing the strength of a level 5 weapon required one to first nurture it mentally and spiritually, leaving an imprint on the weapon itself.

"Treat it well and nurture it. Once it's complete, the Nan Shen Armament will treat you as its master. Then you can begin your training." Babata said.

"Understood."

Luo Feng was worried about the armament's aura affecting his family during the nurturing. Hence, he specially chose to head towards the wilderness region.

“The Nan Shen Armaments, nine levels of amplification.” Luo Feng sat crossed legged, placing the long golden rod on his lap, “According to my level, I should be able to finish the first level.”

The Nan Shen Armament was divided into nine levels, with each having more immense power than the previous. With the reputation being the strongest and also the weakest of the godly weapons, if one wasn’t a true genius, he would be better off using normal spirit weapons.

The first level, named ***

The second level, named the Sky piercing form.

The third level, named the Heavenly blade form.

The fourth: Skilled time.

The fifth: Space slice.

The sixth: Own world.

The seventh: One rod to tremor the earth and skies.

The eighth: Gold blade slicing through the void.

The ninth: Even undying isn't a foe.

When Luo Feng found out the names of the 9 levels, especially the ninth form: Even Undying isn't a foe, he was greatly excited. Because, whether it was the inheritance memories of the golden horned beast or the knowledge that Babata had imparted, from sector lord to undying, this was an incredibly huge breakthrough, one that would completely alter one's soul and spirit! The true supremely qualitative breakthrough!

Undying, could easily destroy the pinnacle of sector lords!

Even the sector lord pinnacle golden horned beast, against an undying, had to lower its head.

However this ninth form actually says even an undying isn't a foe, it was simply divine.

"It's a pity that it's extremely hard to reach the ninth form. Amongst the entire human races within the many universe countries, very few have actually reached the ninth form. The difficulty of completing the ninth form is even harder than reaching the undying stage." Luo Feng sighed. No matter what, right now he only had a hair's width of understanding about the golden origin laws. As for the space origin laws, he hadn't even begun to understand them, he had to slowly work on it.

Luo Feng had immersed himself within the Nan Shen Armament to comprehend it. At that moment, within the Black Dragon mountain empire's Imperial capital planet.

Imperial capital planet, within a floating castle.

“Have you found any information on Luo Feng yet?” Dressed in imperial gowns, the ninth prince sat in the throne and said coldly.

“No, back in the world within a world, he followed the 3 Axe Mountain and left. We only found out that he was part of the group under Lord Mingyu. We haven’t found anything else and we don’t know where he’s at.” Below, a worker said respectfully.

“Get lost!” The ninth prince Bu Luo Lin ordered.

Lately, Bu Luo Lin had been in an extremely bad mood.

Since the world within a world incident, his grandfather Hargrey was the biggest loser of all! Not only did he not acquire the inheritance crystal ball, he lost almost all of his fortune. Also, he had offended many of the sector lords within the Black Dragon Mountain!

One must know that back in the world within a world, Bu Luo Lin commanded over 220,000 troops. Just where did these troops come from? The main thing was there was a group of sector lords that supported Hargrey from within the Black Dragon Mountain Sacred land. They handed their troops over to Bu Luo Lin to command and decided to support him unconditionally!

All they decided on were promises, which both Hargrey and the

ninth prince have not been able to keep. The ninth prince, had even given treasures like the D6 Railguns to his grandfather, to settle with those sector lords.

However, there were over ten of them back then! The treasures the ninth prince had acquired were simply not enough! And with Hargrey himself being close to bankrupt, his mood was definitely not good from the beginning. As these sector lords still chased him about the promise from before, he raged and his mood got even worse.

Eventually, Hargrey lost his power within the sacred land.

Hargrey himself didn't care much for the power and authority. As a sector lord, his own power was the most important. However...

Losing his power within the black dragon mountain sacred land had negatively affected the 9th prince's position.

"Hmph!" Bu Luo Lin gritted his teeth, "Both big brother and third brother want to fight with me for the throne?" Thinking about the entire incident before, Bu Luo Lin grew even more enraged!

Chapter 25 – Sacred Land Black Dragon Mountain

TLN Note: Prince Bu Luo Lin's name has been changed to Brolin

Brolin was one with the greatest power amongst the other princes. Not only did he have money, he also had backing!

And right now his backing Hargrey had lost his power within the Sacred Land Black Dragon Mountain Also, the treasures he got from the world within a world were all used by his grandfather to appease the sector lords.

"Money!"

"With money I can even make a sector lord bow to me, without money I can't do anything!" Brolin gleamed coldly, "The empire's information system, along with the citizen information cache completely forbids certain news from us princes. If I had enough money, I could pay off someone to risk it and help me acquire the information and news I need regarding Luo Feng!"

The laws of the empire were very strict.

As the life span of the emperor was very long, naturally they would forbid and restrict the princes. The entire empire's information cache and systems completely forbid the prince's intervention.

However...

The laws were after all still man made. They were still implemented and carried out by man! With sufficient wealth, one could still pay off someone to get the information.

“Back then I attacked the troops of the Three Axe Mountain. With 12 laser guns I was able to kill 11 of them, only Luo Feng didn’t die.” Brolin thought, “And he definitely managed to exchange treasures in the castle. Also, he had a storage ring capable of storing a universe ship and was to be able to survive a C2 laser gun, the treasures on him must be plenty!”

Brolin was thinking of ways to acquire money, however he wasn’t interested in meager sums, naturally he thought of Luo Feng. Just from the surface, it seems that Luo Feng had plenty of treasures.

Randomly picking any treasure from the world within world will lead to a huge profit if sold.

“I can only do this.” Brolin grit his teeth.

Brolin changed into casual clothing and left the palace.

The palace on the imperial planet was a city that was floating, there were continuous palaces within the city, making the security very strong within.

“It’s his highness Brolin.”

The guards quickly made way. Brolin walked deeper through the lanes into a spacious yard. Beside this yard were regular stone tablets. As he walked towards them, a ripple formed on the surface of the stone tablet and Brolin completely entered through it.

On the peak of a mountain that reached as high as the clouds, a ripple appeared and a human silhouette appeared through it.

“Your majesty Brolin, why have you come to the Sacred Land?”

A low voice resounded. A winged, skinny man with an aura that made one’s heart palpitate immediately appeared on the peak, his green eyes staring at Brolin. Brolin was immediately shocked and said “I have matters I need to discuss with my grandfather.”

“Allow him in.”

A voice resounded across a million km within the mountain peaks.

The man with the wings looked at Brolin and said coldly, “Remember, head directly to Lord Hargrey. Everywhere else is forbidden to you.”

“Yes!” Brolin was very respectful.

Sacred Land Black Dragon Mountain was the biggest backing behind the empire royalty.

The founding emperor of the empire was currently the godly master of the Sacred land Black Dragon mountain. It was he who fused his internal world with the universe space into one, forming the mighty Vast God Country...Sacred land Black Dragon Mountain.

“God country.”

Brolin flew out from the peak, looking at the grand sun which hung above the vast skies and earth with endless ocean stretching out before him.That was something an undying brought from the external world into this god world, a real star!

Tearing space, creating worlds and picking out stars ...

That was an undying!

“The Sacred Land, it’s even bigger than the imperial planet outside by many times.” Brolin looked towards the star in the sky as he flew, “To put a star in here, an undying is seriously powerful. If one day I am able to become an undying...” As he thought, he began to shake his head and force a smile.

Undying, even the thought of becoming one seemed too far away.

The entire Black Dragon mountain star field has less than a 100

sector lords. The chances for these close to 100 sector lords to break through and become an Undying was simply too difficult. It seemed like they were all destined to die from old age instead.

After all, there was a limit to a sector lord's life span.

An undying, on the other hand was the only eternal existence.

"Hu!" Brolin's thoughts moved, releasing a universe ship from his storage ring.

Sou!

The universe ship flew swiftly towards his grandfather in this god country. The speed of this ship was extremely fast. After flying close to a million kilometers, he saw the entire god country's most impressive mountain peak, an enormous black mountain that was over a 100,000 kilometers, floating above the ocean.

A floating mountain range that exceeded a 100,000 kilometers!

A mountain range that was bigger than earth itself!

The entire range was black, similar to a huge black dragon with wings. This mountain range was the legendary Black Dragon Mountain.

"Black Dragon Mountain." Even though Brolin had been here

several times, he still felt a sense of awe and fear.

Drawing close to Black Dragon mountain, with one's naked eyes, it was impossible to see the peak of the mountains or even the ends of it.

"Come here." A voice resounded within Brolin's ears.

"Yes."

Brolin retrieved his ship back into the storage ring the moment he reached the Black Dragon Mountain. As he flew directly towards a luxurious palace, before the palace, at the edge of the cliff stood a bald old man with a roman nose. The space itself around him seemed to distort. It was one of the top 3 sector lords within this Sacred Land Black Dragon Mountain...Hargrey!

"Grandfather." Brolin quickly flew over.

"Hm." Hargrey looked at Brolin, a rare smile appeared on his face, "Ah Bu, why have you come here?"

"Grandfather my recent days have been hard." Brolin gave a helpless expression.

"I understand." Hargrey saw the look on his grandson, feeling guilty within. The world within a world incident, his grandson had performed extremely well! However, because of the inheritance crystal ball deception, they ended up this way. And the treasures

his grandson had acquired were all passed on to his own hands.

“Grandfather, doing anything within the imperial planet requires money.” Brolin said helplessly, “I know now that there was a star level punk in the world within a world that acquired many treasures. However I’m unable to use the empire’s information system or news to search for him. It’s frustrating knowing there are treasures, but not being able to acquire them.”

“Hm?” Hargrey’s eyes gleamed, “Are you sure?”

“Very sure!”

Brolin nodded, “First, I’m sure he managed to exchange for treasure within the castle. Second, he had a storage ring with a universe ship in it. Third, he survived a hit from the C2 laser gun.”

“What’s his name? What news do you have?” Hargrey quickly asked.

The world within a world incident had left Hargrey close to broke!

Normal sector lords had about 10 mixed elements worth of wealth. However at the moment, Hargrey currently couldn’t even take out 1 mixed element.

“He’s called Luo Feng. In the world within a world, he was using the identity of an underling of the 3 Axe mountain’s Mingyu to

enter the allied base." Brolin said, "However, even as a prince, I don't have much authority to get further information about him"

"Let me check." Hargrey said directly.

Simultaneously, Hargrey sent a thread of his consciousness into the virtual universe network and began giving orders.

Princes, had little authority.

But he, Hargrey, even though he had lost his power, he was still after all one of the top 3 sector lords within the sacred land Black Dragon mountain. Not only could he use the empire's citizen information cache, he could do special searches through the Sacred land Black Dragon mountain special information system. Within a few minutes, he had acquired his answer.

"Hm?" Hargrey creased his eyebrows.

"Have you found something?" Brolin anticipated.

"Right, I've checked." Hargrey creased his eyebrows, "Luo Feng, he's indeed under Mingyu. After the incident in the world within a world, he acquired a 100 planets territory from Mingyu. Also, Mingyu seemed to have acquired a level 5 genetic energy weapon, the Air cutter knife, which was transferred over to a general of the 3 Axe mountain. I estimate that the Air cutter knife was the treasure Luo Feng acquired."

“Luo Feng initially had only one planet called Earth.”

“Heading to earth is very troublesome. It requires one to travel through a wormhole and after which close to another three years of flying is required to reach Earth.”

“From the Sacred lands information organization, the Peterly family had found this…They had initially sent a small team over, who spent close to 3 years to reach planet Earth. However, there was actually a universe level 9 there stopping their family’s little team. This universe level 9 also proclaimed that Earth was a part of 3 Axe mountain territory.”

Brolin was stunned, he couldn’t help but say, “Grandfather…”

“Very troublesome.” Hargrey shook his head, “First, we don’t know if he’s on earth. Second, heading to earth takes up too much time. Third, there’s at least a universe level 9 on earth. Even if we have to send someone, we have to at least send a domain lord, and under me I only have 3 domain lords. Fourth, the Air cutter knife treasure he acquired has already been given away. Last but not lease and the most important thing is, that’s a part of Three Axe mountain territory.”

Three Axe mountain, the leader of the 4 organizations. Sacred land Black Dragon Mountain didn’t dare easily mess with Three Axe mountain and did not want to get on its bad side either.

“This matter will stop here for now, I’ll arrange for the Sacred land information system to do a thorough check on Luo Feng.”

Hargrey emphasized, “I’ve been very busy recently too. I have to devote my time to training a bunch of disciples under me.”

“Understood.” Brolin understood too that there was nothing he could do.

“Grandfather, you said you are nurturing disciples?” Brolin was very shocked. A pinnacle sector lord usually only gives several pointers to his disciples. But, dedicating time to actually train them, he had never heard his grandfather ever mention this before.

“This was something the Sacred land assigned me to do.” Hargrey sighed, “Right now in the vast universe, several universe countries and many god countries and organizations have begun to seriously train their disciples. There are many other independent strong warriors who’ve begun to seriously train their disciples. After all, time is running out.”

“What?” Brolin was suspicious.

“For the two pinnacles of battles…” Hargrey reminded.

“Oh!”

Brolin stared wide eyed, “Grandfather, are you speaking of…”He held his breath.

“The absolute genius fight, or the strong warrior fight?” Brolin

asked.

“The genius fight.” Hargrey said.

Brolin’s heart beat raced.

In the vast universe, the strong prey on the weak. And the human race was one of the most elite races amongst all the other races in the vast universe! However, even though they were elite, it didn’t mean that they would always stay on top. Hence humans too had to work hard and nurture their elites.

In the universe, humans had two ultimate battles that expanded across the vast universe!

One of them was the pinnacle genius battle for the humans across the universe. The other was the pinnacle warriors battle for the humans across the universe.

The pinnacle genius battle, was aimed at all the star level humans in many universe countries. As long as one was a star level, they could participate!

The pinnacle warrior battle, was aimed at all the universe level warriors. Any universe level human could participate!

“All the great universe countries, with trillions of galaxies and countless star level humans, they’ll battle with extremely fair and strict conditions. To be able to survive and stand out till the end

would mean one was an absolute genius in countless galaxies!" Hargrey sighed, "From the star level, one can begin to see a person's natural talent,comprehension and their level of genius! Taking all the universe countries into account, I wonder if our top genius from the Black Dragon mountain star field will be able to make it into the top one million of the geniuses."

Chapter 26 – The Hovering Declaration

“It won’t be that bad.” Brolin couldn’t help but to say, “Our Black Dragon Mountain starfield has billions of star level fighters. Are you saying that it would be hard for even one of them to enter the top million in the universe?”

“Extremely difficult!”

“Extremely, extremely difficult!” Hargrey nodded, “There are around 13,000 starfields under the Ganwu empire, and almost 1,000 other empires under its control! Our Black Dragon Mountain empire is just one of those empires under the Ganwu empire. In terms of the number of powerful fighters, we have even fewer compared to the starfields directly under the Ganwu empire!”

“It would be hard for our Black Dragon Mountain’s top genius to place in the top 10,000 in the Ganwu empire, much less out of the over 1,000 empires of the entire human race” said Hargrey, “For example, in the last Battle of Geniuses, there weren’t any people from our starfield in the top 10,000!”

“What?” Brolin widened his eyes.

“Embarrassment, this is an embarrassment to our Black Dragon Mountain Empire, and an embarrassment to our sacred land!” Hargrey’s anger surged and the surrounding temperature dramatically dropped. The air around them froze and ice crystals started to form.

“Grandfather!” Brolin felt a bone chilling coldness as he yelled.

With a thought from Hargrey, the surrounding temperature went back to normal. “I was just angry because I felt ashamed.”

“Okay, I still need to raise my disciples, you go back first.” said Hargrey.

“Yes, grandfather.”

Brolin didn’t dare to say more and left right away.

His original plan to get his grandfather to send people to deal with Luo Feng seems to have ended in failure.

China time, 2066/3/9, Black Dragon Mountain island in the virtual universe.

The various continents and islands in the virtual universe also had day and night. There were even virtual stars in the sky. As of now, it was night. There were various lit up places across the Black Dragon Mountain island. Places like bars were extremely bright. Everything was normal.

Suddenly——

In the night sky above the Black Dragon Mountain island appeared an enormous, black declaration that emanated light out

of thin air. This completely black declaration had conspicuous white letters glowing on it.

“Humans of the universe——the top Battle of Geniuses”

“Once every 10,000 years!”

“Is about to be held!”

“Sponsored by the Virtual Universe Network company and all the universe empires!”

“Are you a genius? Can’t find an opponent that’s on the same level as you? Then join the ‘top Battle of Geniuses’. Here, will be where billions of geniuses from all over the universe compete with each other!”

“For details, please visit our Virtual Universe Network’s homepage through your virtual assistant”

The gigantic declaration that appeared out of nowhere in the night sky was over one million km wide and long. Even in the Black Dragon Island where billions of people lived, you can clearly see the declaration if you raise your head!

“The top Battle of Geniuses is beginning? Wow, haha, things are going to get crazy”

“The battle between the billions of geniuses throughout the universe?”

“It’s a huge banquet for all of humanity!”

“I heard if you can place in the top 1,000, you’ll receive a startling reward!”

“Yea, this time the Virtual Universe Network company is hosting it, so the rewards must be great!”

“The top Battle of Geniuses, held twice every 10,000 years. Once by the Virtual Universe Network company, and once by the Battle-Axe Coliseum!”

“Hurry and check their website!”

In the virtual universe, above each continent that represented a ‘universe empire’ and each island that represented a ‘medium level civilization’ appeared a gigantic declaration. Each declaration advertised the fact that the ‘Humans of the Universe——top Battle of Geniuses” was beginning soon.

In just a night, this news spread across all of the empires of humanity.

The speed at which the news spread showed how advanced the virtual universe network was.

Killing Fields—— Killing Area

This was a boundless desert. There were thousands of densely packed black clothed men on the desert. Each black clothed person was a star level five stage. In front of these thousands of black clothed men stood a white robed bald person. He held a genetic weapon blade, which reflected a cold light.

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

The several thousand black clothed men yelled and then crazily charged forwards like lightning.

The white robed bald man smiled as he walked over. Lightning seemed to appear in his surroundings. When the first bunch of the black clothed men arrived, the white robed bald man’s body suddenly flashed, and the blade in his hand moved!

“PU!”

His blade was as fast as lightning! It instantly slashed open a black clothed man’s head, and his blood flew everywhere!

“PU!” “PU!” “PU!”.....

The white robed bald man didn't seem to be moving that fast, but his movements were very peculiar. At the same time, his blade was usually stationary, but once it moved, it was as fast as lightning and was guaranteed to take a life! His steps and his slashing formed a very mysterious rhythm. Fast combined with slow as large amounts of opponents of the same level were slashed to death.

"CHI——" a long whip hit the white robed bald man's left arm, causing it to blow up and become bloody.

"CHI!" "CHI!" "CHI!" the others that were surrounding him took advantage of this opportunity to attack him.

The white robed bald man died!

The surrounding space slightly changed. All of these black robed men, including the corpses, marks of blood, etc. completely disappeared, and the white robed bald man appeared again.

"Wu, I did a good job didn't I." smiled Thunder God, "I killed around 190 opponents of my level in one go."

"STUPID STUPID STUPID!"

"You are SOOOOO stupid. Without me, you were able to attain your own domain. Now that I'm taking all my time to train you, you should be improving even more!" A white bearded old man that was the size of a fist was roaring in rage on Thunder God's shoulder, "Also, I can't believe you lost to that Hong last time! I'm

so embarrassed! Hong doesn't have a teacher while you have me teaching you, AND YOU STILL LOST!!!"

"I almost won...." followed Thunder God, "Don't forget, I've never beaten my big brother even once all these years. It's good enough that I almost won last time"

"What do you mean 'good enough'? You need to aim higher!"

"Alright, let me talk to you about your body and blade technique. From today's examination, your technique still has quite a few problems. I saw nine of them in a glance. First, your blade's movement is part of your body's technique, you just can't get it right. Next, ..." the white bearded old man pointed out a bunch of errors.

Thunder God listened carefully.

.....

Only after he finished training did Thunder God leave the killing fields. When he stretched outside the lobby of the killing fields as he prepared to call the sky horses in the sky, he saw the enormous declaration in the sky.

"Damn!" Thunder God widened his eyes, "Such a gigantic declaration?"

Thunder God read the declaration's contents.

“Top Battle of Geniuses? Kiddo, you HAVE to participate, such a rare chance!” roared the old man Wu.

“Big brother, thirdie!” Thunder God contacted Luo Feng and Hong.

Earth, continent of Asia, dawn.

On an extremely battered highway, Luo Feng was in a battle robe and had a dark, golden staff on his back. He coldly looked ahead, and with a thought in his heart, he yelled: “*!”

CHI!

Suddenly, a flash of golden light shot out of the dark, golden staff on his back. At the same time, a powerful peculiar force merged into the golden light. After that, the golden light stopped in mid air. The light appeared to be nine small golden blades that were as thin as a cicada’s wings. At this time, the nine fist-sized golden blades with extremely complicated engravings on them were currently spread out in a row. With the assistance of a concentrated domain, Luo Feng used his powerful conscious to attempt to move those nine small golden blades.

Golden threads were everywhere as they intertwined. In terms of complexity, this was tens of thousands of times more complex than the ‘soaring shuttle’.

“Converge!” Luo Feng clenched his teeth.

The nine small golden blades that were connected by the complex golden threads combined in a mysterious matter. Finally, a golden * started to form.

“PENG!” The golden * fell apart and the golden threads snapped. The nine small golden blades spread out.

“Return.” Luo Feng’s face was pale as he sighed and shook his head.

The nine small golden blades swiftly returned to the small openings in the dark golden staff on his back.

“Who would’ve thought that the first stage of this ‘Nan Shen Armament’ would be so difficult.” Luo Feng shook his head and sighed. After training with the Nan Shen Armament over the past few days, he has already gotten used to it. However..... fighting with the Nan Shen Armament is indeed extremely difficult. He has so much trouble with just the first stage.

Currently, he has a five stage domain and has stepped into the entrance of the origin laws of gold.

At the same time, his spiritual force amplifier has reached 58. Of course, this amplifier is the amplifier of the universe level six stage Golden Horned Beast. That’s why Luo Feng, a star level seven stage spirit reader, can have such a disgustingly huge amplifier.

A powerful spiritual force amplifier, a five stage domain, and stepped into the entrance of the origin laws of gold.

Any one of these things is quite amazing for a star level fighter.

But even with that, he still hadn't finished the first stage.

"Don't rush, Luo Feng. Your domain, comprehension of the laws, and spiritual force is enough to cast the first stage. However, you haven't practiced enough yet. You have to practice over and over again. You have to practice it so much that it becomes natural to you. After that, you won't have to use so much spiritual force." said Babata.

"Understood." said Luo Feng.

"Luo Feng, there's a call invitation from Thunder God." said Babata.

"Hm? Second Brother?" Luo Feng was a bit shocked. Thunder God was being trained like crazy by his living AI, so he rarely contacted Luo Feng, "Connect to the virtual universe network"

.....

Western Asia, wastelands.

A battered beggar was currently sitting cross legged below a curved tree. However, the monsters that frequently ran past ignored him and didn't even try to eat him.

"ROAR~"

Monsters attacked each other and blood was everywhere.

However, the beggar still sat silently.

"With light, there'll be light."

"Without it, darkness." spoke the beggar quietly.

Whoosh.

The beggar that was sitting there instantly disappeared. His surrounding area suddenly turned into absolute darkness. And right after that, the absolute darkness disappeared, and the beggar appeared once again.

"Universe.....natural..... our ancestors were so intelligent, but were restricted to their bodies and couldn't dig deeper." The beggar revealed a smile, "Last time I was almost defeated by second brother, and now my domain finally stepped into the sixth stage"

"Hm?"

“Second brother again? Does he want to spar?” The beggar’s battered clothes instantly burned up. At the same time, a new outfit automatically extended across his body. He became a tranquil looking man right away, it was indeed the big brother of the three powerful fighters of earth——Hong.

.....

Luo Feng and Hong both entered the virtual universe network.

Chapter 27 – Big winds, Rise!

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain island's nine star bay district.

Luo Feng and Hong appeared at their own grass fields. At this time, Thunder god was shouting, "Thirdie, Big brother, you've finally come, quickly look up!"

"What's going on? Why so noisy?" Hong smiled as he looked at him before looking up.

Luo Feng curiously looked up too.

In the air, there was an enormous declaration, almost like a curtain in the sky.

"Battle of geniuses?" Hong squinted a little, gleaming.

"All of the universe countries from the universe, a trillion geniuses are to battle?" Luo Feng looked at the declaration and it's details, drawing in a cold icy breath. It was madness! This was too crazy! Just how vast was the universe?

Not even the universe, just the Ganwu universe country alone had over a hundred million galaxies.

At any given galaxy there would be a multitude of top geniuses.

But when the entire universe country is taken into consideration, they could already squeeze out over 1 hundred million geniuses!

“Interesting.” Luo Feng squinted his eyes, feeling a strong sense of anticipation within.

“Big brother, Thirdie.” Thunder god walked over, and pointed beside them. Immediately a floating screen appeared and on it was the virtual universe website. On its front page it had a glaring broadcast, ‘Universe humans——Genius battle’ link.

“Open it and see.” Hong said.

“Kay.” Thunder god gently tapped it and it opened the link.

After opening it, it gave a detailed explanation of the Universe humans——Genius battle.

The genius battle was aimed at all star level humans.

As long as one was a star level human, they could participate!

The genius battle, accurately speaking, was organized once every 5000 years, or twice every 10,000 years. These two battles were separately held by the virtual universe company and the Huge Axe dojo. Hence to the virtual universe company, this genius battle naturally was a grand affair that happened once every 10,000 years for them.

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

Genius battle was separated into the universe country selections and the final genius battles.

Each universe country will organize their own selection internally and after picking out the elites, the geniuses would form a group and participate in the final genius battle.

The final battle would determine the ultimate victor.

The top 1,000 geniuses of the universe, will have 3 big prizes.

1. According to how high they are ranked, they will receive between 10 mixed elements to 10,000 mixed elements and more as their prize.
2. They will receive the chance to enter the primal universe name list.
3. They may become internal core members of the virtual universe network.

Luo Feng was utterly baffled.

As long as you reach the top 1,000, even the lowest would receive 10 mixed elements which was even more than his rewards from the world within a world. And the highest was 10,000 mixed elements. He estimated that the number one of the entire genius battle would receive that. 10,000 mixed elements, that was comparable to the entire wealth of an undying.

Virtual universe company, indeed it was extremely wealthy.

“All 1,000 of them will be able to enter the primal universe?” Luo Feng couldn’t forget that during the Ganwu auction, the scene for the competition to enter the primal universe had intense competition. And it was a place even his teacher hadn’t entered.

“These prizes seem not bad. Cash, primal universe, core member…Hehe. These sort of prizes are worthy for the top 1,000 geniuses.” Babata said, “Luo Feng, your chances are not bad, go give it a shot.”

“What do you mean give it a shot?” Luo Feng asked, “From your tone, it seems that it’ll be very hard for me to reach the top 1,000?”

“What do you mean very hard?”

“Luo Feng, you really underestimate the trillion geniuses within the universe! Let’s not even talk about the universe’s top 1,000, which for you is too difficult and almost impossible. if you can reach the top 1,000 within the Ganwu universe,, that’ll be not bad already.” Babata said.

“Er…” Luo Feng realized.

“Even though there are very few undying within the universe, the number of star level disciples under these undying range in the trillions! In terms of talent…many not only have strong bloodlines, but they also have extremely high talent! Considering there are countless people in the universe, in terms of comprehension,, why wouldn’t there be people with extremely high comprehension ability within the universe? There are even more people with great

willpower and hard work, ”

“Your strongest trump card is the golden horned beast’s body. It has given you remarkably strong willpower, and also allowed you to begin to perceive the origin law’s with much ease.”

“However with these alone, wanting to make it to the top 1,000 of the universe’ trillion geniuses… that’s simply too far away.”

Babata’s tone changed, saying, “Of course you’ve been working hard. Even though the golden horned beast has given you enough talent, however between golden horned beasts and its other counterparts, the difference is still huge. Because of you, this golden horned beast has been training very hard. To be able to attain a level 5 domain in a short 3 years, your hard work is the main reason.”

“Just like your big brothers, in terms of age they are even older than your grandfather! And many star level geniuses within the universe are at least a few hundred years old.”

“As for the star levels that survived for a few thousand years, they pose no threat. Not breaking through to the universe level after a few thousand years, that doesn’t count at all as genius. Their comprehension and other abilities must be weak.”

“Your biggest weakness is…your training time has been too short. Your training till now hasn’t even reached 30 years.”

Luo Feng pondered.

“Of course, your willpower, domain, and comprehensive abilities are strong. Once you add all 3 added together, you are indeed very strong. You can definitely wipe out the geniuses within the Black Dragon mountain star field without any problem.”

“As for the top 1,000 of the universe, that’s simply too far away. You can go ahead and give it a shot. Fighting your way into the Ganwu universe top 1,000 will already be considered a great success..” Babata said.

The news of the genius battle stirred up the three brothers. At the same time, within the vast universe’s countless galaxies, there were trillions of star level humans who were waiting in anticipation for the battle.

……

This was a vast god country, within its center floated a volcano.

At that time.

A 7 to 8 meter tall human silhouette with red scarlet hair with his entire body seemed to be bathed in a flame, stood in mid air. Beside him were several other sector lords, and before him knelt up to 1,000 star level youths.

“You all are the most elite disciples of the Heavenly Flame god

country.”

His voice was like thunder, resounding within the 1,000 youths’ ears.

“As long as any of you pass the initial selection and enter the battle, I’ll take him as my disciple. If you can fight into the universe top 1,000, I will give youan entire galaxy!” The god like figure bathing in flame said coldly, “Go prepare right now and don’t disappoint me.”

“Yes, God master!”

Over 1,000 youths complied respectfully.

……

“Remember, you take along with you the honor of the Black Dragon Mountain empire.”

A low hoarse voice sounded.

In the sacred land Black Dragon mountain, a tall and sturdy man dressed entirely in black scales with a black dragon horn on his forehead stood tall. The space around the area where he stood seemed to tremble. The surrounding sector lords were extremely respectful. Before this presence, they didn’t dare to show any form of disrespect. Just the aura and forceful energy from this man made everybody shudder.

“Go on, battle for the honor of the Black Dragon mountain!”

This huge god like figure spoke.

“Yes god master!”

Close to 1000 star level youths knelt there, extremely respectful, their expressions passionate. Amongst them, almost all of them were gazing at the legendary founding emperor of the Black Dragon Mountain empire for the first time, the grand undying being.

……

On a green planet with its entire planet was covered in vegetation. There were many aboriginal life forms. Yet, this planet didn’t seem to have any trace of technology at all.

On this planet, the fighters were extremely strong to the point where they had up to ten universe levels, with many many more star levels. This sort of strong planet should have long entered the universe culture, unless its location was simply too desolate or it was a territory of an absolute warrior.

A few warriors would specially cultivate a planet to let it remain without the influence of technology.

“100 star level 9 fighters and spirit readers will surround you and attack you in a bit.” A white robed bald man moved slowly.

Beside him was a fit white robed youth carrying a blood red blade.

“Ok”, the white robed youth gently nodded.

Suddenly from the distance flew a group of star level 9s. This group of fighters and spirit readers had immediately surrounded the youth. Usually against such numbers, one would rely on movement to dodge and avoid, reducing the number of enemies quickly. For this person to let himself get surrounded immediately...

It was akin to suicide.

“Begin.” The white robed old man ordered coldly.

Rumble!

The 100 star level 9 fighters and spirit readers surrounding the youth made their move simultaneously, be it with genetic weapons or spirit attacks, or even blade weapons.

Hua!

A blood red blade flashed!

The white clothed youth's body became a blur and there seemed to be images of himself appearing throughout the area.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

Fresh blood flew everywhere. The 100 bodies were either slashed open or their heads rolled...

In an instant, they were all killed!

"Very good." The white robed old man's eyes gleamed, "You've improved considerably, compared to before. You are definitely the most impressive genius your teacher has seen from trillions of years of wandering the galaxies."

The white clothed youth's body trembled slightly. His cold eyes looked at the white robed bald man. his eyes filled with shock: "Teacher, you, you just said..." How long has it been since he followed this absolute warrior. He had never heard such an obvious complement. At most he'd receive little words of encouragement or something along those lines.

"Your teacher cannot teach you anything anymore." The white robed old man said.

"Teacher, I..." The white clothed youth wanted to speak. But he didn't want to say anything offensive, and stood speechless for awhile.

“Go take part in the universe genius battle. With your strength, entering the universe top 1,000 should be simple. In the virtual universe, the strong are numerous like the clouds. Only there will you be able to find a suitable teacher to teach you.” The white robed bald man said, “When you reach the undying level, look for me again.”

Hu!

The white robed old man vanished.

“Teacher…” The white clothed youth wanted to speak, before stopping from realization and whispering softly, “Genius battle?”

……

“Genius battle? All the universe countries within the universe?”

A 3m tall youth with messy hair, walking barefooted in a desolate mountain range, carrying a short knife laughed loudly, “Sounds interesting! I, Tuman haven’t met an opponent in a long long time.” In the distance behind him there was a body of a universe level 1 warrior.

……

All people within the vast universe, in the universe countries,

countless god countries, along with other independent geniuses, hard working warriors, travelling fighters etc, had noticed the genius battle declaration that encompassed the entire universe.

There was only a winner and a loser The more genius one was, the more they were unwilling to submit to others.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay.

Luo Feng, Hong, and Thunder god looked at the screen.

“Second and third brother, shall we take part?” Hong looked at Luo Feng and Thunder god.

Luo Feng and Thunder god looked at Hong, their eyes all filled with anticipation for battle.

The three immediately laughed.

“Haha...”

“Then let the three of us brothers go and fight it out.”

The three brothers from earth too were filled with confidence and heroism.

Chapter 28 – Endless Geniuses

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god opened a screen each before them and entered the virtual universe company's website to submit their names.

On the main page, there was a very clear number...1,948,593,889. Within a few seconds the numbers immediately jumped greatly, becoming 2,008,299,173. Beside these numbers were the words in universe language, Ganwu universe country participants headcount.

"So many people have signed up!" Thunder god said shocked.

"A lot Indeed." Luo Feng looked carefully, "That's right, it has already exceeded 2 billion."

"When I entered the slaughterhouse to train, I didn't even see the declaration. But, when I came out, it was already there and I immediately came to look for you guys. It definitely hasn't been that long!" Thunder god exclaimed, "Within the time I was training, there were actually so many people who had signed up."

"The entire Ganwu universe country has over a hundred million galaxies." Luo Feng laughed and began to register for the event.

"We still have to input our information?" Luo Feng looked at the screen helplessly, before swiftly filling it in and pressing the submit button.

“Di.”

“Scan complete. Star level 7 spirit reader, application successful.”

The application process of the virtual universe network had the ability to scan a person’s ability and strength. Hence it could automatically verify that the applicant was a star level.

……

The three of them signed up that same day. However, the entire human race of the universe still had about a month or so left to sign up for the genius battle. Since there was still time left for the battle, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god grabbed the opportunity to work hard and train to raise their own strength and abilities. No one wanted to get eliminated immediately.

Whether it was Luo Feng, Hong or Thunder god, they all had their own pride!

No one was willing to admit defeat easily. As for trying to make them to submit? That would be a tough indeed!

Time passed by and under the supervision of countless human galaxies and universe countries, the application period finally came to an end.

According to china time, it was year 2066, april 16th.

“Luo Feng, there’s mail.”

“Punk, there’s mail.”

“Master, there’s mail.”

On earth, Luo Feng, Thunder god and Hong all received the notification simultaneously, immediately entering the virtual universe network.

……

Virtual universe, Black Dragon mountain, island 9 star bay.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god appeared simultaneously at their house entrances, smiling as they glanced at each other.

“Daddy!” Little Hai ran excitedly at Luo Feng. “Daddy, why have you come? I haven’t seen you here in such a long time.”

“Come, sit on daddy’s lap.” Luo Feng sat in a chair beside him. While hugging his son on his lap, he pointed in mid air. A screen appeared automatically, and he swiftly opened the mail.

“We welcome your participation in the universe human race…

Genius battle selection.

There have been over 822.5 billion star levels that have signed up for the selection this time, within the Ganwu universe country territory., This amount has exceeded previous times participation by over 110 billion! This has made our virtual universe company very happy.

We can guarantee that the genius selection process will happen under the fairest of conditions.

The level of participants range from star level 1s, 2s, all the way to level 8 or 9. To be fair during the true geniuses selection, the true elimination arena will be held within the virtual universe. All participants will have the same bodies physically while maintaining a star level 9 ability.

Everybody's spirit powers will be at the same level too, at the star level 9!

All participants will have exactly the same physical abilities. However, their looks can be customized! One can pick out their own genetic weapons or spirit weapons (Not exceeding 10 of them. A reminder to participants, even though level 4 or 5 spirit weapons are strong, if one's abilities are weak, it can't be used properly. We advise you all to pick what's suitable). At the same time you can pick genetic armor (Not exceeding level 2), and acquire storage rings that have food and beverages within.

Genius selection!

The test will be on willpower, domain, experience, law comprehension etc,

This time's genius selection will be separated into two levels.

The first level will be each universe country picking out their top 1000 warriors.

The second level will be the gathering of all the top 1000s from each universe country, then there will be a final battle to decide the universe's top 1000.

Among which...

The scale of the first stage is at an unprecedented level.

The universe country you are in is the Ganwu universe country.

The Ganwu universe country has over 822.5 billion participants. It will be split into the elimination stage and the arena battle.

Once the elimination stage wraps up, there will be a total of 100,100 participants left!

As there are many to be eliminated, this stage itself will definitely be a bloodbath.

The initial elimination of the Ganwu universe, will begin with a 100 worlds within the virtual universe. Every world will have 8.2 billion participants. 8.2 billion participants will kill amongst themselves on each world. Killing others will gain one accumulated points, the more one kills, the more the points! Everyone only has one life. Thus,the moment you die, it ends.

The elimination stage would come to an end at this point.

With regards to the accumulated points, the top 1,001 participants of each world will be ranked accordingly and they'll be considered having passed the elimination. Every world will choose their top 1,001 participants. With a total of 100 worlds, 100,100 participants will be picked.

Simultaneously...

Every world's top participant will be able to skip the arena stage and immediately head into the top 100 namelist of the top 1,000. The remaining 900 will be decided through the arena with the 100,000 people."

"The message contains an attachment, further details can be found in the attachment."

Looking through both the message and the attachment, Luo Feng couldn't help but feel immense pressure.

The elimination itself was going to be crazy.

Over 8.2 billion people will be desperately killing each other in the world just to gain enough points to rank higher.

“Second brother, third brother, this genius battle is going to be brutal. Just through the elimination level alone, over 800 billion participants will be eliminated, and only 100,100 will remain!” Hong smiled, “This’ll make every one kill frantically within the first round. I can just imagine the scene of a psychotic world full of fresh blood and corpses.”

“There’s too many people, hence they have to resort to such measures.” Thunder god smiled, “I’m anxious already.”

Luo Feng laughed, his eyes gleaming with a sense of bloodthirst.

The current Luo Feng would occasionally enter the slaughterhouse and select a large amount of opponents to madly slaughter. Luo Feng could only rely on such methods to vent out the bloodthirst that permeated even from within his soul. And the elimination level...allowed 8.2 billion people to madly slaughter within each world. The one who was most anxious and anticipating of the three brothers was Luo Feng.

“Kill kill.” Luo Feng imagined himself killing 10 people in one blow.

It was thrilling!

At the end of the submission period, the virtual universe company began to move. The preparation itself was tedious and complex, however the virtual universe company's efficiency was extremely high.

One month after the submissions closed, china time year 2066, may 16th. This day was the gathering day for the Ganwu universe elimination selection.

……

"You all help me keep a close watch on the points and the ranking systems which will be changing constantly. Our organization was unable to get a few super geniuses, but we can atleast get those that almost make it too. Our Ganwu universe has a total of 100 elimination worlds. Taking every world into consideration, the top 10,000 will all be extremely powerful. Keep an eye on their rankings."

"This is the best opportunity to acquire more elites."

……

"Every time the rankings change, do a calculation."

"Gather all the information of the elites and geniuses and store them. Our Ganwu universe country's large amount of future sector lords and domain lords will be amongst them."

……

“You are all our Nuolan Shan family’s most elite of the young generation. I don’t dare to expect each and every one of you to get past the elimination level. However, whoever manages to rush into the top 10,000 will be named the next head of the Nuolan Shan family!” Nuolan Shan stood before over 1,000 youths, filled with anticipation and hope.

……

“Today is the beginning of the gathering for the elimination.”

“The godmaster is filled with hopes for everyone, don’t let him down.” In sacred land Black Dragon Mountain, a group of sector lords too were speaking to a large amount of disciples.

……

“You all are the Old Ganwu universe country’s future elites and pillars.”

“We wish for you all to take at least half of the 100,100 name list!” A thick voice rumbled through the skies and earth, resounding within a universe space. On one particular space, a giant that was impossible to see clearly stood. The space around around him was warping slightly, and before him in the distance was a blur of endless youths.

All the youths were respectfully kneeling down.

There was such a large group of youths that it was impossible to see from one end tothe next with the naked eye. Beside this giant's voice that made people tremble, were several other powerful undying beings, all standing respectfully around.

Every undying had their own heart palpitating and powerful aura, and with just one look, there were at least a thousand undying beings there!

"Go on children." A thick voice rumbled through the space, causing everyone's soul to tremor and rise their morale.

"Yes, country master!"

Over one hundred million star level youths knelt there respectfully and excitedly. They didn't think that they'd actually get to see the legendary being, the one who built the Ganwu universe country! A being so high up that it was impossible to imagine. The leader of the Ganwu universe country! had held his position for over a trillion years.

"Phew."

The space ahead warped and over a hundred million star level youths immediately vanished. This unbelievable god made even the surrounding over 1,000 undying's stand there with their hearts

palpitating respectfully.

.....

Countless humans were watching this elimination battle.

And on this day, China time March 16th. A large amount of participants started to gather, 820 billion people in total. On average every galaxy within the Ganwu universe had less than 1,000,000 people. One had to know that every galaxy had at least a few tens of thousands of star level 9s, much less level 1 to level 9 added together.

This means to say that those that dared to sign up all had confidence.

Over 820 billion...

Some, had lucky meetings!

Some had natural talent!

Some had good teachers!

Some had the hearts of powerful warriors!

All in all...

Whatever type and form, they all regarded themselves as strong. Including Luo Feng and his brothers, these 820 billion star levels all gathered together in the Ganwu universe country .

“The elimination will be sorted into 100 worlds.”

“I’m in world 72. Thunder god, Luo Feng, how about you two?”

“Haha, I’m in world 88. I like that number. Thirdie, what about you.”

“I’m in world number 1!”

Chapter 29 – The 1st World

“1st world, what a sign!” Thunder god laughed as he looked at Luo Feng. Luo Feng surveyed the distant surroundings. With one glance all he saw were human silhouettes, all dressed in different clothing, some with heights reaching over 10m while others not even reaching 1m. Most of them were engaged in discussions. Just how many people were there on this continent?

Even without counting, they all knew, there were 820 billion!

A gathering of 820 billion people! What kind of scene was this?

“Everybody take notice. This elimination process will be separated into 100 worlds, we will begin the group teleportations shortly to each of your assigned worlds. Please use the time to prepare yourself. The moment the elimination begins, you’ll be unable to request for weapons anymore.” A clear voice resounded throughout the continent’s skies.

Luo Feng lowered and checked himself to make sure he had everything he needed.

Dressed in a dark grey level 2 genetic armor, wearing a helmet and boots, with one storage ring on his finger. Things like his shield, genetic energy battle knife, soaring shuttle, Nan Shen Armament, these were all stored within the storage ring. The weapons simulated by the virtual universe were exactly the same as the ones used in real life.

“We will begin the teleportation, counting down, 60...59...58...” The clear voice resounded throughout the continent.

Amidst the sea of people, Luo Feng and his brothers exchanged glances.

“Good luck.” Luo Feng smiled.

“We’ll pass the elimination together.” Thunder god smiled.

“All the best.” Hong too smiled.

“10, 9, 8, 7, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1! Teleport!” That clear voice used universe language, resounding throughout the entire continent’s 820 billion people’s ears. In an instant, everyone there vanished.

Simultaneously.

Within the virtual universe, 100 independent worlds opened up and 8.2 billion fighters appeared on each.

The humans of the universe’s...Genius battle, the elimination round for all the universe countries began simultaneously!

As a gathering of all the human race, from those way above in the upper echelons, the undying, down to those normal citizens able to enter the virtual universe, all were watching this event. Of course, the warriors and citizens were mostly concerned about their own

universe country's stage.

The 1st world.

During the teleportation, Luo Feng felt his vision blur. Everything grew muddy and after about 3 seconds, it became clear once again.

He found himself standing within a regular living room. Besides this room, there was also the bedroom and bathroom.

"This is the 1st world? What a shocking gravitational force." Standing in the living room, the strong gravitational force made him somewhat uneasy. He looked down to see his quantum computer on his wrist, the screen automatically received and opened the virtual universe's organizer's mail with information.

The screen was filled with words.

"Participant: Luo Feng (Black Dragon mountain empire)

Points: 0

Kills: 0

World: World No. 1

Time: The elimination stage will carry on for 30 days. When the time ends, the stage will end and the victor will be decided by the points accumulated.

Details of the stage: 1st world, this world is simulated according to the Ganwu universe's Bei Luo planet. Similar to its appearance, there's a total of 91 cities on this continent along with wilderness and much more. The total surface area is over 10.3 million square km. The houses and many other constructs and materials in this world are B9 grade.

Rules for point system: Killing one participant equates to one point, also acquiring half of their accumulated points! Hence, killing the strong ones equates to more points.

Ranking system rules: The dead will maintain their position according to their points. If their points are sufficient, even after dying and losing half their points, they still might be able to make it in the top 1001. So please make full use of your time.

Urgent reminder, everyone only has one life. Death will result in the end of your attempt and you'll lose half your points.

Please see the detailed rules for the ranking system below."

Luo Feng stood in the living room. He finished reading the information that virtual universe company had sent over. Taking a deep cold breath, "A total of 10.3 million square km? China's continent only has about 9.6 million square km. 8.2 billion gathered in such a place, the density is too high."

Luo Feng was analyzing the gravity.

This world's gravity was even more crazy than the world within a world, it was at least 10,000 times above earth's gravity.

"This cup." Luo Feng picked up a tea cup from the dining table in the living room. With a bit of force, the cup began to crack and it started breaking. This made Luo Feng surprised, "What surprising durability! The information was indeed correct. The ground of the house and all the materials are all B9 grade."

Following which Luo Feng gently put down the cup. Even under 10,000 times earth's gravity, he moved as lightly as a cat walking on a balcony.

Through the balcony he looked outside.

Outside...

It was a luxurious posh city, with skyscrapers all about. The more shocking thing was with all the skyscrapers about, the entire city was completely silent without a sense of life at all.

"Everybody just arrived, they are probably still preparing themselves." Luo Feng thought.

"Rumble!"

From the distance a loud explosion erupted and Luo Feng quickly turned to see. One of the huge skyscrapers top levels had it's one level of windows violently shattered and two human silhouettes were breaking through them, fighting in mid air.

"Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!"

With one clash, suddenly it seemed like the entire city was filled with explosions all over.

Everyone had a star level 9 body. If it were on a normal planet, a star level 9 fighter could easily destroy an entire city. This was also the reason behind why the Virtual Universe company specially designed all the building materials to be of B9 grade. This way, at least the world could take a month's worth of the battle damages from these 8.2 billion star level 9's.

"Has it begun?" Luo Feng squinted, immediately walking back into his house.

Peng!

His door was violently kicked open, the alloy door was kicked so hard it was deformed, a tall and sturdy man stepped through. His entire body was covered in genetic energy armor, along with helmet and boots while both hands held an axe each. when he saw Luo Feng, he smiled and said, "You are the first!"

Rumble! The tall and sturdy man rushed forward. His boots violently stomping through causing the cement from the ground to split open, following which he swung with his left hand and the axe sliced right through the air straight towards Luo Feng.

“Hmph!” Luo Feng’s gaze was cold.

The soaring shuttle which was floating beside him immediately shot out a light that formed into a beautiful golden fish, completely different from the form from three years ago within the slaughterhouse. The current swordfish formation Luo Feng controlled was almost like a real fish. It seemed unthreatening, however...

Hu!

The golden fish brushed past the axe heads and immediately pierced right through the tall and sturdy man’s forehead. His eyes still seemed like he was in disbelief and shock, as his mouth slightly opened as though he wanted to say something.

Chi!

His head split open and the tall and sturdy man immediately fell on the floor. His axes too fell onto the living room floor, causing the ground to slightly shake.

“After training madly with the Nan Shen Armament for the past few days, using the soaring shuttle now gives a really special and

very relaxed kind of feeling.” Luo Feng smiled. It was similar to one constantly lifting a 100kg weight and going back to lifting 10kg. It was much lighter and simpler than before.

It was this feeling that Luo Feng was experiencing.

The difficulty of the soaring shuttle wasn’t even a thousandth of the Nan Shen Armament.

“Points…”Luo Feng looked down to look at his wrist, the screen numbers had changed.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black dragon mountain)

Points: 1

Rank: 696,034,836

“The entire stage will last a month. Since there’s too many people at the beginning, the killing will be extremely intense. In contrast, towards the end the numbers will decline. Yet, those who were able to survive till the end, will definitely have high points. When that time comes, killing one person would be more effective than killing a hundred now.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, “Also, the more powerful one is, the more he’s susceptible to being surrounded and ganged up on. Being surrounded by 10,000, 100,000 to even a million same level attackers… no matter how powerful, he would die too.”

“I’ll stay low key for now and get used to the strength.”

When Luo Feng sneakily left the house, he followed the staircase swiftly down. One level after another, he scanned the area and met nine opponents along the way.They were not bad though. There was even a spirit reader controlling a spirit weapon comparable to Luo Feng from three years ago.

It was a pity that the current Luo Feng was extremely powerful. His improvement speed had been incredible over the past three years.

From no domain, to already a level 5 domain. And he even stepped into the basics level of the golden law origins. This has made Luo Feng’s strength grow and increase in an unbelievable rate! Even Hong and Thunder god were far from being his match. Using the soaring shuttle to form the golden swordfish infused with a thread of the golden principles produced a shocking power. Destroying these opponents was indeed simple now.

Afterall...

Even Babata thought that Luo Feng could take the title of number 1 in the Black Dragon Mountain Empire.

.....

“This residential building has a total of 4 units and a total of 41 opponents all fighting amongst each other.” Luo Feng was on the

12th floor of the building in a regular tea room, sitting crossed legged. A golden orb constantly revolving around him. Yes, this gold orb was indeed the Nan Shen Armament's first form.

The two consecutive months after signing up for the competition, Luo Feng had totally invested himself in training. Forgetting to even eat, he finally managed to squeeze out some headway with the first form.

"This form, I'm still not used to it I can barely unleash it, I cannot even unleash its true strength."

"Compared to that, I've already trained until i'm completely in control of the soaring shuttle's swordfish formation, and am able to use its true power."

"Right now..."

"I have to focus and train on the first form until i get used to it to the point that it becomes second nature to use." Luo Feng thought. This blurry golden orb infused with power and strength that was able to make hearts palpitate constantly revolved around Luo Feng. Although, at this time the revolution was still more rigid.

The elimination process had already started within this 1st world.

Luo Feng took control of that residential building, and continued honing his skill which was to be used as his trump card. The

elimination was still at the beginning stage, it wasn’t time to get out and start the massacre yet.

Chapter 30 – Making his Move

First world, all participants could at most fly to a height of about 9,000m above ground level. Any higher and they would meet with an invisible barrier.

Above that barrier.

There was a universe ship flying slowly. In one of its single rooms, Luo Hong Guo, Gong Xin Lan, Xu Xin and their 2 children, along with Xu Xin's older brother Xu Gang and his family were present.

"They are actually not broadcasting this battle?" Xu Gang exclaimed. "If one wanted to watch the elimination battle, they would have to sit in an universe ship and come here to watch, and the cost is so high!"

"Big brother, it's normal that they don't broadcast this." Xu Xin laughed, "8.2 billion people are battling it out, how would they possibly broadcast every battle?"

Through the external image simulator.

Xu Xin and the others lowered their heads to look. There was massive bloodshed happening in the cities on the continent below. They could even enlarge their view to clearly watch the battle and be able to see each participant's appearance. Of course, if the participant hides in a building, they wouldn't be able to see him.

“Mommy, Daddy... daddy’s rank is constantly dropping.” Little Hai bit on his lip. He was holding a screen in his hand and on it were 3 rank charts. These were precisely the charts from the 1st world, the 72nd world and 88th world. He had locked onto these three worlds of which Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god were on.

Luo Feng’s rank dropped constantly.

“Uncle’s rank is dropping too. However second uncle’s rank is rising.” Little Hai said, “Second uncle’s rank is rising like crazy, rushing into the top 100,000 already. Daddy and Big uncle are in the bottom 10 million and dropping.”

“What do you know? This is called conserving energy.” Little Ping said.

Little Hai stared at him: “Of the 8.2 billion below, who is daddy’s match, is there any need to conserve energy?”

“Haha...”

Beside them, their grandfather and grandmother too laughed.

“They are talking big nowadays.” Xu Gang laughed too, “Come little Hai, sit on uncle’s lap.”

“No.” Little Hai lowered his head, turning to stare back at his

screen in his hand.

Luo Feng and Hong indeed were indeed at the bottom, since their ranking was quite low and not noticeable at all.

……

All 100 of the worlds had began its battles at the same time. As there were no broadcast of the battles, the entire Ganwu universe country's upper echelons, citizens, many more had to actually spent money on a universe ship to float above these 100 worlds to watch the battles.

……

In the air above the 61st world, a beautiful universe ship was located. Within it were a group of young men and women holding wine glasses and eating delicious food while watching the battles through the external virtual simulator.

"Haha, the top ranker is from our universe country star field." At three meters tall, a towering sturdy man dressed in a luxurious long robe holding a wine glass laughed carefreely. "Oh, hehe. Luo Tu Er, your Pengyu empire's results are not bad, there's some in the top 100."

"Thank you your majesty for the compliment." A man with a pigtail, with a peculiar gem embedded in his forehead laughed.

“The Pengyu empire has always been one of the empires under the Ganwu universe country’s that has produced many strong warriors. Right, Luo Tu Er, I heard some news from your side, saying they are going to make you the emperor’s first successor?

“I heard that too. Luo Tu Er, once you become the emperor of the Pengyu empire, don’t forget about us.”

“Luo Tu Er....”

This youth smiled, shaking his head, saying “Those are just rumors and nothing has been confirmed yet. No matter what, I can never compare to your majesty! Your majesty is the only son of the heavens. You’ll definitely take over the position of the emperor in the future. The heaven’s territory, is ten times larger than my empire.”

That three meter tall and sturdy man couldn’t help but laugh when he heard this.

Ganwu universe country, its territory was vast. The highest person in position was undoubtedly the country leader. Under him were many other strong warriors! Such a high position in the Ganwu universe country can mostly only be attained by undying beings. And these title holders, their territories were no lesser than those middle level civilizations. Some are even bigger!

“Brolin, why haven’t I seen your Black Dragon Mountain empire?” That majesty looked at the not too far away Brolin.

“Yes, Brolin.”

“The last time the Black Dragon mountain participated, it didn’t seem to have anyone who even made it into the top 10,000.”

“Hm, the Black Dragon Mountain empire’s recent performances seem to be pretty bad.”

This group was made up of either royal princes and princesses from the empires, or underlings under the internal Ganwu universe country itself, or even young princes from a few large families. They had their own faction even within the virtual universe. Brolin, as the Black Dragon mountain’s most powerful prince, naturally was part of it.

“Right now many warriors aren’t rushing at all to make their move, maybe after some time the Black Dragon Mountain warriors may appear. Am I right Brolin?” That Luo Tu Er laughed as he looked over.

Brolin forced a smile, “It’s still too early, it’s hard to say.”

However, Brolin was feeling extremely uneasy.

In the universe, the pride of a territory was directly related to how strong an empire usually was.

Just like the Black Dragon Mountain empire, if an absolute warrior appeared, the entire empire would immediately feel much

more pride. The other empires and countries would naturally look at them with more respect.

……

Watching the battle from within a universe ship's single room was Nuolan Shan. He was only one person present in that room..

"Head ancestor, only 83 of the disciples taking part are still alive, the rest have been killed. The number of people at the beginning were too many. Hence, the killings were so intense that they couldn't even escape. Right now, among the 83 of them, the highest ranking one is ranked 1.3 million." Looking at the news from the screen, Nuolan Shan's expression grew ugly.

"Bunch of useless things."

Nuolan Shan shook his head, "However it's still early, let's keep watching. Hopefully I will get a good surprise."

First world, still within that residential building.

In a normal room, Luo Feng sat crossed legged quietly. His gaze was fixed on the golden orb before him. Those blurry and peculiar 9 golden blades were infused with large amounts of golden energy with threads going through all of them had formed the orb and it was revolving in an orbit that resembled the number 8 in front of Luo Feng. It's speed extremely fast.

“Gather!” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved.

The golden orb immediately separated and became a golden light as it flew back towards the dark golden rod by his leg.

Luo Feng felt exhausted. The amount of energy consumed while controlling the Nan Shen Armament was too high compared to the soaring shuttle. However, its strength was indeed shocking! Luo Feng sat crossed legged patiently for about an hour, recovering his spirit energy.

“It’s been ten days.”

“This first world’s elimination has already been going on for ten days. During these ten days I’ve been in this building, even when people entered, I’ve been too lazy to make a move, unless they came too close.” Lou Feng lowered his head and looked at his screen on his wrist. It clearly displayed his points.

Participant: Luo Feng

Points: 92

Rank: 68,942,048

“There’s over 60 million people with higher scores than me?” Luo Feng smiled, “Ten days, a third of the stage is over. The mad killing period has already passed and I assume that the survivors now must all be powerful.”

“These ten days, I’ve already honed my basics. Also, my spirit energy has already formed the void pagoda within my consciousness.” The void pagoda was a special technique. However, this was not something of the Yun Mo Planet master’s creation. Back then when the master lost his life, he hadn’t even trained to the highest level of such a skill.

Within the virtual universe, it was possible to unleash such a skill.

After training for about 9 days worth of time, Luo Feng finally managed to form the void pagoda within his consciousness. However it was just at level one. Nevertheless, it caused his soul’s defense to increase greatly. Along with his shockingly amplified strength…which was of a universe level 6 golden horned beast, not many people from the same level could even match up to him.

“Right now!”

“It’s time to make my move!”

“Let the massacre begin!”

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed with a peculiar color. He gently stood up and walked out of his own house, very quickly leaving the residential building.

The area in which the building was located was initially a

beautiful place. However, the ground was already filled with shards of broken glass, dried up blood and bodies. To make the battles more realistic, the virtual universe made it so that the bodies remained after death.

Walking on a patch of grass in the area.

Luo Feng released his spiritual energy. As the gravitational pull was too strong, the most he could expand it to was 800m. However, just this 800m allowed him to scan about half of the area. The scan however immediately caused six human silhouettes to pop out from the surrounding buildings.

“My friend, to be able to survive these ten days, you must be no fool. To actually dare to release the spiritual energy to scan the area, you must be very confident.” The six silhouettes separated. One sun tanned skinny youth smiled coldly as he held in his hand a blood red arc knife.

“Six people.”

Luo Feng gazed at the six before him.

To be able to survive till now, these six people’s points must definitely all be higher than his.

“Move!” Of the six, it was unclear whether it was a man or woman’s voice, but the one dressed in black genetic armor ordered. Simultaneously, a formless spirit attack pierced towards

Luo Feng's consciousness. To be able to survive in the first world till now, these were all considered geniuses to a certain extent. One of them was already considered to be among the top three geniuses of a certain galaxy.

Luo Feng swept with his spirit energy as a form of provocation.

When one person ordered them to move, the other five naturally took action.

"Rumble! Rumble!"

Two youths with almost the same appearance simultaneously attacked with thunder infused blades.

"Xiu! Xiu!"

A silver flash and a golden flash shot from the distance.

"Chi."

The earlier spirit attack from the black genetic armor youth hit Luo Feng's soul. Yet, within his consciousness, that tall void pagoda only gently shook, easily blocking the attack. Luo Feng stood on his soaring shuttle as his body was surrounded by a gold energy. His movement was but a blur as he easily dodged the enemy attacks.

“Domain!”

“On top of that, his domain is extremely strong.” The six people’s expression changed.

With the help of a level 5 domain, along with the soaring shuttle whose original property was that of the gold origin laws, Luo Feng was able to step through the gateway of the origin laws. Using the soaring shuttle, his speed had reached an unbelievable proportion. Hence, dodging these attacks was quite simple.

“Die!” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved.

Xiu!

A golden fish rushed out from the soaring shuttle with shocking speed. It was covered in a peculiar golden energy or origin laws. This fish sailed in an arc and immediately brushed past the six of them. With a low roar, the weapons clashed directly with the golden fish as the clang of metal was heard.

“One actually survived.” Luo Feng looked at that sun tanned skinny youth. The other five had already fallen dead.

The skinny youth held onto his blood red arc knife while staring at Luo Feng and biting down on his lip.

At the same time the numbers on his wrist screen jumped.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black dragon mountain)

Points: 8162

Rank: 122,912

Chapter 31 – ‘Madman’ Luo Feng

There were five corpses on the patch of grass. Luo Feng’s strength made that skinny youth feel fear within. He stared hard at Luo Feng and thought “Too strong. Origin laws…right, origin laws. He’s already touched on the concept of the universe laws. What do I do, what do I do. The amount of points I have now are insufficient to make it to the top 1,001 of the first world. If I die, it’s definitely over.”

“He’s a spirit reader and also has a flying type spirit weapon. His flying speed is much faster than my current running speed. Even if I try and escape, I won’t be able to.” Many thoughts quickly flashed through this tanned skinny youth’s mind.

“Friend!”

The skinny youth shouted, “I’ve made a mistake. You are actually a warrior who’s stepped through the gateway of the origin laws. I might have some information here for you. As long as you spare me, I’ll tell you.”

“Information?” Luo Feng stood on the soaring shuttle, staring at the skinny youth.

“Right. Information. The entire first world has a total of 91 cities. Every city has close to 1 hundred million participants.” The skinny youth looked at Luo Feng, “Within these ten days, we were able to determine that every city has a few renowned absolute warriors. Anyone meeting any of these absolute warriors, should completely

avoid them.”

“I’ll give you the names and information about these warriors in this city, if you can spare me.” The skinny youth stared hard at Luo Feng, not daring to relax.

“Absolute warriors?” Luo Feng smiled slightly.

“Right, if you meet an iron wall, it’ll be too late to regret.” The skinny youth said.

“Haha…”

Luo Feng smiled and looked at the skinny youth, “Not just this city, even within the first world, there isn’t a single person capable of making me feel fear!”

The skinny youth’s expression changed.

Rumble!

The skinny youth stomped on the patch of grass and flew, becoming a black silhouette rushing straight towards Luo Feng. The blurry blood red wave that surrounded the skinny youth started to wrap itself around the arc knife in his hand and it sliced at Luo Feng at shocking speed!

Fast! Sly! Brutal!

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle and became a golden beam of light, dodging the attack by a large distance.

“Xiu!” The golden fish happily flew around Luo Feng’s side. It then started flying towards that skinny youth and in an instant it had reached right beside that youth.

“Dang!”

The skinny youth’s body form was that of a monster. His blood red knife once again blocked the golden swordfish.

“I hate these types of spirit readers the most.” The skinny youth was filled with rage and hatred. “Stepping on a spirit weapon and making others unable to catch them Also attacking and controlling a spirit weapon from the distance. Bastard!” He was completely immersed within his domain and controlling it. He was trying his best to use all his strength and deflect that seemingly harmless golden fish over and over.

Luo Feng stood on his soaring shuttle: “His strength is not bad, seems like a level 4 domain.”

“Break!”

Luo Feng’s expression got serious. He started pouring his extremely powerful amplifier into the golden swordfish. With his full control, the thread of origin law fused perfectly with the

golden swordfish, its flexibility and speed immediately rose by leaps and bounds! Totally controlling it compared to casually controlling made a big difference in its power.

"Chi!"

A golden light brushed past that skinny youth's knife, immediately piercing through his forehead, leaving a deep hole in his head, his eyes rolled, seemingly unsatisfied.

As it pierced through, that skinny youth's corpse fell on the patch of grass patch. Luo Feng walked over and looked down at him, saying softly, "You are quite strong. In terms of your domain, you've even caught up with my second brother. As for your movements though, just a little weaker than my second brother, everything else is almost there. However...it's a pity that you met me, hence you are dead."

Those who were strong, always had absolute confidence in themselves. Luo Feng had relied only on his amplifier and origin laws to kill his opponent. During the attack he didn't even unleash his domain.

The current Luo Feng was extremely powerful.

Babata had already determined that Luo Feng would work hard and break through into the Ganwu universe country's top 1000. Anyone with the power to hit the top 1000 amongst the trillion geniuses in any universe country definitely had the potential to be in the top 10 of his own world! Usually when the power differences

was small, even if the opponent was stronger by a little, he could still battle it out.

Luo Feng said that in the entire 1st world, there wasn't anyone he was afraid of. That was completely due to his self confidence.

"Hm, that's quite a lot of points." Luo Feng lowered his head and looked.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black dragon mountain empire)

Points: 15,921

Rank: 62,912

"This way of killing is so much better." Luo Feng's eyes had a glint of excitement, "When it first began, killing one person only earned 1 point. But now, killing just one now is able to gain me thousands of points. This is definitely more thrilling!"

"The Ganwu universe country must have a trillion strong geniuses"

"Then let's go kill them!"

"I hope there is at least one person who will be able to force me to use my domain." Luo Feng thought. Even though the six that he faced before were considered strong, with one even close to

Thunder god in power, these people didn't push him to use his full power at all. Ever since he stepped through the gateway of the origin laws, his power had indeed increased by a lot..

Luo Feng carried on his back a battle knife and shield, as he walked through the silent city. Along the way, he saw corpses frequently. Scanning with his spirit energy, he picked out the survivors and started engaging in a massacre.

Fresh blood flew everywhere!

Head's flew!

His rank, too, jumped constantly!

.....

In the air above the 1st world, above the barrier.

Within a single room of a universe ship, Luo Feng's family were in there.

"Mommy, daddy's rank has gone up suddenly, in an instant it suddenly rose to the top 120,000. Look!" Little Hai excitedly brought the screen before Xu Xin. Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan who were sitting in the sofa were shocked as well as they opened their own screens, "Wow, it rose so quickly!"

“That’s what I said, Uncle and Daddy were conserving their energy.” Little Ping said, “ Big uncle just started to unleash his powers yesterday, and now he’s already made it to the top 10,000. Daddy won’t disappoint either.”

“Look, your daddy’s risen again, to the top 60,000.” Luo Hong Guo couldn’t help but be shocked.

“What! within the time span of a few words that we spoke, he went from 120,000 to 60,000?” Xu Gang said shocked.

“Look, it’s still rising.”

“Daddy’s rank is constantly rising, already reaching 40,000. Wow! 30,000, he’s already in the top 30,000.” Little Hai was extremely excited. within the entire room, everyone held their breaths.

It was madness.

The points skyrocketed, rising almost every second.

What did this mean?

It meant that Luo Feng was killing people every minute! It was simply a massacre!

The twelfth day of the elimination, 1st world.

The violent winds howled, the smell of blood permeated the air.

In a street that was filled with marks of battle, Luo Feng walked slowly carrying a knife and shield on his back, the entire street was empty.

“Madman, he is a madman.”

“That’s him? I heard within two short days, he killed over a hundred warriors in the east district?”

“Right, that’s him.”

“He doesn’t reason with anyone at all and kills anyone he meets. Simply, he just kills, kills. and kills! And he’s incredibly strong too.” In the distant skyscraper, two partners were peering through a glass window at Luo Feng, who walking down the alley.

……

This city is extremely huge, much bigger than any of earth’s cities. After all, it was filled with one hundred million participants. Luo feng had been massacring these past two days in the east district of the city, killing a few hundred of them. Also these few hundred weren’t like the initial group of people who just arrived. These were all strong warriors who had survived through that bloodbath.

They were all true geniuses! All of them had the ability to be first in their galaxy.

It was a pity...

Luo Feng had the ability to be the Black Dragon Mountain star field's number one! Also he had the potential to breakthrough to the universe country's top 1001 ultimate warriors. Naturally it wasn't a battle at all!

Luo Feng stood in that alley which was filled with the stench of blood. Looking ahead at a shopping center, with a spirit energy scan he clearly discovered three people within. He patiently stood there for a few seconds. Usually, with a spirit energy scan, the opponents would instinctively feel it too and they would automatically come out. However these three didn't.

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, shouting coldly, "Come out!"

His voice boomed, resounding through the alley.

"Madman! We don't want to fight you, so don't be unreasonable." A universe language shout returned.

"Madman." Another low voice came out, "Just reaching the top 1,001 of the first world means passing the elimination. You should already easily be able to reach that. You don't have to bully others so much."

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows. Many surviving geniuses, especially those with similar strengths and power levels would temporarily form alliances.

“All of you better come out. Otherwise, I’m comin in.” Luo Feng remained cold and shouted.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Three human silhouettes rushed out from the window of the shopping center and floated in mid air. One of them had a huge body structure with brown yellow skin, and the other two were similar in size to Luo Feng, a man and a lady. These three all looked at the black haired youth with a knife and shield on his back as they felt immense fear and rage.

The name Madman, had spread across the city in a short time.

Madman, an absolute warrior who was simply insane. Hundreds had died by his hand and no one was even a match for him. One had to know that these were all geniuses. However there was still a stark difference between each level of genius.

“Madman, I was sent here from the imperial family of the Ganwu universe country to participate, you...” That tall man said seriously.

“Die.” Luo Feng said coldly, stepping on the soaring shuttle.

“Go!”

The three people’s expressions changed as they immediately turned and fled Cursing inwardly “This madman, even though I’m from the Ganwu universe country’s imperial family, he doesn’t show any respect or give face at all.” Even though there were over eight trillion participants, they were made of the different countries, starfields, organizations or even independent.

As for the imperial family of the Ganwu universe country, they sent a total of over a hundred million.

However, according to the instructions from the leader of the country, these one hundred million had strive to take over a half of the top 100,000!

“Chi!” The golden swordfish pierced through that tall and built man’s forehead. That man had long lost any courage to face him, with a blank look in his face, he was killed immediately.

The black clothed lady gritted her teeth, “The devil will definitely kill you.”

“Chi.”

Luo Feng coldly killed her.

With the soaring shuttle’s speed, Luo Feng immediately killed two of them. The third had fled in a different direction, after

killing those two, he already couldn't catch up with the third.

"Devil? Hmph, hopefully he allows me to use my domain." Luo Feng lowered his head to look at the screen on his wrist.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black Dragon Mountain empire)

Points: 863,829

Rank: 1,012

"The higher up I go, the slower I jump in rank. However it's still fast, I've almost reached the top 1,000." Luo Fen thought.

……

Within that beautiful universe ship, the heirs, princes and princesses from the various Ganwu universe country star fields were all laughing and discussing.

"Quickly look. Look, Brolin, your Ganwu universe country has one who has made it into the top 1,001 already." One of the royal princes shouted loudly.

"Hm?"

Brolin's eyes gleamed and he looked over.

On the large screen, there were names from all the countries. In the Ganwu universe country pre-selection namelist, (Temporarily) : 1, it was 0 before, right now it had become 1.

“Hurry and open.” Brolin said.

Di.

A small screen appeared beside the large one and information appeared: “1st world, rank 997: Luo Feng (Black Dragon Mountain)”

“Haha, this Luo Feng is a genius nurtured specially by our Black Dragon Mountain empire.” Brolin said loudly. Suddenly he felt a lump in his throat, “Luo Feng, this name…right, that brat in the world within a world was also called Luo Feng. Don’t tell me…no, it definitely can’t be. There are many similar names within the universe.”

“Luo Feng?”

“Haha, Brolin, your Black Dragon Mountain is not bad. It’s finally not at the bottom.”

Right now, of the close to 1,000 mid level universe countries, there were still over 200 of these that have 0 that had made it through the 1st round!

At the same time, many god countries and countless organizations have been paying attention to this genius battle, taking down Luo Feng's name. However...the most passionate and excited were the citizens of the Black Dragon Mountain empire, and some upper echelon people.

"Haha, there's one who has made it into the top 1,001. Quickly look, just who is this Luo Feng."

"From our Black Dragon Mountain, there's someone who's made it into the top 1,001."

"Luo Feng? Never heard of that name."

"Quickly, check where's he from?"

Chapter 32 – Madman and Devil

Above the barrier in the 82nd world, in a universe ship, there was a particular luxurious universe ship. In a single room, there was a Dream clan young lady with a steaming hot figure kneeling by the side, massaging a fat and chubby youth.

“Young master, quickly come look. There is someone from our Black Dragon Mountain empire who’s made it into the top 1,001.” The dream clan young lady shouted.

“Hm?”

The fat youth lay there, casually tapping to open a side screen. On it displayed was the ranking. As he looked, he immediately stared wide eyed: “Damn, there really is one. Wow...and this warrior is actually called Luo Feng! His name is similar to the friend I made on Horned Dragon star.”

The chubby youth was the Gao Sheng, whom Luo Feng had met back then on Horned Dragon star.

“Interesting, interesting, I have to tell Luo Feng.” Gao Sheng quickly sent out a call request, after awhile, he creased his eyebrows, “Hm, still not answering?”

1 minute, 2 minutes...

“That’s weird, he’s not answering my call.” Gao Sheng was

suspicious.

“Master, maybe the one who’s made it into the top 1,001 is young master Luo Feng?” The dream clan young lady smiled and said, Gao Sheng simply waved his hand: “What do you know. Those able to get into the top 1,001 are absolute geniuses among the geniuses. Considering the Black Dragon Mountain star field is so vast and huge with countless star levels, similar names are very common.”

……

In a particular single room.

Nuolan Shan’s cold eyes stared at the screen, on it displayed was Luo Feng’s name.

“Luo Feng?” Nuolan Shan creased his eyebrows, “This name…”

The elimination stage wasn’t broadcasted, and the universe was simply too vast. With countless numbers of citizens, it was common to see people with similar names.

“I hope, really hope that this is not the Luo Feng that I know.” Nuolan Shan creased his eyebrows, staring hard and suspiciously at the name on the screen that gave him constant headaches.

……

Within a luxurious and spacious living room of a universe ship, sitting within it were a few thousand people. These were the true governing upper echelon of the Black Dragon Mountain empire. ‘universe humans...genius battle’ was directed towards all of humanity within the universe, to all the universe countries. These sorts of gatherings that affected the entire universe country’s honor, naturally the emperor would be watching it too.

“Congratulations. your majesty.”

“Your majesty, great news.”

The entire spacious living room immediately erupted, all the huge figures in the Black Dragon Mountain empire immediately cheered. To be able to enter such a gathering, other than the empire’s personal ministers, sector lords, domain lords, or even the emperors of the over 500 basic level universe countries, their positions far exceeded that of Nuolan Shan.

“Haha...” Dressed in a dark black imperial robe, the emperor let out a carefree laugh The laughter was so thick it reverberated within that big living room.

At the foremost of the living room was a huge screen. On it displayed was the ranking and the name of the warrior of the Black Dragon Mountain empire that made it into the top 1,001 (temporarily): 1, Luo Feng.

“Luo Feng, very good.”

The empire let out a huge laugh, roaring, “Our Black Dragon Mountain empire isn’t at the bottom this time. This Luo Feng’s contributions won’t be for naught, he must be rewarded!”

“Right, he must be rewarded.”

“This Luo Feng has made huge contributions.”

“Your majesty is wise.”

The group of officials were all busy flattering the emperor. Their complements were just like a tide. These basic level civilization empire emperors were all incomparably passionate.

“Your majesty, right now it’s still far from the end of the 1st stage. We’ll know the final result when it ends.” Beside the emperor, a bald old man who seem refined said softly. Behind his ears, there seem to be another 4 small ears. To actually say such words when the emperor was happy, this old man’s position must be extremely high, he was one of the sector lords attending the gathering.

“Right.”

The emperor slightly nodded, “However even if Luo Feng falls towards the back, he’s still made huge contributions.”

Luo Feng didn’t know that at the time he made it into the top 1,001, he had perked the interest of many, especially the citizens of

the Black Dragon Mountain empire, who felt extremely proud and excited.

It was similar to watching any world level competition on earth. When one's own country's player were chosen, they were incomparably proud and excited. All of them were anticipating their country to emerge as the winner. And the genius battle was one of the two biggest gatherings for the entire human race of the universe. The influence amongst the masses was even more shocking.

At this time, the trillions of citizens in the Black Dragon Mountain empire were all cheering for and anticipating Luo Feng's victory, supporting him.

……

1st world, in a particularly posh city, in a residential building's living room.

Oblivious to the fact that he had attracted the attention of countless eyes from the Black Dragon Mountain empire, Luo Feng sat crossed legged in the living room recuperating. Up till now, the elimination stage had been going on for 18 days. And these 8 days, especially within the east district, Luo Feng, the madman's reputation had already caused fear amongst the geniuses.

Madman!

In the city that Luo Feng stayed within, it was a name that ranked among the top 10!

Of course every time he massacred he was cautious and prudent. As time dragged on, Luo Feng too naturally felt mentally fatigued, having to recover for a period of time. No matter what opponent he faced, he would make sure he maintained his best form and peak performance, almost like a lion hunting a rabbit, using his full strength!

“As the stage draws on, it gets harder and harder to rise up the ranks.” Luo Feng opened his eyes, his gaze reserved, looking down at the screen on his wrist.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black dragon mountain empire)

Points: 3,129,302

Rank: 398

To be able to rank amongst the first few and to ensure they maintain within the top 1,000, many would kill madly, gaining as many points as possible. Especially when absolute geniuses faced off against each other. One match alone could give millions of points This resulted in the situation of the higher up the ranks they went, the more crazy the points they acquired!

With Luo Feng’s rise from the top 10 million to the 997, he had increased by about 900,000 points.

From 997 to 398, he had an increase of over 2 million.

“It’s time to hunt.” Luo Feng’s gaze gleamed. Standing directly up, at the same time his spirit energy spreading out almost like a torrential storm, scanning the entire 800m area around him.

“Hm? Three prey.”

Sou!

Luo Feng flew as quickly as lightning from the balcony, almost like a flash forming a beam of light through the residential area. Behind him, the golden fish jumped about excitedly, seemingly extremely happy and carefree before it began heading towards his prey to give them a passionate ‘kiss.’

“It’s Madman.”

“Run”

With a shocked howl, two of the warriors were immediately killed by Luo Feng. The only youth that managed to get away was chased for a few kilometers before being killed as well.

……

At night, this city had night and day.

The winds howled.

Luo Feng carried on his back a battle knife and shield, quietly walking in the streets which were filled with dried blood and occasional cracks and splits in the ground. Other than the remains of corpses all around, the only living thing was Luo Feng.

Chi! His boots stepped on rotting meat.

He carried on walking, suddenly his ears twitched. He could hear from the distance a very small sound, causing his eyes to reveal glee, “To dare to come out in the night, normally these are the stronger ones among the strong! By killing these warriors, the efficiency is much higher!”

Sou!

Luo Feng became a blurred silhouette and swiftly headed towards the noise, in an instant he came to an intersection of roads.

“Hm?” Luo Feng turned to look, even though it was night, the vision of a star level 9 warrior was extremely powerful, he could still see thousands of meters ahead, if it were day without any obstacles in the way obstructing, one could easily see hundreds of km around.

“That’s...”

In the distant alley, there was a battle going on, accurately speaking it was a slaughter!

“Peng!” A spirit reader couldn’t dodge in time. Getting knocked on the head by a black hammer, his head immediately splitting open and he lost his life.

“Haha…” a shrill laughter that made people tremble. Hand wielding a hammer, this skinny man was three meters tall. He had strong looking legs and four thick and strong arms which held a hammer each, and he only had a single eye on his face.

And this single eye was vertical.

Looking at this person’s appearance made Luo Feng’s heart jump from the distance: “Darkness clan, he is devil!” As one of the top warriors of the city, during the period of this massacre, Luo Feng naturally began to gain an understanding of the more reputable warriors of this city.

As no one knew each other’s names, they all used the nicknames they had gathered.

“Madman”, was a new name that had appeared suddenly. An incredibly crazy person who killed anyone he saw. Most slaughters and fights were on a choice basis, slaughtering others normally gave one an unbearable feeling. This madman however seemed to enjoy slaughtering others. In terms of strength, he was regarded as the city’s top 10.

“Devil, a powerful warrior that rose from the beginning and could be said to dominate the city’s east district. He was once regarded as the east district’s number one.

However since Madman’s rise to fame, his first place position came into skepticism, mainly because Madman was also from the east district.

“Interesting.” Luo Feng’s eyes had a sense of excitement. He immediately walked towards devil.

The Darkness clan man who was three meter tall and was holding on to his black hammers, after killing one opponent, immediately began chasing after his other opponent. His footsteps were peculiar, every step he took it seemed as though he immediately closed a large distance, it was extremely fast. And his final opponent was a youth with beautiful crystal like skin. He looked fearful and swiftly tried to flee, “How did I meet Devil, this demon, it’s too late, it’s too late.”

Suddenly…

“Hm?” The Darkness clan warrior devil wielding his hammers suddenly stopped, his single eye staring ahead.

Darkness enshrouded the alley ahead.

A man walked quietly. Compared to the three meter tall skinny but fit darkness clan devil, he was obviously much smaller. His

entire height was only 1.8m, dressed in dark grey armor, carrying a battle knife and shield. One step at a time...it however made the Darkness clan warrior Devil give up on his final chase.

"Hm?" That handsome youth flew in mid air, still in shock.

In the alley.

The devil's single eye was staring at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng too was staring at this opponent before him. His eyes were gleaming with a sense of excitement.

"Madman?" The devil's voice was cold.

"Devil?" Luo Feng actually revealed an excited smile.

Chapter 33 – Bloody battle in the streets

Two warriors strong enough to be ranked among the top ten in the entire city. Two warriors who were the strongest within the east district, met within that dark alley. Usually, the peak warriors would pick their battles according to the points, and only when they have enough points would they go and engage with other peak fighters in life or death battles.

As they have enough points, even if they died, losing half their points, they would still remain within the top 1,001.

“Shall we fight now?” Devil stared at Luo Feng.

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded, “Right now!”

“Haha, then let me have a glimpse of the terrifying Madman that has scared so many geniuses.” Devil’s singular vertical eye gleamed with madness.

Luo Feng floated up half a meter as the soaring shuttle automatically appeared below him.

The two faced off within that alley.

“Rumble!” Devil stomped hard on the ground with his right foot, causing the concrete to split open and his entire body rushed towards Luo Feng in an instant. His four arms were wielding the black hammers which had pointy edges, as they sliced towards Luo

Feng in a flash.

Luo Feng's body drifted backwards, simultaneously a gold light shot out from the soaring shuttle below his feet, forming a golden fish.

"Go!" Luo Feng's gaze focused.

The golden fish happily swam towards Devil, causing his eye to have a hint of shock, "This madman controls a spirit weapon, and he's actually reached such a perfect level of control over it. Obviously he has perfectly fused the knife blades together, but he actually produced such a life like fish, without any killing intent at all."

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

They clashed, and the four arms danced, causing the hammers to inter cross between each other, forming an almost perfect defense, blocking the golden fish time and again.

"Haha, this madman only has this amount of power."

Devil let out a loud laugh.

Rumble...A thick black aura began to revolve about Devil's surroundings. In an instant, it caused a hundred meter area to be engulfed in a black energy domain. Luo Feng could feel that black energy was extremely thick and heavy, filled with killing intent.

Under that energy's cover, Devil's four hammer wielding arms seemed to be boosted as their speeds increased and every slice was even faster and heavier!

Black hammer dance! The golden fish continuously dodged and tried to find ways to penetrate the black hammer defense.

"Ka!" the golden fish dodged and a black hammer smashed into the alley street light beside them. That thick and strong street light was actually hit so hard that it bent right at the point of collision.

"Rumble!"

A hammer smashed into the alley, causing the concrete to split into a crevice. The smashed rubble dispersed like a gun shooting in all directions.

Hammers danced all about! As quick as lightning and as heavy as mountains!

"Dang!"

Finally the golden fish was hit by an hammer and knocked backwards, the golden threads on the surface of the fish tremored, as though they were about to crumble.

"Haha, madman, that's all you've got? Don't think that by stepping on that spirit weapon I won't be able to catch up with you." A peculiar round disc appeared below Devil's feet. His entire

body began to fly swiftly towards Luo Feng. “We all have the same physical structure, my spirit reading energy won’t be any weaker than yours.”

With the power of the domain, Devil flew straight towards Luo Feng.

And Luo Feng actually revealed a smile, “Devil, indeed a devil!”

The Darkness clan was well known as one of the strong clans within the Ganwu universe country. When one of the darkness clan reaches maturity they become universe level, and as one favoured by the earth, over 90% of the clan would favor the earth type domain and origin laws.

This devil’s black domain, that heaviness caused was actually a special quality of the earth domain.

“Rumble!” Luo Feng’s body’s surroundings suddenly exploded around with a golden light. An extremely sharp and piercing golden energy flowed and engulfed the surroundings, causing the black energy to retreat.

“Hm?” Devil stopped in mid air.

“Devil, you are the first person within this city to make me unleash my domain to fight.” Luo Feng smiled.

Devil squinted his eye. The madman before him was too savage.

He hadn’t even unleashed his domain until now.

“Even with a domain, you will still die!” Engulfed in a black energy, along with four arms and a single eye, the Darkness clan genius...Devil, just like an actual devil, headed straight towards Luo Feng. The four hammers in his arms immediately became a black shadow, and it almost looked like it was splitting the earth and mountains as countless amounts of rubble madly fell from all over!

With the golden light energy engulfing the surroundings, the golden fish almost seemed to be like a fish returning to water, suddenly becoming more flexible, nimble and swift.

The domain gave it more mobility.

The soaring shuttle had gold energy at its core. Being infused with the gold origin laws and with the gold domain, it was like a fish in water.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The golden fish rushed time and again at Devil, and his mad quad hammer dance was aimed at deflecting the fish. However...this time the fish was definitely much more nimble, and its power was much greater. Not just attacking, but defending alone against this slippery fish was extremely difficult.

“Ahhhhhh!!!” Devil couldn’t help but roar out, his single eye

staring straight at the golden fish.

The golden fish's tail waved and its body arced into an S shape, piercing towards Devil.

"Dang!" Devil once again blocked it.

"Dang! Dang Dang! Dang!"

Devil fought hard to deflect the hits, as beads of sweat were oozing out from his forehead.

From the distance Luo Feng was actually shocked within: "With my strong domain, my strong amplifier and law infusion, I've used everything, the soaring shuttle's power has already reached its peak. Yet I'm still unable to kill Devil."

Devil's power was indeed strong, the revolution of the four hammers combined with the powerful domain.

During his attacks, every slice was shockingly heavy.

His defense, it could be said to be perfect.

"If i want to kill him in an instant, I will have to use the Nan Shen Armament." Luo Feng thought. The soaring shuttle was incapable of unleashing his full power, but the Nan Shen Armament...that was the final trump card.

“This madman is too terrifying. I’ve met over tens of thousands of spirit readers. However, among their spirit weapon control, none have been so terrifying. His golden fish attack is akin to a normal fish altogether, incomparably flexible and its orbit and movement is hard to track as well. Its power itself is hard to gauge. The moment it’s unleashed, its power is shocking.” Devil thought.

The swordfish’s control was indeed at a point where he controlled it thoroughly, perfect without any flaws, unleashing its power whenever required and concealing its power when not needed.

……

Under Luo Feng’s golden fish attacks time and again, Devil’s defense was slowly getting worn down.

Continuing this defense would mean certain defeat!

Gritting his teeth and after defending against 106 continuous attacks, one’s mental state would definitely start to slip. That golden fish immediately pierced straight and brushed past him, causing this Darkness clan genius to startle, as he retracted one of the arm’s black hammer quickly protecting himself.

“Pu chi!” The golden fish savagely cut past one arm. Infused with gold origin laws, this fish’s power was extremely strong as it immediately sliced the genetic energy armor, and flew right through it!

Pa!

One of the arms which was holding a black hammer fell to the floor.

“Ahhhh!” Devil, who lost one arm roared loudly. The other 3 arms gripping their hammers, madly rushing at Luo Feng.

“I’m a spirit reader, I won’t engage in close combat with you.”

Luo Feng stepped on the soaring shuttle and swiftly rose and dodged, controlling the golden fish to attack.

A spirit reader engaging in close combat, that is just pure stupidity.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

With one arm gone, his defense obviously had dropped a level. The Darkness clan genius devil knew he was unable to change the tides. Knowing that, he madly rushed to kill Luo Feng. However, he was stopped by the golden fish.

“Ahhh!” Devil roared.

Rumble!

Three black hammers were dancing madly, hitting the side street lights till they bent and smashing the side constructs till the walls split open, revealing rods of alloys, and pieces of glass flew everywhere.

However, when one runs rampant like that, they can only preserve that momentary explosion of energy for a short period of time.

“Chi!”

The golden fish suddenly slipped directly through the black hammers piercing through Devil’s single eye, right through his forehead!

Silence!

Luo Feng slowly landed in the alley, as his golden fish too returned into the soaring shuttle.

“Rumble!” Devil’s huge body gradually fell. The black hammers too smashed into the alley ground, causing loud clangs.

Looking at the Darkness clan genius’s corpse before him, Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief, “This Devil, is a little more powerful than even big brother.”

Judging his powers...

This devil should be a domain level 8! Along with the Darkness clan being favoured by the earth, just like how the golden horned beast was favoured by the gold origin laws. Devil's training time ranged in the hundreds of years, along with the teachings of his ancestors, and being a genius on top of that, reaching domain level 8 isn't strange at all.

Hence...

Even without using the Nan Shen Armament, Luo Feng had already spent all his energy.

.....

In the Alley.

Standing beside the corpse of devil, Luo Feng tidied up and looked down at the screen on his wrist.

The numbers had already changed.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black Dragon Mountain empire)

Points: 6,129,030

Rank: 191

“This devil was indeed an absolute warrior of this city. He started going all out right from the beginning. After so long, his points were much more than mine.” Luo Feng thought. Killing devil alone gave him 3 million points, meaning that Devil still should have about 6 million points.

Indeed a domain level 8 genius!

“Very good.” Luo Feng revealed a smile, killing one devil was worth more than killing over a thousand geniuses before.

“Hm?” Luo Feng became startled, as he turned fiercely to look at a residential building.

On the balcony of that building was a silhouette. One dressed in green battle robes with green long hair and a handsome face, he was looking over at the alley in which Luo Feng was located.

“There was actually someone so close to me and I didn’t detect him before.” Luo Feng felt cold sweat on his back.

“Madman, indeed a madman.”

A clear crisp voice resounded. The green hair handsome youth stood on the balcony, smiling, “To actually defeat Devil, this Devil…was one that even I would have to spend quite a bit of energy to kill. Right now in this east district, you Madman, are

number one. I really want to battle with you right now."

Luo Feng squinted, remembering a person within his mind, shouting: "You are...Windmill?"

Windmill...

Known as one of the top 10 geniuses of the city unanimously. If one said that Madman was the closest to being the craziest of the lot, then Windmill would represent the entire city's close to being invincible warriors. He enjoyed making the city his own, especially aiming the strongest among the strong. So far, whenever he made a move, he had always succeeded.

"My points are still insufficient! On the last day, I will come and find you. You'll have to battle with me!" The handsome youth smiled, following which his entire body became a green light and immediately vanished into the darkness of the night.

Chapter 34 – Ranking

“Windmill?” In the street, Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

The absolute warrior with the name Windmill was similar to himself, another spirit reader.

From what he understood with the information on hand, this Windmill’s speed, along with his ferociousness were terrifying. The moment he attacked, he hadn’t even failed once at all! He was one of the top two absolute warriors of this city. Just his silent arrival earlier on a balcony which was not even 200m away from Luo Feng, while Luo Feng was momentarily unaware of his arrival was indeed proof of Windmill’s strength.

“Windmill?” Luo Feng smiled, “Bring it on!”

Following which Luo Feng left the alley, leaving behind the Darkness clan Devil’s body on the floor.

……

Actually, the battle between Madman and Devil which resulted in the explosions and clashes, not only attracted Windmill but also many other weaker geniuses. Only thing was, as soon as they saw that the battle was between Madman and Devil, they decided to maintain their distance, not daring to approach or get any closer.

This battle, Devil died! Madman survived!

In the east district, the reputation of Madman exploded.

The following days...

Slaughter!

Madman resumed his massacre, any survivors he discovered were immediately chased down and killed!

On the 21st day of the elimination.

Madman had just killed another top 10 in strength, warrior Ice Thread in a skyscraper.

On the 26th day.

Madman once again killed another top 10 in strength, named Bones in a little residential district.

Ever since three of the top ten had died by the hands of Madman, the reputation of Madman had a terrifying deterring effect in the city! The remaining survivors, the true geniuses all unanimously agreed that Madman had the power of the top three.

In the 88th world.

A youth dressed in a white robe stood on a cliff in a continuous mountain range.

“You are Thunder?” Barefeet, messy hair, a young sturdy looking youth who was 3m tall, hand wielding a short knife, smiled as he looked at Thunder god before him.

Thunder god’s face went pale, “You, you are…”

The tall and study man before him had an appearance very similar to an earth human, only sturdier and taller. And this wild man in the 88th world, was a terrifying figure.

Nicknamed Savage, he was one of the top three in strength of the 88th world.

Savage loved to kill the strong. Only geniuses with true strength could attract his attention. In this 88th world, no one was even a match for him! At least he hadn’t met a match yet. All the geniuses ended up being killed by his short knife. The knife was only short compared to his full height.

That knife, to someone like Thunder god, was a large battle knife.

“Bring out your full power.” Savage looked at Thunder god.

“I don’t believe this!”

Thunder god's eyes gleamed, thunder snakes flew about him as his entire body became a blur, almost as though a dreamy image appeared, as he flew straight at Savage.

"Roar!"

Savage roared loudly as his battle knife fiercely slashing forward.

Thunder god felt as though the earth and skies had vanished, what was left was that shockingly fast knife. It sliced through both the heavens and the earth with a force that was incredibly heavy and powerful, causing the Thunder god to quickly use his battle knife to defend, "Clang!" Thunder god felt his hands go numb and the handles of his blade were covered in fresh blood as his blades were knocked away from the force.

"Too, too strong..." Thunder god looked at the slash coming at him, with only that thought in his head.

Chi!

The knife slashed past him.

Thunder god, on the 27th day, was killed.

.....

72nd world.

If one said that the world that Luo Feng was in was modeled after a certain planet's land surface, then the world Thunder god was in was modeled after a large mountain forest range. The 72nd world however was modeled after a very well known Ganwu universe country's construct...the Planet Skyscraper.

The planet skyscraper was an extremely tall construct that reached past the clouds, its entire area was vast.

Within the skyscraper, its construct design could house up to 10 billion people.

This was indeed an unbelievable thing. Normal planets usually only had population of that size in total, hence it became known as the Planet skyscraper. This building had a huge reputation throughout the Ganwu universe country as it was built from an impulse of an undying with huge amounts of wealth.

This 72nd world.

Within this skyscraper, 8.2 billion people were crammed in there, engaging in battles.

At Night time.

The entire skyscraper was covered in darkness. A black haired man wielding a pike was walking quietly in a large walkway that

was 10m wide and on it were traces of blood stains all over, bodies strewn about.

“It’s already the 28th day.” Hong looked down at the screen on his wrist.

Participant: Hong (Black Dragon Mountain empire)

Points: 910,293

Rank: 1,016

“It’s the final two to three days, many warriors will risk it all and fight for more points. These last few days, I have to get enough points to make it into the top 1001.” Within the dark walkway, Hong was like a ghost during the night. Due to the training he received as an assassin in his youth, he was very used to these sort of life or death situations.

“Hm?” Hong creased his eyebrows.

“Hu!

The surrounding lights warped and Hong’s entire body vanished.

In the distant fork in the walkway, a warrior was looking around him, not spotting anybody and continuing to push forward.

“Hm?” This youth’s expression changed, “There’s someone!” Immediately an explosion of energy surged and waved about as he unleashed his domain. Immediately, in the air about 10 meters away, a human silhouette appeared. This black dressed silhouette was approaching as fast as lightning; his entire body form was warping, giving off an extremely weird monstrous image.

“Xiu!”

The pike turned and the tip pierced through the space, straight at the enemy.

That youth quickly retreated, simultaneously controlling his spirit weapon to block the attack.

“Chi!” the pike’s tip pierced through the head of the youth, his eyes filled with shock and denial, as though he was unable to comprehend why. He had obviously blocked the attack, yet he still died.

“Your usage of the domain is too raw.” Hong looked at the body, his body blurring again and vanishing.

Within a ship’s single room.

“Ah! second uncle’s points have suddenly dropped.” Little Hai’s flushed face looked completely shocked, shouting out clearly, “He was still in the top 3000 earlier, now he’s dropped to the top 5000.”

“What?”

Xu Gang too stared wide eyed, carefully examining the screen, shaking his head, “It’s true, Thunder god’s ranking is dropping rapidly. Look his points seem to have dropped by at least half, losing half his points…don’t tell me Thunder god was killed?”

“Let me try.” Xu xin said, contacting Thunder god.

Du…du…du…

“Hello, little sister. I’ve just been eliminated, but I have been receiving multiple calls and invites, haha…” Thunder god appeared on the screen, laughing.

“Ah, second uncle, you’ve lost?”

Beside, Little Ping shouted out loudly.

“Yea, completely lost.” Thunder god replied oddly, shaking his head, “No way about it, I met our world’s Savage, he’s completely sick, his speed is sick, I couldn’t even run if I wanted to. When he attacked…just one move and I got killed. His strength is way above mine. I was beaten to a point where I couldn’t even say anything.”

“One move?”

Everyone in the room was shocked.

“However Little Ping, your father’s doing pretty well. I just saw. He’s already rushed into the top 128 ranks.” Thunder god complemented, “Big brother is also doing okay, but he’s still just a little shy of the top 1001.”

……

Luo Feng sprung up suddenly in this battle of geniuses, causing countless Black Dragon Mountain empire people to crazily cheer for him.

In the air above the 1st world, in a ship’s large hall, over a 1000 people were gathered.

“Luo Feng’s rank has just risen again, he’s made it to number 128.”

“Too powerful, and he only began to make his move from the 10th day. If he had begun from the start, his points would definitely be higher than now. Making it into the top 100 would definitely be simple.”

“Right.”

“Luo Feng is too strong. Stronger than many warriors from the Ganwu universe starfields.”

This group of empire citizens were extremely passionate. Competition between the many starfields was a rare thing, and there was no better place for this competition. As there were many fighters and warriors located within the many starfields, this genius battle represented the quality of warriors from each star field. The more geniuses there are, it meant the stronger the star field was.

People who lacked talent would naturally be looked down on.

“Right now our Black Dragon Mountain empire already has two people who have made it into their world’s top 1001.”

“Nabini is very strong too, his current rank is at 862.”

“This Nabini was a genius from our galaxy initially. After gaining attention from the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land, he was immediately brought over. For him to make it to number 862, that’s not bad.”

“Not bad. However, he can’t compare to Luo Feng.”

“Right, Luo Feng is already at 128. And the higher you go the harder it becomes.”

……

Gao Sheng, Nuolan Shan and countless other citizens from the Black Dragon Mountain empire, even many from the Ganwu

universe starfields, were all paying attention.

And Luo Feng this time had brought great honor to the Black Dragon Mountain empire.

On the 30th day of elimination, which was also the last day.

Night had just passed and the sun was just rising.

Luo Feng walked in the alley, looking down at the screen on his wrist.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black Dragon Mountain empire)

Points: 13,988,292

Rank: 102

“102?” It was mainly from killing those 3 absolute warriors like Devil that he got so many points.

At the time, Luo Feng came to the alley in which he killed Devil, and Luo Feng unleashed his genetic energy, looking up and shouting loudly, “Windmill!” A roar with the genetic energy power of a star level 9, immediately spread across the entire city, and eventually even spread beyond the city into the wilderness.

Windmill! Windmill! Windmill! Windmill! Windmill! Windmill! Windmill! Windmill! Windmill!

His roar echoed throughout the city!

Within the entire city, countless survivors were all shocked.

Windmill?

Who would dare challenge Windmill?

On the balcony of a large skyscraper, a green haired youth sitting there opened his eyes, muttering: “This madman…he’s indeed mad.”

“Devil, Ice Thread and Bones all died by his hands. This battle is really getting me excited.” The green haired youth stood upright. His eyes gleamed with a peculiar light, following which he became a green light breaking through space, immediately heading towards where he had first met Madman.

Chapter 35 – Luo Feng and Windmill

Daybreak, in the silent blood stained alley, Luo Feng stood there alone waiting.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked up.

In the distance, a green light was swiftly flying over. It finally reduced its speed and revealed a human silhouette. It was a green haired youth stepping on a green wheel-like spirit weapon with razor-sharp edges. As he slowed down, the green haired youth descended, landing about a 100 m away from Luo Feng.

“I didn’t expect you to shout so loudly.” The green haired youth looked at Luo Feng, his eyes seemingly laughing, “Your roar, everyone in the city must have heard you.”

“Let them hear it.” Luo Feng stood there, his entire body seemed to be a condensed blade full of anger and energy!

His anger, was extremely heavy.

“I wonder what this Madman does in reality, to exhibit such a strong aura.” The green haired youth thought. He wouldn’t even have thought that Luo Feng had possessed the golden horned beast, a being that lived to slaughter. This possession had given him many benefits. If he hadn’t done this, with only the inheritance of the Yun Mo Planet, he would only be capable of making waves in the Black Dragon Mountain empire.

But with the possession, it's allowed him to become one of the top geniuses in the entire human race of the universe. It could be said...that he was destined for even bigger things and could not be restricted to just the Black Dragon Mountain star field

This was the greatest benefit the golden horned beast had brought. Its shortcomings however were that it brought with it increased savagery and brutality.

He had kept the shortcoming under control before, but in this 1st world, Luo Feng had completely let it out.

"Hm?" Luo Feng's cold eyes swept, gazing in the distant surroundings.

In the distant residential buildings, in a few shop houses or a few alley forks, he could make out a few human silhouettes. Also in the sky, he could see human silhouettes that had flown over and landed about.

"It's Madman."

"The other one is Windmill!"

"It's indeed the two of them. The one roaring before I guess was Madman, and in our city, only Madman would dare pick a challenge with Windmill."

“It’s too thrilling. And on this final day, Madman is going against Windmill.”

“Madman, Windmill, who will win?”

“Who knows.”

“Madman, that guy is capable of doing anything.”

“Devil, Ice Thread and Bones, these three all died under Madman’s hands. However even more geniuses have been killed by Windmill. These two…it’s really hard to say.”

Within a short time, many warriors had gathered about within a distance of a 1,000 meters between the two, spectating from shophouses, residential buildings etc. This fight was set to become the city’s most elite and thrilling battle.

……

In the alley, Luo Feng and the green haired youth faced off.

“Quite a lot of people have gathered.” Luo Feng’s gaze swept the distant areas.

“They were all called here by your roar.” The green haired youth said, “Now it’s troublesome. Our battle…if one wins cleanly, then it would be ok. However if it’s a tragic win! Winning but suffering

heavy injuries, that'll definitely attract all the strong warriors around to surround us and attack. Because the victor among us would definitely have shocking amounts of points, it'll make the others go crazy for it."

Luo Feng nodded.

In reality, his internal world could swiftly recover injuries. However in this 1st world, his body's cells and regeneration was similar to everybody else, any injuries would mean trouble.

"From what I see, we should kill them all first, then face off." Luo Feng said.

"Hm?" The green haired youth was taken aback, thinking that this guy before him was indeed crazy enough.

"Alright." The green haired youth said loudly, "That makes sense. To prevent anyone from interrupting, we'll first have to kill everybody!"

His voice reverberated about openly, causing all who were hiding within the surrounding little districts and alleys to get a shock. As this green haired youth was speaking loudly, it was obvious he was trying to let all the spectators in the distance know and retreat. However that way, their killing efficiency would be greatly reduced.

"You sure are kind!" Luo Feng glanced at him and immediately

jumped on the soaring shuttle and headed towards the closest residential building.

The green haired youth laughed, “I’m just afraid of the hassle!”

The two stepped on their spirit weapons and swiftly flew to the residential building besides them.

“Quickly flee!”

“That Madman and Windmill, they’ve gone mad.”

“Let’s go.”

“They are coming over.”

Immediately, silhouettes madly fled in all directions, all scurrying about. The geniuses that had survived till now, many had strength close to Thunder god or were even stronger than him. However against the two strongest powers in this city...Madman and Windmill, they all chose to flee!

“Come with me!” After killing a bunch of people, Luo Feng communicated to Windmill.

Following which he led the way down to an underground alley, the green haired youth followed closely in.

This city's underground tunnels can lead to anywhere the city. Luo Feng and the green haired youth followed the tunnels at breakneck speed, and after a while, exiting through one of the exits. By now, they were already at the north part of the city.

This place was filled with villas.

These villas were all pretty similar to the villa constructs on earth, spread throughout a few kilometers in area. Luo Feng and windmill stood on separate roofs, staring at each other.

"Windmill." Luo Feng's heart was akin to a sea of blood, filled with killing intent and rage. However the sea was incomparably calm, as not even a ripple could be seen on it.

Savage but ice cold.

This was a special quality of the golden horned beast. Even though it enjoyed killing madly, it was always extremely calm.

"This Windmill, is much stronger than the three before." Luo Feng thought.

"Today is the final day of the elimination. This battle, should also be the final one." The green haired youth looked at Luo Feng, smiling, "Madman, I'm very curious, what's your current rank?"

No one knew each other's true names, hence they didn't know their rankings.

“102.” Luo Feng looked at the green haired youth, “And you?”

“42.” He replied.

Luo Feng was instantly shocked.

From the ranking alone, one could perceive the opponent’s power. His own ranking was 102 because of killing Devil, Bones and Ice thread as these three were among the top 10 in this city. Although he had acquired a decent amount of points from killing them, these three were in the 200-300 ranking. And the strongest in this city, Windmill was actually only ranked 42!

“How did you get so many points?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

“When one achieves number one rank in this world, they can immediately enter the name list of the Ganwu universe country’s top 1,000. Hence many absolute warriors, after massacring in their own city, would head to other cities to hunt.” The green haired youth smiled, “By staying within one’s own city, it’s impossible to become number one.”

“There was a strong warrior who came over to our city before. However, he was killed by me.” The green haired youth said, “From him, I acquired over 10 million points.”

“Over 10 million?” Luo Feng was utterly shocked.

An absolute warrior from another city gave Windmill over 10 million points. This Windmill's total points were definitely crazy, ranking 42 was normal.

"That absolute warrior has been the only one who forced me to use my full strength up till now." The green haired youth stared at Luo Feng, his eyes filled with anticipation, "Madman, this is the final battle. No matter who wins or loses, it's certain that we'll make it through the elimination. I hope you use your full strength..."

"Without a worthy opponent, it's really boring." The green haired youth's eyes gleamed with madness.

"Hm?" Luo Feng looked at the distant green haired youth, his competitiveness burning within.

"Then let's cut the chatter!"

Luo Feng roared.

Rumble!

A glaring gold light immediately burst out from his body as large amounts of golden threads formed a golden energy flow. A golden fish swam like a fish in water in that light, swiftly heading towards the distant green haired youth.

“Rumble!” the green haired youth’s body immediately released a green energy flow. Simultaneously a complex wheel like spirit weapon appeared before him.

Weng!

The round wheel swiftly rotated, at the same time the green energy had formed a pathway that swiftly blocked the golden fish.

“Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang!”

Clashes resounded over and over again.

The two spirit weapons clashed in mid air. Luo Feng’s soaring shuttle and the green haired youth’s green disc faced off.

These two were absolute genius spirit readers and both of them had actually stepped through the gateway of the origin laws. Unlike Devil with his four arms, this green haired youth relied only on the round wheel to block Luo Feng’s gold fish’s every attack. Of course his extremely fast round wheel was unable to completely suppress Luo Feng’s weapon.

“Windmill, that’s all you got?” Luo Feng roared. The golden fish infused with threads of gold origin laws was incomparably flexible, dodging the edge of the blade and smashing into the wheel’s surface. Following which with lightning speed, shot out towards the green haired youth.

Sou!

“Very good.”

The green haired youth’s wheel below his feet and the wheel he used to attack with was the same spirit weapon. The wheel beneath his feet suddenly shot out to deflect the golden fish. Simultaneously, the wheel actually split apart...into two semi discs. These two discs worked together and madly revolved around each other.

“Madman, the other city’s warrior was the first and you are the second person to make me use my full strength.” The green haired youth’s eyes gleamed.

“Dang! Dang!”

With a quick clash, the two semi discs acted like two crescent moons revolving around each other, feeding off each others’ energy. Their speeds were constantly rising, and getting harder to read! Their effect on each other caused Luo Feng’s single golden fish to be somewhat panicked, seemingly getting fatigued by their interceptions.

“Too fast and too hard to predict.” Luo Feng could feel that the two discs were infused with some origin laws.

Just like the universe, almost like two planets orbiting about each other.

These two discs were infused with some peculiar form of energy.

Before, when Windmill's reputation soared throughout the city, he relied on his spirit weapon's incomparably swift and fierce movements. However, when the disc split into two, its speed, power, and movement all soared greatly! It completely displayed to Luo Feng what Windmill's reputation was all about! It completely suppressed Luo Feng.

"Chi." One of the discs actually suppressed the golden fish while the other shot as quick as lightning towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng immediately used the soaring shuttle to retreat, simultaneously using his shield.

"Dang!" The disc clashed into the shield which was in Luo Feng's hand.

Taking the impact from that fierce wind powered disc infused with origin law powers caused Luo Feng's entire body to be knocked backwards, directly smashing into the roof portion of the villa, straight into the villa itself.

Xiu!

The golden fish swiftly returned to the villa.

“Peng!” The already shattered roof was once again exploded open, a human silhouette burst out from within. It was Luo Feng, he didn’t look like a sorry figure at all, in fact there was excitement in his eyes.

The green haired youth floated in mid air as the two discs kept revolving in the surrounding.

“Hm?” The green haired youth realized there was a dark golden long rod on Luo Feng’s back. That rod was very long and thick, almost like a dark golden wooden stake.

“Windmill, what you said was right. Without an opponent, it’s indeed boring.” In the air above the villa, Luo feng’s eyes gleamed with madness, “You windmill, are the first to force me to use my strongest power. There’s no choice, you are indeed very powerful, without taking out this Nan Shen Armament, I really can’t win.”

The green haired youth’s body was stunned, he looked shocked at the dark golden rod on Luo Feng’s back, “Nan…Nan Shen Armament?”

Chapter 36 – Nan Shen Armament

The Nan Shen Armament is a weapon, which was infused with the two great origin laws of gold and space. It was one of the 9 ultimate weapons for the controller spirit readers.

To actually use the Nan Shen armament at the star level was an unbelievable thing to do.

The Nan Shen Armament was separated into 9 levels. Just the 1st level alone required one to have a comprehension of the gold origin laws along with an extremely strong amplifier to unleash it properly. It took Luo Feng a few months in the actual world, along with 10 days of serious training in this elimination stage to finally get a grasp of the basics and to reach a level where “it may work.”

For a Star level to actually master the 1st level would mean that he would be invincible in the same entire grade.

Invincible, that alone represented its power!

“You can use the Nan Shen Armament?” The green haired youth’s eyes was filled with shock.

“This is my 1st time actually using it in a battle.” Luo Feng carried the dark golden long rod on his back, gently landing on an undamaged villa’s roof.

The green haired youth couldn’t help but feel nervous. After all,

the reputation of the Nan Shen Armament was huge. The strong will power and fighting spirit within him caused the youth to burn with passion as he shouted: “Madman, this is the final day for the elimination! To be able to meet an opponent like you, it really makes me happy. Make sure to use your full strength and let me see properly...just how strong the legendary Nan Shen Armament is!”

“I won’t disappoint you.” Luo Feng squinted.

The two faced off with less than a hundred meters between each other, standing on two separate rooftops.

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed as he pointed at the green haired youth. Immediately, the dark golden long rod released a beam of golden light. Those nine cicada wing-thin little golden blades dispersed and their incredibly complex engravings began to emit a golden stream of energy and started to interlink.

To actually connect them together into a perfect body was incredibly difficult. When he used the soaring shuttle in the past and was finally able to complete the swordfish formation, he still was not able to fully infuse it with the origin laws.

And at this time...

In an instant, he used all of his comprehension of the gold origin laws into one attack, putting his all into one move. Even after all this, Luo Feng could feel that his comprehension wasn’t enough, he had only a basic grasp of this 1st level. He was still far from

completing it.

A dreamy golden orb engulfed in golden light revolved before Luo Feng.

The entire dreamy golden blade was hard to see clearly.

A powerful energy emitted from that golden blade, causing the space around to ripple.

“Xiu!”

The dreamy golden blade immediately shot towards the distant green haired youth. The instant that it shot out, because it was too fast, it became a golden rainbow!

“Roar!!!” The green haired youth grit his teeth.The veins on his forehead straining and protruding as he used his full strength to control his spirit weapon.

“Ang...”

The two crescent discs were like two children playing with each other. One playing around while the other chased, making one unable to clearly see it as it soared into the wind to deflect that terrifying golden rainbow.

“Rumble!”

The golden blade rainbow clashed into the two discs. With an explosion, the two discs were knocked away into the villa below. “Pa!” with a clang, one of the discs smashed into a window causing it to smash open immediately as glass shards flew in all directions.

“Xiu!”

After the clash the golden blade stopped for a brief moment before becoming a golden rainbow again and shot towards the green haired youth.

“How can this be?” The green haired youth revealed shock and fear as the round disc below his feet split into two, becoming two crescent discs that went to intercept.

“Rumble!” The golden rainbow once again clashed with them and the two discs were knocked away again.

“Chi!”

Following which, the golden rainbow shot towards the green haired youth’s body. He didn’t even bother to dodge. He just stood there, staring straight a Luo Feng and communicating mentally, “Madman, I used the wrong move. The next time I will definitely win, definitely!!!” The voice roared within Luo Feng’s ears as the golden rainbow pierced right through the youth’s forehead!

The green haired youth’s body fell from mid air before rolling on

the roof and landing within that villa.

“You indeed made a mistake.”

Luo Feng landed beside that body, saying seriously, “You’ve already stepped into the gateway of the origin laws. Originally, it wouldn’t have been that easy for me to kill you. But you chose to fight using force with force…who else can you blame?”

Even though he hadn’t used the Nan Shen Armament before in a real battle, in the virtual universe slaughterhouse, in order to grow accustomed to the Nan Shen Armament, Luo Feng had chosen a variety of star level opponents. All of them with different comprehension of the origin laws, be it gold, wood, water, fire, earth, wind, thunder, light, time or space, allowing him to gain lots of experience.

Gold was hard and strong, extremely sharp and piercing!

Wind was formless, flexible beyond compare!

While walking different paths, the battle techniques and strategies would naturally have their own differences. Luo Feng had stepped into the gold origin law entrance. Hence, his attacks were naturally strong with a piercing form which destroyed everything before him! While using the most suitable gold origin law weapon Nan Shen Armament, his power was extreme!

Windmill chose to use brute force to fight with Luo Feng, it

wasn’t strange for him to die.

The main factor was that the green haired youth Windmill was shocked and scared by the reputation of the Nan Shen Armament. Along with the fact that they were at a stalemate before, only right before death did he realize the best way to deal with Madman.

……

The battle between Madman and Windmill caused a huge commotion which attracted many geniuses from within the north district of the city. But by the time they actually arrived close enough to view the battle, it was already over.

“Windmill lost?”

“Windmill was actually killed? That’s too unbelievable, I didn’t see wrongly right.”

“Even Windmill lost, who can match up to Madman?”

In the distance, a group of geniuses were extremely shocked. Windmill was much stronger than Devil, Ice Thread and even Bones. Many of them had guessed and even believed that the winner of the fight between Madman and Windmill, would have been Windmill. After all, Windmill’s success was intrepid, and he had always been way above others, without any failure before.

He had always been very relaxed, slaughtering all those who

appeared in his path!

Many had assumed from early on that this city's number one was Windmill..

"That madman is too strong."

"Madman's final golden light, just what was that. Wasn't it said that madman's skill from the spirit weapon was a golden fish?"

"Right, since Madman killed Windmill, i wonder just how many points he would get?"

"Although Windmill lost half his points, he definitely still has a lot. As for Madman...his points right now must be even higher than Windmill's."

Luo Feng carried the dark golden long rod and flew away from the villa into a distant residential area, immediately landing on a balcony.

"30th day of the elimination, today is the final day." Luo Feng sat there quietly, arranging his thoughts. Of the 30 days, it was the final 20 days that he had immersed himself in the madness, totally committing himself to slaughtering. The number of people killed by him ranged in the thousands. From that bloodbath, the name Madman rose to new heights.

However Luo Feng didn't want to bring that mentality and form

back to reality.

"Phew!"

Luo feng sat crossed legged quietly while suppressing the bloodlust that ached from his bones, hiding it deep within.

"This Windmill really had so many points. Before this, his rank was indeed 42." Luo Feng looked down at the screen on his wrist, the numbers on it made people's hearts race.

Participant: Luo Feng (Black Dragon Mountain empire)

Points: 32,178,201

Rank: 51

"By killing Windmill, I actually acquired over 18 million points!" Luo Feng was shocked. By killing an absolute warrior, the number of points one got was indeed abundant. Prior to this battle, he only had close to about 14 million, not even close to the earnings from just this one battle! However Windmill did mention that he had killed a strong warrior from another city, getting over 10 million points.

"The fastest way to get points is to kill an absolute warrior."

"The best way is to go to each city and hunt." Luo Feng thought.

For example, by killing every city's number one, he estimated that he could get over a hundred million points! Of course the requirement was...to be able to kill them!

When Luo Feng killed Windmill, his rank simply jumped from 102 to 51 directly. This attracted many of the Ganwu universe country's powers and organizations to pay attention to him. Before when he made it to the top 1001, the ones watching him were mostly the trillions of citizens in the Black Dragon Mountain empire. However, after making it to rank 51, things were different.

The higher one's standing got, the more crazy the strength levels were!

Every world's top 3 could all be said to be true geniuses who definitely stepped through the gateway of the origin laws.

Every world's top 100, there would be some absolute geniuses who've also stepped through the gateway of the origin laws.

The difference in ranks were linked directly to each person's choices.

Some absolute warriors, like Luo Feng and Windmill, if they chose to not only stay within their own cities, but wander throughout the 91 cities and hunt the absolute warriors, they may meet certain brick walls. However, the higher possibility was that they'd be able to make it to the world's top 10!

“Search all of Luo Feng’s information.”

“This Luo Feng, to be able to reach rank 51, he must be a battle genius with a domain of at least level 8. He might even be a stronger absolute genius who’s already begun to comprehend the origin laws.”

“Black Dragon Mountain empire, from that little out of the way place, there’s actually a genius who was able to make it to rank 51?”

“It is rare indeed. Black Dragon Mountain empire has always been a lower level country within the Ganwu universe countries’ many territories.”

……

At the time, within the enormous luxurious living room of the universe ship which gathered all of the black dragon mountain empire’s governing officials and royalty.

“Congratulations your majesty.”

Elation!

“Your majesty, rank 51, a 2 digit number!”

Up to a thousand people within the hall had erupted in joy. A 3 digit rank compared to a 2 digit or 1 digit rank, the honor associated with each was completely different. As for the three from the Black Dragon Mountain who had made it temporarily through the 1st round...

"Hong's standing was 999.

Nabini's standing was 860.

Luo Feng's standing was 51.

From one look it was clear that Hong and Nabini could be considered amongst the elite geniuses of the Black Dragon Mountain. But Luo Feng was definitely an absolute warrior capable of making it into the top ranks of the Ganwu universe country.

"A 2 digit number."

"Your majesty, right now within the entire Black Dragon Mountain island, the trillion citizens are incomparably excited."

Sitting above everybody else, the emperor's face too could hardly conceal his joy. Laughing out loudly and roaring "In this elimination, our empire has done not bad! Looking at how things are going, there may very likely be 3 people making it through! Hong and Nabini are outstanding As for Luo Feng...haha, he's the pride of our Black Dragon Mountain empire!"

“This Luo Feng has done us great honor! Great honor!” The emperor’s voice grew even brighter, “We must reward him, heavily reward him!”

Chapter 37 – Special Envoy

When Luo Feng the Madman finally put down his bloodthirsty blade and hid within a residential building to quietly wait for the end of the elimination, within the huge skyscraper of the 72nd world, the currently ranked 999 Hong was still fighting hard. Because it was the last day, the battles were incredibly intense and brutal.

This was especially true between the group of people whose ranks were close to 1000. They could rise anytime or drop anytime.

“I have to make sure I stay alive. The moment I die, I will lose half my points and I’ll definitely drop out of the top 1001.” In a destroyed house with broken windows, Hong dressed in all black closed his eyes, “Also, I have to try my best to kill a few others and push myself forward a little more.”

Hong had many thoughts on his mind, but his entire being was incomparably calm and collected.

As tranquil as a mirror.

His entire being was incredibly relaxed, like a void, allowing him to detect any movement or noise around him.

Among earth’s top 3 warriors.

He and Thunder god had the longer lives, experiencing much

more. Even though Thunder god too had some comprehension of the chinese martial arts, his main expertise was in yoga. During the great nirvana he completely immersed himself in martial arts, his entire being loved the arts. With a pure heart, it was easy for him to fuse and reach perfection, allowing him to let his yoga fuse perfectly with himself.

Hong was different, he was trained from a young age to be an assassin.

An assassin's strength control was very meticulous.

The chinese martial arts helped him with his control of internal energy, along with his mental state control. As an assassin, he naturally formed his own path. And after the Great Nirvana, the base era, the swallowing beast incident, along with all the hardships and training, Hong had an impeccable control of every bit of energy and power within himself. This is why he became number 1 of the three brothers.

Among the three, Luo Feng was the youngest!

In terms of comprehension, willpower and talent, he didn't lack any.

However he never received Chinese martial arts training. In close combat, his energy use and technique couldn't compare to Hong or Thunder god. However...Luo Feng was still the strongest among the three!

Firstly, his talent, allowed him to become the disciple of the Yun Mo Planet.

Second, he sacrificed himself and immolated his soul, possessing the golden horned beast in that battle.

This allowed Luo Feng to stand on a much higher stage, as he was able to compare himself with the countless clans and absolute geniuses within the vast universe's human race.

Within the house.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged, quietly awaiting the end of the elimination.

"The elimination countdown, 60...59...58...57...56..." A deep boomy voice reverberated throughout the survivors' minds in the hundred worlds, making many within these worlds get anxious and thus panic.

"I'm almost there."

"I was 1001 just now, right now I'm 1002."

"It's too late."

"Kill."

“You won’t be able to make it into the top 1001. As long as you let me kill you, I’ll definitely heavily repay you when we get out.”

“Bullshit, heavily repay? There’s no contract or proof of these things within the virtual universe system. It sounds good now, but if you simply deny everything later, can I even do anything?”

At the final countdown, it was madness within the worlds.

Luo Feng just patiently waited.

“10, 9, 8, 7, 6, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1! Teleport.”

The survivors within the 100 worlds immediately vanished and later the virtually simulated worlds too all crumbled and returned to nothing. Simultaneously, the final rankings were officially announced.

The elimination has ended!

The candidates have all been picked!

……

Luo Feng was sent to the air above the island of Black Dragon Mountain.

“Di! Di! Di! Di! Di!

A constant beeping sound.

“Luo Feng, there are 371 call requests. Oh, right now it’s become 398. Ah, it’s continuing to rise.” Babata’s familiar voice spoke out.

“Haha, Babata, it’s been a long time since I heard your voice.” Luo Feng stood in the air above the Black Dragon Mountain. Beside him in midair there were many human silhouettes, all the survivors from the elimination. However surviving didn’t mean that they made it into the top 1001.

“Those worlds all have barriers against virtual assistants.” Babata said helplessly, “The virtual universe system is simple too strong, there’s no way around it.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

Anywhere in the universe people could easily instantly connect into the virtual universe with their consciousness, allowing countless people to enter. Even within the virtual universe, countless secret techniques could be simulated, even origin laws could be simulated…this was simply too scary. Maybe the origin laws weren’t even secret techniques within the virtual universe!

Virtual universe company was afterall one of the universe humans’ 5 great leviathans.

And the other 4 leviathans hadn't even grasped such level of skill. This Virtual universe company was the sole company capable of such a feat as building a virtual universe. It makes one afraid to even imagine just how deep and huge the company was.

"Right now there are 453 phone call requests and 892 mails." Babata said.

"Let's leave the virtual universe first." Luo Feng's thoughts moved.

Shua!

His consciousness returned to reality and then reconnected back to the virtual universe.

Shua!

On Black Dragon Mountain island, Nine Star Bay, Luo Feng appeared at his own living area grass patch.

Returning to the virtual universe from reality, it could be said that if one owned a property in virtual universe, they would always return their property the moment they entered the virtual universe. Hence, Luo Feng returned back to the Nine Star Bay little district at his house.

"Big brother, thirdie." A familiar voice resounded.

Almost simultaneously appearing at his own house entrance was Hong and Luo Feng, they both turned to look. It was Thunder god. Luo Feng and Hong both walked over.

“You two did pretty good, one with rank 982 and the other 51.” Thunder god frowned, “However my luck was bad, essentially like stepping in dog shit. I unexpectedly ran into our world’s Savage, that guy is simply too abnormal. He definitely stepped into the gateway of the origin laws, as he decimating me with one move.”

“That strong?”

Luo Feng and Hong were both somewhat shocked.

“Hm.” Thunder god smiled, “If big brother and thirdie met Savage, they’d definitely be a little better than me. You both made it into the top 1001. So there’s a chance you’ll meet him in the arena.”

“I barely made it into the top 1001, still 3rd brother is the strongest.” Hong smiled at Luo Feng.

“Hm, thirdie is very strong indeed.” Thunder god nodded too.

Hong and Thunder god, in terms of age, were much older than Luo Feng. They almost gave a mentor like feeling, however it was clear that this little brother had a shocking amount of power.

“Thirdie, work hard. The stronger you get, the brighter the future of our earth will be.” Hong patted Luo Feng on his shoulder.

“Dad.”

“Lou Feng.”

At this time a group of people appeared at the entrance, it was Luo Feng’s family.

……

The end of the elimination!

Every world’s top 1,001 had made it through the elimination. A total of 100 worlds, a total of 100,100 people. At the same time every world’s number 1 would immediately be placed in the final namelist.

The top 1,000 of the Ganwu universe country had the rights to participate in the universe humans genius battle. These 1000 would then represent the Ganwu universe country, as they competed against the geniuses from the rest of the universe... bringing out the the best of the best from the universe humans.

The Ganwu universe country had slots for 1000 people. Right now, those who came first in their respective world would be automatically given a spot. Hence, a total of a 100 places were already taken.

The remaining 100,000 would have to fight for the remaining 900 slots!

Black Dragon Mountain Empire's Luo Feng, Hong and Nabini will compete amidst the 100,000 as only 900 of these participants would get the right to enter that final namelist.

The elimination rate was still very high!

To be able to make it into that final namelist, they were all absolute geniuses that everybody envied. They would make countless organizations and powers vie for them as their future elites and new seedlings. They were all capable of being regarded as cream of the crop.

From the end of the elimination, the arena fights would happen a month later.

However this month, Luo Feng actually faced the 'problems of a celebrity'. There were many powers within the Black Dragon Mountain empire who came looking for him. Not just that, but even a few super organizations from the Ganwu universe country had sent people over to look for him, hoping he would join them and put his name in their companies!

"Reject, reject them all."

"Just tell them all that right now I'm immersing myself in

training and putting my all into preparing for the arena fights. I can't be distracted." Luo Feng was helpless with this trouble and could only resort to this response.

.....

On the 16th day since the end of the elimination.

Solar system, Mars.

Luo Feng was on the sand filled Mars, testing out his Nan Shen Armament.

"1st form!"

"Go!"

"Return."

"Luo Feng controlled that dark golden long rod that became a golden rainbow and flew at breakneck speed and returned. And while controlling this golden rainbow's complex arc movements, it was very clear that his sense of control was still rigid, as he was unable to fully make it move like a flowing river.

"Within the arena fights, my opponents will all be extremely powerful. The lowest would at least be like my big brother. There will be many with similar strength to mine! There might even be

others who are much stronger than me."

"Then, I'm afraid I'll have to use the Nan Shen Armament immediately." Luo Feng was very clear that there were only strong opponents in the arena fights, He'd have to use his trump card from the beginning and push forward.

Hopefully he'll make it into the top 1,000.

Only that way will he have the right to go compete with other absolute warriors from the other universe countries.

"Luo Feng, hurry into the virtual universe." Babata's voice resounded.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was curious.

Virtual universe Black Dragon Mountain island, Nine Star Bay small district.

When Luo Feng appeared outside his own home, he could see that his living room was filled with many guests.

"Big brother, Hong and Thunder god are currently inside entertaining the guests. You should quickly go in." Luo Hua said as he saw Luo Feng.

"Who are they?" Luo Feng asked curiously.

Didn’t he reject every organizations from coming here?

“It’s the Black Dragon Mountain Empire’s envoys who were especially sent by the emperor himself.” Luo Hua said softly, “This special envoy team, I heard they actually brought an order from the Emperor himself. The special team is led by a sector lord and I heard that his position is extremely high. Also, within the team there’s also the basic level universe country the Silverblue empire’s emperor.”

“Silverblue empire’s emperor?” Luo Feng was shocked.

The Silverblue empire governed over the Milky Way’s eight great galaxies. This emperor actually followed a special team over.

“Their visit this time is mainly because of you.” Luo Hua said.

“I’ll go take a look.” Luo Feng nodded, and walked briskly into the living room.

Chapter 38 – The Empire's Hopes

There were a total of 11 people in that living room.

Thunder god, Hong and the other nine who no one recognized were all sitting at the long table.

"Thirdie."

"Third brother."

Thunder god and Hong stood up. The other 9 turned to look, and simultaneously 8 of them stood up. Only one old man in the center with long silver hair, remained seated as he turned to carefully examine Luo Feng, revealing a smile: "Luo Feng, I, Bu De Asuka, am here on behalf of the Black Dragon Mountain empire's emperor."

"My respects Lord Asuka." Luo Feng quickly bowed.

Having been to the Ganwu auction and seen too many sector lords, Luo Feng could tell with one look that this silver haired old man was a sector lord!

"All sit." The silver haired old man smiled.

Luo Feng too walked over and sat beside Hong and Thunder god.

“Luo Feng, there are two reasons behind my visit. One, I really wanted to see this outstanding genius from our Black Dragon Mountain empire.” This silver haired old man, even his beard was white, his entire being seemed amicable and kind, giving off a feeling of friendliness. “Two, because his majesty, yes, his majesty is paying very close attention to you, he values you and wants to handsomely reward you!”

Luo Feng was shocked, that emperor probably didn’t know... about his past incident with the 9th prince.

“Lord Bu De Asuka, actually I didn’t do anything, I just did some of my own things only.” Luo Feng said.

“No!”

The silver haired old man shook his head, “Luo Feng, this endeavor of yours has brought huge honor to our Black Dragon Mountain empire! The countless citizens of the empire are all proud because of you! You have given us immense contributions.”

“Immense contributions...” Luo Feng could only sit there and listen intently.

“Originally, the emperor wanted to give you a reward.” The silver haired old man looked at Luo Feng, “However, he stopped when I advised him to not give you one temporarily.”

Luo Feng looked a the sector lord before him, even more clueless

than before.

“I advised his majesty…if Luo Feng is able to make it into the top 1,000 of the Ganwu universe country, then he’ll give you a galaxy!” The silver haired man said.

“A Galaxy?”

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god were all shocked.

“From what I know, your first planet territory is Earth. Hence, as long as you are able to make it into the Ganwu universe top 1000, then Milky Way galaxy under the Silverblue empire will be yours!” The silver haired old man carefully examined Luo Feng and his brother’s reaction. As he expected, Luo Feng and his brothers all revealed incredible shocked expressions.

The Milky Way? That was the territory of the silver blue empire.

“Relax, this is the Silverblue empire’s emperor Yi Wei. This matter is something the imperial family of the Silverblue empire has agreed upon.” The silver haired old man looked beside him A handsome white clothed man not too far away from him smiled and nodded at Luo Feng, “I too have been wanting to meet Mr Luo Feng. If Mr Luo Feng can manage the Milky Way galaxy, that would be our Silverblue empire’s honor.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng was stunned, suddenly he realized and understood.

Ganwu universe top 1,000?

One had to know that the Ganwu universe country had over a hundred million galaxies, on average! To be able to make it into the Ganwu universe top 1,000...the warriors would probably all at least have domains of level 9, some even had comprehension of the origin laws.

In the star level, and being so terrifying...

These sort of geniuses, as long as they didn't die halfway and continued to grow, reaching the sector lord level was almost no problem! And these sort of geniuses who receive extra nurturing... they would become the strongest within the sector lord level!

A sector lord, would easily get a galaxy as a territory.

Right now it was akin to giving a future sector lord a galaxy as territory. Even if Luo Feng died along the way of becoming a sector lord the Black Dragon Mountain empire and the Silverblue empire naturally had their own ways to reclaim the Milky Way.

"This, this reward is too huge. At the same time, making it into the top 1,000 is incredibly difficult as well." Luo Feng's expression went ugly.

"Right."

The silver haired old man Asuka nodded and sighed, “It is very difficult, our country’s martial strength is indeed weaker than the universe country’s other starfields. In the previous competitions, we didn’t even make it into the top 10,000, as for the top 1000, it’s been even longer since we even stepped into it. However Luo Feng, you have hope.”

“Here is some information that our empire has collected.” The silver haired old man pulled out a screen before him, he gently tapped it, “I’ll send these to you.”

“Information?”

Luo Feng was suspicious. Simultaneously, Babata alerted him that he received mail and there was an attachment on it.

“Even though the eliminations weren’t broadcasted, according to the names of the rankers, along with the already reputable strong star levels, we’ve collected quite a bit of information.” The silver haired old man smiled as he looked at Luo Feng, “We’ve made a record of a total of 827 of the absolute geniuses that made it through this elimination round. They are all very well known and reputable absolute geniuses in the Ganwu universe country. Take a look, this information may prove useful to you during the arena fights.”

“Oh?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

Good stuff!

If you know the enemy and know yourself, you need not fear the result of a hundred battles. After knowing the opponent's trump cards and being prepared for the battle, his chances of victory were much better.

"Thanks." Luo Feng thanked him.

"No need." The silver haired old man smiled and looked back, "If you can make it into the top 1,000, I. Ah De Asuka will in fact have to thank you."

"I'll work hard." Luo Feng nodded.

"Right, this is one of the hopes of our Black Dragon Mountain empire! Make it into the top 1,000 as you fight against the many geniuses from the other universe countries.At least, our Black Dragon Mountain empire will have someone who's made it onto the universe humans big stage." The silver haired old man's eyes gleamed with a sense of hope.

He was a sector lord, and a very strong one at that.

However, even amongst sector lords there were differences. This sector lord, compared to Jiang Tian Chen, his position and power was much lower.

And Jiang Tian Chen, if compared to the virtual universe company leviathan's specially nurtured from young absolute geniuses, his position would be much lower! For the virtual

universe company to have that level of leviathan...their specially nurtured geniuses....they were nurtured to not only become undying, but the strongest among the undying!

Naturally...

These were all too far away! From the star level to undying, it was too far and difficult. Many absolute geniuses have been stuck in the sector lord pinnacle for tens of millions of years before finally dying from old age!

“Work hard, in the Ganwu universe arena, you represent the Black Dragon Mountain empire. Even more so when you battle against the peak of the other universe countries.” The silver haired old man anticipated.

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god gathered and spent three days going through the information of the many warriors.

“8th world ranked 3rd? Stronger than me.” Hong’s expression was serious.

The screen before them was displaying footage, in it was a golden haired tall and sturdy man with a golden scale on his forehead. He used two huge blades and when he waved them, they would become blurry and the surroundings warped. Even though the blades were obviously there, when the opponent tried to block

they would block only air.

One slash and the opponents would die.

This person's light domain seemed even more terrifying than Hong's.

"This is Savage? He is indeed very strong." Luo Feng squinted, his eyes filled with excitement.

"Right, that's him." Thunder god nodded.

"Indeed very strong." Hong's expression grew even heavier.

Footage played continuously, many with words and information below. These were all the absolute geniuses' information the Black Dragon Mountain empire had gathered. These geniuses, many of them were already well reputable even before the genius battle. They were already vied for and snatched up by many super organizations.

"This punk..." Thunder god stared.

A similarly bald strong looking man in the footage, actually used his fists as weapons as every punch was incredibly brutal and powerful.

.....

Using 3 days to finish watching everything, made both participants of the arena fights, Hong and Luo Feng, begin to feel the pressure. There were indeed many strong warriors, as many as the clouds! They were only at star level, yet they were able to comprehend the origin laws, this was akin to a step to heaven. However, with the size and population of the entire Ganwu universe country, there were actually a few hundred such people.

……

Time passed and in the blink of an eye, the date of the arena fights had approached.

Chian time Year 2066, July 16th, the day before the arena fights, virtual universe, on one of the floating continents above the Ganwu continent, there was an enormous meeting hall.

The hall was extremely huge, with rows and rows of seating.

“This hall is really huge, it actually seats 100,000.” Hong laughed as he exclaimed, “The seats are very spacious too.”

“This is still average, in the Ganwu auction, the seating space for each person was incredible. And there were three million seats, you couldn’t even see the end of the Meeting hall.” Luo Feng said softly to Hong.

“Silence!”

A thick booming voice resounded. Immediately, the entire hall went silent. All that could be seen was a man dressed in a silver long robe who appeared at the highest podium at the front of the hall. His gaze swept past the 100,100 people below him. These were all the geniuses that made it through the elimination.

"The people that made it through the Ganwu universe country's elimination, 100,100 of you." The man in the silver long robe pointed beside him and immediately a screen appeared with images of people, "These 100 are the first of each world. Hence they immediately get awarded a spot in the final namelist, and are eligible to represent the Ganwu universe country and go take part in the pinnacle fights against other countries."

"For the remaining 100,000. There are only 900 slots left on the list."

"The arena battles...are separated into the arena war and the 1v1 battles." The silver robed man continued to speak, "We'll first eliminate 90,000 people through Arena war! The 100,000 will break into 1,000 groups and every group will have 100." Each group will engage in mass battles on the arena and the final remaining 10 are the ones that will be considered to have passed the Arena war."

"Once you've passed the arena war, there will be only 10,000 of you left!"

"These 900 slots, will be filled from these 10,000! After the war

the 1v1 battles will begin.”

The silver long robed man’s gaze swept past the 100,100 geniuses below him, as discussions were rampant.

The arena war, actually eliminating 90,000 people at one go.

Too vicious!

“I heard.” Hong said softly, “That last time the Black Dragon Mountain empire was completely eliminated in the Arena war, without anyone making it into the top 10,000.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“During the elimination I barely made it into the top 1,001. This arena war’s elimination efficiency is extremely high.” Hong said softly, Luo Feng replied, “Big brother, in a war it’s really hard to say, you still have hopes of making it through the war. Then it’ll come down to the 1v1 battles.”

Hu!

Suddenly a screen appeared before every genius in the meeting hall, on it were numbers from 1 to 1000 etc.

“See the number before you? That is your group!” The silver long robed man roared, “Tomorrow will mark the beginning of the

Arena war. The 1st 200 groups will start tomorrow and the entire war will last for 5 days and end after that."

Luo Feng looked at the number before him, 382, while his big brother Hong beside was in group 161.

"I wish all of you will be able to make it through the arena wars." The silver long robed man's voice resounded throughout the entire meeting hall, "We'll now send everybody off, go get prepared."

Weng...

The 100,100 geniuses within the meeting hall all suddenly vanished.

Chapter 39 – Elimination

China year 2066 July 17th, the date of the arena fights.

In the previous stage within the 100 worlds, there was no live broadcast. This led to the Ganwu universe country's over 1.3 trillion star fields, with countless universe citizens being completely anxious and nervous. After all, they could only see the rankings and not the battle itself! The start of the arena fights however, was open for people to actually watch and spectate. This led to the sale of the arena tickets being extremely competitive as they were selling like hot cakes!

……

The Arena wars were separated into 1000 groups! And 200 groups would battle every day.

The firstt day was the 1st group to group 200.

The three Black Dragon Mountain empire participants that made it through the 1st round of elimination, Nabini, Hong and Luo Feng, of which Nabini was in group 32, Hong was in group 161 and Luo Feng in group 382. Hence both Nabini and Hong were in the arena wars on the first day, while Luo Feng's group was scheduled for the second day.

The Virtual universe specially opened up a space with a vast endless river coursing through it. This extremely wide river that flowed through the entire space filled with islands. Every island

had a dojo.

These arena fights were to be held in these dojos.

Island 01932.

Within the dojo, there were countless spectators, and it was impossible to see the end of them. Amongst the spectators were Luo Feng, Hong, Thunder god and their families.

“There’s way too many people! Daddy, this dojo is huge!” Ping Ping who had his hair combed neatly as it parted down the middle exclaimed.

“The area of the dojo is about a hundred square kilometers.” Luo Feng smiled, “It can hold a maximum of 1 billion spectators.”

“1 billion?”

Ping Ping and Little Hai, the two children were shocked.

Actually, just a football stadium on earth could hold up to 100,000 people. In this kind of space created just by the virtual universe, with huge dojos on every island, while accommodating 1 billion people was an easy thing to do. Compared to a football stadium on earth, it’s area was at least a hundred to a few hundreds of times bigger in length and width.

“Sister in law.” Sitting behind, Xu Gang laughed, “This arena battle has just begun and we rushed to get the tickets, however we still failed to get any. Luckily you have tickets, otherwise we’d have to watch the broadcast!”

“It is very competitive. My office workers too haven’t been able to get tickets.” Luo Hua nodded.

“There’s over a hundred million galaxies in the entire Ganwu universe country. From each and every galaxy, even if just 10 people bought the tickets, it is more than enough for the tickets to become sold out.” Luo Feng said, “Naturally, the sale will be intense! Big brother and I made it through the elimination. Hence we have the privilege to buy first. This is the only reason we got a few tens of tickets.”

Just one ticket alone was hard to get!

The atmosphere in the dojo was incredibly passionate. A billion people from over a hundred million galaxies all gathered together, just what kind of scene was it? Fortunately it was in the virtual universe. If this was in the real world, just the number of staff members required to l manage them would be troublesome.

“Attention all!”

A sweet and clear voice resounded throughout the billion spectators’ ears.

The humans from Earth in the stands turned to look. Standing in the center of the dojo was a smoking hot brown haired young lady dressed in a tight armor. As the distance was too far...the spectators couldn't even see her clearly. Hence, in mid hair a huge virtual image appeared, allowing the spectators to see clearly.

"The battle that's about to begin, will be the 32nd group in the arena wars. Let me introduce the 100 geniuses from the 32nd group."

1st, Long Suo, from the Boya empire. Previously,in the 82nd world, he was ranked 12." The beautiful brown haired young lady's clear voice resounded in the 1 billion spectators ears. Beside the current screen, a second screen floated in mid air and the image as well as simple information regarding the genius Long Suo was displayed.

"Long Suo!"

"Long Suo!"

The entire dojo suddenly burst out in cheers. All that could be seen was a large portion of the dojo was filled with people going crazy and cheering, shouting out loudly Long Suo's name, their cheers resounded like thunder.

"2nd..."

"3rd..."

The geniuses were all introduced one by one. Finally that brown haired lady smiled and said: “Number 86, Nabini, from the Black Dragon Mountain empire. Previously, in the 21st world he was ranked 860.” Beside, the screen displayed Nabini’s image and information.

“Rumble…”

Luo Feng felt as though his surroundings had exploded or something. Cheers that rumbled even the mountains and seas were heard as a large portion of the spectators around him were excitedly cheering.

“Nabini!”

“Nabini!”

The cheers sounded as loud as thunder. Immersed in such an environment, it caused many to be unable to help but cheer and shout along. Ping Ping and Little Hai beside were waving their fists too, shouting till their faces turned red, “Nabini, Nabini!”

“Everybody’s cheering like crazy.” Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god all laughed.

The arrangement of the spectators was in accordance to the starfield they came from. Hence, Luo Feng’s surroundings were all spectators from the Black Dragon Mountain star field! And the

participant geniuses and the various star fields they came from would all get special privileges when they bought the tickets. According to theory, with 1 billion tickets sold among the many star fields, every star field would not even get 100,000 tickets.

However...

If the star field had an active participant, then that star field was allowed 1 million tickets. Because of Nabini's participation, the Black Dragon Mountain star field was awarded 1 million tickets. This was the reason why there were 1 million citizens from the Black Dragon Mountain empire in the audience. The previous cheers belonged to the other starfields. But now that the participant from the Black Dragon Mountain star field was announced, these 1 million people all excitedly shouted and roared.

1 million people cheering, it was like an ocean altogether.

"This Nabini is quite handsome." Thunder god said softly and laughed.

Nabini had a pigtail, and his entire person seemed like a leopard.

"I've checked his background, it's not bad." Hong lifted his wrist and the screen on it displayed a bit of Nabini's background.

"Oh?" Luo Feng looked at it.

Nabini was originally from an aboriginal planet, leading a savage

life of eat or be eaten and battled against wild beasts from a young age. Actually, this planet was one of the territories of the Palace family, and it was specially used to cultivate special beasts that were used for training and war. Secretly monitoring this planet, the family...discovered that there was a child who actually had shocking power. They immediately knew he was a treasure!

They immediately sent people to take this Nabini aboriginal away.

Since then, Nabini had stepped into the civilized ways of society and very quickly became a citizen of the empire. Somehow, he also became somewhat of a young master within the Palace family.

The Palace family, a business family that owned a few tens of life planet territory, was not much in the vast universe..

Ironically...

The Palace family had offended a few enemies and aggravated a few large and powerful families to attack them, and the enemies actually had universe level warriors. In a galaxy, a universe level warrior was considered the land's emperor! The Palace family thus began to crumble. This battle however attracted the attention of a wandering sector lord.

During the battle, that sector lord had noticed that Nabini had amazing talent and immediately stepped in to stop the slaughter.

The sector lord's intervention made it so that the enemy family were too terrified to even resist, hence the Palace Family survived.

The sector lord took in Nabini as his disciple and brought him to the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land. Since then, Nabini lived in the sacred land and the rate of his strength increase grew even faster. He was the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land's most exceptional genius.

"Aboriginal?" Luo Feng exclaimed, "Actually we too are aboriginals."

"Right." Hong nodded.

"I realized that I have a good feeling about this Nabini." Thunder god chuckled.

During Luo Feng and his brothers' conversation, that beautiful lady in the center of the dojo was revving up the crowd and atmosphere, excitedly shouting, "Attention all! Attention all! The arena wars will begin immediately, Everybody, please countdown together with me for those in anticipation of this pinnacle genius battle, 10! 9! 8! ...3! 2! 1!"

"Rumble!"

The entire dojo erupted and in the center human silhouettes appeared, it was the 100 geniuses that were introduced to everyone before from the different star fields.

“Nabini!”

“Qi Te La Ke!”

“Long Suo!”

Different cheers immediately erupted within the dojo. The cheers and roars of the dojo were almost like a shockwave. Luo Feng took one look and noticed Nabini amidst the 100. With a pigtail, his gaze was fierce, almost like a hunting cheetah. He carried two long and narrow blades on his back. He was also cautious and prudent as he paid attention to everybody.

“Let the war begin!” A low voice resounded within the 1 billion spectators and the participants minds.

Silence!

The dojo was suddenly silent, and the 100 geniuses in the center too made their moves immediately.

“Chi!”

“Xiu!”

Beams of lights lit up as the geniuses all dodged and moved swiftly. The unleashed domains too caused the entire dojo to be

covered in multicolored radiance The colorful energy waves revolved about, and the geniuses were all either dodging and fleeing or exchanging blows. Everything was as fast as lightning.

The war was very dangerous, because one had to defend against sneak attacks.

“That Nabini is sly indeed.” From the spectators, Thunder god’s eyes gleamed.

“It doesn’t matter, every single one of them are just as clever.” Luo Feng’s eyebrows creased. The space in which the geniuses were battling in was constantly shrinking, forcing those on flying spirit weapons to have no way to flee far enough. the geniuses were constantly dying off. The number of deaths rose constantly.

8, 14, 29, 36…

This caused the 1 billion audience members of many star fields to watch with bated breaths, some even with long sighs. However, the intense battle still caused everybody to hold their breaths and not make any loud noises.

Nabini held his 2 blades and his entire person became a gust of wind as he madly defended against the enemy’s spirit weapon. When Nabini was engaged with this other spirit reader, from the distance another genius flew over, simultaneously controlling a cone spirit weapon to become a beam of lightning and shooting over!

“Hmph!”

With the lightning shooting over, Nabini dodged while using his left blade to block.

“Pa!”

The lightning caused Nabini’s left blade to be knocked away and he revealed a look of shock, “That strength, it’s too, too strong.” That lightning followed closely and pierced through his forehead.

Nabini diedd!

The number of deaths swiftly continued to rise, 73…78…82…89…90!

“The 32nd group arena war has ended. The number of dead and eliminated is 90, the remaining 10 have the right to enter the 900 slots namelist.” A low voice resounded within the 10 survivors and 1 billion spectators.

All the spectators in the stands finally let out all sorts of noises, be it sighs, rage or even excited cheers.

“Nabini has been eliminated.” Thunder god shook his head.

“His strength belonged to the lowest of the 100. The only reason why he survived past the 1st half was because he was sly and

clever.” Hong shook his head, “Being eliminated too is normal. I’m afraid I wouldn’t do much better than him.”

Chapter 40 – Light Ray

“Big brother, do you think I still don’t know anything about you?” Thunder god smiled, “I still remember back during the Great Nirvana, you and I both were young, and we met with danger time and time again. Even in the most dire of situations, you always made the impossible possible!”

“Don’t flatter me.” Hong said.

“Let it go, big brother, let them see the skills of us humans from earth.” Thunder god said, Luo Feng too was anticipating, watching Hong.

Hong looked at Thunder god before turning to look at Luo Feng.

“I can only try my best.” Hong revealed a smile.

The three from Black Dragon Mountain empire that made it through the elimination were able to participate in the arena war. Nabini however, had already been eliminated! One had to know that this arena war was broadcasted live. Among the trillions of people in the Black Dragon Mountain starfield that had watched this battle, many were enraged and broke wine glasses or bottles, and many more were angry and unsatisfied.

“That punk from the Bu Luo star field is too treacherous, he actually snuck an attack on Nabini!”

“That bastard!”

“Nabini shouldn’t have lost!”

“He should have been able to make it into the top 10,000.”

“In today’s arena war, our Black Dragon Mountain empire still has Hong. Hong will definitely win, he’ll definitely be able to make it into the Ganwu universe country’s top 10,000.”

“Brother, that Hong was among the lowest of the ranks that made it through the 1st elimination. For him to survive in the Arena, that’s going to be very hard! I think...Luo Feng has the biggest chance.”

“That Luo Feng will definitely make it through! As for Hong, he too will be able to do it! Who knows, maybe he purposely hid his true powers during the elimination.”

Virtual universe, Dojo number 10389.

About 3 hours after watching Nabini’s arena war, the 161st group battle in dojo 10389 was about to begin. The entire dojo was filled with cheers and roars, and the beautiful commentator was introducing every genius one by one with a small description.

“Number 93, Hong, from the Black Dragon Mountain empire, ranked 982 in the 72nd elimination world.” The beautiful lady introduced.

“Hong!”

“Hong!”

“Hong!”

In a particular region among the spectators, over a million people from the Black Dragon Mountain empire shouted loudly, almost as though they were declaring...this genius Hong was from the Black Dragon Mountain empire!

And amongst the cheering crowd, Luo Feng and Thunder god creased their eyebrows.

“Big trouble.” Thunder god said softly, “I didn’t expect that Savage would be there.”

“Right.” Luo Feng too held his breath and waited, as he worried for his big brother. Everyone was powerful, having been able to make it into the arena battles. Especially the group in which Hong was in, with the Savage that had killed his 2nd brother before.

Very quickly.

The countdown began and the dojo roared as a 100 absolute geniuses appeared in the center.

“Big brother.” Luo Feng picked him out with a single glance.

Within the dojo.

Hong carried in his hand the long pike, his gaze cautious as it swept his surroundings. This circular arena spanned a diameter of about 30 km. During the course of the battle...the space would constantly shrink, forcing the faster flying people to have nowhere to dodge After about 15 minutes, the area would shrink to a diameter of only 1m!

Hence...

Every arena war battle would at most last for 15 minutes.

“Amongst these 100, the strongest should be Savage.” Hong swept his gaze past the 99 others, his mind swiftly picturing the information he had seen before, “Also there are 3 others that are very strong.”

“First engage with the weaker ones and survive.”

“Then fight and risk it all after.”

Hong quickly remembered the information. He was very clear that if he fled far at the start...he would definitely become the targets of the absolute geniuses. It would be better for him to mix in the crowd at the start. As for surviving in this war...Hong was pretty confident.

“Let the battle begin!” A low booming voice resounded within everyone in the dojo’s minds.

With a shrinking area of 30 km, the arena would only have a diameter of 1m left in 15 minutes.

“Rumble!”

“Rumble!”

Mad amounts of energy flows erupted, the 100 geniuses within the dojo swiftly began their battles!

“Receive my blow!” That messy haired tall and sturdy youth roared. His bare feet only took one step and yet he managed to close a 100m distance. That fierce slash sliced towards a spirit reader, who didn’t seem to expect such speed from the opponent. He was shocked as he tried to dodge while using his spirit weapon to block.

“Clang!”

The short blade cut down! His power couldn’t be blocked!

It was akin to a mountain crushing down on one!

That spirit weapon was knocked aside and the short blade

immediately sliced through that spirit reader's head, causing it to split open into two.

"Haha...haha..." the tall and sturdy man laughed. Walking barefoot, every step he took allowed him to travel a large distance. His instant increase in speed was very fast, faster than even most flying spirit readers.

"Surround and kill him!"

"Everybody team up and kill him first!" Someone shouted.

"Xiu! Xiu!"

Two spirit weapons shot over.

"Dang! Dang!" The short blade moved in a waving motion, easily blocking the two spirit weapons and knocking them far away.

"Surround and kill me?"

The tall and sturdy youth was like a monster, actually travelling amidst the crowd, making the 10 or so that wanted to kill him unable to surround him. On the contrary, that youth very quickly settled half of that group. This Savage's path...was simply a slaughter. Even though these 100 were all absolute geniuses, no one could actually match up against this Savage.

This battle, there was no doubt the most outstanding was Savage.

Other than Savage, there was a lady whose performance was also extraordinary., She was dressed in armor and was incomparably valiant! One could tell just from her figure...that this was an extremely sexy and hot beauty. However her aura and her gaze were filled with brutality. Also her kills were all clean, making it so that no one could tell that she was a lady!

“Chi chi...” Wielding the long pike, Hong was engaged in battles amongst a group of geniuses, one could only see geniuses falling down dead one after another.

Hong however was still alive!

“Ang!”

His pike was like lightning!

Swiftly and suddenly piercing through a genius’s forehead from the back. Hong’s expression after killing someone didn’t waver at all. He still remained amidst the crowd, as his pike danced around, seemingly normal. However, multiple attempts from many spirit weapons were unable to pierce his defense.

Time passed and the deaths rose to 60, 61, 62...

As the numbers shrank, the group battles too lessened.

“Hm?” That valiant lady stared straight at Hong. In the universe, there were many that used such pike weapons!

However, those that used pike weapons normally picked the hard and sturdy ones.

The one Hong used however seemed more flexible. The moment it began to dance around, it was like a huge snake, extremely peculiar.

“Interesting.” The valiant lady wielded her two blades and flew straight at Hong.

“Not good.” Hong’s expression changed.

During the group battles, he had long observed and come to the conclusion that within this group, that lady warrior was definitely one of the top 3. Only Savage was a little stronger than her. He didn’t expect her to start rushing towards him. However…since the enemy was rushing over, there was no way to dodge, he could only invite the battle!

“Ang!”

The pike revolved, just like a loach in water, swift and nimble as it immediately pierced towards that lady warrior that was rushing over!

“Interesting, interesting.” The lady warrior’s eyes were filled with excitement, as her body emanated a green energy. The waves wrapped around the two arc blades. She began to wave them and the blades danced about, slashing towards the tip of the pike, causing a formless revolving energy to be transmitted onto the pike.

“Hm?”

Hong’s expression changed abruptly and he immediately retracted his pike fiercely. As soon as he did that, with an explosive sound he raised the pike with his hand, and almost like an axe, he fiercely chopped down at the lady warrior.

“Peng!”

The lady’s entire being became a fierce torrent of water flow, as an arc blade fiercely received that strong attacking force from the pike, following which she stuck closely to Hong and continued her attack. In an instant Hong felt like he was almost sucked into a whirlpool,and unable to escape.

“This lady warrior already has some comprehension of the water origin laws, I’m in big trouble.” Hong was panicking.

The ancient chinese culture had always heavily emphasized the 5 elements of gold, wood, water, fire and earth. Even though Hong walked the path of the light domain, he had a very clear understanding about the laws of water. However, understanding it was one thing, whether he could actually outmatch her was

another.

“If she’s like water, I’ll become like stone!” Hong didn’t have a choice, he grit his teeth and the surrounding light warped and his entire being became extremely glaring.

The pike’s speed immediately raised another gear.

Once the pike was fully unleashed, it was like a tortoise shell, without any openings at all.

“Dang! Dang! Dang!” The lady warrior’s water origin law infused slashes were all extremely heavy and powerful, giving off tremors that Hong felt as though they were impossible to block.

“If one had not stepped through the gateway of origin laws, one is useless after all.” Hong suddenly understood this logic.

“Hong!”

“Hong!”

In the 1 billion filled dojo, many Black Dragon Mountain starfield people were very nervous.

And there were even more people watching through the broadcast.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain island above, floating island, those that lived in the floating island were all at least a universe level.

On a particularly large but simple looking villa, within one of its living rooms.

A man sat there who was dressed in a dark red robe. There was a lightning mark on his forehead, this person...was one of the Black Dragon Mountain empire's most powerful sector lords, Jiang Tian Chen! And beside him, there was a kind looking old man with a head full of white.

"This black clothed punk is from our Black Dragon Mountain empire?" The old man seemed interested, "His light domain, from the looks of it, seems to be level 6 or so. However he is really a genius at battle. His flexible but strong pike, is actually able to allow him to unleash his domain to this level. This is even comparable to those domain level 8 punks."

Domain level 8, was not necessarily stronger than domain level 7.

It all relied on one's ability to unleash its strength.

One theory.

Maybe one had a comprehension of the origin laws. However, what determine the strength in a battle was the knowledge of how to actually use the laws in battle.! For example Luo Feng, using the

soaring shuttle when compared to the Nan Shen Armament...the power was completely different. That was because, through the Nan Shen Armament he was able to actually let his comprehension of the origin laws explode.

"Yes, Head general, he is from our empire." Jiang Tian Chen said respectfully.

"Hm." The old man smiled.

Head General...

That title, if any other sector lord from the Black Dragon Mountain empire heard that they would be shocked.

In the Three Axe Mountain organization, a sector lord's rank was that of general.

And the Three Axe Mountain organization had 3 original founders. Only these three founders had the right to be called Head general.

Chapter 41 – His Name is Luo

Three Axe Mountain, as a leader of the four large organizations within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, even the sacred land Black Dragon Mountain and Ice Leviathan sacred land wouldn't be willing to mess with it, because of the three founding members of the Three Axe Mountain.

The three founding members were all awarded the domain lord "Huge Axe" title when they were young.

A domain lord Huge Axe Warrior, when compared to the universe level huge axe title, was much rarer, at least a thousand to ten thousand times rarer!

Although the three of them came from different star fields, they got along extremely well, even becoming bosom friends in life and death Because the three of them had the title of Huge Axe Warrior, they decided to build the organization Three Axe Mountain!

They were made of two men and one woman.

Their names were Lament, Molly and Luo!

Of the group, Lament and Molly both became undying. Only Luo, this legendary warrior from the Black Dragon Mountain empire remained stuck at the pinnacle of sector lords. However, he was known to be invincible amongst the sector lords. Ever since about 100,000 years ago, he vanished within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, and no one ever saw him again...

No one knew whether this third founder was alive or dead!

“He’s from our Black Dragon Mountain starfield?” This question revealed this Head General, the founding member from the Black Dragon Mountain empire!

The three founding members all came from different starfields!

And the one from the Black Dragon Mountain empire was Luo!

“Do you have this punk’s information?” The old man said.

“Yes.”

Jiang Tian Chen replied respectfully, very quickly sourcing out the information and said softly, “His name is Hong, he is close to the other 2 youths Luo Feng and Thunder god. Their rough information…they should be earth’s aboriginals from our empire’s Milky Way galaxy.”

“Aboriginals?” The old man’s eyebrows creased slightly.

“Right, however this is a conjecture from our Three Axe Mountain information department.” Jiang Tian Chen said, “Also, Hong, Luo Feng and Thunder god all took part in this time’s Genius battle, and the most outstanding isn’t even Hong, it’s Luo Feng.”

“There’s one even more outstanding?” the old man revealed a shocked expression.

“Yes. That Thunder god ranked 5,128 in the elimination, Hong was ranked 982, Luo Feng was ranked 51.” Jiang Tian Chen said respectfully.

The old man slightly nodded, looking at the screen before him that was broadcasting the arena war, he said shocked, “This Hong, in this critical time he actually broke through, his domain actually rose from level 6 to 7…oh…that lady unleashed her strength. What powerful blade techniques, continuous and unrelenting, heavy and powerful, that Hong cannot withstand it anymore, oh, what a pity, he still died. There’s no way around it, the difference in power was simply too much.”

Jiang Tian Chen was quite shocked.

Head General Luo rarely ever spoke so much, right now it seemed as though he really cared for this Hong.

Luo!

There was a legend in the Black Dragon Mountain empire, even the two sacred lands Black Dragon Mountain and Ice Leviathan, the two god leaders would show respect to Luo! Firstly, Luo’s two life or death buddies were undying. Secondly, Luo was indeed very strong, Jiang Tian Chen’s reputation was mostly only within the Black Dragon Mountain empire. Luo however, had a reputation

enough to even make the million sector lords in the Ganwu universe country respect him.

If not for him getting distracted and working on the time origin laws, he probably would have become an undying long ago.

“Sigh.” Jiang Tian Chen looked at the old man before him, the elder Luo that led him by hand before, was sighing endlessly, “Is this life? The head general has changed his mind, not being over ambitious like before, wanting to perfect his light origin laws and breakthrough to the undying. However, he met with that unexpected calamity, getting stuck for over 800,000 years! Wasting the final most important bit of time...there’s only 20,000 years until he reaches the limit. Lord, how can you punish the head general this way...”

Jiang Tian Chen had a bitter taste in his mouth.

Of the three founders, Luo was the most exceptional back then, and also the most ambitious.

Man was helpless to the hands of fate...

The 161st group of the 1000 arena war groups, the battle was over!

The spectators let sighs.

Sitting in the stands with the other earth people, watching Hong’s body within the arena, they felt helpless.

“He still lost.” Thunder god shook his head helplessly.

“The opponent was indeed too strong.” Luo Feng shook his head, “Feeling some of the origin laws, one’s strength will have an absolute change. even though big brother lost rightfully, it’s still a pity.”

Yes, a pity.”

Hong had indeed done very well, even to the point of staying to the last 20 or so. However he, was killed by that lady warrior’s ultimate move.

“Let’s go, return home.” Luo Feng stood up.

“Thirdie, it’s all up to you now, of the three from the Black Dragon Mountain empire that made it through the elimination, only you are left.” Thunder god stood up, saying softly.

“Just me?”

Luo Feng’s ears moved, he could hear the discussions around him, this region was filled with over a million from the Black Dragon Mountain starfield. Obviously, Nabini’s and Hong’s straight failures had left the trillions of citizens in the Black Dragon Mountain star field sullen. Right now, all their hopes were transferred to Luo Feng.

“Luo Feng will definitely win.”

“Right, he made it to rank 51 in the elimination! This arena war will definitely be an easy win!”

“Luo Feng is our empire’s most powerful genius!”

“Luo Feng is definitely hiding his true strength, his true strength must be even more powerful than his ranking, his sudden jump in the later parts of the 1st stage proves that he wasn’t even giving it his hall. Only towards the back did he begin to gain points. If he had started right from the beginning, he definitely had the possibility of rushing to the top 10 in his world, even the top three!”

“Well said, just like that!”

“Tomorrow Luo Feng will take part in the arena war, I’ve already bought my tickets.”

“Luo Feng will definitely wipe them all out.”

“Wipe them out!”

Many Black Dragon Mountain empire citizens who wouldn’t accept the losses were discussing. After all, the one they had the most hopes on from the beginning had always been Luo Feng!

……

“Third brother, I’ve lost. You have to work hard.” Hong said so.

“Thirdie, do as you deem fit.” Thunder god said.

“Even I can make it to such high ranks in the virtual games, my daddy is the strongest, he’s definitely the strongest in the Ganwu universe!” Little Hai said.

Luo Feng, work hard, our entire Black Dragon Mountain empire’s countless citizens are watching you.” This was what the Black Dragon Mountain empire’s emperor had said to him over the phone.

“Luo Feng! Luo Feng! Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng will definitely succeed.”

“He’ll definitely win.”

“Definitely win.”

The entire Black Dragon Mountain island, almost all of its citizens, the over a trillion citizens on the island cheered and roared through the night, some in bars, while others in plazas and public gatherings, hundreds of thousands to even millions of people gathering to watch the broadcasts!

Luo Feng...

The only Black Dragon Mountain empire citizen left within the genius battle. If he won, he would become the pride of the Black Dragon Mountain empire.

“Madness.” Luo Feng felt a stifling atmosphere.

“Daddy, the virtual games I play even have country wars. Our Black Dragon Mountain empire against the other empires!”

“Little Hai, that’s a virtual game.” Xu Xin laughed and said, “Your dad is doing the real thing.”

“Hm, to rank number 1 in a star field, even in the virtual game I am still an absolute warrior.” Little Hai said, a silent Luo Feng finally looked shocked at his son, “What game are you playing?”

“A war related game.”

Little Hai chuckled.

.....

Night passed and the day began.

Even though countless from the Black Dragon Mountain star field were about to come to the arena and begin the madness, Luo Feng himself was standing alone in the wilderness of earth, on a skyscraper's balcony in a dilapidated city, quietly sitting there.

"Caw!"

A group of flying type beasts, the blood crows flew high above. In this dilapidated city, beast sightings were common, only occasionally seeing human fighter tracks. However Luo Feng didn't suppress and naturally unleashed all of his willpower and aura, naturally all the beasts and human fighters didn't even dare to get close to him.

Quietly sitting on the balcony for awhile.

Luo Feng was controlling his mental state. According to the teachings of his 1st and 2nd brother, whether it was yoga or martial arts, they both heavily emphasized one's mental state! Training of the mind was very important! However, in the universe there wasn't anyone who talked about training the mind, one's mental state may seem very trivial...without much effect on one's battle ability at all. No matter how strong a normal human of earth's mental state was, a universe level warrior could easily turn him to dust!

Exploding in rage, at times it allowed one to break past his limits and unleash more strength! However they may also cause one to lose his form!

This was mental state!

According to his brothers, from what they saw, the reason why both of them could have their domains at star traveller level was linked to their mental states. Thunder god could in an instant enter absolute peace, becoming one with nature, fusing with the elements. Hong too could in an instant become completely void, blending with his surroundings, combining all his senses , domains, and other things together to unleash his greatest strength.

Thunder god and Hong took decades of training to reach that level of mental calmness.

Luo Feng couldn't do it...

"Emptying the mind and soul, I can't do it. Because I'm under the influence of the golden horned beast's bloodline, I'm constantly filled with killing intent. This is something deep in my bones."

"However, 2nd brother is right."

"Whether it's rage, hurt, happiness, excitement, killing intent, they are all natural reactions. maintaining a pure mind, everything will happen naturally, when it's time to laugh I'll laugh, when it's time to rage, I'll rage." Luo Feng thought, "Wanting to kill too is a naturally thing, with a pure mind, I'll face it and accept it! Naturally I'll be able to reach a point of pureness where all the elements will blend together."

Luo Feng understood the theory, however when the killings really happen...

Luo Feng could at most maintain an ice cold state, without any rippling. As for pureness, blending with nature...that was very difficult, very difficult indeed.

“Luo Feng, the arena war is about to start, you should enter the virtual universe.”

“Phew!” Luo Feng opened his eyes, his gaze cold.

Not suppressing his killing intent anymore, naturally releasing it.

“Looks like you are different, has the meditation helped?”

Luo Feng didn’t answer, saying directly, “Connect to the virtual universe.”

.....

Virtual universe, in the space where there were many dojos located, island number 29109, there was a dojo and in its preparation room, geniuses sat in chairs, all ready to slaughter, all of them were absolute warriors.

“Hu!”

A black haired man in a dark grey armor appeared from thin air.

In the preparation room, the geniuses all turned to look, this black haired man surveyed his surroundings and glanced at them, not speaking a word, immediately finding a seat and sitting down, closing his eyes, calming his mind, awaiting the battle to begin.

Chapter 42 – Luo Feng Takes the Stage

Geniuses appeared one by one out of thin air within the preparation room. These were all geniuses from the different starfields in the Ganwu universe country. Their appearances were completely different and some even looked strange.

“Pushkin!”

“That’s Pushkin, and beside him is Ginelli!”

The originally quiet room suddenly had a bit of a commotion, causing Luo Feng to open his eyes and look at the two humans that had just appeared. One of them was tall and sturdy and his face was filled with golden fur. This 6m tall participant looked like a giant ape man, and his terrifying eyes glowed green in color. His two huge fists especially were comparable to the size of two giant metal hammers.

“Pushkin?” Luo Feng’s mind swiftly recalled through the data the Black Dragon Mountain empire had given him.

Pushkin, an absolute genius that the Ganwu universe country imperial family had nurtured. He favored using his fists and had the power to break into the universe country’s top 1,000. In the elimination, he was ranked 9th in the 89th world.

“Ginelli.” Luo Feng eyes shifted from the golden apeman to the short man beside him.

Even though he was referred to as being short, in truth this Ginelli still had a height of 1.9m, which is still taller than Luo Feng. However, standing beside a two storey tall apeman Pushkin, naturally looked like a short person. Luo Feng didn't have any information on Ginelli, because even the Black Dragon Mountain empire didn't have any information on Ginelli.

"Pushkin, sit here." Ginelli's expression was thin and frail, his eyes cold, almost like a venomous scorpion, he gave off a feeling similar to Nuolan Shan.

"Good!"

A thick powerful voice came from Pushkin's throat, even echoing about.

Ginelli and Pushkin walked directly towards Luo Feng and sat beside him, "Peng!" The chair Pushkin sat in wobbled. Luckily every preparation room had a huge amount of space, otherwise with his large structure, Pushkin would take up to 6 or 7 seats.

Pushkin and Ginelle sat down in the same row of seats that Luo Feng was sitting at.

"You." Ginelli turned towards Luo Feng beside him and said coldly, "Sit further away! I don't like people close to me,"

"You must be crazy!"

Luo Feng shot a glance at Ginelli and said coldly, following which he closed his eyes and never looked at him again.

“Hm?” Ginelli’s cold eyes suddenly burned with rage, staring hard at Luo Feng, almost like a snake eyeing its prey. However, in this preparation room, it was absolutely forbidden for anyone to make a move. As such, Ginelli could only scoff coldly and close his eyes.

Suddenly the noise from the dojo outside could be heard within.

“Attention all, the 382nd group of the arena wars is about to begin. Let me first introduce this group’s 100 participants.” A clear crisp voice resounded not only throughout the entire dojo, but could also be heard clearly within the preparation room, following which a wave of cheers followed.

“First, Pushkin, from the Ganwu universe country, ranked 9th in the 89th world of the elimination stage!”

Thunderous cheers erupted, causing the entire preparation room to tremble.

“That’s pushkin?”

“Right, that’s him, his fists are extremely terrifying, don’t ever get close to him.”

There was soft discussion within the room.

“Number 2, Ginelli, from the Ganwu universe country, ranked 21 in the 13th world of the elimination stage!” The commentator’s voice, every genius within the room could hear very clearly. Only then did Luo Feng open his eyes and glanced at the gold armored, cold looking youth beside him.

This Ginelli, who was actually able to be ranked number 2 within this 100 people, he was very strong.

“3rd…”

“4th….”

“5th, Luo Feng, from the Black Dragon Mountain empire, ranked 51st in the 1st world of the elimination stage.”

The cheers were thunderous, as over a million supporters from the Black Dragon Mountain empire roared.

Black Dragon Mountain island, over 1,000 people gathered in a luxurious palace.

Dressed in a dark golden imperial robe, the emperor sat high above. Below him was the entire Black Dragon Mountain empire’s many imperial subjects. Because of the everlasting reign of the imperial family, the numbers of subjects within the empire were up to a hundred million. Hence to be able to enter this level of

imperial gathering, they were definitely the imperial family's most elite.

They were either sector lords or domain lords.

There were even queens that governed and managed different sectors, or that group of princes that would someday succeed the throne. Or some other high positioned females in the imperial family.

"It's Luo Feng."

There was silence in the palace. Over a 1,000 of the imperial family watched that floating large screen and on it was the live broadcast. All that could be seen was that beautiful commentator smiling as she introduced, "5th, Luo Feng, from the Black Dragon Mountain empire, ranked 51st in the 1st world of the elimination stage." Simultaneously, the screen also had information and an image of Luo Feng.

"It's Luo Feng!"

"Haha, Luo Feng will easily pass the arena wars battle."

"Looking at his image, this Luo feng isn't some ordinary person. His gaze is filled with killing intent."

.....

There was discussions rampant throughout the palace, as all of them were speaking highly of Luo Feng. Who would dare to speak ill of him? This was the highest of imperial gatherings...this genius battle. The geniuses of the Black Dragon Mountain empire were only left with this one seedling, Luo Feng. If he lost too, then the Black Dragon Mountain empire would really lose all its honor and face.

With successive outs from the previous two participants who did not make it into the top 10,000, while other middle level civilization countries had participants that had made it through, it obviously made them fall behind by quite a bit.

“haha...” The emperor’s laugh was clear and bright.

With all his subjects complementing Luo feng, there was however one prince out of the many whose eyes were filled with shock. This was none other than the 9th prince Brolin.

Out of the over 1,000 subjects there, Brolin looked happy on the outside, but he could barely hold it in, as he had already realized the perilous situation he was in, “This Luo Feng...it’s, it’s actually him?” Even though the reputation of Luo Feng was huge, as the elimination stage wasn’t broadcasted, there was much information about these geniuses that the outside world didn’t know.

Only some large powers were able to dig up these details.

For example the Black Dragon Mountain empire had sent a

special envoy team, just like how some large organizations had also sent some people over to pay Luo Feng a visit. These were all because these powers had methods to find Luo Feng through the virtual universe company and thus his address within the virtual universe.

However...

Brolin, who was only a prince, was forbidden from any of the empire's information systems and mail systems. Hence, he didn't even know Luo Feng's appearance.

"Luo Feng, he is Luo Feng?" Brolin grit his teeth, "Big trouble."

Finding trouble with Luo Feng?

He no longer any such ideas, because he was very clear that with Luo Feng's reputation he could easily join some super organizations that could cause even the Black Dragon Mountain empire to fear. He didn't want to mess with Luo Feng anymore. However, he was worried that Lou Feng would remember how back then he had sent people to use the laser guns to kill the 12 targets, and also sent a team to chase and kill Luo Feng. Would he remember these incidents and hold a grudge?

"Hmph, I'll temporarily not mess with him. As long as i am within the imperial city, he doesn't have the ability to mess with me." Brolin grit his teeth.

Above the palace.

The emperor was sitting beside the two sector lords and chatting.

“Bu Te Asuka, what chance does this Luo Feng have?” The emperor couldn’t help but say softly.

“Pretty big chance, but there’s still danger.” Beside him the silver long bearded old man creased his eyebrows, “Your majesty should know that of the 100,100 that made it through the elimination, close to a half of them are the special elites specially nurtured by the different imperial families of the universe country.

“Hm.” The emperor nodded.

The country leader of the Ganwu universe country had sent over a hundred million elite geniuses to participate. There were a total of over 800 million people in the 1st stage, this group didn’t stand out much. However, among those that made it through the elimination stage, over 40,000 of them were from the group that the Ganwu universe country leader sent. It was very obvious that the universe country’s imperial family had powerful geniuses and inside information!

“The top ranker within Luo Feng’s group right now is Pushkin, followed by Ginelli. Of the top 10 in this group, 6 of them are all elites specially nurtured by the Ganwu universe country’s imperial family.” The old man shook his head, “The worst case scenario would be for Luo feng to get surrounded and ganged up on.”

“Royal uncle, do you see?” The emperor looked at the other sector lord beside him.

Also dressed in a dark golden imperial robe, the uncle smiled: “Your majesty, worrying right now is useless, and we are not even clear about this Luo Feng’s true power. Just watch! The fights will begin very shortly.”

“Just watch?”

The emperor could only nod.

On island number 29109, the dojo was already filled with a sea of people.

“Daddy is number 5. Mommy, are the 4 before daddy stronger than him?” Ping Ping asked curiously.

“That’s the ranking.” Xu Xin smiled, “The 4 before him are ranked higher but their strengths may not be more powerful than your daddy.”

“Oh.” Ping ping nodded.

Beside Little Hai was muttering: “Daddy is the strongest, the strongest.”

Around him sat many people from earth, such as Hong and

thunder god with their families along with Luo Feng's parents etc.

"Third brother will definitely win." Hong stared at the center of the dojo.

Thunder god stared too.

Right now, of the three brothers only Luo Feng was left in this genius battle.

"6...5...4...3...2...1!" The beautiful commentator shouted excitedly, as the entire atmosphere in the dojo reached its peak.

Rumble!

The entire dojo roared and tremored. The beautiful commentator immediately vanished, and at the same time 100 human silhouettes appeared within the center at different positions. It was the 100 geniuses that were being introduced, some were really tall and fit, while others were filled with fur, or had horns. It seemed like their appearances all differed.

However, the similarity was they stood at the peak of humanity!

"Pushkin!"

"Kun!"

“Luo Feng!”

The cheering alone could split the mountains and earth. The roars from a billion spectators seemed like it could shake and crumble the entire dojo itself.

Within the dojo.

Including Luo feng, the 100 geniuses all heard the cheers of the 1 billion people and couldn’t help but feel a surge of adrenaline. Looking around, there was no end to these spectators who were all from different starfields. And Luo Feng was able to pick out those shouting his name and looked towards the direction.

“That way, that’s the people from the Black Dragon Mountain empire.” Luo Feng looked in that direction, it was a blur of people.

Silence.

Within the battle arena, there was nothing but silence. The 100 geniuses all gathered their focus as this battle would last only 15 minutes. Within these 15 minutes, the battle space would constantly shrink until there was only 1m left.

“Let the battle begin!”

A low voice immediately resounded within the minds of the 1 billion spectators along with the 100 geniuses in the dojo.

Chapter 43 – Earth Shattering

“Pushkin!”

“Pushkin!”

The spectators within the dojo all shouted different names excitedly, amongst which the name Pushkin was the loudest. Amidst these spectators, there was an enormous group of strong looking ape men that were roaring at the top of their lungs. Their voices were thick and booming. A group that couldn’t be seen from end to end with one glance as over a million ape men were waving their fists and roaring. It was almost as though the heavens was cheering along. Compared to the over 1 million people from Black Dragon Mountain empire, their voices seemed to be drowned out.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

All sorts of colorful energy flow exploded within the dojo. Of these 100 geniuses, 48 of them were from the Ganwu universe imperial family side. However only 10 survivors were destined to make it out of this battle. Even though the battle within the arena seemed chaotic, there were always participants who had a mutual understanding to team up. Especially amongst the strongest like Pushkin and Ginelli, who were definitely helping each other!

“Ao Fei Xiu Si, Kazan, you two go and kill that black haired punk.” Ginelli was surrounded by a black energy flow. He communicated via genetic energy, simultaneously brandishing two long arc blades.

“Understood.”

“No problem, leave it up to us.”

Ao Fei Xiu Si and Kazan immediately headed towards Luo Feng. At this time, the mass battles within the dojo of geniuses had already begun.

“Xiu!” A bolt of lightning shot towards Ao Fei Xiu Si.

“Bastard.” Ao Fei Xiu Si and Kazan could only stop and first deal with the punks that provoked them.

Pushkin, who was dressed in a genetic energy armour, was tall and sturdy like a war god. His two fists that were even bigger than hammers were covered in malevolent gloves. His surroundings were filled with a yellow energy flow. With one step he rushed into the group of geniuses and his huge fist pummeled towards a weak and frail looking warrior.

“Peng!” With just one punch the enemy’s blades flew away, while the second fist was landing straight on the enemy’s forehead.

Death!

The war god like Pushkin waved his fists. With one swing after another, they were not only as heavy as mountains, but fast and

unpredictable as well. They sometimes became pointy claws, and the moment he drew close to a person it was simply a nightmare. Pushkin...within the blink of an eye, he had killed two geniuses, causing all the other geniuses around to increase their distance from him. However his movements were swift. Every single step allowed him to lunge forward and close a large distance.

At this time it wasn't just Pushkin, even Ginelli and the others were all making their moves.

In the distance.

Stepping on the soaring shuttle, Luo Feng was carrying a thick dark golden long rod on his back. Amongst the many geniuses, he was considered skinny, however he had an aura that made the other's hearts palpitate. Luo Feng's gaze was cold and filled with killing intent. "Right now, there are still many opponents, there's no time to waste. I have to end this battle fast. Kill them all directly!"

"Kill!" A youth surrounded by a green energy flow, carrying a shield and an axe rushed straight towards the closest opponent, Luo Feng!

"Courting death!"

Floating in mid air, the dark golden long rod on Luo Feng's back suddenly shot out a golden beam of light. At the same time the light shot out, a large amount of complex golden patterns followed along its trail, infused with peculiar golden law origin ripples, a

dreamy golden blade was suddenly formed. The large amount of golden energy surrounded Luo Feng, wrapping itself around that golden blade, and finally shooting out.

“Illusion blade technique!” Luo Feng controlled it with all his willpower, using his full strength to unleash its greatest power.

The 1st move he made at the arena war!

Luo Feng had already taken out his full strength!

“Rumble!”

A golden rainbow immediately clashed into that youth’s shield which was put up last minute. With a loud clang, the youth’s bones in his arm cracked and broke just from the impact. “How…” The youth’s eyes were filled with shock and fear. However that golden rainbow suddenly curved slightly and shot towards his forehead!

Chi!

The golden rainbow shot right through his forehead. Its strength and speed infused with terrifying piercing power didn’t seem to slow down at all as it followed a pattern and rushed towards the next genius.

“What!” That beautiful bewitching lady with purple hair had a surprised look on her face and almost couldn’t react in time. She hurriedly controlled her spirit weapon to block.

“Dang!”

“Chi!”

The golden rainbow was extremely powerful and strong as it forced its way through the defenses, hitting straight into the flying weapons, after which it pierced through that purple haired lady’s forehead. The golden rainbow finally arced and returned to Luo Feng’s side. This golden rainbow... was actually a blurry illusionary golden blade.

“My god!”

“So powerful!” The surrounding geniuses were all filled with shock and fear as their expressions changing greatly.

With just one move, he killed two geniuses back to back!

One had to know that these were all powerful geniuses that had made it through the first elimination. Everyone of them was considered to be at the pinnacle of strength at their levels, and definitely not some random cannon fodder. Even Pushkin had to focus all his strength on one opponent before actually heading on to the next.

But the black haired youth before them, with just one golden beam of light, he was immediately able to kill two people. This was extremely tyrannical!

“He’s that strong?”

“Origin laws? He definitely has some comprehension of the origin laws.”

“Ginelli that bastard! He actually wants us to kill him, how can we kill him!” Ao Fei Xiu Si and Kazan, who were originally flying towards Luo Feng but got distracted by others attacking them , just managed to kill their opponents. However, after watching Luo Feng kill the two geniuses consecutively with one golden light, the both of them quickly stopped.

“Let’s go.” The two of them turned to leave. Who would dare mess with Luo Feng.

It was obvious...

This black haired youth was a warrior that had stepped through the entrance of the origin laws and his power was probably even crazier than Pushkin!

“Those two.” Luo Feng’s gaze swept around after killing the two geniuses and discovered the two closest geniuses Ao Fei Xiu Si and Kazan. He immediately stepped on his soaring shuttle and swiftly flew towards them! As a warrior who’s stepped through the entrance of the origin laws, his speed at controlling the soaring shuttle was extremely shocking.

“He’s coming!” Ao Fei Xiu Si and Kazan’s expressions changed.

A resplendent golden rainbow immediately shot towards them. Kazan who was flying behind quickly waved the huge axe in his hand.

“Clatter!”

Kazan could only feel an immensely incomparable amount of energy transfer over from his axe. The right handle immediately bent and broke, simultaneously his right hand grew numb and unable to hold on to the axe. That golden rainbow simply shot like a bullet right through his forehead, and continued to chase after the fleeing Ao Fei Xiu Si.

The golden illusion blade was too fast, he couldn’t even get far.

“It’s over.” Ao Fei Xiu Si’s eyes revealed shock and unwillingness, after which it was filled with hate as he stared at the distant Ginelli’s shocked face, communicating hatefully, “Ginelli!!!”

Chi!

The golden illusion blade that was infused with the golden origin laws, was as strong and piercing as the sun, even though Ao Fei Xiu Si was ranked extremely high in his world during the elimination stage, he was still easily killed!

……

The spectators were all silent, Pushkin massacring was within everyone's predictions, after all he was ranked the highest in his group. However the 1 billion spectators from the various starfields had never expected...this Luo Feng who was ranked number 5 in his group was actually so intrepid. Even more so than that War god like Pushkin!

"Luo Feng!"

"Luo Feng!"

Over 1 million spectators from the Black Dragon Mountain empire all stared wide eyed with glee, many roaring with excitement as their eyes filled with madness.

"Daddy! Daddy!" Little Hai and Ping Ping both stood up on their chairs, shouting with all their might.

"Third brother." Hong and Thunder god stood up too.

"Big brother sure is powerful." Luo Hua couldn't help but mutter softly.

"Your brother in law..." Xu Gang stared wide eyed. Beside him Xu Xin too was filled with excitement, her eyes glued to the center of the arena.

And around then the over 1 million people from the Black Dragon Mountain empire too had lost it.

This was the unexpected surprise Luo Feng had given to countless from the Black Dragon Mountain empire. They all shouted for Luo Feng's victory as they were mesmerized by Luo Feng's strength. In the past, they didn't have anything to back up their words. After all the results of the battles from the Black Dragon Mountain empire from the past had always been poor, they had nothing to support them. However now...

They had the right to roar! They had the right to boast proudly!

"Luo Feng!"

"Luo Feng!" They all madly roared, excitedly cheering, shaking the entire earth and heavens.

Within that luxurious palace on Black Dragon Mountain island, the Black Dragon Mountain empire's imperial family were all staring hard at the screen.

They saw Luo Feng unleash his strength, killing the two geniuses in an instant, and chasing and killing the other two right after. As they watched the other geniuses who were all scared silly, all fleeing far and not daring to approach Luo Feng, the entire palace erupted.

The emperor fiercely slapped the throne, shouting out: "Good!!!"

“Congratulations your majesty, congratulations.” Immediately the people below shouted.

“Royal father, this Luo Feng is obviously the strongest one there. After this battle, who would dare call our Black Dragon Mountain empire weak?” The third prince was the first to stand, shouting proudly.

“Nan Shen Armament.” The silver haired old man Bu De Asuka said.

“Right, it’s the Nan Shen Armament.” Beside him the royal uncle nodded too.

“Nan Shen Armament?” The emperor was shocked, “One of the 9 god weapons of the controller, that Nan Shen Armament? That dark golden long rod, I initially thought it was a close combat rod like weapon.”

The silver haired old man Bu De Asuka said, “Just now what Luo Feng used was...the first move, the illusion blade of the Nan Shen Armament. Looking at how he used it, he obviously has a good grasp of the first level. To be able to unleash it like that at the star level, he could be said to be invincible within the entire star level. Even within the Ganwu universe, the number of people who are able to match up to Luo Feng are extremely rare.”

“Right, to be able to unleash the first level, one has to have a comprehension of the golden origin laws.” The royal uncle beside

said, “Meaning...Luo Feng is a genius that has stepped through the gateway of the origin laws. And according to the estimate of the genius battle, within the Ganwu universe, the number of geniuses that have stepped through the origin laws gateway is only about a hundred.”

“And the arena wars are split into 1,000 a group.”

“The chances of another with origin laws comprehension appearing is extremely rare.”

“Unless there’s another absolute warrior like Luo Feng who didn’t reveal his true strength in the first elimination stage. Just like the last time when Hong took the stage, that lady warrior was definitely one who stepped through the gateway of the origin laws. However, her rank was still only in the tens, creating a chance for both the warriors who had comprehended the laws to meet.” The royal uncle emphasized.

Indeed.

Back during the hundred world elimination stage, every world had a few with origin law comprehension, like Luo Feng and Windmill. However they confined themselves to their own city.f the two had wandered about into other cities, and defeated the absolute warriors from there with their strengths, these two could have easily rushed into their world’s top 10.

The moment they made it into the top ten.

According to their ranking, Luo Feng and Pushkin would definitely not have been in the same group!

……

Within the arena.

Ginelli could only hear that rage filled roar from Ao Fei Xiu Si resound within his ears: “Ginelli!!!” and Ginelli didn’t even have time to think about his death, his gaze fixed on the distant Luo Feng, within he was filled with shock and rage, “This insolent punk, he actually, actually…”

After killing both of them, Luo Feng turned and his cold gaze fixed on Ginelli.

Chapter 44 – Avoiding the Battle

These geniuses were all scared away by Luo Feng's unreasonable and powerful strength. Hence, he was left with nobody around him as they all avoided him at great lengths...causing Luo Feng to have to look for his own prey. His gaze immediately landed on the distant cold demeanored gold clothed youth Ginelli. Ginelli too was looking over at the time.

"Sit further away!" In the preparation room, that Ginelli had coldly berated Luo Feng. That scene immediately popped up in Luo Feng's mind.

Since it was that way...

The next prey, will be him.

"Kill!" Luo Feng's eyes were filled with killing intent.

Sou!

The soaring shuttle became a beam of light and shot towards Ginelli.

"Bastard! how could I randomly meet such a powerful one." Ginelli grit his teeth and thought as he was filled with hatred. However, as one of the elites nurtured by the Ganwu universe imperial family, he was very clear of the difference between a warrior who had stepped through the gateway of the origin laws

compared to one who hadn't. Hence he clenched his teeth and turned around to flee, "Pushkin, Pushkin!"

Like a wargod slaughtering his way through the crowd, Pushkin creased his eyebrows.

"That black haired punk wants to kill me." Ginelli communicated, "Help me block him."

"You really know how to stir up trouble." Pushkin said with a thick low voice, resounding within Ginelli's ear.

According to power and rank in this group, Pushkin was number one while Ginelli was number two.

Since they came from the same group, Ginelli had long ago roped Pushkin in and made a deal with him.With the two of them working together, they would easily pass the arena wars. Originally, a team made up of the top two within a group would have been able to automatically pass the arena wars. This was almost something set in stone.

It couldn't be helped that Ginelli had messed with Luo Feng!

If Ginelli hadn't riled him up earlier, even though Luo Feng was strong, he still wouldn't willingly go pick a fight with both the number one and two of the group. Afterall, you only needed to make it till the top 10 of the group, he didn't need to risk it all.

However now…

Rumble!

Pushkin took one step and rushed straight before Ginello, his huge eyes glowing green as he stared at Luo Feng, communicating, “Ginelli was wrong, however we don’t have to fight it out. If you spare Ginelli’s life, we can all pass the arena wars!”

Luo Feng stood on the soaring shuttle and looked at the giant before him.

Pushkin , who was two storeys tall stood before him like a building, and compared to that Luo Feng seemed like a small child.

“Pushkin!”

Luo Feng stared coldly at his opponent and roared, “Make way!” Pushkin however seemed enraged, as though prepared to say something.

“Hmph!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed and flashed.

Rumble!

The gold rainbow immediately shot directly towards him and Pushkin’s expression changed greatly. Roaring while waving his right fists which was wrapped in an earthen yellow energy flow,

the movement of his hand was almost like moving a mountain, seemingly slow yet it actually managed to block Luo Feng's golden rainbow. All that could be heard was a earth shattering rumble and clash.

Pushkin was forced back closed to 10m, as he grit his teeth and stared at Luo Feng.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was taken aback, "The data on this Pushkin said he hadn't stepped through the gateway of the origin laws. Looking at him right now, that seems to be true. However, with a domain level 9, he's actually able to produce such strong power."

Even at domain level 6, Hong could still kill an enemy with a domain of level 7.

The factors that determine a victor in a battle were not only because of genetic energy, boundaries and origin laws, but also willpower, mental state, experience etc. If one simply didn't have any willpower or heart to resist, he wouldn't be able to unleash even half of his strength. While if one has a strong battle spirit and is extremely passionate along with a powerful willpower, he could exceed his standards and unleash more than his actual power!

And Pushkin's, who had a domain level 9, was able to reach rank 9 in the 89th world. Considering this, his battle strength alone was indeed shocking.

However there was still a huge difference between one who had stepped through the gateway of the origin laws and one who

hadn’t!

“Pushkin, you are not my match. Make way, otherwise you won’t even be able to make it through the arena wars.” Luo Feng stood on the soaring shuttle, coldly looking down at Pushkin and spoke to him.

To actually kill Pushkin.

He estimated it would take quite a bit of time. By that time more people would have died in the arena, and the moment only 10 were left, the battle would be over. It could very likely result in Ginelli escaping and surviving.

“Hmph!” Pushkin clenched his fists and stared hard at Luo Feng once with his big green eyes before biting down fiercely and heading away towards the distant group of geniuses who were still battling.

“Pushkin!”

Hiding in the back, Ginelli roared urgently via genetic energy.

“Argh argh argh!!!” Pushkin roared madly while waving his fists about and killing the geniuses one by one.

“Hmph.” Luo Feng looked at Ginelli.

Everything was going according to his plan. Within this group of 100, he was the only one who had stepped through the gateway of the origin laws. As he was also using the Nan Shen Armament, with just one move Luo Feng could tell that Pushkin was already injured. If he had continued to fight on, Pushkin would definitely die without doubt.

Luo Feng didn't want to waste any more time on Pushkin.

Pushkin didn't want to let himself die because of Ginelli either. Hence he chose not to fight as it was the best option for him.

"Bastard." That Ginelli cursed under his breath while fleeing as fast as he could.

"Fleeing?"

Luo Feng quickly chased after him with the soaring shuttle.

"So fast?" Ginelli's expression changed drastically.

Once one comprehended the origin laws, whether it was based on attack, defense, flight or movement, these areas would all have great improvements. Luo Feng had caught up with Ginelli in the blink of an eye.

"Scum!" two long arc blades. He had a complicated struggling expression as he shouted "Go and die!"

Hu!

With a step, the space itself seemed to warp around him as Ginelli suddenly rushed towards Luo Feng.

“Light domain?” Luo Feng scorned coldly, swiftly retreating.

“First technique!”

Luo Feng’s gaze was cold.

Compared to some who had stepped through the gateway of the origin laws, Luo Feng was even more intrepid. That was because the laws that he had comprehension of could be completely unleashed through the Nan Shen Armament!

“Rumble!”

The golden rainbow shot like a beam of golden light and attacked Ginelli in an instant.

“Clang!!!”

Ginelli crossed his blades and pushed them forward. Following that one clash, his entire body and throat trembled from the shock as he spit out fresh blood that was rising up his throat. “Just like the absolute geniuses in the Ganwu secret areas, once one had a

comprehension of the gold origin laws, they would indeed have a crazy amount of power."

"He actually blocked it?" Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

"Rumble!" the golden rainbow shot once again towards him.

"I cant block it head on, however I have no other choice. At the same time, it's too fast and I have no time to dodge it." Ginelli thought hard to come up with a solution. He could only use his two blades to block it again. However this time his arms had already weakened and he was already injured from the first blow.

"Peng!"

The two blades were immediately knocked away, while the golden rainbow slightly arced and pierced right through the pale looking Ginelli, right through his forehead!

His head exploded!

Ginelli died! Completely Eliminated from the tournament!

This scene caused the distant Pushkin, whose face filled with golden fur, to twitch his facial muscles "That Ginelle actually only managed to block it one time and died the moment Luo Feng's second attack was unleashed. And Ao Fei Xiu Si couldn't even block it once. It's too... too, i'm afraid I would only be able to block it four or five times at most. This bastard, is too strong!"

Gold, was as bright and strong as the sun, incomparably sharp!

In terms of force matching force, the people with the gold origin laws were the most valiant.

The entire battle lasted only about five minutes and the number of survivors had already reduced to 10.

The battle was over!

“This madman, that bastard is a madman.”

“That black haired punk, just who is he?”

The surviving geniuses all looked at Luo Feng with hidden fear. However many of them didn’t even know Luo Feng’s name. Because, during the introduction…they were all in the preparation room and did not get the chance to see Luo Feng’s image. Actually, Luo Feng too didn’t know most of the participant’s name.

It is more accurate to say that he only knew Pushkin and Ginelli’s name.

Their reputation was huge.

And Luo Feng’s fame compared to theirs was very small.

“The 382nd group of the arena wars, 90 have been eliminated and the remaining ten will have the right to contend for the spot in the 900 slots of the namelist.” A low voice resounded with the minds of everyone in the dojo.

The other nine survivors, including Pushkin all looked at the black haired youth carrying the dark golden long rod filled with killing intent.

If one said that the most fearless in Hong’s group was Savage.

Then this group’s most fearless person was undoubtedly the Madman Luo Feng.

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

The over one million Black Dragon Mountain star field spectators roared with a lot of passion and enthusiasm. All of them were shouting with strength and hysteria, their expressions seemingly mad, and not even caring at all about their throats! The entire dojo, the ones who had the most right to roar like that were the people from the Black Dragon Mountain star field. Their roar shook the earth and heavens.

“He is Luo Feng?” As they were being teleported out, the nine other survivors began to discuss and guess.

Eruption!

The Black Dragon Mountain imperial palace had erupted!

The entire Black Dragon Mountain island’s trillion citizens all erupted!

The entire starfield’s over 8,000 galaxies, countless people watching the broadcast, all erupted!

“Too brutal, too powerful.”

“Luo Feng is too fearless.”

“Thrilling, thrilling!”

“Strong!” He is a genius from our Black Dragon Mountain starfield. Yes, from our Black Dragon Mountain starfield!!!”

The countless people from the empire were incomparably excited.

In the past 100,000 to a million years, there were indeed several times the Black Dragon Mountain empire had people rush into the

top 10,000, which was worthy of their excitement and pride. However after making it into the top 10,000, it was mostly based on luck. It had been a long time since the Black Dragon Mountain empire had such a tyrannical display of power from its warriors in such an elite battle ground!

Yes, brutal! Savage!

In this arena wars, I'm the number one man! I'll kill whomever I want! I will create a path of slaughter! Even the wargod like Pushkin had to lower his head and cower away!

In the arena!

Luo Feng was the king! The emperor!

The others all had to lower their heads!

"Too thrilling."

"Luo Feng's power is too dominating. It was a total decimation with no resistance at all! Those weaker ones were simply cleared away with one move."

"I heard Luo Feng uses the Nan Shen Armament, don't you know what that is? That's one of the nine godly weapons for the spirit reader controllers."

“After the arena wars comes the 1v1 battles. Luo Feng’s strength will definitely be able to make it into that 900 namelist.”

“Luo Feng will definitely be able to represent the Ganwu universe country and compete with the other geniuses from the other universe countries. Haha, Luo Feng is from our Black Dragon Mountain empire!”

Madness.

Much news regarding Luo Feng began to circulate, including many fanclubs that swiftly began to form in order to support him. In many virtual universe games, there were many “I love’ you Luo feng”, or “Luo Feng the master”, or “Luo Feng’s wife”, or “I am Luo Feng’s senior”, even “I am Luo Feng’s master”, such nicknames surfaced all over.

During this battle, Luo Feng’s strength had won over a trillion people.

Chapter 45 – Life Changing Decision

Black Dragon Mountain island, within a luxurious palace.

“Endless possibilities in his future.” The silver haired old man exclaimed, “This Luo Feng’s future…is very hard to predict.”

“Right.” That royal uncle also nodded his head.

“Is there no way for us to get him into the sacred land?” Sitting in the center, the emperor asked softly. The two sector lords who sat beside him shook their heads, of which the silver haired old man Bu De Asuka explained : “Your majesty, stepping through the gateway of the origin laws at only star level, these sort of absolute geniuses aren’t for our Black Dragon Mountain sacred land.”

“Ah?” The emperor was shocked.

Unlike the Ganwu universe country’s leader who had built the universe country over a trillion years ago and had been their one and only one leader, the Black Dragon Mountain empire’s emperor would always change after a period of time!

Hence, there were many secrets that this emperor was clueless about.

“Hasn’t your Majesty already seen that in the entire universe country, there’s only one Ganwu dojo, and it’s forbidden for dojos of any other sort to open?” The silver haired old man asked.

“Ganwu universe country indeed respects the lowest of talents and absorbs them.” The emperor nodded.

“It’s because of this that a genius like Luo Feng, even if we discover him…he’ll still finally end up in the hands of the Ganwu universe country.” The silver haired old man shook his head, “And we can’t even make any complaint about it. Of course no matter what happens, he is still considered to have been from our Black Dragon Mountain starfield. Whatever accomplishments he has in the future, will still have benefits for our Black Dragon Mountain star field.”

“Such a genius, it’s better to be on good terms with. Be it 10,000 years or 100,000 years later, who knows what he’ll become and what he’ll have accomplished.” The silver haired old man emphasized.

“I understand.” The emperor nodded.

Such talent, as long as he didn’t die along the way, it was set in stone for him to become a sector lord. And these sorts of star levels who have stepped through the gateway of the origin laws, once they reach the sector lord level, they would be an absolute warrior amongst the others.

The moment he breaks through to the undying level, that would be a step towards the heaven shaking undying being.

An undying being…

In the entire Black Dragon Mountain empire currently, there were only two undying. One was the god leader of the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land and the other was the god leader of the Ice Leviathan god country. Hence the Black Dragon Mountain didn't dare easily offend any undying.

In a vast god country.

Within the continuous mountain range, volcanoes were dispersed throughout this large continent, with some spitting fire occasionally. The entire god country was entirely dark red in color and the smell of sulfur emanated throughout. At the peak of a tall mountain that reached the clouds, an ancient palace was built there. Its entire surface walls had complex engravings all over.

Within the palace.

In the throne, sat a red eyed man dressed in a dark red long robe. Black flames were burning about his surroundings, his eyes seemed to be looking from another dimension altogether, giving off a terrifying heart palpitating chill.

Below him on both the right and left were four thrones.

Currently there were three people sitting below him. All of them were giving off energy waves that shook the earth and skies, almost as though just lifting their hands could split the earth and heavens.

“God leader, this punk called Luo Feng has some comprehension of the origin laws even though he’s only at the star level. He’s most suitable to become my disciple.” said a warrior wrapped in golden armor. Emanating from his entire body was a heart palpitating ripple, which was the gold origin law’s ripple of energy.

Compared to Luo Feng, this was a trillion times stronger.

“Wo Te, my brother!” The dark red eyed man said with a hoarse voice softly,” I know, that right now you are desperately searching for a disciple. However, we cannot fight with the Ganwu universe country!”

“Wo Te.”

The other two looked at the golden armored man.

“My life span is reaching its end.” The gold armored man said calmly, “And the current disciples, even though they have talent, for them to actually succeed my techniques would be extremely difficult. I cannot change my demise. Hence, I only want to look for a someone to pass my legacy onto before I die. I hope to be able see the techniques that I have created over these hundreds of millions of years to once again be unleashed. Only then can I die in peace. This is my current greatest hope.”

The others were silent.

Undying, they were indeed an eternal being.

But that doesn't mean that an undying couldn't die. Like the Yun Mo Planet master or the many powerful undying in history, they still died! The life force of an undying was extremely strong. Even if their physical body was ripped into shreds, they could still regenerate. There were very few injuries that cannot be healed, like the Yun Mo Planet master who could only watch himself die.

"Wo Te, my brother, I will do my best to help you find an exceptional disciple." The red eyed man emphasized, "As for that punk Luo Feng...as long as he's not stupid, he will definitely choose the Ganwu universe country, maybe even the stronger and more powerful virtual universe company."

"Even after so many years, things haven't changed much at all."

"The pinnacle of geniuses also require them to make the best choices and the have the best environment to learn, before they can have the most outstanding achievements. In terms of power or environment, we indeed cannot compare to the Ganwu universe country."

The golden armored man didn't make a sound.

His proudest achievements over hundreds of millions of years was the techniques he had created. During the time he was alive, he treated these as though they were treasures and not even teaching it to his disciples or displaying it anywhere else. He would only teach his disciples very little of it. Now that he knew that his

death was certain and imminent, his thinking had changed completely. He really wanted to watch a disciple complete his technique!

If that was impossible, then he could only leave his techniques to his friends and brothers, allowing them to teach the disciple in his place. Just like the Yun Mo Planet Master allowing Babata to teach in his place.

“God leader.” The golden armored man stood up.

“Wo Te.” The red eyed man stood up too, the other two followed.

“I’m tired, I want to return to my home.” The gold armored man sighed, “Before I die, I want to take a good look at my home grounds.” Finishing his words, he turned and flew out of the palace. As an undying, his relatives had long vanished over the course of time. Afterall, even a sector lord at most lived 10 million years.

The other three were silent.

“Wo Te, my disciple, I will help you with your search.” The red eyed man communicated into the gold armored man’s mind a million li away.

Within the palace, the three exchanged glances.

“It was fake, we were deceived, Kun Shalo that bastard. We will

definitely find him and make him pay. Wo Te's death is because of him! He actually dared to sell us a fake secret area map!!!" The red eyed man's angry whisper turned into a roar, and the surrounding space trembled.

"Kun Shalo is one of the subjects of the Ganwu universe country leader. it'll be hard for us to find a chance!"

"Wait!"

"Even if I have to wait over a hundred million years, 1 billion years or even a 10 billion years! As long as there's a chance! I... Meng Huo, will definitely personally kill him!!! He actually dared to use a fake secret area map and take away my money, also taking away the life of one of my brothers. Dead! I will definitely kill him! If he knows what's good for him, he will hide under the Ganwu universe country leader's protection for the rest of his life!!!" The red eyed man roared angrily. Black flames rose fiercely from the ground and the entire palace began to burn within and was reduced to nothing.

His roar resounded throughout the vast trillion Li in the god country.

Black Dragon Mountain island.

Becoming famous after one battle... Luo feng had really became famous through that one battle!

This one battle not only shook the entire Black Dragon Mountain empire, but also the entire Ganwu universe country!

“Daddy, everybody in the Black Dragon Mountain island now knows how you look. The moment you go out, you’ll be recognized very quickly.” Little Hai clapped his hands and jumped around beside Luo Feng, as he was obviously very proud.

“I’ll have to disguise my self next time I go out.” Luo Feng rubbed his head.

“It’s kind of weird though.” Beside, Xu Xin stood up and poured some tea for Luo Feng. Smiling, “After the elimination the last time, many organizations sent people over. After this arena war battle however, your performance was definitely the most eye catching. I thought even more organizations and powers will come. However up till now, no one has come at all!”

“It is kind of weird.” Luo Feng nodded.

Suddenly.

“Haha Luo Feng!” A clear carefree voice resounded.

“Ah, we were just saying no one came, and now someone has come.” Xu Xin turned to look, speaking softly, “It’s people from the Three Axe Mountain organization.”

Luo Feng looked, indeed.

There were three men walking over from the distance. In the middle was a kind looking smiling old man with a head full of white. On the left was a man dressed in dark red battle robes and the one on the right was the tall and sturdy Mingyu. With experience from the Ganwu auction, he could easily deduce from looking that dark red battle robed man was definitely a sector lord.

And there was a thunder mark on his forehead.

Obviously he was a sector lord recognized by the thunder origin laws, a sector lord that belonged to the pinnacle of other sector lords. As for that kind looking old man...Luo Feng couldn't tell, but since he walked in the center, he estimated that the old man's position was the highest.

"Lord Mingyu." Luo Feng quickly stood up.

"Haha, I'm no lord here. Luo Feng, let me introduce you all." Mingyu smiled and pointed at the dark red battle robed man, "This is our Three Axe Mountain's general Jiang Tian Chen, amongst the sector lords in the Black Dragon Mountain starfield, he's definitely at the peak."

"My respects general." Luo Feng paid his respects.

Jiang Tian Chen nodded.

"This." Mingyu began introducing the white haired old man, his

voice changing slightly in tone, “is our Three Axe Mountain’s one of the three great founders, the head general.”

“Head General.” Luo Feng quickly bowed. However, his mind was in a flurry of emotions.

Head general?

Of the three great founders of the Three Axe Mountain, two of them were undying, and the final one had vanished. Which was this one?

“Hm.” The old man slightly nodded.

“Where’s Hong.” Mingyu said, “The head general wishes to see him.”

“Ah? No problem, I’ll look for him.” Luo Feng nodded.

Luo Feng, Thunder god, Mingyu and Jinag Tian Chen all stood outside, while inside the house only the Head general and Hong stayed.

“Thirdie, why has the Head general come looking for big brother?” Thunder god asked.

“No idea.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“It’s a good thing.” Beside them Mingyu smiled.

“Let’s hope he doesn’t disappoint the head general.” Besides him the sector lord Jiang Tian Chen said coldly.

……

Within the house, there were only two people present, Hong and the Head general Luo.

“What!” Hong looked shocked at the old white haired man before him, “Head general, you, you…”

This legendary being spoke only a few words. But this had already given Hong a shock.

“Your talent is not bad, your character is also similar to myself back then. As for teaching you, even though I haven’t become an undying, when it comes to the light origin laws and domain I am definitely sufficient and capable of becoming your teacher.” The old man shook his head, “However there’s one thing I have to warn you about, my life span is reaching its end. I only have about 20,000 more years to live!”

Chapter 46 – Two Paths

“You only have about 20,000 years left in your life span?” Hong was shocked.

A sector lord’s life span was very long, up to 10 million years. Yet before him, this legendary head general’s was reaching its end.

“Hai!”

The old man shook his head and sighed, that voice was filled with endless bitterness. “Hong, you and I really have an affinity.”

“You name is Hong, mine is Luo, both 1 syllable.”

“You had your domain in the star traveller level, me too!”

“I do not fear death. I have taken the path of becoming the strongest and wanting to scale the pinnacle of life’s greatest! Even in the huge Axe Dojo I have won 1,000 continuous matches, acquiring the domain lord huge axe fighter title.” The old man exclaimed, “And later on, along with my good friends, two similar domain lords who acquired the huge axe dojo fighter title, Mo Li Ya and Lai Meng Tuo, we founded the Three Axe Mountain organization together.”

“Back then, I was the leader and the two assisted me.”

“Later on they both became undying, yet I remained a sector lord.”

“Ambition!”

“If my plan had succeeded, the moment I became an undying, I would have become an absolute warrior amongst the undying!” The old man’s eyes gleamed, it burned an incomparably strong sense of longing, “Even if I joined the Ganwu universe country, I would have immediately become the ultimate undying at the peak under the country leader.”

“An undying under the Ganwu universe country leader?” Hong was shocked.

“Within Black Dragon Mountain starfield, do you know how many undying there are?” The old man asked.

“Two.” Hong replied.

The god country leader of Ice Neptune and Sacred land Black Dragon Mountain leader, both were undying. Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god all knew this.

“How many starfields are there in the Ganwu universe country?” The old man asked.

“Over 13 thousand.” Hong was shocked.

If every star field had two undying's, with all of them added together, that would be shocking.

"Haha..." The old man laughed, "The number of undying under the Ganwu country leader exceeds 10,000! And there are many more that belong to the Virtual Universe Company, Huge Axe Dojo, Universe First Bank, Universe Galaxy Bank and Universe Mercenary Alliance, these five great leviathans."

"Over 10,000?" Hong held his breath.

"Don't be surprised. Why don't you take a look at just how vast a universe country is." The old man exclaimed, "It may look like a lot, but it is the result of countless years of work. In terms of probability...for a sector lord to breakthrough to the undying, the probability is simply too low."

A sector lord's life span barely exceeds 10 million years.

The number of sector lords in the Ganwu universe country exceeds a million, with their life span ending every 10 million years. Although countless years had gone by, there are only so many undying.

"I've seen the light."

"We have to have our feet firmly planted on the ground, we cannot be over ambitious." The old man exclaimed and shook his

head, “For a sector lord to breakthrough to the undying, that alone is extremely difficult. I wasted millions of years, wasn’t it simply suicide? Who would have thought fate would be playing with me even when I’ve finally seen the light…”

“Let’s not talk about anything else.”

The old man looked at Hong and smiled, “My affairs, I’ve told you most of it.”

“Light and time, these two major origin laws, I can teach you and try my best to help you.” The old man looked at Hong, “I dare say…even amongst millions of sector lords within the Ganwu universe country, even though I can’t say I am the number one, however I can definitely say without any doubt that I am in the top three! Even against an undying, I have a certain guarantee of escaping alive.”

Hong looked with shock at the old man.

“I was considered a legend in the Ganwu universe country. Even undying had to show me respect.”

“If you are willing to accept me as a teacher, then you must be prepared to roam around the endless universe.” The old man emphasized, “I’ve just left my isolation. With only 20,000 years or so of my life span left, I would like to see many places before I die. If you are willing to accept me as your teacher, then once you become my disciple, you naturally will have to follow me!”

“At the same time, I will not give up on my training.”

“In my final 20,000 years, I will still risk it all and fight to breakthrough to become an undying, even though the end of my life span is right before me.” The old man looked at Hong, “Hence I could enter isolation at any time without any means to look after you. But, when that time does come, I will arrange for a bodyguard for you. The moment you accept me, you need to be prepared for all this.”

Hong creased his eyebrows, “Roam around? For 20,000 years?”

“Right.” The old man nodded.

“You don’t have to rush to come up with an answer right away. Think carefully about your decision. I’ll give you 10 days to ponder over it, you can answer me after 10 days.” The old man finished his sentence and immediately began to head out.

As one who’s able to become an absolute warrior, these people all chased to reach the pinnacle of life itself.

And along this path many of them would create their own secret techniques that belonged to only them. These techniques were the result of all their blood and sweat. Especially in the face of death, these absolute warriors couldn’t bear to watch their countless years of work creating these techniques to all go to waste without someone to inherit them. To find an outstanding disciple, this was the mindset of many facing death.

9 star bay little district.

Luo Feng and Thunder god watched as the old man, Jiang Tian Chen and Mingyu left.

“Big brother.” Thunder god asked, “What did that head general find you for?”

Luo Feng too looked at Hong.

“He wants to accept me as his disciple.” Hong laughed, “Thinking about it, I’m considered a pioneer of the first generation on earth. Yet, as someone else accepting me as a disciple, I can’t help but say…the strong of the universe are indeed plenty, with many of them from other places and are much stronger than us. They do have the rights to be our teachers. I was actually prepared to accept him earlier.”

“It didn’t happen?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Right.”

Hong nodded, “If I do take him as my teacher, I will have to follow him and wander around. Leaving earth, leaving the Black Dragon Mountain starfield and wandering the universe for 20,000 years.”

“20,000 years?” Thunder god stared.

“I was hesitating whether or not to take him as my teacher.” Hong creased his eyebrows, “Actually even if I wander the universe with him, I can still contact my family through the virtual universe network and meet you guys there as well. However... leaving earth for 20,000 years, it still feels...”

China’s culture was only 5000 years old.

Hong has to wander about in the universe for 20,000 years. To Hong who wasn’t even a hundred years old, this was indeed an extravagant number.

“Of course you have to take him as your teacher.”

The little virtual assistant on Luo Feng’s shoulder Babata raised his tiny hand and pointed at Hong, “You idiot, that is Luo! The founder of the Three Axe Mountain Luo. The one people deem as the time sector lord. Many undying stay on good terms with him, and treat him on equal grounds. Many sector lords are willing to listen to his pointers, this is a truly respectable and big figure in the Black Dragon Mountain starfield.

“Time sector lord” Luo Feng and Thunder god were shocked by that name.

“Time sector lord, what a bombastic name.” The virtual assistant on Thunder god’s shoulder Lord Wu glared at Babata, “Only a spoiled wimpy brat will brag like that. That old man earlier dares to call himself the time sector lord?”

“You sick pervert who was locked in isolation for 10 million years, what do you know.” Babata pointed at Lord Wu, “Luo is a top notch figure of these 10 million years. During that time you were locked away in the world within a world, you don’t know anything. You have no right at all to talk crap. You better listen to this demon lord here.”

“You wimpy brat!” Lord Wu roared.

“I’ve followed my owner for over 10 million years, I’ve lived longer than you!!!” Babata pointed at Lord Wu and roared.

Luo Feng and Thunder god rubbed their heads.

My god.

These two living AI’s. Every time they met, they would engage in a squabble.

“I will think well about it.” Hong went silent.

“Listen to me, there’s no wrong in it.” Babata repeated.

The arrival of the legendary head general Luo from the Three Axe Mountain had indeed led to Hong thinking. In the meantime, the groups in the arena wars engaged in their battles swiftly, very quickly. After five days worth of time, the 1,000 groups had

finished all their battles, with 90,000 being eliminated and only 10,000 left.

These 10,000 had the chance to enter the name list with only 900 slots.

After entering the namelist, one could represent the Ganwu universe country and compete against the pinnacle of geniuses from the other universe countries.

……

Once the arena wars had ended, the Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay once again received two guests.

“Luo feng.” A familiar voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned to look. It was that old man with a head full of white, “Bu De Asuka sector lord, this silver haired old man was standing beside a pale and expressionless man with purple eyes. On his forehead this man had one more vertical eye, it was looking casually at Luo Feng.

A formless force of energy transmitted over.

“Hm?” Luo feng grit his teeth, this person’s aura was extremely strong.

“Not bad.” The purple eyed man slightly nodded.

“Luo Feng, let me introduce you, this is a great undying being from the Ganwu universe country...the god leader Kun Shalo.” The silver haired old man introduced.

Luo Feng stared at the expressionless purple eyed man before him whose aura was extremely powerful, and he felt extremely shocked by this aura. After so many years, he had never come face to face with an actual undying! Undying...that level of being, maybe in places like the Ganwu universe country which is a high level civilization, an undying still had to lower his head. However in other empires, no one dared provoke an undying.

An eternal being.

One who could split the land and skies, he actually came to visit him?

“My respects god leader.” Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

“Hm.” Kun Shalo slightly nodded.

Even though this Kun Shalo was a man, he gave Luo feng a feeling...a very peculiar feeling. His aura was peculiar, it was almost like an aura of an extremely gentle lady. Only that vertical eye would occasionally give off a bone chilling heart palpitating feeling.

“Luo Feng, the reason for my arrival here is to give an order from the Country leader.” Kun Shalo muttered.

Luo Feng was shocked, Ganwu country leader?

“He personally sent me here. This should represent how much he values you.” Kun Shalo continued to mutter, “This genius battle, after all our Ganwu universe country will finally send out the top 1,000 strongest to compete in the pinnacle fights with the other universe countries, the entire universe’s 1,008 human universe countries.”

“1,008 universe countries, the number of pinnacle geniuses representatives will only be a little more than a million.”

“And the virtual universe company will finally absorb the top 1,000 among the winners.”

“1,008 universe countries will each send 1,000 geniuses, yet only the final 1,000 from all the participants will be absorbed.” Kun Shalo looked at Luo Feng, “This means to say, on estimate, there’s about only one spot from each universe country. Our universe country will send out 1,000 people, yet it’s still not guaranteed that we will get a spot.”

Luo Feng nodded.

The universe’s top 1,000, that was extremely difficult to achieve. Even Babata had said that Luo Feng had no hopes at all.

Over 1,000 vast and huge universe countries, the final 1,000 will be absorbed, the conditions for the Virtual Universe Company were extremely brutal and strict.

“Indeed!”

“As one of the pinnacle leviathans of the universe humans, the Virtual Universe Company who nurtures geniuses, they have the best conditions and overall facilities such as the Primal universe, many secret areas, different types of treasures, the best teachers and so on” Kun Shalo looked at Luo Feng, “Alas, there will still only be 1000 of them, who will actually get the right to have the Virtual Universe Company spend countless amounts of resources to train them.”

“According to the country leader’s order.”

“If you can make it into the entire universe’s top 1,000 and enter the Virtual Universe Company, becoming one of their internal core member, that will be a good thing. Not only will it be beneficial for you, our Ganwu universe country will also receive huge rewards.”

“However, If you fail, you can enter our Ganwu universe country instead. With you current talent, you have the qualifications to enter our secret land of our universe country...the Ganwu secret area!” Kun Shalo said, “Within the Ganwu secret area, you too will receive the best nurturing and training.”

Kun Shalo glanced at Luo Feng, “Little punk, to achieve the top

1,000 of the entire universe, I'd advise you to not get your hopes up. To be able to enter the universe country's Ganwu secret area is already countless people's dream." Finishing up, Kun Shalo immediately vanished.

"Luo Feng, congratulations." The silver haired old man said.

"Right. Undyings... most of them are eccentric! Don't mind him too much." The silver haired man laughed.

"I don't mind." Luo Feng smiled, "Would I dare?"

"To actually receive an undying messenger, this states just how much the Ganwu country leader values your talent." The silver haired old man smiled, "From what I know...from this batch of geniuses, the ones that got the same notification to be able to enter the Ganwu secret area, are only those who've stepped through the gateway of the origin laws."

Luo Feng nodded.

Very quickly, the silver haired old man left too.

Luo Feng quietly sat within his own house, pondering.

"Two paths?"

"One of them was to enter the Ganwu universe country core."

“The other one was to enter the core of the Virtual Universe Company.”

On Luo Feng’s shoulder, Babata yawned and muttered, “Don’t think about it, the Virtual Universe Company, that sort of super leviathan, its wealth and resources will shock you. To be trained by them with countless amount of valuable resources, one would have to be at the level of elites of the entire universe, as their natural talents are absolute. To be trained and nurtured while receiving only the best resources, as long as they don’t die along the way in the elimination stages, their achievements would all be amazing in the future.”

“Die?” Luo Feng was shocked, “These are the absolute pinnacle of geniuses from the 1,008 human universe countries, will they die so easily?”

“To nurture and produce the best, the best process is death by elimination, isn’t that very normal?” Babata shook his head, “No matter who it is, without experiencing the fear of life and death, how will one improve. And during these life or death experiences, how can one not get injured?”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but nod his head.

“Don’t think about it.”

“People have different paths from you.” Babata shook his head, “That Kun Shalo said the right thing. The most realistic path is to

enter the Ganwu universe secret area. This Ganwu universe country is also considered a huge power within the universe. The Ganwu country leader...that is an even bigger power, a super existence that can shake the entire universe!”

“By entering the Ganwu secret area and receiving the best nurture, your achievements will be extremely high in the future.” Babata said, “Back then your teacher lost out as he was a lone wolf. If your teacher had a backing like the Ganwu country leader, that sort of existence, how would that bastard dare come kill your teacher.”

“Ganwu country leader, is he much more powerful than my teacher?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“You must be joking!”

“That’s an invincible being that not only created a universe country, but also one that commanded that universe country for a trillion years.” Babata said, “Of course...compared to the super leviathan such as the Virtual Universe Country, there’s no comparison at all. I heard the primal universe is something the Virtual Universe Company owns internally, whoever they wish to let in, they can do so without any problem.”

Luo Feng blinked a couple of times.

“Hence, Luo Feng, within this universe, there will always be someone stronger, a genius above others, a mountain higher than others!”

“Even if you enter within the core of the virtual universe company, the competition will be incomparably intense! A genius battle that happens once every 10,000 years, yet absorbing only 1,000 absolute geniuses. Calculate yourself, after all these years, just how many geniuses will there be within that Virtual Universe Company?” Babata asked, “Hence, if you enter the Virtual Universe Company, the number of strong people are like the clouds, if you are not strong enough, you will be trampled upon!”

“Naturally, you cannot enter.”

“Realistically speaking, you should just stay within the Ganwu secret area.” Babata said, “The Ganwu secret area is already a sacred land that countless people will drool over just to hear about it. I am speaking so much because I want you to realize that entering Ganwu secret area is the best option for you. You are considered exceptional within that area, at the same time don’t get proud. Because in the Virtual Universe Company there are a million people even more outstanding than you.”

Luo Feng blinked hard.

This was a psychological blow for Luo Feng.

This Babata really knew how to knock a person down.

Chapter 47 – The Only Opponent

Sitting in the chair, Luo Feng poured himself a cup of tea. As it flowed into the cup, a thought occurred to him. “Babata is right. My current strength is far from that of an absolute genius! If I want to make it into the universe top 1,000, it is indeed hard!”

“My skills, control of spirit weapon, battle experience, amplifier and mental state, these may all be not bad. However, compared to all the geniuses of the entire universe, it definitely ain’t at the top.”

“A few powerful warriors, like my teacher or that Luo, towards the later stages in life have all created their own secret techniques.”

“Of course no matter what I do, I have to do it step by step. I first have to learn the techniques created by others first before slowly creating my own. And the current me…I’ve just begun.”

“In a group of sheep, even if I become the strongest, I’d still only be a stronger sheep!”

“And compared to a group of lions, even if I’m not the strongest, I’d still be an intrepid lion.”

“To improve! I have to get into the core of the Virtual Universe Company!”

“I am weak.”

“But the main reason is because my training time is too short. This genius battle stretches on for quite some time, I still have time to get stronger!”

Luo Feng pondered, his eyebrows creased.

The leviathan of the human universe, the Virtual Universe Company’s core, it only absorbs 1,000 geniuses every 10,000 years. After generations, there should be millions of geniuses within. And after countless years of toil, the number of undying within would far exceed that of the Ganwu universe country!

Within there!

That was where the true outstanding and pinnacle of strengths were!

“If I want to compete, I have to compete with the strongest!”

“My training time is short. But, as time goes on, I will be able to catch up to them.”

“Hardwork!”

“Hardwork!”

“Right now the first goal is to get into the 1,000 slots of the Ganwu universe country internal namelist.” Luo Feng made the decision without discussing more with Babata.

Growing up, Luo Feng had never admitted defeat before.

Even against the incomparably powerful and seemingly invincible golden horned beast before, Luo Feng never stepped back.

If it was said...

That his younger brother Luo Hua enjoyed the battle in the universe financial market, every time going in to compete and slaughter, earning and making fortunes.

Then Luo Feng enjoyed chasing after the pinnacle of life itself. Constantly breaking through and improving himself time and again, defeating the opponents one by one! Even with difficulty, setbacks, competition and opponents, he had no fear. The only fear would be that of no difficulty at all. When that day finally arrives where he stands at the peak, without any opponents, he would fear the loneliness.

The strong are lonely.

On earth Luo Feng had tasted that feeling, he didn’t like the feeling of loneliness.

“I’ll push myself and give it a shot!”

“We’ll see just how far I, Luo Feng can push to!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, it was a light of anticipation of his path of the strong.

The arena wars lasted for a total of 5 days. When it ended, the 10,000 participants that made it through had one day of rest, and within that one day…the organizing party the Virtual Universe Company also gave out information on the upcoming battles and informed every participant.

……

China time year 2066, July 22nd, night.

Virtual universe Black Dragon Mountain island, 9 star bay district, Luo Feng’s living room.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god were gathered there with ten other people.

“How are the arena fights going to be distributed?”

“Brother in law, who are you fighting against in the first match?”

“Only 900 slots, yet 10,000 people are competing. How do you even compete?”

A group of people were discussing.

“Quiet.” Luo Feng pointed to mid air. Immediately a screen appeared above the dining table, on it were a blur of words with descriptions, “This is the list for the 10,000 participants of the arena fights.”

“Ah?”

“The words are too small.”

The whole family ran over to take a closer look.

“Enlarge it.” Luo Feng pointed at the corner of the screen and immediately a portion of the screen began to enlarge, there was Luo Feng’s name there.

“Big brother, you are up against Sai Walo first? After winning that, you’ll battle against the winner of the next group?” Luo Hua examined it carefully.

“Right!”

Luo Feng nodded, looking at the people who surrounded him. Among them were his brother in law Xu Gang and others, even Hong and his children and families, Thunder god’s daughter and his own family. With a large group of people together, it was indeed bustling.

“This arena battle, the process itself is very simple.”

“1v1, the winner will advance, while the loser will enter the loser’s circle.”

“These 10,000 people will be split into a total of 5,000 groups! Of which after the first battle, there will be 5,000 winners and 5,000 losers.”

“The 5,000 winners will continue to fight it out and after the second battle, there’ll remain 2500 winners.”

“Moving on!”

“After the third battle, there’ll remain 1250 winners.”

“After the fourth, there’ll only be 625 winners left! After the fourth battle, the 625 winners will immediately take up 625 slots of the namelist.” Luo Feng said.

The rules were simple.

1v1, they only need to fight four battles! And there’ll be 625 left!

“I say, my brother in law, within these 900 slots, after taking out the 625, wouldn’t that only leave 275 slots?” Xu Gang said curiously, beside him Luo Hua laughed, “Xu Gang, didn’t you

realize from what my brother said before...the losers enter a losers' circle, I estimate the remaining 275 slots will come from there."

Thunder god laughed, "Right, Luo Hua is smart. One has to know that the victor of a 1v1 battle is usually decided very quickly. However there's a huge loophole, that is...there might very likely be two absolute warriors battling against each other, and one of them will end up getting eliminated. This loophole results in the company very easily eliminating a true genius."

"Right."

Luo Feng nodded, "Hence the losers' circle. From the 10,000 people, there will be 625 winners, and the losers circle will have 9,375 people."

"These 9375 will engage in a cruel and long competition, which will finally result in the final 275 being picking out." Luo Feng said.

"Cruel and long competition?"

"Why cruel?"

"Long? How long?"

A group of people turned to Luo Feng.

"This competition is for the losers circle of 9375 people. Every

person has to battle with the other 9374 others in 1v1 matches! Meaning...the losers circle, every 9375 of them has to battle 9374 times! Winning a match gains 1 point, should both parties die together in a draw, that would mean 0 points! Finally, it will go by how high the points a person has. The top 275 will get into the final 275 slots!" Luo Feng said.

"My god!" Xu Gang stared wide eyed.

"Wow." Little Hai exclaimed, "9374 matches? When will this battle end?"

"Right, just how much time is spent on this? With these over 9,000 matches, it will definitely take forever." A group of them all sighed. One must know that in life or death battles, to battle continuously, one's entire mental state, spirit and strength would be fatigued and focus would drop.

Hence even though each battle time was short, it was still impossible to hold multiple matches a day.

"What the virtual universe company announced was that this competition itself will probably go on for close to 3 years, as each person will battle 10 matches a day." Luo Feng said, "The entire genius battle...from the initial world elimination battle of the Ganwu universe country, the longest time consuming item is this."

"Close to 3 years?"

“That’s long.”

……

The arena fights were very quick. Every battle eliminated half of its people, requiring only four successive wins to get a slot!

On a balcony in Luo Feng’s villa in 9 star bay district, late night.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god sat by a round table.

“Third brother, your situation isn’t looking good.” Hong emphasized.

“Among these 10,000 participants, there’s a total of 521 who’ve stepped through the gateway of the origin laws, and from four matches they will pick the final 625.Theoretically speaking, these 521 should all get a slot.” Thunder god muttered, “However, I don’t know just how this Virtual Universe Company distributed the teams. They actually let origin law geniuses meet each other?”

Right.

Even though according to the footage of the arena wars before, they concluded that there was a total of 521 who’ve stepped through the origin laws gateway, If they distributed it properly… the Virtual Universe Company could have left these 521 not ever meet and get a slot.

However...

The Virtual Universe Company didn't do it that way. A large portion of these origin laws geniuses didn't have to ever meet in their four matches, but a small group of them, close to 100 of them did have to meet each other!

Like Luo Feng himself!

According to the distribution, for his first, second and third battles, he had a certain guarantee to win! However the fourth match...according to his list, as long as that origin law genius didn't lose along the way, then his 4th opponent would be another who had stepped through the gateway!

His name was Rong Jun, his nickname was Savage.

Savage Rong Jun!

Back then he was the absolute warrior that killed his second brother Thunder god, a powerful being that massacred his arena wars group.

"According to this distribution, there'll be close to 100 origin law warriors who will meet in the fourth match." Hong nodded, "And these close to 100 people were the top most intrepid performers of the arena wars."

“Whether it was Savage Rong Jun or madman Luo Feng, they were the most powerful and massacred their arena wars group. They were just invincible.

“In terms of strength.”

“This close to 100 people, should belong to the upper echelon of the strong.” Hong emphasized, “Right now the Virtual Universe Company is obviously wanting them to meet to test them out. After all, the loser still has a chance in the loser’s circle. In the circle, there will be less than 50 origin law warriors, and there are 275 slots for the losers circle. These origin law warriors, even if they lose their fourth match, through the loser’s circle, they can still get a slot.”

“From the Virtual Universe Company’s point of view, it’s probably to test this group of geniuses.”

“The most elite meeting one another and engaging in 9,374 matches thereafter. This is probably one of the best training for these people.” Hong said.

Luo Feng and Thunder god both nodded.

Makes sense.

The Virtual Universe Company organized this to pick out the most pinnacle of geniuses. Hence making them fight against each other and picking out the most exceptional was a very normal

circumstance.

“Third brother.” Hong emphasized as he looked at Luo feng, “The first to third battles, you shouldn’t have any trouble. Right now your only opponent is the fourth match where you’ll meet Savage Rong Jun. I’ve seen his strength personally, it’s extremely terrifying, much stronger than your group’s Pushkin.”

“I’ve exchanged blows with him, he finished me in one shot.” Thunder god said, “He is very strong, especially his slice down from his blade, it feels extremely heavy.”

“I know.” Luo Feng nodded.

If he wanted to get a slot in that namelist early, he would have to defeat Savage. And from that Savage’s arena war battle, he had watched as a spectator…it was indeed terrifying.

“Who asked you to perform so fearlessly.” Thunder god laughed, “It’s because your performance was too strong and you killed the other geniuses like they were dogs, the Virtual Universe Company values you. Hence, they arranged Savage to battle you. Letting the two strongest fight it out!”

Chapter 48 – Successive Victories

China year 2066, July 23rd.

Virtual universe, in the space that belonged to the Huge Axe dojo. On island number 29,904, the arena duels were about to begin.

“Attention all, standing in the center of the arena right now is the genius from the Dragon Horn starfield, Sai Walo.” Following the loud announcement throughout the entire arena, the audience immediately erupted in a wave of cheers and roars. The over 1 hundred million spectators from the Dragon Horn starfield were incomparably excited, all shouting as loud as they could.

“Sai Walo!”

“Sai Walo!”

“You are the strongest!”

Over one hundred million excited cheers could be heard.

The two sides, from two different starfields, were both given one hundred million tickets.

Hence today’s match had one billion spectators, of which two hundred million were separately from the Black Dragon Mountain starfield and the Dragon Horn starfield.

“The next to take the stage is the one you’ve all been waiting for. From the Black Dragon Mountain empire…an absolute genius, Luo Feng!!!” The commentator’s voice was even louder than the first time, obviously the commentator was a little more biased towards Luo Feng.

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

It wasn’t just the black dragon mountain empire’s over one hundred million people cheering loudly, more than half the people from the other eight hundred million from the other starfields in the Ganwu universe country too were cheering his name. Even though both had made it through the arena wars, obviously Luo Feng who had dominated his group…had won over the support from many in the Ganwu universe country.

While a trillion eyes were watching him, Luo Feng followed the same pathway and walked into the center of the arena.

The cheers got even louder!

Countless human ladies of different races all shouted and screeched, some even fainting. The 100% virtual simulation had such an effect, even bodily functions were simulated.

There were two youths standing in the arena. One with a dark golden long rod and dressed in dark grey armor, the black haired youth Luo Feng. The other who was standing on a large board, smiling and with a gentle aura, Sai Walo.

“Luo Feng, all the best.” Sai Walo bowed respectfully, displaying his manners.

Luo Feng just stood there, completely immersed in his mental state, like a volcano, without any reaction at all.

He didn’t know why, even though Sai Walo before him seemed very courteous, it gave him an outrageous sense of discomfort, as for why he had that feeling, he couldn’t explain it.

“You too.”

A tall, sturdy and handsome commentator smiled, “This will be very similar to the arena wars. As the battle progresses, the space you have will continue to shrink. It’ll only require 5 minutes before the entire space will shrink down to only a diameter of 1m. Hence your battle will at most last 5 minutes.”

“Thanks.” Sai Walo smiled and looked at the commentator.

Luo Feng only made a noise to reply.

“Alright, let the battle…begin!” the commentator smiled. The moment he said begin, his entire being vanished, leaving only the two participants.

“Sou!”

Sai Walo stood on his huge board, swiftly flying into the distance, as quick as lightning.

“Escaping?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, the soaring shuttle immediately became a beam of golden light, obviously faster than Sai Walo before.

The original size of the arena was a diameter of 30km. As time passed, it shrank more and more. With Luo Feng and Sai Walo’s speed, in the blink of an eye they were already at the edges of the space.

“Now’s the time.”

Sai Walo could feel their distance closing, he suddenly turned and simultaneously Luo Feng, who was rushing over decreased his speed as they grew dangerously close. Sai Walo’s eyes had a gleam of madness: “Go! Kill him!!!” The huge board beneath his feet shot out a silver light, this light wrapped itself around his green energy flow around. It moved autonomously and separated into 9 silver arrows, shooting at Luo Feng at the same time.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!…

9 silver arrows!

It was like 9 shooting stars shooting suddenly and swiftly at Luo Feng.

“Even though the Nan Shen Armament is powerful, it does have its weaknesses!” Sai Walo’s eyes were filled with a strong anticipation, one for victory, “That is its defense, it’s weakness is its defense!”

“Your power is only so much and you dare split it into 9?” Luo Feng snorted coldly, “And you really think I have no methods for defend myself?”

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved.

The soaring shuttle below him immediately shot out beams of light, swiftly forming 16 peculiar shields surrounding him. These 16 shields had golden threads weaving through them. The surface of the shields, 8 of which were facing outside while the other 8 were facing inwards, revolving both internally and externally. The speed was swift, as all of them were infused with some origin laws.

This move…the sword array!

The soaring shuttle’s second form, its defensive form, the sword array!

There were a total of three forms for the soaring shuttle.

The first offensive form was the mountain bulwark, the defensive form was the mountain bulwark shield.

The second form‘s offense was the golden swordfish, the defensive form was the sword array.

As for the third form, one had to reach the universe level to use it. Hence the current Luo Feng could only use the swordfish formation along with the sword array.

The 8 shields floated about his surroundings, the other 8 formed an outer layer.

Inside and outside, covered with shields which revolved about and moved up and down, with golden light connecting them, an outrageous energy emanated from it. Infused with Luo Feng’s comprehension of the golden origin laws, its defense was simply perfect. The 9 silver arrows shot over and the 16 shields slightly altered its speed, leaving no openings at all.

“Dang, Dang Dang…” Clashes could be heard.

The power of the 9 silver arrows wasn’t strong in the first place, it couldn’t even move the 16 shields defense.

……

Actually, normal spirit weapons weren't like the soaring shuttle, which had many formations and uses. Under normal circumstances, the stronger one's spirit reading power was, the more focused the weapon would be.

A pure attacking spirit weapon!

A pure defensive one!

A pure flying one!

Gold represented strength and piercing power of the sun! This Nan Shen Armament was a purely offensive spirit weapon, extremely tyrannical!

Offense! When it is condensed, it's very powerful, when it is separated it gets weaker.

And this Sai Walo knew that if he did not risk it all he couldn't kill Luo Feng. Hence he gambled on Luo Feng not having a form of defense with his spirit weapons. Hence he controlled the 9 silver arrows . By dispersing his spirit energy through these 9 arrows, it made his energy and power divide by 9, making the power and strength drop. He was gambling it all on this one attack chance.

Against the 9 silver arrows, Luo Feng using his Nan Shen armament could at most block 2 or 3 of them, that way, Sai Walo would have a chance of victory.

A pity…

Luo Feng had a defensive spirit weapon! It was the soaring shuttle!

The soaring shuttle had flying and defensive capabilities along with offensive powers too. Because Luo Feng had trained rigorously and studied it, using the soaring shuttle's defensive form the sword array, was the best option and choice. Maybe there were better defensive spirit weapons, but Luo Feng didn't have the time to study them.

"It's over." Sai Walo's expression changed.

"Chi!"

The golden long rod became a golden rainbow and pierced right through his spirit weapon and straight through his forehead.

First battle, Luo Feng was victorious!

Second battle.

"Luo Feng, I know I'm not your match, but I…still want to compete with my all!" Luo Feng's second opponent admitted it the moment he stepped on the arena, that he wasn't a match for him.

Very quickly.

Second battle, Luo Feng won easily.

……

Third battle.

The third opponent's strength was very strong, comparable to Pushkin. Especially the strength of the huge axe he used was shocking.

However!

Against the 9 silver arrows from before, Luo Feng's Nan Shen Armament couldn't fight it all. However against this huge axe, Luo Feng easily controlled the golden rainbow to fight force with force. By using the soaring shuttle he stood at a distance and controlled it from afar. After six continuous attacks, that huge axe wielding tall and sturdy man's arms were ripped and broken with blood spewing from his mouth, without any strength left in his arms to defend,

The third battle, Luo Feng won again.

Three battles, Three victories!

Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay district, Luo Feng's

home entrance, Luo Feng sat face to face with the silver haired old man Bu De Asuka.

“You have achieved three victories in three battles. Right now the entire black dragon mountain island is filled with discussions about you.” The silver haired old man laughed, “Within this virtual universe network, many entertainment programs and newscasts are all keeping an eye on you.”

Luo Feng laughed.

Even while sitting at home, they could hear the people’s cheers from the bars outside. These were all from the victories of Luo Feng. Due to these victories, there were large drunken celebrations all over.

“Lord Bu De Asuka, I’m pretty sure you came here not just to tell me these.” Luo Feng smiled as he looked at the silver haired old man.

“I bring word from his majesty.”

The silver haired old man looked at Luo Feng, “In tomorrow’s fourth match, as long as you win, you will receive a slot! His majesty is hoping that you will prepare well and not get careless. After all, your opponent is very strong.”

“I know.” Luo Feng nodded, an image of his opponent appeared in his mind.

That messy haired bare footed Savage youth.

“Defeat him!” Luo Feng thought within.

……

Ganwu universe country, within a vast starfield.

A D6 disc shaped universe ship was stopped on the moon of a mineral planet, within one of its resting rooms.

A barefooted, messy haired three meter tall man, carrying two short blades sat crossed legged on the alloy surface ground within the room. He looked up a photo hung on the wall, it was a black scruffy looking punk with arms around the shoulders of a tall and sturdy man.

“Father!”

This Savage youth, was quietly looking at the photo, muttering, “Even though you aren’t my birth father, however…”

The savage youth gritted his teeth, saying softly, “I, Tu Man, swear…I will definitely, definitely kill that bastard! Definitely!!!” His eyes were filled with a bone chilling gleam, almost like a hungry, mad lone wolf.

“He is an undying!”

“He is the emperor that built an empire!”

“However I will definitely…I will definitely kill him! Father, just watch…I will rush into the top 1,000 in this genius battle and enter the virtual universe company! Even becoming the strongest within my generation in the Virtual Universe Company!” Savage said softly, “And on the day I kill him, it will be the day I will regain the name Tu Man.”

Chapter 49 – The Strong Clash

“It’s Madman!”

“That Madman has come, quickly flee.”

Chi!

The black haired youth in the dark grey armor walked coldly down the alley. A golden swordfish recklessly slaughtered a group of geniuses, their bodies flew about, fresh blood staining the silent alley.

The elimination stage footage of Luo Feng slaughtering were continuously played.

“Him, the absolute genius that has struck fear among countless geniuses, so much so they call him Madman…Luo Feng! He had been hiding his strength all the while and only unleashing his true weapon the Nan Shen Armament in the arena wars and winning every battle. only one word could describe him, invincible!”

……

“Savage.”

“I admit I’m not your match, I don’t wish to battle against you.”

“Even if you don’t wish to, you still have to!”

A thick powerful voice resounded, that barefooted, 3m tall Savage immediately closed the distance between them. The blade in his hand seemed light as he swung it. The blow however seemed to conceal the weight of heavy mountains behind it, immediately blowing away the opponent’s defense and killing him on the spot!

The Savage Rong Jun’s every slaughter scene too was constantly broadcasted.

“Him, relying just on his strength, has caused countless warriors to tremble, the one called Savage…Rong Jun! From the elimination stage to the arena wars, wielding the battle knife, killing all targets, till now there hasn’t been anyone capable of resisting him!”

“The two of them! Madman Luo Feng and Savage Rong Jun, in this fourth round of the arena duels will engage in a much anticipated fight on island number 00001!”

“One Madman, one Savage.”

“Who’s stronger?”

“Will it be Madman continue his winning streak or will Savage kill this Madman?”

“Everything will be decided then. The highly anticipated match

of the fourth round, the two pinnacle geniuses fight!!!”

A broadcast of about 15 minutes long appeared at the top of the Virtual Universe company’s Ganwu station page. Only the Virtual Universe company would have been able to get such footage from that first round. The moment that broadcast came out, it immediately resulted in countless in the Ganwu universe downloading it and swiftly spreading it throughout the universe country.

Eruption!

Countless people from the Ganwu universe country rushed and fought to buy tickets for the battle. Even though the fourth round of the arena duels had many matchups, the one that people were truly waiting to watch was this 49th match. This 49th match was a battle between geniuses who had stepped through the gateway of the origin laws.n terms of power, the madman Luo Feng and the Savage Rong Jun were both well known!

Their battle was arranged to be on island number 00001. The ticket prices were extremely expensive too.

However...

The number of people who were actually trying to buy these tickets was an enormous number as well. Especially since that special broadcast was released...the names Madman and Savage spread immediately throughout the trillion galaxies. This video had made countless people anticipate the battle.

The time had finally come, China time year 2066, July 26th!

Within the virtual universe where the Huge Axe dojo had opened a space, island number 00001, a battle between absolute pinnacle warriors was about to happen! The participants were Madman Luo Feng and Savage Rong Jun.

“Madman!”

“Savage!”

“Luo Feng!”

“Rong Jun!”

The entire dojo’s one billion seats were filled to the brim. The battle hadn’t even begun, but the footage broadcasted on a big screen in the center of the arena had already caused the countless spectators to cheer and roar for the warriors they supported. Especially the Black Dragon Mountain empire and the Golden Sword empire, the spectators from these empires were shouting with pride for their own empire.

Simultaneously, within the preparation room.

Luo Feng was again wearing the dark grey armor and carrying a dark golden long rod. There were only two seats in this

preparation room. A passionate staffer appeared beside and pointed at a seat as he spoke: “Mr Luo Feng, please rest here. The battle is about to begin soon.”

Luo Feng nodded and walked towards the seat and sat down.

In his ears, he clearly heard the roars and cheers that resembled a tsunami.

“Hu!”

A human silhouette appeared.

Luo Feng opened his eyes to look. It was a tall and sturdy, still barefooted, messy haired man. However just from him standing there, he gave off a formless energy and strength!

It was almost as though he was the heavens and land itself and this natural abundance of power and energy made Luo Feng crease his eyebrows: “When I saw him before, it was from a distance in the arena. And from footage...I didn’t expect that within his person, the energy and aura is that strong! That strength itself directly affects his character!”

Living beings had auras!

If one’s aura became incomparably strong. It would make others detect it easily, and it was strong enough to be called energy.

Energy, this was a very broad term.

For example the normal people on earth with their thin and frail bodies, if they met a tall and sturdy and intimidating bandit, they could feel the pressure the enemy brought!

“Strong willpower, solid determination, strength, etc, all this contribute to the energy.

Like Luo Feng.

If the current him were to quietly train in the wilderness of earth, he would naturally emit an oppressing willpower. No matter how powerful the beasts were, they wouldn’t dare approach him.

“Mr Rong Jun, please rest here, the battle is about to begin.” The staff quickly received him.

“Hm.”

The savage youth sat directly opposite Luo Feng.

The two faced each other sitting.

The Savage youth’s tiger like eyes stared. It almost seemed like two beams of lightning were shooting out, making others not dare to make eye contact. Luo Feng however sat there like a dead

volcano, silent, cold, emanating killing intent. This made it hard for others to even touch him.

“You are Luo Feng? Madman Luo Feng?” The Savage youth’s voice was thick and powerful.

With his eyes shut and silently seating, Luo Feng suddenly opened his eyes and looked at Savage.

If anyone compared Luo Feng’s appearance to the golden horned beast, they would realize their eyes and gaze were almost identical, cold yet filled with killing intent!

The Savage youth felt shock within, “This Madman, his killing intent is heavy.”

“Something the matter?” Luo Feng spoke.

“Yes!”

Savage nodded, his eyes staring at Luo Feng, “The losers’ circle matches, I’m very interested in the 9,374 matches. This sort of high density matches will be useful to my training. I will definitely go participate.”

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, this Savage Rong Jun just said he wanted to take part in the losers’s circle matches. What did he mean?

“You are admitting defeat?” Luo Feng looked at Savage.

“No!” Savage stared at Luo Feng, “I’ve never had the mindset of admitting defeat. However, I will first defeat you! Then I will commit suicide and go participate in the loser’s’ circle matches!”

“Defeat me then suicide?” Luo Feng squinted his eyes.

“To obtain a slot in the namelist is not difficult for me at all.” Savage curled his lips, giving off a powerful battle aura, “I require battle, many many battles! Constantly training myself, and improving! Hence…Luo Feng, I hope you don’t disappoint me. Don’t let me defeat you in an instant!”

Within the preparation room.

Luo Feng closed his eyes and said coldly, “Relax, I will kill you directly, and send you to the losers’ circle!”

“Ah? I’m looking forward to it!” Savage smiled.

With his eyes shut and hearing these words, Luo Feng too revealed a smile.

Just from a few simple words, Luo Feng and Rong Jun already had a good feeling of their opponents. They were two people who were similar. They had absolute confidence in themselves, never

admitting defeat and indomitable in spirit!

Battle!

Battle!

Luo Feng and Rong Jun both felt each other's powerful fighting spirit and their absolute confidence!

"Mr Luo Feng, Mr Rong Jun, please head to the alley to prepare, the battle is about to begin." The staffer came over and spoke carefully.

"Hm."

Luo Feng and Savage stood at the same time. They exchanged glances, feeling each other's fighting spirit from within, following which they both headed directly to the alley.

The entire arena was completely full. The people were like the ocean, all races of humans from the trillion galaxies were all cheering loudly.

"From the Black Dragon Mountain empire, the Madman Luo Feng. From the Golden Sword empire, the Savage Rong Jun. The two of them are walking out now!" The commentator was a man, his voice extremely loud.

“Madman!”

“Madman!”

“Savage!”

“Savage!”

The spectators from the hundreds of millions of galaxies were incomparably excited. Compared to their actual names, their nicknames were actually much more accepted throughout.

Within the arena.

Luo Feng and Rong Jun faced off.

“The both of you should already know the arena duel rules.” The commentator faced the two of them. “This battle will determine who gets the slot on the namelist. The winner between you two will get a slot, while the loser will have to fight in the loser’s circle, engaging in a long tedious amount of battles. The two of you should understand already.”

“Then right now, let the battle…begin!”

With that shout.

The sound reverberated throughout the entire dojo. The commentator immediately vanished and the one billion spectators suddenly became silent. Everyone stared at the large arena which contained the only two participants in the center.

.....

The moment they heard the word begin, the two who had been suppressing themselves immediately exploded and unleashed their energies and auras simultaneously!

The strong usually had to suppress their energies. Just like how Luo Feng could not randomly explode and release his energies in presence of his family. As for someone like a sector lord to suppress his powers, even after suppression, with one look anyone could tell that his gaze gave of an extremely strong will power, causing normal star level warriors' souls to not be able to withstand it and crumble.

Battle!

The first fight was between beliefs and willpower!

Using strong auras and energies to pressure and cause fear in the opponent, affecting their state of mind. This was naturally beneficial to one in battle!

Whether it was Rong Jun or Luo Feng, they had never met such a powerful opponent before, Hence, the two of them simultaneously

released their energies, wanting to use it to affect their opponent's mental state and to cause fear and doubt within him. Only with that sort of mental state...

Would the opponent's strength potentially be reduced to only 60 or 70% of their full powers

"Hong!" Luo Feng's eyes became ice cold. A formless heart palpitating killing intent spread throughout....infused with Luo Feng's willpower and energy, immediately rushing at the opponent. A power that made people get distracted. Luo Feng was almost like a cold slaughtering absolute beast, standing upright and surveying the enemy.

"Hahaha..." Savage let out a carefree laughter, beneath his messy hair, his godlike eyes were locked on Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, let's battle! Battle!" An incomparably strong killing intent and energy immediately spread from him, a powerful fighting spirit infused with Savage's willpower...

Incomparably solid!

Immovable!

The auras clashed, the willpower and energies clashed, feeling each other's strength.

"Rumble!"

“Rumble!”

Beams of glaring and razor sharp golden energy flowed out. Beams of heavy mountain like ground yellow energy flowed and these energies covered both Luo Feng and Rong Jun, circling them as the centers.

Chapter 50 – Madness! Savagery!

“Battle, battle!” Savage was like a war god from the universe, roaring and his eyes were gleaming red.

Under the opponent’s influence, Luo Feng’s eyes were completely ice cold. His entire demeanor was like a beast being suppressed.

“Clang!”

Brandishing of blades!

Savage was barefooted. Every step he took had the strength and weight of 10 million kg. Even the arena with it’s diameter of 10km trembled as he took his steps. With just two steps, the tall and sturdy savage had already reached right before Luo Feng and that blade infused with ground yellow energy sliced straight at him.

Stepping on the soaring shuttle, Luo Feng fiercely retreated. His eyes staring hard, gritting his teeth, he squeezed out the words, “Kill!”

“Xiu!”

A golden light shot out from the dark golden long rod on his back. The 9 golden blades with complex engravings on them swiftly moved. Threads of gold weaved through the entire body, swiftly forming a golden blade! Compared to the blade from two months ago during the elimination round, the current golden

blade Luo Feng had formed was much more stable and formidable.

Rumble!

A golden rainbow shot towards Savage.

“Break!!!” Savage’s expression struggled. He roared softly while brutally slicing straight at the golden rainbow. Under the pressure of his yellow energy flow, along with Luo Feng’s eyes gleaming ice cold, the golden rainbow almost seemingly wanted to dodge this blade.

“Dang!” Even though it seemed like it was about to dodge it, that blade seemed to move a few inches and directly sliced that golden rainbow, causing it to be smashed away. The entire golden blade trembled for abit, almost as though it was about to fall apart.

Savage couldn’t help but take a few steps back too, his grip on the blade too seemed to have weakened.

“Big brother and second brother were right. This punk’s attack is extremely heavy. There hasn’t been anyone so far, who was able to almost break apart my golden blade with just one slice.” From far in mid air while controlling the golden blade, Luo Feng’s expression changed slightly.

“Gold, as strong and piercing as the sun?”

Savage stuck out his tongue and licked his thick lips. Following

which he violently roared, as though he was extremely excited.

“Savage!”

“Savage!”

The one billion spectators and the countless people were caught up in the moment, all roaring with all their might.

Within the arena.

“Go and die!” Luo Feng was still cold and not affected at all. As he coldly snorted, Immediately the golden blade floated again and accelerated, becoming a golden rainbow and rushing towards Savage.

Savage let out another roar and rushed straight towards it.

His pace fluctuated!

His silhouette became peculiar. Dodging time and again, it was completely erratic, swiftly closing in on Luo Feng.

“No matter what, I cannot let him get close.” Luo Feng stood on the soaring shuttle and increased the distance between them.

The golden rainbow once again rushed straight at Savage.

“Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang!”

Clashing with him time and again, almost like moving the ground and shaking the mountains. However, Savage seemed to be borrowing the energy from the clashes to change his direction and swiftly closing in on Luo Feng.

One had to know that at his level, one flash was a few hundred meters to kilometers of distance.

And Luo Feng couldn’t go too far, since with too much distance it would be extremely taxing to control his spirit weapon, which in turn would allow Savage the chance to draw close and attack! Luo Feng was afterall a controller, a long ranged fighter and not proficient at close combat.

“Incredible movement.” Luo Feng worked hard to dodge time and again, it was extremely dangerous!

Luckily relying on the comprehension of the gold origin laws, using the soaring shuttle had gotten much easier and his speed and flexibility had improved much more than before.

“This Luo Feng is really quick at fleeing.” Savage started to feel nervous. “Normally I’m able to immediately close in and kill a controller. However...this Luo Feng’s board spirit weapon is extremely nimble and flexible, dodging me everytime.”

……

The spectators in the arena, all one billion of them were all stunned by this scene.

These two, one strong and brutal. Even though he was charging head first, his movements were very peculiar, almost like an invincible war god as he chased down Luo Feng time and again.

The other was like an exceptional master, floating and dodging time and again against the opponent, making him unable to attack. At the same time controlling the spirit weapon to attack over and over!

It was two completely different styles of fighting.

One was a brutal fighter!

While, the other was a long ranged attacker!

“Savage is too strong. If this Madman slows down even just a little, just one slice would probably finish him.”

“This Madman is really strong. Everytime he clashes against that attack, that Savage’s body will definitely feel the tremors. In fact, he may even be already injured. If this goes on, Savage will definitely lose.”

……

Whether it was the one billion spectators in the arena or the countless people in the countless galaxies watching the broadcast all over, it did not matter what they deduced and concluded. Luo Feng and Rong Jun in the arena knew best about the predicament of their opponent.

Lightning fast attacks were exchanged over and over.

This carried on for a minute before stopping. Savage stood in the arena and stared at the distant Luo Feng. Luo Feng too had stopped, not continuing his attack.

“My hand.” Savage creased his eyebrows, feeling soreness in his entire right arm. The area between the thumb and the index finger had already ripped apart.

Matching force with force time and again!

Every attack was extremely terrifying. If it were a normal genius, just one clash would have broken his entire arm!

During the previous matches, when Luo Feng used the golden blade, with just one attack, he had broken the opponent’s entire arm. As one of the 9 godly weapons, using the Nan Shen Armament while combining origin laws and attacking, just how terrifying was that power? And Savage was well known for his brutality as well. Every slash he threw had cut right through every

opponent.

Two incredibly strong forces had clashed head on.

Continuously for about 10 times!

“I can’t go on like this. If this goes on, my right arm will become useless.” Savage stared hard at Luo Feng, “I have to bear the brunt of every clash. Yet, he’s just a spirit reader…the clashes don’t even affect his body at all. I’m definitely losing out!”

In mid air, dressed in dark grey armor, Luo Feng was shocked, “Even after ten continuous clashes, he’s actually completely fine. Using the Nan Shen Armament and going full force eats up a lot of my spirit energy. These ten attacks have used up more than half of my spirit energy.”

If this happened in reality, everything could be provided for with his core.

He didn’t have to worry about his spirit energy running out at all!

However in the virtual universe world, his body was designed according to the virtual universe’s standard. Every person’s body and spirit energy was the same. Even though he could recover his spirit energy naturally every second…this speed and level of recovery of a star level 9 paled by far in comparison to the golden horned beast’s core.

He had met with a difficulty.

Savage's right hand was injured, he couldn't carry on meeting force with force either.

Luo Feng's had less than half of his spirit energy left, he didn't dare keep dragging this on.

What to do?

Bated breaths.

The entire arena went silent as two of them held their breath and stared at each other from afar. Even the one billion spectators were silent as they watched.

And the Ganwu universe country, the trillions of universe humans watching this pinnacle fight broadcast were all incomparably nervous and waiting in anticipation.

……

Virtual universe, Ganwu continent, the largest construct in one of the buildings on a floating island above.

Within that construct was a large hall. The entire floor surface of that hall was made of a dark greenish black peculiar looking crystal

stone. On it were 64 slashes, which gave off a flicker that enticed people's souls. It made the entire hall give off a natural and yet a dream like peculiar aura.

Countless thrones were separated in there, dispersed in an orderly fashion.

In front of the big hall was a large screen. On it was the broadcast of Luo Feng and Rong Jin's battle.

"Virtual Universe Company actually placed both of them on the 00001 island. These two punks, their strengths are really not bad. However, they still can't be considered as the top of our Ganwu universe country's level."

"This little bit of strength can't make it to the top 10."

"However the top 100 or so, that's more like it."

Blurry and scattered throughout the thrones were a bunch of men and women. Some tall while others tiny, some old and some young. The one thing they had in common was that their auras were all incomparably strong. Some blazing while others ice cold, this group of people with their incredible life spans held the top positions within the Ganwu universe country, sat together and discussed.

"Not interesting."

“I still thought there’d be some surprise.”

“Same level as the previous years. Just average.”

This group of great existences talked very casually.

Within the arena.

Luo Feng and Savage had been silent for a total of 20 seconds, finally breaking the stalemate. As the arena duels at most lasted 5 minutes, the longer time dragged on..the space would shrink more to the point where Luo Feng who needed to dodge constantly would be at a disadvantage.

“Under the continuous attack from the Nan Shen Armament, you can still block.” Luo feng’s eyes gleamed with madness, “I respect you, hence...”

Luo Feng raised both his arms and pointed at Savage.

Weng!

A golden light shot out from behind Luo Feng’s back from the dark golden long rod, swiftly forming in mid air. This scene caused everyone in the arena and everyone watching the broadcast, even the group of great undying to stare with their eyes gleaming.

“What?” Savage’s face could barely contain his shock, “Second

golden blade?”

Right!

In front of Luo Feng was a floating golden blade which had formed early on in the match. Yet, right now in mid air, a second blade was taking shape.

“Form!” Luo Feng grit his teeth. His expression was grim, as his consciousness had split, having to use his full strength to control both golden blades.

Nan Shen Armament, also known as the 9 level Hun Tian Yan, had a total of 9 levels to unleash.

The first level was Golden blade

The second level was the Sky piercing form.

The first level itself was the easiest. Even domain lords who didn’t understand the origin laws could use their strong spirit energy to form it. Of course...when one’s spirit energy wasn’t as strong, they had to rely on sufficient willpower and law origin comprehension to form it.

The first form, during the elimination stage, Luo Feng was already barely able to form it in reality!

The second form, sky piercing form, was hundreds to thousands of times harder!

The Sky piercing form required unleashing 9 golden blades and later combining these together...forming a golden true blade. Different from the illusionary form of the first level...as it condenses the energy and forms a one inch long golden true blade. This golden true blade's power was extremely immense.

At this time, it had the right to be called Sky piercing!

.....

Hence, Luo Feng had been trying from early on to bring out two golden blades. Afterall...only through unleashing 9 golden blades did they actually gain enough power to condense and become reality, making the Sky piercing form.

"In reality, I'm only a star level 7 spirit reader. My spirit energy strength isn't strong enough, and I'm unable to unleash 2 blades."

"However, in the virtual universe, my spirit energy is star level 9! Much stronger than in reality!"

"My spirit energy is much stronger than reality! I have a higher guarantee of unleashing it. from the elimination till now, over 2 months had already passed, during which time I've been training rigorously.Even before this arena duel, I already had a guarantee of unleashing two blades." Luo Feng looked at Savage, roaring loudly,

“Savage! Receive this!!!”

Rumble! Rumble!

The two golden blades, one on the left and one on the right, became two golden rainbows and rushed straight towards Savage.

Chapter 51 – One Standing While Another Lays

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

All the spectators on site, along with the countless humans from the hundreds of millions of galaxies all cheered excitedly. There were many articles and details regarding Luo Feng and Rong Jun which had been shared previously with many experts to analyze both their strengths.

Naturally the Nan Shen Armament was discussed as well. Hence, many of the audience knew of how hard it was to unleash the Nan Shen Armament. Luo Feng unleashing just one golden sword was already enough to make him invincible. Yet, right now he had actually simultaneously unleashed two golden swords, it was simply, too intrepid!

“Ah!!!”

Savage let out a low roar while taking a big step and closing a distance of 1km with just that step.

“Rumble! Rumble!”

Supporting the energy wave, two golden rainbows shot out.

“Break away!” Savage had a struggling expression while slashing as fast as lightning at the golden rainbows.

“Dang!”

At the instant of the clash, the direction of the his blade slightly changed. At the same time Savage immediately turned and used the shockwave from the impact to add on to his rotation, “Dang!” Blocking even the second golden rainbow!

“Chi!”

Fresh blood was spit out. Savage took two steps back as his expression paled. Regardless, his eyes were still burning with a stronger than ever battle spirit, shouting, “Luo Feng, the two golden blades are indeed very powerful. However…you having to disperse your energy evenly to control both of them. The power of each of these blades is only about 90% or so compared to the previous one!”

“Even with 90% power with the both of them combined, to be able to block it even once, I consider you powerful. Let’s see how many more times you can block it!” In mid air from a distance, Luo Feng squinted while shouting back, “Come again!”

“Haha…hahaha…”

Savage suddenly laughed loudly. At the same time he violently

threw the blade in his hand.

Xiu!

The blade became a blurred image, almost like a secret weapon shooting towards Luo Feng.

“Hm?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows. In mid air the golden rainbow became an arc and blocked the blade. “Dang!” that blade was knocked away and landed far away on the ground within the arena.

“What’s he up to?”

The entire arena was noisy.

A fighter throwing away his weapon? It was like a fighter cutting off his own arm. He must be insane!

“What’s the matter?”

“Why did he throw away his weapon?”

“This Savage has admitted defeat?”

“Hm, that Madman Luo Feng from the Black Dragon Mountain starfield, ever since he took out two golden blades...that Savage

knew he couldn't win. Hence, he admitted defeat. That's not strange at all!"

"Not even fighting it out and admitting defeat?"

The spectators were in a uproar of discussions.

Within the arena however, the two of them were silent.

Floating in mid air, Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, coldly looking at Savage on the ground. Even though they hadn't met for too long, just from the simple exchanges of words and willpower, Luo Feng was very sure...the Savage before him had absolute confidence in himself. Even if he was about to lose, he would still fight it out till the end and never admitting defeat!

"Luo Feng!"

Standing in the arena, Savage stood there with blood still on his mouth. His eyes however were gleaming and he laughed loudly, "I never once cared about the internal selection with the Ganwu universe country! What i expect of myself is to at least enter the top 1,000 in the entire universe. Having said that, my true aim...is to be number one in the entire universe!!!"

Luo Feng was shocked.

The one billion spectators were all shocked. Even the countless humans watching the broadcast were shocked. At this moment,

the entire Ganwu universe country's countless humans were all stunned.

Entire universe's number one?

His baseline is to enter the universe' top 1,000? That was a place where countless geniuses from many universe countries fought to enter. On average, there wasn't even one per universe country! He actually dared to say that his baseline was to enter the top 1,000, and his true goal was to be the number one in the entire universe. This was no simple arrogance.

It was simply madness!

Within the arena.

"You..."Luo Feng couldn't help but be shocked too.

On the ground, Savage flipped his hand and brandished a new battle knife. This was a huge, pure black battle knife! Compared to the one before, this new knife was twice as large.

"I never expected that, to gain a slot in the Ganwu universe country, I'd be forced to take out this earth splitting blade." Savage's entire energy had changed. With the huge knife in his hand, Savage suddenly seemed to become like a wild war god, causing Luo Feng who was in mid air to shout out, "Whatever tricks you may have, take them out and then we'll speak!!!"

Rumble! Rumble!

The two golden rainbows pierced straight towards him!

“Haha…”Savage laughed loudly.

Weng!

In an instant, there were suddenly two Savages in the arena. The two silhouettes rushed towards Luo Feng with terrifying speed.

“What!” Luo Feng who was controlling the two golden rainbows was extremely shocked. A spirit reader controller’s greatest fear was being unable to pinpoint the target. “Among these two Savages, one of them must be fake. However…with my spirit energy scan, both of them seem to be real. How can that be possible?”

Creating a phantom image was extremely simple.

In truth, if normal people of earth with their visual abilities were to watch Luo Feng’s level of warrior, with their shocking speed, , they would often see after images. Almost as though there was another silhouette of the same person present. And in truth, no matter how fast one moved, it would still only be one person!

Even with a spirit scan, it was not easy to uncover.

“Arc light! Arc light!!!” Luo Feng roared, shocked within.

The golden horned beast’s two great techniques, one of which was the Absolute space.

The first level of Absolute space was Arc Light. The moment it was established, one’s movement could cause the space to warp, creating a second body.

The second level of Absolute space was ‘1,000 forms.’ The moment it was established, one could even create a 1,000 to 10,000 bodies within an area.

The third level of Absolute space was Teleportation. At this point, one would even be invincible amongst the undying.

Even Luo Feng’s teacher, the Master of the Yun Mo Planet had never reached the point of Teleportation. Even among the many generations of golden horned beasts, very very few of them ever made it.

This technique was actually a secret technique for the origin laws of space.

For those who have some comprehension of the space origin laws, they too could replicate the effect of Arc Light. When their bodies followed a peculiar arc line and under the influence of extreme speeds, they could create the effect of two bodies. And that instantaneous acceleration in speed...was extremely shocking

too!

Virtual universe, within that large construct in the floating island above the Ganwu continent.

In the huge thrones, all the great undyings were in a seated position. Initially,they didn't seem to really care about the battle, however at this point...

"Space origin law!"

"It's space!"

"And his comprehension is pretty high as well. It doesn't even seem any lower than his comprehension of the ground origin laws. He's actually able to cause the space to warp and create a second body."

"This punk!"

"Within our Ganwu universe country, there hasn't been a genius like him in a very long time."

"Mad, this punk is definitely mad enough. No wonder he dared to say that his baseline was the universe top 1,000, while his true aim is to reach number one amongst all! Ground and space, comprehension of these two laws at such a level! With his domain reaching level 9, just who trained and nurtured such an absolute genius?"

The group of great undying were all shocked.

Because, for a universe level warrior to step through the gateway of the origin laws, they were already considered outstanding geniuses. However these belong to the galaxy level geniuses.

While others like Nabini or Hong, they belong to the category of starfield geniuses.

By unleashing one golden blade, Luo Feng had belonged to the universe country level of genius. However, unleashing two blades...that was the pinnacle of a universe country level genius.

As for Savage!

“Ground and space comprehension, and such a deep comprehension at that. And this is only a star level punk. He’s really close to the peak.

He...

He belonged to the category of geniuses for the entire universe of humans! And amongst them,he was still at the very peak!

“Arc light?” Luo Feng who had been rigorously studying Absolute space, only understood then what was going on with his opponent.

“Go and die!!!”

In mid air, Luo Feng pointed at Savage and roared.

Rumble! Rumble!

Two golden rainbows respectively shot in two different directions. One at each Savage, one who can be seen with the naked eye, and the other who was picked up with a spirit scan. It seemed like there were two Savages. However in truth...there was only one. Only because he warped the space around him, he created the effect of a mirror image of himself.

“Haha...”Savage laughed, seemingly not caring about the two golden rainbows shooting at him, while he still aimed directly at Luo Feng.

“Break!”

The distant Luo Feng roared.

Having been studying Absolute space all this while, he was very clear about that first level and its power! And because he was clear of it...Luo Feng knew that even if he shot out the two golden rainbows they would be dodged. Hence the best thing to do was...

Break!

The two golden rainbows immediately dispersed into eighteen golden little blades and madly engulfed his surroundings in all directions!

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Immediately they dispersed and shot out!

Immediately two of the little blades that were shot, hit Savage's body. Even though their power was weaker after dispersing, they still affected his movement.

"Die!"

Luo Feng surveyed below him. At the same time the two soaring shuttles beside him shot out two beams of golden light, forming two golden swordfishes!

Dispersing the golden blades! and using the swordfish formation!

Simultaneous exchange!

The two golden swordfish shot towards the Savage whose movement had been affected.

"What?" Savage was shocked instantly, "With my comprehension of the space origin laws and movement, my instantaneous acceleration is shockingly fast. If his golden blades

were a bit further away, I would have been able to easily dodge them.” Even if there were two or three little blades that got close to him, it wouldn’t have meant anything. Afterall there were a total of 18 little blades.

Instead, they completely affected Savage’s speed and acceleration, breaking his momentum.

“Chi! Chi!”

The two golden fish had already closed the distance.

“Dang! Dang!”

Savage waved the huge blade before him. It was almost like space itself was being suppressed, as it split the two golden fish. After which, he raised the blade high and sliced it straight at Luo Feng!

“Go!” Savage slashed down. With the combination of the his domain and the space origin laws, he had completely suppressed Luo Feng.

“Go and die!” Luo Feng roared.

Rumble! Rumble!

The eighteen little golden blades which were separated at a distance, swiftly formed back into two golden blades behind

Savage. During the time Savage slashed at Luo Feng, the two golden rainbows shot towards Savage. Even though he had sensed the danger through his domain, Savage not only didn't bother to dodge it,but instead roared, "Go and die!"

"Peng!"

His blade was fast as lightning!

Luo Feng gripped his shield. He was feeling as though an entire mountain had come crushing down on him with a huge rumble. At the point, he lost his consciousness.

"Peng!" After Savage's slash, he tried to dodge but he had already missed his chance.

Xiu! Xiu!

Due to inertia, the two golden rainbows continued their motion. One brushed past his body while the other shot right through his chest, creating hole as big as a bowl. His internal organs were all ruptured and fresh blood were spewing from within...

"Boom!"

Savage landed on the floor as fresh blood was flowing from his chest wound. Like a heavily wounded war god, he still stood there and stared at Luo Feng's body.

And at that time, the two golden blades once again separated into eighteen little golden blades and dropped, clanging on the floor of the arena. Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Continuous clanging could be heard loud and clear, resounding throughout the arena.

The one billion spectators were all silent. All of them were watching the two absolute geniuses in the arena.

One stood there.

The other lay on the ground.

Chapter 52 – Ranking

Savage stood there silently, looking at Luo Feng's corpse on the ground.

"Luo Feng." Savage muttered, "My earlier plan was to defeat you and then commit suicide! And after go engage in the loser's circle matches. However, your power far exceeded my imagination and what I expected. Without unleashing my full strength, there was no way I could defeat you! Compared to the effects of the long training in the loser's circle, , defeating you...was more important!"

"And with you risking it all, I couldn't defeat and spare you." Savage recapped the scene before, still shaken from it.

This Luo Feng's reaction was too quick.

According to his expectations, the moment he unleashed his true strength with both ground and space origin laws unleashed, just that instantaneous movement which produced a mirror image would make Luo Feng too shocked and distracted. Even if he used the golden rainbows to attack, Savage could easily dodge it. At this point, he would close their distance immediately and slash at Luo Feng who wouldn't be able to resist and would be heavily damaged.

And after that he would withdraw and commit suicide.

Everything would have been very simple!

However in reality, it didn't go at all like how he had imagined. At the time he unleashed his powers, Luo Feng chose the least fatal attacking path, as the two golden blades that separated into eighteen little blades and revolved around him. These eighteen little blades shot out in all directions together, covering the surrounding space and immediately breaking his formation and movement.

Simultaneously, he used two golden fish to attack!

The battle of these two!

In an instant, Luo Feng controlled these eighteen little blades to swiftly reform the golden blades and attack from behind!

"Returning one move after another."

"From the time I unleashed my strength till the end of the battle, it wasn't even 0.1seconds."

"The dispersed golden blade actually broke my formation. Immediately using the soaring shuttle to attack and then using the reformed golden blades again to retaliate, and the timing was very precise. If he had hesitated for just a little, allowing me to to use that space to attack, he would have been done for. To be able to think of everything within that short 0.1 seconds, but also execute everything perfectly."

“Calm and collected!”

“Absolute calm.” Savage looked at Luo Feng’s body, filled with respect, “I could never achieve your level of calmness.”

Indeed!

Luo Feng and his brother Luo Hua, the calmness was engraved deep within their bones.

And on earth, Luo Feng had experienced many life or death experiences, especially during the possession of the golden horned beast, he had already thought he would die. These experiences allowed Luo Feng to maintain his calm despite any dangers! And the bloodline of the golden horned beast affected him too as the specialty of the golden horned beast was to slaughter coldly!

Add on his Big and second brother’s mental state training.

In terms of calmness...amongst the 100 or so geniuses that stepped through the gateway of the origin laws, Luo Feng was at the top!

Actually!

All three of them from earth were exceptional in that sense. In terms of perfect harmony between man and nature and spirit, Luo Feng couldn’t compare to his two older brothers. However the absolute ice cold calmness, along with the influence of the golden

horned beast's bloodline allowed him to measure up to the highest level of ancient studies and training from earth which were comprehended by Hong and Thunder god.

Hong and thunder god, had purely studied the chinese and indian cultures to their highest levels.

Even though Luo Feng was weaker within, he was still much stronger than any genius within the universe who hasn't trained his mental state at all. That, added on top of the bloodline of the golden horned beast, in terms of calm, he could compare to to his brothers.

"Congratulations to Rong Jun!!!"

The loud and clear voice resounded throughout the arena, "And thanks to Luo Feng, the two of them have delivered such an exciting match to our trillions of people within the Ganwu universe country. This was definitely this time's genius match's most exciting match till now. However, there will always be a victor and a loser!"

"This battle, Rong Jun is the victor! Rong Jun also receives a slot in our Ganwu universe namelist. He has the right to represent the Ganwu universe country and competing against the geniuses from the other universe countries."

"Let us anticipate...the matches Rong Jun will be fighting in with the other geniuses from all over the universe, eventually grabbing even more honor."

Rumble!

The one billion spectators erupted in cheers, some cheering for Savage Rong Jun while others still cheered for Madman Luo Feng. This match was definitely a lot more exciting than a lot had expected. When Luo Feng's strength was unleashed, many actually expected Luo Feng to be the victor.

Who would have expected Rong Jun to be so sick, to be able to actually produce a mirror image and finally that final slash was even more brutal!

Luo Feng was dead, while Rong Jun was heavily injured!

Virtual universe, Ganwu continent, within a large palace.

Within one of the large palaces, close to 1,000 youths were gathered All of them were looking up at the screen and on it was the battle between Luo Feng and Rong Jun which had just ended.

"Amongst you all, some have already acquired a slot in the namelist. Some are about to participate in their 4th match!" Below the screen, a tall and sturdy, green horned single eyed man roared softly, "You are our Ganwu universe country's most exceptional of this generation, many of you think you are really something. Look at this! Look at these two! All of you look carefully!"

Finishing up, the green horned single eyed man walked out of the

palace.

Within the palace.

A group of youths, men and women, all had complex expressions, pained expressions.

“Stronger than me, both of them are stronger than me.” A handsome cat eared youth shook his head.

“That Madman, those two golden blades of his... I wouldn’t be able to block it.”

“Too strong.”

“To actually be able to unleash two golden blades, I can barely even manage one.”

“These two.”

“That Luo Feng, I still have confidence to beat him. But that Rong Jun, according to Teacher’s assessment, he has a comprehension of the origin laws, and that movement, that slash...” An at least 8m tall and sturdy wild giant youth muttered softly, shaking his head.

Ganwu continent, floating island, within that huge construct.

The blurry images of the thrones, the great and eternal undying, were all discussing the battle.

“How long has it been, in the history of our Ganwu universe country genius duels, since such a level of battle was held?”

“Prior to more than 300 Genius competitions. Back then the Iron head general was a star level 7, only his battle could match up to this.”

“Right, over 300 genius competitions before! In the blink of an eye, close to 2 million years have passed.”

“Haha... My match back then could barely compare to this one. 1.89 million years have passed since then and I’ve already become an undying. However back then my opponent wasn’t weaker than me. It was a pity that when he became a domain lord, he went to the battlefield outside the starfield and died.” A resounding voice infused with a metallic feeling boomed.

“The path of an undying, is incomparably difficult. Amidst the way, it’s filled with dangers. the number of geniuses that have fallen along the way is already countless.”

“The fallen geniuses, many of them can only be deemed geniuses within a galaxy or a star field. And geniuses like Luo Feng and Rong Jun, these two punks...this level of absolute geniuses, the chances of their death are much lower.”

“True!”

“If it were in the Ganwu secret area, these pinnacle geniuses would be incomparably respected, lowering their chances of death the most. However, if it were in the Virtual Universe Company... there are too many pinnacle geniuses there. Hence, the competition is intense and the elimination rate is even higher. The number of geniuses who die there compared to our secret area is much much more.”

“They require only the true absolute strong among the geniuses.”

“Hm!”

“This time, this Rong Jun will definitely rank at the top of our universe country. And becoming the top 1,000 in the entire universe wouldn’t be a problem either. As for whether he’s able to make it as number one of the entire universe, I think the chances are extremely low. Instead, if it’s top 10, there’s still a possibility.”

“Right.”

“Rong Jun, is definitely the number one in our Ganwu universe’s geniuses. Luo Feng, should be able to rank in the top 10.”

“Hm, that Luo Feng punk was very calm! I really like him, that calmness...his chances of dying in the future are very low too.”

Luo Feng didn’t know that this group of undying from the

Ganwu universe were ranking him and Rong Jun by their strengths. He was still thinking of his previous battle.

"Nimble and flexible!" Luo Feng's consciousness returned to reality, within his earth home's study.

"My flexibility still isn't enough A spirit reader controller stepping on a spirit weapon should originally attack from afar! The moment a fighter closes in...that's just suicide." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, "As long as I'm nimble enough, making that Rong Jun unable to even touch me, at least I wouldn't be at a disadvantage immediately!"

"Hm!"

"Space origin laws, I haven't even touched the door. However the long periods of training in Absolute space, my instantaneous movement speed has increased too." Luo Feng thought, "When I return, I have to find a flying spirit weapon that suits me best. As for the soaring shuttle...it's too dispersed, not concentrated enough!"

.....

Reflecting on every battle, this was the habit ingrained into every student of the Dojo of Limits.

Luo Feng reflected on the battle for over a half hour before entering the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe network, Black Dragon Mountain island, 9 star bay.

“Thirdie, you’ve only returned now, where did you go after the battle?” Thunder god stood in the grass patch of Luo Feng’s villa. He was waiting there along with an entire group including Xu xin and others there.

“Daddy!”

“Daddy, you were too powerful!”

Little Hai and Ping Ping rushed over to hug Luo Feng.

“Big brother, that was a beautiful match.” Luo Hua revealed a happy expression, “Right now the entire Ganwu universe country has been shaken. Countless people are debating about you. You can go into the Virtual universe company’s page and take a look, many people are leaving messages...saying you and Rong Jun definitely belong to our universe country’s strongest geniuses.”

“Hm, outside’s gone crazy.” Xu Gang nodded and sighed, “Brother in law, you lost the match, but the entire Black Dragon Mountain island won an incomparably exciting bustle.”

Indeed.

Actually many people from the universe couldn't even understand the little details of the battle between Luo feng and Rong Jun. However, once the battle ended, Rong Jun was already deemed unanimously by a large amount of sector lords and even undying's as Ganwu universe country's number one! Not only that, he was also considered to be the strongest out of hundreds of geniuses competitions before.

Number one out of hundreds of competitions before? This match was naturally roaring like a raging flame.

Rong Jun and Luo Feng's reputation immediately soared.

"Where's big brother?" Luo Feng asked curiously.

"Big brother and Luo are in his house." Thunder god pointed at Hong's house, "About 10 minutes after your battle, the founder of the Three Axe Mountain named the time sector lord Luo came."

"Time sector lord? And Big brother?"

Luo Feng couldn't help but feel nervous.

……

Within the living room of Hong's house.

The old man with a head full of white sat opposite Hong.

“You don’t regret it?” Luo looked at Hong, “Following me means you won’t be able to return for 20,000 years.”

“Hm!”

Hong nodded lightly. His eyes were calm, without any hesitation.

Chapter 53 – Three Years of Hellish Training

“Can you tell me why you’ve suddenly decided to take me as your teacher even though the deadline hasn’t been reached?” The time sector lord Luo looked curiously at the youth from earth, “Does it have anything to do with your third brother’s match that just ended?”

“Yes!”

Hong nodded and sighed, “Yes, that match made me realize…I didn’t expect that in the blink of an eye, my third brother and I had that much of a gap in power.”

He knew Luo Feng was strong, but he never expected him to be that strong.

“If I continue on my own isolated ways without the teachings of a teacher, I think…the difference between my third brother and I will keep getting larger. I will get left behind even further.” Hong shook his head and laughed, “Actually it’s not just my third brother, I can feel the stress coming from my second brother too. Ever since he received the inheritance, his strength has been growing at an obviously much faster rate.”

“Hm.”

The time sector lord Luo smiled and nodded, “It’s good you feel the pressure! How about this, you get ready, then take a universe ship to meet up with me. I’ll give you a day’s time to say your

goodbyes with your family."

"Ok." Hong nodded.

Not long after the time sector lord left, Luo Feng and Thunder god entered.

"You are here, sit." Hong pointed at the two seats beside him.

"Big brother, what's going on?" Thunder god stared at Hong, "That founder of the Three Axe Mountain, the time sector lord, why did he suddenly come? Didn't he give you 10 days worth of time to think about it? There's still another two to three days left."

Luo Feng looked at Hong, feeling nervous inside.

"I looked for teacher myself." Hong said.

"Teacher?" Luo Feng and Thunder god's expression changed.

"You've really decided to go with the time sector lord?" Thunder god said nervously, "This will be a trip that's at least 20,000 years. Can you imagine what 20,000 years is? Our China's recorded history and culture is only 5,000 years old, in an instant you'll be leaving for 20,000 years, this...this is simply..."

"We can still meet in the virtual universe." Hong smiled.

“It’s different.” Thunder god shook his head.

Luo Feng looked at Hong’s expression, saying softly, “Big brother, have you decided?”

Hong looked over and nodded, Yes!”

“This trip, you won’t be seeing earth for 20,000 years, won’t be seeing my home and you won’t be able to smell the air of home for awhile.” Luo Feng looked at him.

“Since I’ve taken this path to reach the pinnacle of strength, what can I not sacrifice?” Hong shook his head, “My children have long married and I have no attachments! If needed, I can just meet my children in the virtual universe. As for my home, the place that raised me, I’ll leave it in my memories! I have to sacrifice some things to gain some!”

“When my wife died and my children married and had their families, the most important thing in my life became martial arts!”

“Wandering the universe, seeing the many weird and peculiar things within, chasing after the pinnacle of life, that’s the sort of life I like.” Hong’s eyes had a glimmer of light, “In the vast universe the strong are as numerous as the clouds. My aim is to not just become strong within that universe, but to become one of the most outstanding and strongest!”

Luo Feng and Thunder god exchanged glances, feeling their big

brother's absolute confidence and aspirations.

To be able to reach a high level in the path of martial arts, one first had to have an absolute level of aspiration, only then will he work towards that dream!

"Second and third brother!" Hong turned to look at both of them, laughing, "You two should be happy for me. Both of you already have your own inheritance. Can you bare to look at your big brother isolate himself and train alone?"

"Ah..." Thunder god was shocked, following which he laughed loudly, "Big brother, well said! Thirdie and I both have our inheritance. You go and follow that time sector lord. We will then be able to compare...just which of the three brothers will be stronger next time!"

"Bring it on!" Hong laughed too.

"Big brother and second brother, I'll take the lead for now." Luo Feng laughed.

"You better be careful and maintain your lead, otherwise your second brother and I may just catch up in the blink of an eye." Hong looked at Luo Feng. Thunder god said too, "Yes yes yes, thirdie, your big brother and I didn't have a good teacher in the beginning. Now that we have proper guidance, our strength will immediately soar...and your big brother's comprehension is incredibly high, I don't have to speak much about it! Hence, you better be careful!"

“If you have the skills, come chase after me!”

Luo Feng laughed loudly.

The three brothers of earth laughed happily. However, unknowingly, the corners of their eyes were a little wet.

……

Milky way, earth, Asia continent, Hong Ning base.

China time year 2066, July 27, evening about 5pm. The sun had yet to set behind the mountains, and the sky was red. A dark blue disc shaped universe ship was floating in the air above Hong Ning base. The entire Dojo of limits, all the upper echelon along with Hong’s family had all gathered.

After saying goodbye to his family and friends, this special, ultimate warrior of earth, finally left alone in that universe ship.

“Goodbye!”

“Haha, don’t be like that. I’ll meet you in the virtual universe!”

With a laugh, Hong flew into the universe ship.

Rumble!

The universe ship fiercely accelerated and flew into the sky.

“Big brother, all the best!” Thunder god stood in mid air, he couldn’t help but shout out.

Similarly standing in mid air, Luo Feng raised his head to watch the universe ship leave muttering, “All the best.”

On this day.

Year 2066, July 27th, the ultimate pinnacle of warriors of earth Hong took the universe ship and left his home. This trip was going to be a very very long one...

The day of the 4th round of the genius duels. After the battle between Luo Feng and Rong Jun had ended, that same day all the other matches had ended too. A total of 625 victors were chosen. As for the other 9375 who entered the losers circle, they had three days of rest before they had to begin a high density, tedious round of fights.

Every one of them had to battle 9374 times just to get a slot in the remaining 275 of the namelist.

.....

Earth, Jiang Nan base, Yang Zhou city.

“Big brother is gone.” Luo Feng sat on the balcony of his castle. He was lying alone there, lifting a cup of tea, “He’s gone with that time sector lord to wander the universe...” In his mind, he reminisced about every scene from the past clearly. In his ears he could still clearly hear the laughter the three of them shared yesterday along with their vows.

“In a few thousand years, even tens of thousands of years, we three brothers will compete again.”

“Right, we’ll compete!”

“We’ll compete, who’s afraid?”

This was the vow of the brothers!

Whether it was Hong, Thunder god or Luo Feng, they all walked this path to reach the pinnacle of life itself. And this path was filled with twists and dangers, one could fall easily if he was careless!

“Peng!” Luo Feng put down down the cup his eyes gleaming, “Big brother, you work hard and I won’t relax either!”

“Babata, enter the virtual universe!”

Luo Feng split a thread of his consciousness to enter the virtual

universe. In terms of consciousness strength...the universe level golden horned beast's consciousness level was completely capable of splitting a part to maintain consciousness in reality while the other part was in the virtual universe.

Virtual universe, within the slaughterhouse slaughter space.

This was a vast space.

Luo Feng stood in space.

"Wahaha..."The demon Babata jumped about and shouted, "Luo Feng, the arena duel just ended. You have 3 days of rest, it's only the first day and you've already entered the slaughterhouse, so hardworking. Speak, what kind of opponent do you want me to set up for you. Haha, I love training you the most!"

"I want a spirit weapon." Luo Feng emphasized, "A spirit weapon specialized just for flying, it should also be good for twisting about in small spaces."

Since the battle with Savage Rong Jun, he had obviously felt his own flexibility and speed was insufficient in the face of the opponent's speed.

"Ah?"

"You've found the weakness?" Babata rubbed his chin with his small hand, floating above, he looked at Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, are

you looking for a long term or short term effect?”

“Long term? And short term?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

The little demon nodded, “Right, short term, is to increase your nimbleness as much as possible in a short amount of time, requiring only 10 days to half a month! As for long term...that would mean working from the basics one step at a time, at the same time, picking a spirit weapon that would accompany you for a very very long time.”

“Long term!” Luo Feng emphasized, “I don’t lack time.”

“Very well!”

The little demon pointed his finger and raised his head, “Your choice is very wise.”

“Then I’ll pick a flying spirit weapon for you. The most suitable for gold and space origin laws would be a level 5 spirit weapon... The dark cloud shuttle!” The little demon smiled, “Of course during the beginning, you’ll probably not even be able to match up to the soaring shuttle’s efficiency, however there’s no rush, I will train you well.”

“How long do you think it’ll take for my speed and flexibility to increase greatly?” Luo Feng asked.

“Depends on your comprehension.”

The little demon said, “The higher you comprehension, the comprehension of the origin laws will be faster too. With my sequence of training, I estimate you’ll qualify in a year. If your comprehension is poor and you don’t work hard enough, even a hundred years won’t be sufficient.”

“A sequence of training?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

“Hehe!” The little demon curled his lips and smiled, “Slowly, what we have is time. I will train you well.”

From the year 2066, july 30th, the losers circle matches began, in terms of density in truth, one had to battle 10 times in a day! With Luo Feng’s speed, he was able to finish a match in one minute. Hence, every duel may be taxing for his opponents.

However for Luo Feng, he was completely relaxed.

Afterall, he was ranked among the top ten of the Ganwu universe country geniuses. As for this loser’s circle, including him, there were a total of 49 others who had stepped through the gateway of the origin laws. And of which, only two were capable of matching up to Luo Feng.

Hence...

The loser’s circle matches were very easy. In fact they became the grounds for Luo Feng to test his battle strategies.

Within the slaughterhouse.

It was a large grass patch and on it was a blur of countless bloodbirds covering the skies and flying towards Luo Feng.

“Dodge! Dodge! Dodge! Don’t even touch them!”

“Damn, faster! you have to be fast.”

“This test, there’s a possibility of scoring a 100%!”

The little demon roared.

And Luo Feng stood on the black peculiar shuttle spirit weapon, this Dark cloud shuttle naturally extended black skin that wrapped about Luo Feng’s boots. Luo Feng’s entire being had already becom a blurry image, dodging constantly under the attacks of the countless blood birds.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!” As soon as he was hit by one bird, he was subsequently hit by others.

When he was hit by three of them.

Rumble!

All the blood birds vanished.

“You failed again!” The little demon stared at Luo feng with his red eyes, roaring angrily, “Continue your basics training! I have never seen you so stupid!” With a wave of his hand...immediately the surrounding grass patch vanished, and became a large machinery factory, within it were many complex apparatus.

“Begin!”

The little demon roared.

Luo Feng remained calm all the while. Babata’s words didn’t seem to affect him at all.

……

Under Babata’s constructed Hell Training, Luo feng instead seemed to become even crazier. The little demon’s words too slowly changed from the initial stupid, to average, to very weak, and finally, still passable.

And the golden horned beast was spending all its energy on the Deities of the world and Absolute space, along with the training of the gold origin laws.

This way...

Time passed, the loser's circle duels didn't take much of Luo Feng's energy. In fact, they became a place to test his strengths. Babata's Hell training however was something that took up all his energy everyday.

Chapter 54 – The Madman of three Years Later

Time passed, even the great beings who had completely grasped the time origin laws, may be able to shortly stop or reverse time. However, the universe itself had automatic recovery abilities, even the most powerful beings were unable to strongly warp or affect the universe's flow.

The broadcast of the losers circle duels were like a television series, being broadcasted non stop.

Afterall there were over 9000 participants. It was hard to avoid special situations where the battle times had to extend or delay a few days.

China year 2069, March 2nd, the final day of the duels.

Virtual universe, floating island above the Ganwu continent, in a luxurious living room of a large construct.

Dressed in a simple white robe, an old man stood there while politely bowing, "Sword Deity." Beside him was an intrepid man dressed in golden armor. His face was filled with gold scales and on his forehead was a curve, like an arc blade golden horn. His entire being was like a ground and sky splitting golden battle blade!

Even in the virtual universe, that powerful consciousness and pressure from it was enough to make even a universe level

warrior's consciousness crumble. If it were Luo Feng who saw this person, he would be shocked, "Someone who looks so much like Bai Kalo, only that his green scales have turned gold."

"This is the Luo Feng you speak of?" The golden armored man looked at the screen.

On the screen was a broadcast of a match that was about to happen.

"Yes! Today is the last day of the duels, and this battle should be the last day's most exciting one." The old man dressed in a simple white robe smiled.

"Ah? If you are introducing him, you think...this punk has the right to enter the universe top 1,000?" The golden armored man asked.

"Sword deity, you'll know the moment you watch it." The white robed man said.

On the screen.

Dressed in a dark grey armor carrying that dark golden long rod, Luo Feng was facing a dual blade wielding dwarf youth.

"Rumble!" The dwarf youth turned into a bolt of lightning and rushed forward, immediately reaching close to Luo Feng. However, with a poof sound, the expressionless Luo Feng on the

Dark cloud shuttle who had golden energy wrapped about him, immediately became a golden light and easily escaped.

"Go!"

Rumble!

A golden blade appeared in mid air amidst the golden energies, swiftly emanating about. It immediately attacked that dwarf youth. The dwarf youth roared. As a green energy was emanating from his body and the two blades were brandished, almost as though his entire body had become a huge wave to receive the blows of the golden rainbow.

"Chi!" Just as the golden rainbow drew close, it actually did a perfect S Shaped arc and brushed past the side of the blades, immediately slicing through the opponent's head.

Luo Feng, victory!

.....

Within the living room.

"What do you think?" The simple dressed old man smiled.

"Hm, not bad, not bad at all." The golden armored man nodded, "This little punk already has a grasp of the spirit reader

controller's essence! His level 5 spirit weapon Dark cloud shuttle, its use is actually relaxed and perfect. And his instantaneous dodging ability is extremely fast, and obviously relaxed."

"That Nan Shen Armament, when infused with the golden origin laws and unleashed together, it is as strong and piercing as the sun. Normally, the users have difficulty changing its direction! However he actually managed to, in short distance, doing an S shaped complex maneuver while relaxed. He's already made great progress with the first form!"

"His basics are exceptional." The golden armored man nodded, following which he creased his eyebrows, "However, from my estimate, with this amount of strength, he should at most make it into the ranges of 3,000 to 5,000 of the entire universe."

1,008 universe countries, a million absolute geniuses gathered.

To make it into the top 1,000 was too difficult.

"Haha...watch this one." The white robed old man pointed at the screen, swiftly picking out the battle of Luo Feng and Rong Jun from that year.

"Rong Jun? I've heard of him, I heard he's your Ganwu universe country's most outstanding youth." The golden armored man looked until the end and said softly, "This Rong Jun is indeed strong. However, for him to get the number one spot with his level of strength, there's no possibility at all. Although, making it into the top 10 of the universe, there's still some chance in that."

“No chance at all?” the white robed old man was shocked greatly.

“Hm, in this genius battle, there’s a super genius.” The golden armored man couldn’t help but exclaim, “Even more powerful than the number one geniuses from previous competitions. His space origin laws comprehension exceeds a large amount of sector lords.”

“Ah?” The white robed old man was shocked.

“As for Luo Feng, I know why you’ve shown me this footage.” The golden armored man exclaimed, “The most shocking thing is, when he competed with Rong Jun…his flying and dodging speed back then was obviously taxing, the control was rough, purely relying on spirit energy to control the directions. Compared to that, having taken a look at that broadcast, his control of the dark cloud shuttle is already very perfect. The control of the Nan Shen Armament too…his improvement is very shocking! His comprehension of the origin laws has risen quite a bit too.”

“Right. How long does your Ganwu universe country’s internal selection, the losers circle matches last?” The golden armored man asked.

“Not even three years.” The white robed old man replied.

“Not even three years?” The golden armored man couldn’t help but say, “This Luo Feng, was he hiding his power during his battle with Rong Jun?”

“No, through his 9374 matches, in every battle, his improvement was very obvious!” The white robed old man exclaimed, “Before these matches, he was at most the top ten of our universe country. And now, with less than three years passing, probably only Rong Jun is his match. Many of the undying in our Ganwu secret area are all watching him, his improvement speed…is too shocking.”

“And in the losers circle duels, his opponents aren’t strong. Hence, they haven’t been able to force him to use his true strength. I even suspect…his true strength is even greater than what he’s been displaying!” The white robed old man said, “And from right now to the final duels, there’s still quite a bit of time, he can continue to improve.”

“Hm.”

The golden armored man curled his lips and smiled, “If he continues to improve, up to the pinnacle duels of the geniuses from the 1,008 universe countries, he may actually make it into the top 1,000. However, it’s still hard to say.”

When the two undyings from the Ganwu secret area and the Virtual Universe Company were discussing Luo Feng, Luo Feng was in the preparation room of arena 00001.

Within the room.

“That Luo Feng!”

“This Luo Feng, how is his improvement so fast?”

“The teacher from the secret area said that Luo feng is able to be ranked as the number two genius of our universe country.”

When the black haired youth dressed in dark grey armor appeared in the preparation room, it immediately aroused many soft discussions. The duels had lasted a little less than three years. Luo Feng’s shocking improvement speed had attracted the attention of many strong warriors.

“Madman!” A strong thick voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned to look. It was an almost one storey tall Savage Rong Jun. His hair was still messy as always and he was still barefooted.

“Savage!” Luo Feng shouted too.

“Hahaha…” Savage laughed loudly, a smile too appeared on Luo Feng’s face. These two had always addressed each other with their names before. This sudden nickname call…was also a joke.

“Luo Feng, your improvement is huge, you haven’t relaxed at all in these three years.” Savage said very respectfully to Luo Feng.

No matter how powerful a genius was, it was mostly his natural

talent that was high. If he didn't work hard, he would ultimately still be eliminated. Luo Feng's huge improvement...one could only imagine how hard he worked secretly.

"I don't dare to relax." Luo Feng shook his head, "With you in front, how could I dare?"

"Attention all! Enter the arena!"

The organizer from the Virtual Universe Company shouted. Immediately the 1,000 geniuses followed the pathway into the arena.

Today there weren't any spectators.

1,000 absolute geniuses from the different galaxies of the Ganwu universe country stood there, looking at the giant before them! Before the 1,000 most exceptional geniuses of the Ganwu universe country was a giant who was at least 8m tall. Beside him, even Savage would look like a little doll. This giant was wearing a scaled battle robe, and a helmet. His entire being emanated a bloody energy, his eyes...seemed like the death god gazing at the group of geniuses.

Bated breaths.

1,000 geniuses, they couldn't help but perspire from their foreheads.

“In the virtual universe, just his aura alone is that terrifying?” Luo Feng too couldn’t help but control his body’s nervousness. His forehead naturally perspiring cold sweat as well. Under this pressure, perspiring cold sweat from the forehead was a body’s natural defense mechanism.

“Congratulations to you all!”

An ice cold voice resounded throughout the arena, “You 1,000 are our Ganwu universe’ most exceptional. You all have the right to represent our universe country, to compete with the other universe countries and fight it out with their geniuses! However… these pinnacle duels, the difficulty will be much greater than the battles before!”

“1,008 universe countries, some universe countries have even wider and more vast territories, with many many more galaxies!”

“Because each universe country’s situation differs, the internal selection time is different too.”

“Hence!”

“The entire human race, final genius pinnacle duels…will only begin a year and a half from now. This one and a half years is your chance to improve yourselves!”

Luo Feng returned to Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay.

“It finally ended!”

“The losers circle duels have ended.” Luo Feng exclaimed.

“The duels may have ended, however your training still hasn’t.” On his shoulder, the fist sized little demon shouted, “Luo feng, your Nan Shen Armament at this moment, at most can only produce five golden blades simultaneously. And it’s still very forced, you should rather use three blades. Only by doing so, your current strength will be at its strongest!”

A Person could force himself to lift a 100kg knife. However, his attack may be the strongest by using a 30 kg knife instead.

One logic.

Controlling five golden blades, every blade would become clumsy and awkward.

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded, following which he laughed.

Reminiscing these three years, indeed his improvement had shocked many people.

In truth, back then when he first joined the elimination, the golden horned beast had just reached the universe level for a little over two years. Meaning...a level 5 domain and stepping into the gold origin laws gateway, these were the fruits of his labour between the years 2064 and 2066. And right now with close to

three years passing, it wasn't weird his achievements had increased by a high margin.

"The nurturing of my second clone is almost done too." Luo Feng anticipated his second clone, the Mo Sha clan's birth.

Chapter 55 – Violent Undercurrent

When the internal selection of the Ganwu universe had just ended, in the distant universe country far from the Ganwu universe country…the Barbaric universe country's internal selection was still ongoing.

The Barbaric universe country got its name for this one reason.

The reason being that there were two very fearsome human races there, the Manka and the Huang Shen races. These two were bloodlines that ranked in the top 10 of the humans of the universe. Even without any training, when they reached maturity, they would easily become powerful domain lords. To be able to have a bloodline that reached an evolution of such a stage…

The ancestors of the two races naturally had many undying!

Although the population of these two races was extremely small, the core of the entire Barbaric universe country had a very powerful imperial family! There was once a sector lord who snatched away an infant of the Manka race. As soon as he was discovered, the Manka planet sent out a group of undying to destroy the entire organization that the sector lord was in, even the two undying's in that organization were killed!

As for that sector lord that actually dared to snatch that infant, he was tortured for millions of years until his lifespan reached its end and died tragically.

“Anyone who dares to touch the infants of the Manka race, will die a horrible death!”

“Anyone who dares touch the infants of the Huang Shen race, will also be killed mercilessly!”

The Manka and Huang Shen people regarded a death in battle as the greatest honor!

However, should anyone every snatch their infants and use their bloods, they would have in turn offended the entire race!

……

The Manka planet, as the home of the Manka people, was covered in an extremely vast god country.

Within Manka planet itself was an oval shaped castle, the guards at the entrance were all universe level.

“Congratulations your majesty, congratulations.”

The two sector lords smiled as they looked at a youth casually sitting at a dining table and eating a feast. This Manka youth had the traditionally good looks of the Manka people, dressed in a silver armor, black hair, eating heartily, muttering, “What’s there to congratulate about, it’s just a slot in the namelist, utterly simple!

The two sector lords exchanged glances and laughed.

“Your majesty.”

The chubbier of the two sector lords smiled and said, “The Ganwu universe country’s internal selection had already ended.”

“Ganwu universe country?” The Manka youth looked up, creasing his eyebrows, “From what I heard, my royal father said that the country leader of the Ganwu universe country is very powerful. However, in the past 100 genius competitions, they haven’t produced anyone worthy at all.”

“There’s one in this competition that you have to pay attention to.” The fat sector lord said respectfully.

“Ah, speak!”

The Manka youth lowered his head and quickly finished the food on the dining table.

The two sector lords exchanged glances and laughed. This royal prince had the good qualities of the Manka people’s tradition, which was that he loved to eat! He loved to battle! He was Loud and boorish! However. even though the Manka people were loud and boorish, their mental capacity was extremely high. Hence, they were very intelligent. And only because of that they were able to work together with the Huang Shen race and govern over the

Barbaric universe country.

“Your majesty.” The fat sector lord smiled, “The Ganwu universe country has produced an absolute genius, called Rong Jun. His achievements in the ground and space law origins are high. He’s already reached a point where he can leave a mirror image of himself.”

“Mirror image?” The manka youth shook his head violently.

“Right.” The two sector lords nodded simultaneously.

“That’s troublesome.” The manka youth slapped the table and stood up, “Leaving a mirror image in space, that’s not due to some simple explosion in instantaneous speed. And he even has made progress in the ground origin laws? With the two combined, his attack must be incredibly fierce and powerful, to the point that it would be almost unblockable.”

“Yes.” The two sector lords nodded.

This Manka youth was the current Manka planet’s most exceptional genius of this generation. From young, he had received the guidance of many of the undying.

Hence his vision and knowledge was extremely high. Having heard a little of the information, he was able to already imagine the battle styles and strength of his opponents.

Of course…

Even though he was the most exceptional genius, in truth, the number of star level youths on Manka planet wasn't even 1,000.

"Your majesty, according to the information we've gathered and along with our deductions, this youth called Rong Jun has the power to make it into the universe's top 10. Also, from the information, we are able to conclude that he's been hiding his true power all this while. Even during that last battle he may not have used his full strength." The fat sector lord continued, "He even said his goal was to become the universe's number one!"

"Top 10? Number one?"

The Manka youth stared hard, "How come they are all so arrogant? Although, their powers are not bad either. Hm, there are too many universe countries. However, this group of arrogant punks, they'll all get wiped out by me! The number one position is mine!"

The two sector lords smiled.

The battle spirit of this majesty was definitely sufficient, but this was afterall a pinnacle fight between the best of the entire human race. There were geniuses who came with superior bloodlines, while those with weaker bloodlines usually had very large populations. Picking one out of the 10's of billions to even trillions, normally they would be even stronger than those picked out of hundreds.

“Your majesty, in the Ganwu universe, besides Rong Jun, there’s another called Luo Feng.” The fat sector lord said.

“Another one?” The Manka youth stared.

“No.” the fat sector lord shook his head, “His strength is much weaker than Rong Jun’s. However the thing we have to take note of was that compared to three years ago, his rate of improvement is incredible! I guess, he definitely has the chance to make it into the top 1,000. He is also extremely calm during battle, he may even kill those stronger than himself. Hence, your majesty has to take note of him and not get careless.”

“I say, my fat uncle.”

The Manka youth was restless, “For someone who has the chance to make it into the top 1,000? Don’t talk to me about these sort of people. They are of no challenge or threat to me at all. The top 1,000 of the entire universe has no difficulty for me at all.”

“However, from that top 1,000, the treatment for their ranks are different. My aim is to take one step at a time to reach heaven, immediately making it into the upper echelon chore of the Virtual Universe Company’s primal secret area. Hence I asked you to take note of those that are able to make it to the top 10. As for that person called Luo Feng? Don’t bother, I’ll settle him in one move.”

The two sector lords exchanged glances and smiled, “Then we’ll await the day your majesty enters the primal secret area.”

Within the vast universe, the human race was one of the top pinnacle of races. They took up a great amount of the universe itself.

And at this time, the internal selections for the geniuses of the 1,008 universe countries, many of which were still going on. There were many that had ended too. The absolute geniuses that were ranked first or second, or any that had any decent ability or stood out as a threat, were all being researched on by the many universe countries.

……

Ganwu universe country, in a vast space.

A giant stood within that space and the space around him was completely warped. It was impossible to even make out his appearance in that space.

“Wu, I made you stay in the Ganwu secret area to nurture the younger generation. From the entire universe country, you picked out the top hundred million geniuses and trained them in the best place, with the best facilities. However Wu’s universe country’s most exceptional were separately Rong Jun and Luo Feng. And both are not from the Wu Ganwu secret area at all!” The voice was booming, the surrounding space almost seemed like it was about crumble.

The three undying dressed in simply white robes all bowed, cold

sweat beading profusely from their foreheads.

"Do you all still have any use?"

The thick booming voice was like a huge axe cutting into the souls of these three undying, causing them to go completely pale, kneeling down simultaneously.

"To be able to be even stronger than those from the Ganwu secret area means that they are both exceptional. Especially that Rong Jun, he has the strength to make it to the top 10 of the entire universe, that's a good thing too. I hope he can enter the primal secret area. For the Wu Ganwu universe country...that would be extremely beneficial to us in the future." The thick booming voice's rage within was obviously lesser than before.

"Nurturing these younger generations has wasted a lot of your time, the three of you should go train properly first and raise your own strengths. As for training the younger generation, Wu will arrange for others to take over." The thick booming voice seemed to have no obstruction at all in this space, immediately reaching the ears and souls of the three undying's.

"Yes, country leader!"

The three replied simultaneously.

"Go on!"

Only at this time, did the three undying's let out a sigh of relief and left respectfully.

The top 1,000 of the Ganwu universe country had 1.5 years of time to rest. Naturally no one actually dared to relax at all. Within this 1.5 years...whether it was Rong Jun or Luo Feng, or even the others suppressed by these two, and also the geniuses nurtured by the imperial family of the Ganwu universe country, they were all training extremely hard!

Rong Jun wanted to become the strongest!

Luo Feng was even more unwilling to go to battle and lose.

As for the geniuses of the Ganwu universe country imperial family, they were actually beaten by both Luo Feng and Rong Jun who didn't have as good facilities to train in. Naturally they were even more unhappy!

They were all working hard!

.....

"Lost!"

"Luo Feng you lost again."

"I still lost."

“Alright, your three matches with Rong Jun today will end here.” In the desert of the slaughterhouse, the little devil Babata waved his hand and immediately the Savage Rong Jun who was standing beside vanished. This was the Rong Jun simulated by the slaughterhouse. As for his power, knowledge and experience, these were all based on reality.

Luo Feng stood in the desert, creasing his eyebrows, “I still lost.”

“Luo Feng, don’t be discouraged.”

“Compared to Rong Jun, the main thing is that your origin law comprehension difference is too huge. You’ve only had comprehension of the gold origin laws, and have even improved quite a bit. But that Rong Jun, his ground origin law comprehension is not below yours, and his comprehension of the space laws are deep too. The absolute difference is too huge. It’s not strange at all that you’ve lost.” The little devil Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded.

For the simulation of an opponent in the slaughterhouse, one could set his experience and knowledge to be very high. Because that simulated Rong Jun knew some of Luo Feng’s moves, understanding himself and the enemy, making his victories even more clear cut and simple.

“His defense is too strong.”

“Ground origin laws emphasizes defense.” Luo Feng exclaimed, “And space origin laws, when fused with his domain, allows his control strength in the area to increase. His defense, even with my three golden blades, I still can’t stop him.”

He was originally very confident.

However just this Rong Jun had stopped him.

“Right, Luo Feng, the Mosha Clan clone should be coming out in just 3 days.” The little demons said.

“Right!” Luo Feng’s expression revealed that of anticipation. The Mosha clan was known as the strongest assassination race in the universe. To be able to gain such a title amongst countless races, that was quite a feat. Just the damaged skin of a dead Mosha clan could be sold for such a heavenly price…this Mosha clan being must be incredibly powerful.

Chapter 56 – Mosha Clan Clone

Earth, Asian continent, China Yangzhou base.

Early morning, Luo Feng stepped on the dark cloud shuttle and became a beam of golden light and immediately vanished into the east horizon.

In mid air above the east sea.

Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and looked east, the red burning sun began to slowly rise out of the horizon.

“This level five spirit weapon is indeed different from a level three spirit weapon.” Luo Feng lowered his head to look at the dark cloud shuttle below him. This was bought from the latest Ganwu auction, the Ganwu auction was held once every three years. The first time was at the end of 2065, he spent quite a bit of money during that time.

And at the end of 2068, there was another one that was held.

During that auction, he was engaged in the loser’s circle duels! Hence he specially requested for 10 days of rest to attend the auction.

The losers circle duels were able to be rescheduled.

As there were over 9000 people and within those three years of time, special events may happen unexpectedly, hence the timings were more flexible. There should have originally been 100 matches that day. However, back then, he had discussed with his opponents earlier on and they had come to an agreement. It was only due to this that the organizing party agreed to the request and allowed him to attend the Ganwu auction.

“One Dark cloud shuttle and two portions of swelling water fruit had cost me one mixed element.” Luo Feng exclaimed, “Luckily I still have the money my younger brother invested.”

During the 2065 auction, because he purchased the Mosha clan skin, the Nan Shen Armament, and the swelling water fruit, he had only a few hundred billion universe dollars remaining after that. This was not even worth one mixed element.

These three years, he hadn’t been earning any money.

Luckily after the end of the previous auction, his little brother already had over two trillion universe dollars. After the past three years of investment, even though he had lost money past his capital before, he still managed to increase it to a total of six mixed elements! In these three years, his earnings were close to 200% of profits. Usually the higher one goes up the ladder of capital and wealth, the harder it got to have such high turnovers.

Even the large organizations like the universe first bank or universe galaxy bank’s specialized investment departments had invited and consulted his younger brother Luo Hua.

“By working for myself, I get to call all the shots, that’s the best. Working for others and going to those departments, I still have to listen to the orders from above. That is just too troublesome, I won’t go!” This was something he had said to himself before.

Stepping on the dark cloud shuttle, standing above the east sea.

“The amount of money I have is still not enough.” Luo Feng thought, “The golden horned beast, the cloud contact vine, even the Moshan clan clone. They will all require a large amount of money to nurture. And even myself, I require money too.” From a theoretical point of view the golden horned beast should be considered Luo Feng’s main body. However, in his subconscious, Luo Feng still thought of his earth body as the main.

The golden horned beast is at the universe level right now. I don’t even have enough money for the metals it requires to swallow. However, the Deities of the world training is simply a bottomless pit.

When speaking of the cloud contact vine, the higher up it evolved, the harder it got. Right now the swelling water fruit is very effective. However, as it grows more, the money poured into it would be a bottomless pit too. Back then when Hu Yan Bo made his cloud contact vine reach the undying level, the amount of money spent on it was simply terrifying.

As for Mosha clan clone, he still knew very little about it.

Luo Feng's earth body, just the Nan Shen Armament, the dark cloud shuttle and the nutrition cabin had cost a lot of money. And this was only the star level. As his sights and boundaries grew, the cost may become even more terrifying. Luo Feng had already seen a few absolute treasures at the auctions. Just one of these would cost several thousand mixed elements. However, these were treasures that Babata was too lazy to even explain to Luo Feng at the moment.

"The golden horned beast is at universe level 7! Cloud contact vine is at universe level 6. My body though is still at star level 9." Luo Feng thought, "From now on, my own body's training will stop."

The golden horned beast's universe level 1 to 3 required 15 years, 4 to 6 required 20 years each, a total of 60 years, and the 7th, 8th and 9th level required 120 years each. As for reaching the domain lord level from the universe level, that required 500 years! The entire process of the universe levels was supposed to require close to a 1000 years.

From year 2055, while entering the universe level 6 till now 2059 october, it had already been about 4 years.

Using the optimum metal groupings to nurture and let it swallow, it's efficiency was raised to 56 times, this was comparable to a total of 224 years! And Luo Feng stepping through from level 7 to 8 required 240 years. Right now it was still at universe level 7, a little more and it could reach the universe level 8.

.....

As for the cloud contact vine, back in the world within a world it was already at universe level 2. And back then it hadn't completely digested the powerful life fruit. Plus, it had eaten over a 100 swelling water fruit. With all these and with enough time, it had long grown to universe level 6. The only thing was the jump from level 6 to 7 was quite a bit harder.

……

"It's about to be born." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

Rumble!

In mid air a triangular black universe ship suddenly appeared, Luo Feng entered the ship. The ship began to accelerate into the sky, piercing past the earth's atmosphere and headed to mars.

Solar system, Mars surface, in a large ravine. The universe ship descended.

Within the ship's resting chambers.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged, his entire consciousness entering his internal world.

……

Within his internal world, the entire golden continent was enshrouded in the golden mist.

Laying flat along the large land, the golden horned beast which was at least 10 li long raised its head, its dark golden eyes looking at the oval golden egg in mid air.

“Almost.” The golden horned beast’s cold eyes had a sense of anticipation.

Ka! Ka! Ka!

The incomparably thin oval shaped golden egg began to crack open, following which it descended down, revealing an extremely peculiar black crystal. This crystal had a total of 10,081 surfaces and on each surface was incomparably complex golden engravings. The engravings were completely fused with the crystal, this was the core of the Mosha clan demon…the life crystal!

“Appear!” A sound resounded throughout the large golden continent.

Hu huh u…

Black energies swiftly flowed from the life crystal before condensing together. A naked yellow skinned, black short haired man appeared. It was a naked Luo Feng, who was similar in appearance to Luo Feng’s actual self!

Mars, sand filled the entire land and surface.

Luo Feng who was dressed in a dark red armor, along with the Luo Feng dressed in black cloth, were with the enormous mountain like golden horned beast on the surface.

“Interesting, interesting.”

The two Luo Feng’s and the golden horned beast exchanged glances.

As for the true life core, the core itself was able to immediately appear within the true body, or within the golden horned beast’s body or even within the Mosha clan’s body.

“Return!” The golden horned beast vanished and only the 2 Luo Feng’s remained.

“Return!” The dark red armored Luo Feng vanished.

“Return!” The black clothed Luo Feng vanished too.

All three of them entered the internal world, leaving behind only a transparent crystal ball in the external world. On its surface were incomparably complex golden engravings, glimmering with gold light.

Sou!

The black clothed Luo Feng appeared.

“Leaving the life core alone in the external world is very unsafe.” The black clothed Luo Feng thought, “As for this Moshan clan demon…change!”

All that could be seen was the black clothed Luo Feng’s energy flow seemed to change, swiftly becoming the tall and powerful Rong Jun, and later changing into a 10 li long golden horned beast. Finally he even changed into a thick and sturdy tree, and back to the black clothed Luo Feng!

“Energy life forms are indeed special.” Luo Feng smiled.

The Mosha clan were energy life forms. They didn’t have a fixed external appearance, they could change it at will. Of course, if they wanted to change into an enormous giant, maintaining their body’s defense of at least a universe level two, the energy usage would be huge. Hence normally they only changed to forms which weren’t too big.

“Mosha clan, named the strongest assassination clan. So it’s because of this!” Luo Feng could feel the difference and special properties of the Mosha clan’s body.

“It’s indeed true that they are favoured by space itself.”

After obtaining the third body, the Mosha clan’s body, Luo Feng

naturally grasped the natural abilities and talents of the Mosha clan.

It's natural secret techniques...cloning!

In life form terms, the Mosha clan, when compared to the humans or golden horned beast was completely different. At least humans and golden horned beasts were still under the category of flesh and blood life forms. However the Mosha clan, as an energy life form, it didn't even have a soul! Accurately speaking...that life crystal was its soul, and its source of energy!

Hence.

The Mosha clan weren't afraid of spirit attacks, at the same time they are unable to use any spirit attacks or control any weapons. Hence the Mosha clan...all walked the path of fighters!

And it's natural abilities such as cloning, allowed the Mosha clan demons to be able to clone the life force and spirit energies of their target. Their own body could transform, and the moment it copied the target's soul energies, even undying beings...unless they used their spirit energy to enter their bodies and scan, from just the outer appearance or energy, they were completely undetectable.

This was no longer just a disguise.

It was cloning!

Natural technique...cloning!

You'd never expect, that your favorite grandson, I have already become one of the Mosha clan.

It may seem like an extremely simple ability, however it allowed the Mosha clan to become the most fearsome assassination clan of the entire universe! They were able to transform into every kind of life forms, copying any kinds of life energies. Of course once the target suspected something and used spirit energy to dig and scan, they would be revealed.

"Favoured by space itself."

"So special." Luo Feng felt the energies of the Mosha clan. He could vaguely feel the space about him rippling.

But his earth body and the golden horned beast body were both unable to feel this.

"Absolute space!"

Luo Feng fiercely unleashed his technique, simultaneously the black crystal with 10,081 surfaces began to slightly revolve, its complex golden engravings on its surfaces rippled, almost as though it was answering to the universe space.

Shua!

All that could be seen on that sand filled mars surface, was the sudden appearance of two Luo Feng's, and gradually another... three Luo Feng's, four Luo Feng's, five Luo Fengs!

Shua!

Luo Feng stopped.

"Too special, this is just marvelous! This Mosha clan's movement and flying is so relaxed, it's simply, simply...too unbelievable." Luo Feng's expression was that of complete shock, "I only have very little understanding of Absolute space. These years, I've only managed to touch the door of the space origin laws, And did not even considere entering."

"However even with that little comprehension, using the Moshan clan body to unleash it, my speed is faster and even more unpredictable. I can even feel the ripples in space." Luo Feng was extremely shocked.

"Switch."

The Mosha clan body vanished and the dark red armored Luo Feng appeared.

"Hm?"

The earth body of Luo Feng looked at his surroundings, the peculiar feeling was totally gone and everything felt normal again. This mars was like mars from before, the universe was still like the universe, no longer having the special feeling from the universe space ripples like before.

Rumble!

Luo Feng began his movement, his movement became shockingly fast and unpredictable. However it was just that, it didn't cause the space around to warp or create mirror images.

"It feels as though the Mosha clan demon in space is like a fish in water." Luo Feng thought.

Humans swimming in water, their speed could never compare to their speed of running on land.

And a fish's speed hopping on land could never compare to it swimming in water.

One theory was that the Mosha clan was naturally one favored by the space origin laws. In the universe space it was like a fish in water. Even if his own comprehension was low, using the body of the Mosha clan would amplify his powers by several times.

"Sick, totally sick." Luo Feng couldn't help but exclaim.

"Do you even have to say that? This is the strongest assassination

race! Energy life forms, flesh and blood life forms, automaton life forms, metal life forms, plant life forms etc, among all sorts of life forms with trillions of races, to be able to gain the reputation of strongest assassins in countless amounts of life forms. Would that be a joke?" Babata said, "Natural ability...cloning, even though it's only one ability. However in truth, the amazing thing about the Mosha clan is they are able to feel the ripples of space."

"They are a natural complement to the space origin laws!"

"By allowing them to unleash any space techniques, the power will increase greatly."

"Simultaneously, comprehending the space origin laws will be much easier than compared to humans."

"Hence any Mosha clan demon, who steps through the space origin laws door...their movement would be unpredictable and ever changing. They can change to anyone, any form. Because their disguise ability reaches the pinnacle of perfection, their attack too is extremely strong, After just one attack, they can swiftly dodge far away. The most scary thing is, it's not just one of the clan that's strong, it's all of them. Hence, they are known as the strongest assassins." Babata said.

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

No wonder...the damaged piece of skin of the Mosha clan sold for such a high price.

The normal changes of the Mosha clan, there were no engravings on the surface. And after being killed, most of them die from their crystals shattering. Their bodies too would disappear, leaving only a damaged crystal, not even the skin would be left. Only under a special circumstance can one allow the space origin law engravings within the life crystal to appear on the skin!

Those were true space origin law engravings, hence the skin was incomparably valuable.

“However in my genius battle, I can only use the body given to me by the virtual universe to battle. I can’t use the Mosha clan body.” Luo Feng thought.

“Right now it’s October. There was less than a year to the final battle with the 1,008 universe countries. What you can do now is to use the Moshan clan clone to take the form of the golden horned beast and go research on Absolute space.” Babata said, The training process of Absolute space is only suitable for the golden horned beast form to unleash.

Of course, any training on comprehension of the space laws will have benefits to all bodies. Afterall you are all one consciousness.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Not even a year.” Luo Feng took a deep breath, “Right, Babata, I should use the Mosha clan body...to go retrieve the third bank account left behind by my teacher.”

The Yun Mo Planet master left three separate accounts.

They were separated for when the disciple was star level, universe level and finally domain lord level to retrieve the funds.

Chapter 57 – 10,000 Threads

The difference between the three accounts was extremely huge. The one with the most was the account he was able to acquire when he reached the domain lord level. Within that account is all of his teacher's remaining money in that five star account.

"I am very sorry, but that is not possible!" Babata said.

"My Mosha clan clone is a universe level two." Luo Feng couldn't help but say.

"No, Luo Feng, have you forgotten? The three accounts your teacher left behind not only have strength requirements. They also require you to personally go open the account, and during that time, there'll be a scan of spirit energy. It has to be the spirit energy of the Yun Mo Planet form before the account can be opened." Babata said.

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, "The Moshan clan clone will be using my energy, it can easily use my spirit energy."

"Wrong! The Mosha clan is an energy life form, its true form is that life crystal. It doesn't have any spirit energy at all. How can it use your spirit energy?" Babata said.

"Ah!"

Luo Feng was stunned.

Flesh and blood life forms, whether it was humans or beasts or space beasts, as long as they walked that same path, they all had a soul and spirit energy! Spirit energy was a part of the soul after all. Energy life forms however were totally different, their core was the life crystal, not spirit energy at all.

Just like the automaton race, they were in essence living AI's. They did not contain any spirit energy at all.

Hence...

Back within the Yun Mo Planet ship, when the Yun Mo Planet master Hu Yan Bo and his undying underlings all died, only Babata survived because he was a living AI!

The life forms were different in many ways, even the life spans were different.

Living AI's, even if they didn't become undying, they could still continue to live on, just like that Lord Wu.

"Damn!" Luo Feng shook his head, "I still thought..."

"This really disappoints me." Luo Feng was helpless.

"You punk, don't get too greedy!" Babata said, "your body is that of a golden horned beast, the most elite bloodline of the entire

universe. And you have the Moshan clan, the strongest assassins in the universe! You've already gotten so many advantages. Yet, you are feeling disappointed over such rubbish? I have never ever met anyone with such a sick combination before."

"Haha." Luo Feng laughed.

The golden horned beast and Mosha clan, both were really rare even in the entire universe. Many undying had yet to even see one before. And Luo Feng managed to get both bodies, it was a huge advantage altogether.

"Alright, I'll continue to practice my flying!" Luo Feng laughed, becoming a beam of light and headed towards a crevice on the surface of Mars where the universe ship was. He entered the ship and connecting his consciousness to the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe, Black Dragon Mountain island slaughterhouse.

"Appear!"

The little demon Babata waved his hand and immediately the space around warped, a large machinery factory appeared.

Within that factory were countless blurry machine traps all prepared beforehand. With just one look, the entire factory looked like a bee's nest. As it was densely packed, with just a bit of carelessness, one would easily knock into some of the machinery.

“This is the test for the first level of the 10,000 threads technique, the one thread movement.” Babata pointed at what seemed like an inescapable net of machinery before them, “If you are able to grab the 3,189 red balls within this factory without touching any of the machinery or getting hit by any of their attacks, then you’d be considered reaching the one thread level already.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

Yes!

Since his failure with Rong Jun before, Luo Feng had considered hard and realized that as a strong spirit reader controller, he had to be incredibly strong at flying! Man’s energy had a limit. One couldn’t be both a spirit reader and a fighter, normally they would focus on one! Naturally since he emphasized the spirit reader side, he had to emphasize flying.

Battle, had its own techniques!

A magician’s techniques in battle, like the soul imprint, was an example of that side. For the controller, the Nan Shen Armament’s nine levels were a form of training techniques.

Defense, had it’s own techniques too.

In terms of soul, the void pagoda, and physical defense, he could rely on weapons and armors to defend.

As for movement.

The fighter's way of movement had different techniques too!

A spirit reader stepping on a spirit weapon to fly too had its own techniques!

.....

Even to the point where, taming beasts, possession, enslaving, and other different techniques etc, had their own best or optimum techniques. The number of origin laws themselves were only that few. However, the origin laws were akin to culture and knowledge. By gaining the knowledge about these different cultures and knowledge, some are able to get strong while others may just remain ordinary.

One theory was that these techniques, are ways to unleash the full strengths of the origin laws!

The Nan Shen Armament is able to unleash the origin law's greatest battle abilities!

Soul imprint is possible too!

The void pagoda is possible too!

Absolute space is possible too!

The 10,000 threads was capable too!

Back when he was defeated by Rong Jun, Luo Feng had first asked the opinion of Babata. Hence, he finally chose the level five spirit weapon, the Dark cloud shuttle And also chose the spirit reader's flying technique the 10,000 threads! His teacher the Yun Mo Planet master, as a powerful spirit reader, knew many flying techniques. However, Luo Feng picked one that was different from his teacher's. His teacher Hun Yan Bo trained in the flying technique Space Control back then.

In terms of power, the two were comparable.

In terms of how common they were however, Space Control was much rarer, while 10,000 threads was a widely spread skill, many undying knew it!

However it being widely spread didn't mean it's power was weak!

"Hm, this 10,000 threads technique, after hearing your explanation, why do I feel that the Absolute space is very similar?" Luo Feng had asked Babata back then, Babata answered, "It is very similar indeed. Your Absolute Space training's second level, the Infinite Changes, is akin to the 10,000 thread's final level. And it was said that the 10,000 threads actually even has a higher level of teleportation. However, no one knows the training method."

Absolute space was split into three levels. Level one was Arc light, level two was Infinite Changes and Level three is

teleportation.

The 10,000 threads technique, was also split into three levels.

First level, one thread, this is comparable to the Absolute space's first level Arc Light.

The second level, nine threads.

Third level 100 threads.

Third level, 10,000 threads, at this time, it was comparable to the second level of Absolute space Infinite Changes.

It was said that there was another higher level, Teleportation.

However from the information that was spread about the technique outside, no one had the final training methods. This was also the reason why Babata was so shocked when he learned that the complete training of Absolute space included the Teleportation level! After all the path of comprehending the origin laws was a hard one. But, with a clear path ahead, it would save a lot of time and energy.

One valuable technique, even if people were willing to spread it, the most valuable parts still remained incredible valuable.

"Alright, what you said makes sense. This 10,000 threads

technique and my Absolute space follows the same path. Even though the training is different, the path is ultimately the same, they will complement each other and my training itself will also be easier, I'll pick this." This was back then when Luo Feng decided to pick this flying technique.

After these three years or so, Luo Feng had already completed the basics of the 10,000 threads.

Stepping on the Dark cloud shuttle, his flying was already very perfect. However he had yet to finish the one thread movement.

"Chi!" A steel wire just touched Luo Feng's back.

"Chi!" three needles were shot out and one touched Luo Feng's calf.

"Failure!"

Babata shouted.

From the secret weapons that covered the entire ceiling, Luo feng became a peculiar image and flew immediately down to Babata's side, shaking his head, "The test of the one thread is too difficult."

"If I used the Mosha clan body, I would be able to dodge easily." Luo Feng laughed.

“1. The Virtual Universe Company supplies the same body to everyone. 2. the Mosha clan is an energy life form and not human. It’s unable to participate in this genius battle.” The little demon raised two fingers, “I’ll give you a suggestion, return to reality and make the Mosha clan take the form of the golden horned beast to train Absolute space.”

“Ok.” Luo Feng nodded.

……

Solar system, Mars surface.

The black clothed Luo Feng stood within the red sandstorm that engulfed the entire desert and immediately transformed. His entire body became energy, transforming into a 12m long golden horned beast. Its appearance was completely similar to the golden horned beast. This form could be said to be a golden horned beast infant.

The black crystal with 10,081 surfaces within slightly revolved, its incomparably complex golden engravings melding with space itself.

“It’s too wondrous, this feeling.”

The little golden horned beast’s eyes were excited, it could clearly feel the ripples in space. That familiarity, that peculiar feeling… almost as though it was returning to its mother’s embrace.

“Begin!”

Rumble!

The little golden horned beast immediately worked according to the instructions of Absolute space, as it began its training. Its scaled wings, claws and tail all had to be used, especially its long tail which could easily do miniscule and quick changes in directions.

Two golden horned beasts, 3, 4, 5...

Little golden horned beasts appeared all around.

At this time, nine little golden horned beasts had appeared.

“With the golden horned beasts structure, it was really suited for the training of Absolute space. This Mosha clan, using my human form could only produce five images. While using the golden horned beast form, it can actually make nine!” The little golden horned beast was completely immersed in the training of Absolute space.

This technique was created from an earlier powerful golden horned beast from before, specially crafted to fit the golden horned beasts.

Even if humans acquired it they couldn’t train it.

Because they didn’t have tails, they didn’t have wings.

“Wonderful.” Immersed in the training of Absolute space, the little golden horned beast seemed to grasp the space origin laws easily.

Time passed day by day.

The golden horned beast focused on comprehending the gold origin laws while the Mosha clan body was in the little golden horned beast form training Absolute space.

Luo Feng himself was training on comprehending the two laws, melding them together. He was focused on studying the Nan Shen Armament, training hard on the 10,000 thread flying technique... with such high training efficiency, his strength continued to increase almost everyday.

November, December, January...

Finally, China time 2070, September, the gathering of the entire universe’s 1,008 universe countries over a million geniuses, the start date of the pinnacle fights was in this month!

Chapter 58 – Lifting the Curtain

China year 2070 September 5th.

Morning, Luo Feng stood on his own home's balcony. He was gazing at the east red sun rising from afar. Even though it was summer, the morning was still pretty chilly.

"Getting up early onto the balcony to watch the sunrise." In her pajamas, Xu Xin walked onto the balcony. Looking at the current Luo Feng, even though this man had reached the peak on earth, almost all his energy was still spent on the long and arduous unpredictable path of the strong.

To this, Xu Xin wasn't in the least unsatisfied as she had eventually come to terms with it.

It was only at certain times when she would feel forlorn and lonely, as Luo Feng would immerse himself in his training and isolate himself for 10 days or even half a month at times. Of course...Normally Luo Feng still cared a lot for his family.

"Right!" Luo Feng looked at the distant east horizon, watching the sun, smiling and nodding.

"These past few days you've been spending all your time in the dojo, it seems like you haven't seen the sunrise in a long time." Xu Xin said, "You should take some time to relax once in awhile, don't overwork yourself."

Luo Feng looked at his wife, extending his arm to gently embrace her, saying softly, “My wife, I’m sorry.”

“We are already an old couple, you don’t need to get so mushy!” A hint of red appeared on Xu Xin’s face.

“Hehe.” Luo Feng laughed.

“Tomorrow, it’ll begin.” Luo Feng looked at the distant rising sun, exclaiming, “That’s where the million geniuses from all the universe countries will gather. According to the situation of the Ganwu universe country…among these million geniuses, over half of them have stepped through the entrance of the origin laws!

In the Huge Axe dojo, even a universe level warrior who had stepped through the origin law’s entrance was considered invincible.

However in truth, in the universe, there were many star levels that had stepped through those doors.

Within the entire human race, there were only about 100s of thousands of these sort of absolute geniuses. However, with 1,008 universe countries, on average, with about a 100 in every universe country…the Ganwu universe country leader ordered the undying to specially get these absolute geniuses to enter the Ganwu secret area. It goes to show just how special these seedlings were.

These absolute geniuses, how could they send them to the Huge Axe dojo to gamble their lives.

The probability of death there was too huge.

Black Dragon Mountain, island 9 star bay district.

“Daddy!”

“Dad, all the best!”

Two similar looking youths looked at Luo Feng, their gaze filled with respect and worship.

This pair of twins were Luo Feng’s sons, Ping Ping and Little Hai. In terms of age, they were both 11 years old now. As they received excellent nurturing from birth, even when they were toddlers they had already reached the student level 9 and by now they’ve become star travellers. This caused their body structure to resemble that of earth’s ordinary 14 or 15 year olds.

In terms of looks, they received Xu Xin’s good looks, as both of them were handsome. Unlike Luo Feng, who looked ordinary.

The older brother Luo Ping had a better temperament, his character was gentle, his change since young was much more prominent.

The younger Luo Hai, however was noisy.

Afterall, they grew up in such a household, with the teachers being people like Di Fan and Bai Kalo, these two universe level 9 warriors (Ever since Bai Kalo received from Luo Feng the Yun Mo Planet training techniques, last year he broke through to the universe level 9). The staff and helpers in the house were all star levels too.

Along with Luo Feng's glory, it caused Luo Ping and Luo Hai to worship their father since young!

With such a father to be proud of...

Growing up in such a household, Luo Ping and Luo Hai may have their deficiencies in character. However, in their bones they still shared one point, which was that they wanted to become strong! The special thing about these twins however, was they both enjoyed battling in the virtual universe games from young. Even though they later awoke their spirit reading, their talent for it was weaker than Luo Feng's before.

However the two still chose to become fighters! This made their father Luo Feng somewhat helpless.

"Daddy is the strongest." Little Hai shouted loudly.

"Haha." Luo Feng couldn't help but laugh.

“Thirdie, all the best!” Standing beside, Thunder god waved his fists and shouted, “You are not only representing the Ganwu universe country, the more important thing is…you are representing us the people of earth!”

“Spoken well.” Luo Hong Guo nodded and shouted, his face gleeful, “Little Feng, your second brother spoke well, you represent the hope of us people of earth. Even though there are trillions of planets in the universe countries, with all the 1,008 universe countries added together, that’s even more shocking. However you have to do your best, fight for us people of earth.”

“Ok.” Luo Feng nodded his head.

In his mind, whether it was Thunder god, Hong or Luo Feng, their sense of belonging was like a strong flame.

“I’ll head out first.” Luo Feng took a big step and left.

Within the virtual universe’s many continents, islands, over a million geniuses from the 1,008 universe countries all went through the teleportation to the gathering spot.

Ganwu floating island.

Shua!

Luo Feng appeared at the teleportation spot on the floating island.

“Mr Luo Feng, please head this way.” Standing beside the teleportation spot was a universe level warrior, dressed in work clothes, smiling and directing the way to a path beside.

“Thank you.” Luo Feng smiled and nodded, following the path.

At this time...

Luo Feng could see in the not too distant plaza surrounded by a beautiful array of flowers and greenery, there was a large group of people gathered. With just a look there was at least a hundred, both men and women, all different looking. However at least one third of the group had features close to the humans of earth, the appearance of the earth humans was considered more mainstream.

“Luo Feng is coming.”

“That madman!”

Many youths looked over.

These 100 were those that got a slot on the namelist. This time the Ganwu universe country was sending out a 1000 geniuses.

“Luo Feng.”

“Hai, Madman.”

Among these people, there were many that smiled and waved at Luo Feng. Since he had taken part in the loser's circle duels, hence he had dueled 1v1 against all these people before.

"Windmill!"

"Pate Luo." Luo Feng waved back at those he was on good terms with.

As time passed, the geniuses all arrived, with more people arriving every second. And Savage Rong Jun was considered one of the later few. Finally the 1,000 geniuses had all gathered, these 1,000 stood together, many of whom recognized each other either from the real world or had dueled before, were engaged in discussions and reminiscing about the past.

"Luo Feng, your strength has risen by quite a bit this past year, I know your improvement must be huge." Savage Rong Jun looked over Luo Feng.

Luo Feng turned to look at the 3m tall Savage: "Wait till the pinnacle duels, you'll know after you try me!"

"That confident?" Savage's eyes gleamed.

Suddenly...

“Rumble!” A formless pressure covered the entire plaza. The 1000 geniuses all felt their faces go pale, their bodies shivering unconsciously. After which they heard footsteps, a giant dressed in scaled armor and wearing a helmet walked over. The energy he naturally emitted was almost like the god of death approaching.

Emitting that bloodthirsty aura, causing everyone to fear him immediately!

A 8m tall giant! This was that being from before.

“1,000 geniuses from the Ganwu universe country, according to the country leader’s command, I’ll lead you.” The giant’s voice rumbled, within the helmet his eyes gave off an overwhelming sense of pressure, “You all can call me Lord thirteen, understood?”

“Understood!”

The 1,000 absolute geniuses couldn’t help but answer in unison, including Luo Feng.

“What a terrifying pressure.” Luo Feng’s forehead had beads of cold sweat, “In reality, his willpower alone would immediately make my soul crumble.”

Terrifying!

1,000 geniuses, before this scale armored giant, seemed like weak little ants. They felt intense fear, this was a natural reflex, no

matter how strong one's will power was, they couldn't suppress such a reaction.

"Rong Jun!" The scale armored giant's gaze landed on the youth Savage, Rong Jun.

"Lord thirteen." Savage Rong Jun bowed.

"You are the only one from our Ganwu universe country that has a guarantee of not being eliminated. The country leader has a large expectation of you. You...don't let our country leader down, you understand?" The scale armored giant said.

"Yes." Savage replied respectfully.

The scale armored giant gazed past the rest of the youths, saying coldly, "As for everyone else, there's not much hope!"

Immediately a group of youths, gripped their fists tightly, among that group Luo Feng creased his eyebrows too.

"Hmph! Unsatisfied? Power doesn't come from the words you speak, it's displayed in battle!" The scale armored giant said coldly, "Except for Rong Jun, the strongest amongst you are only at Luo Feng's standards, and according to our information, there's an exceptional genius at this competition. If Luo Feng can make it into the top 5,000 that would be considered not bad, to make it into the top 1,000...the chances are however bleak!"

“Of course!”

“You all can create miracles! In history, there have been cases where some began average but suddenly exploded into absolute geniuses during the pinnacle fights” The scaled giant’s gaze swept past the large group, following which he changed the subject, “Alright, follow me!”

The group of absolute geniuses from the different starfields in the Ganwu universe country could only bear with it.

……

Following which, Luo Feng and the other geniuses, under the leadership of the scaled armor giant all reached the teleportation spot and were transferred to a brand new area the virtual universe had opened.

This was a vast continent.

Luo Feng and the others, including that scaled armor giant leading them, a total of 1,001 people simultaneously appeared on that large continent.

“Ganwu universe team, there are 1,008 skyscrapers ahead, your universe country’s team has been arranged for number 0825 skyscraper.” A middle aged man dressed in a white robe bowed and said respectfully to the scaled armor giant.

“Hm!”

The giant snorted out of his nose, and led the team to fly towards the skyscraper.

“Wa!”

“1,008 skyscrapers, one universe team for one skyscraper?”

Looking from far, the distant 1,008 skyscrapers had formed a ring, surrounded by these 1008 skyscrapers in the center, was a beautiful plaza with birds and fragrant flowers. Within that plaza were many youths, men and women from different universe countries strolling and chatting in it. With just a look, there were at least, over 10,000 people.

“Descend!” The scaled armor giant’s voice roared.

The geniuses from the Ganwu inverse swiftly descended, landing beside the plaza, following a straight path towards skyscraper number 0825. The plaza had pathways to each of the many skyscrapers.

“Look, that skyscraper 0825 is the Ganwu universe country’s. Looks like that’s the genius team from the Ganwu universe.”

“Rong Jun, that tall one must be Savage Rong Jun.”

“Wow! His power is very strong.”

“Which is Rong Jun?”

“Rong Jun?”

Many geniuses from the other universe countries all looked over at the Ganwu universe country’s team and began their own discussions.

Chapter 59 – Geniuses Gather

As the genius teams of every universe country heard the discussions from the other groups, they were very dissatisfied, yet held their hatred within. To be able to make it into the Ganwu universe country's top 1,000, who wasn't an absolute genius, a proud genius above many others? And right now it was obvious that the other geniuses from the other universe countries only respected Savage Rong Jun, and did not even mention any of the others.

"Madman, did you hear that. The other universe countries only know of our Ganwu universe country's Rong Jun." The green haired youth whispered in Luo Feng's year. This green haired youth was the absolute genius that was in the same city with Luo Feng in the elimination stage, the one that engaged him in a pinnacle final battle before it ended, Windmill.

Windmill was luckier than Luo Feng. During the arena duels, he won four consecutive duels to get a slot in the namelist.

Luo Feng was very calm. While following the large team ahead, he said softly, "Windmill, you can't blame them, Rong Jun is indeed strong."

"Hm." The green haired youth nodded his head. "I know that, I heard about it too. This Savage Rong Jun's strength is enough to make it into the top 10 of the entire universe. And us....just trying to get into the universe top 1,000 will be very hard."

“Top 1,000?”

Luo Feng squinted his eyes.

At this time, the geniuses from the Ganwu universe country followed the scaled armor giant into skyscraper 0825. The lobby was extremely vast, enough to hold over a 1,000 people that were gathered there.

Rumble!

That strong pressure appeared again. These 1,000 geniuses who were all under such pressure turned and look at the tallest scaled armor giant. That giant diminished his aura, and said coldly, “Over here, there are number tags from 1 to 1,000. You’ve all been assigned one. Once you’ve acquired yours, enter your own room. This will be your resting and living quarters!” Following which the scaled armor giant waved his hand!

The number tags began to fall, landing in front of each of the geniuses.

Savage Rong Jun extended his arm and grabbed the tag, there was only one number on it...1.

Luo Feng extended his arm too and grabbed his tag, the number on it was ...2.

The 1,000 geniuses all grabbed their tags.

“You are dismissed!”

“You can rest within your rooms or you can all go out to mingle with the geniuses from the other universe countries.” The scaled armor giant gazed at the 1,000 geniuses, saying coldly, “When it gets dark, the Virtual Universe Company’s organizing committee will gather you all. Whether you are in this space or anywhere else, you’ll be able to hear it.”

After he finished, the scaled armor giant immediately turned around and left.

Only then did the 1,000 geniuses from the Ganwu universe country let out a sigh of relief. The group started to disperse, with some staying behind to chat while others looking for their rooms.

The center plaza of the 1,008 skyscrapers was extremely huge. Even with a million people in there, it still wouldn’t be crammed. The plaza was surrounded by beautiful greenery and flowers, with little animals that could be seen occasionally.

Scattered throughout the plaza too were large restaurants.

A total of 99 restaurants could be found. The geniuses from the different universe countries could enter any one of these, all except for the first restaurant.

“Rumble!” The scaled armor giant became a beam of light and

landed in front of restaurant number one.

"Lord!"

The staff at the entrance of the restaurant bowed respectfully.

The scaled armor giant immediately stepped in. The first level of this restaurant alone had over a 1,000 seats. At this time there were already over a 1,000 great beings there.

"13!"

"13 is here."

Auras and energies filled with bloodthirst or even volatility more so than stars, or ice chill so cold it would freeze one's soul were present. These auras were all spread out throughout the level... these great beings sat casually about. It was almost as though they were the land and skies themselves, the surrounding space was totally controlled by them.

"Hm." The scaled armor giant nodded slightly, sitting down beside another valiant and brave looking god general.

"13, I heard your Ganwu universe country has a genius called Rong Jun this time? Haha, your luck is not bad."

"It's ok."

The scaled armor giant was not modest either. “Te Luo Fu, your universe country has someone called Blood axe right.” The white robed man with a face full of smiles, as though he was in spring itself said, “Yes, there is such a genius. His character is very similar to yours 13.”

“13, this time around, your Ganwu universe country may be able to produce two who might make it into the top 1,000 right.” Not far away, a tall and sturdy, bald man with bare feet and skin which was completely golden yellow in color shouted, “There’s another punk called Luo Feng.”

“His strength is still insufficient.” The scaled armor giant shook his head, “Saiful, everyone is saying that your Noah universe country can get number one.”

“The youth in Noah universe country is very strong.”

“Hm, he is only at star level and his space origin law comprehension has already reached such a level, really unbelievable.”

The great beings were all discussing.

These beings were all sent by their country leaders! Like a gathering of the pinnacle of universe countries, the undying sent here were all considered very strong even amongst the undying. Like 13, that was one of the 18 god generals of the Ganwu universe country leader, his reputation alone was widespread. He was a

being known for a trillion years.

Skyscraper 0825, room number 2.

This room was extremely spacious. The bed alone was 10m long and 6m wide. Some geniuses may have huge physiques, hence the room was prepared for such people. Naturally...this room which was at least 1000 cubic meters, it was huge for Luo Feng.

“I’ll head out and take a look.”

“I’ll have a look at the absolute geniuses from the other universe countries.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed with a strong sense of anticipation.

He didn’t have any hope of making it into the top 1,000?

The words from the scaled armor giant was obviously based on the arena duels round. In fact, from the end of the losers circle duels to now, the Mosha clan clone worked hard on Absolute space. His 3 bodies...the golden horned beast, the Mosha clan and his earth body all hadn’t relaxed for even a second.

Till now.

His strength had already increased at a terrifying rate! Even though in the slaughterhouse he could already defeat the simulated Rong Jun. However...

“From that battle till now, it’s already been over 4 years.”

“If I can improve that much, others can do so too. Within these 4 years, who knows how much that Rong Jun has improved?” Luo Feng thought, “What’s more, when he battled me back then, he hadn’t even unleashed his blade work!”

“1,008 universe countries, the geniuses are as numerous as the clouds.”

“I’ll give it a shot.”

“We’ll see how far I, Luo Feng can make it.” Luo Feng thought. To have been suffering patiently for over 4 years, this gathering of absolute geniuses from the 1,008 universe countries was exactly the place for him to unleash his full power!

Luo Feng walked out of the room and joined a few other geniuses from the Ganwu universe country leaving the skyscraper and headed towards the plaza.

……

The center plaza was even bigger than the planet of earth. However, these absolute geniuses’ bodies were all star level 9. With just one gaze they could see over a 100km.

When the geniuses from the Ganwu universe country entered the plaza.

“Look, Rong Jun.”

“It’s Rong Jun.”

“I heard he has the strength to make it into the top 10.”

“He is a very strong fellow, his comprehension of ground and space origin laws are already very high, I hope to not meet him.” Many other youths from the other universe countries were engaged in discussions, this made Rong Jun and the other geniuses from the Ganwu universe countries uncomfortable, naturally dispersing once they reached the plaza.

Luo Feng walked with the green haired youth Windmill.

“Luo Feng, look.”

The green haired youth pointed at a complete beauty dressed in a white feathery cloth. This lady was almost like the legendary angels of earth. She even had 2 wings on her back and there was a crystal in the middle of her forehead, “Her name is Ai Chen, from the Dream Shell clan. She has the power to make it to the top 10. Her nickname is Light blade and she is extremely terrifying.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng looked at the pure dream shell lady.

“Light blade Ai Chen.” Luo Feng gazed at the plaza. Prior to this, he naturally had gathered information on the strong opponents. Even though he couldn’t get specific details, he still knew the reputation and information of the stronger ones.

“He!”

Luo Feng looked at a black robed skinny youth who was about 2.3 or 2.4 m tall, hearing the people beside discussing, “That’s Hyno, Jia Laixi, he’s from the Howling gods clan, from the Peng Gu universe country. I heard from the start till end he never actually made a move. He just looks at the opponent and the opponents all get hypnotized and die. He’s a very scary hypnotist, who is definitely able to make it to the top 10.”

……

Walking within the plaza, they were discovering the number one geniuses from the many universe countries.

Even though they were number one in their respective universe countries, within the 1,008 universe countries, only about 20 of them had the power to make it to the top 10. Afterall even with powers matching up, one has to still factor in the condition during that day etc, and everything was unpredictable until the battle actually happens. However these 20 that had the largest commotion. Luo Feng had already seen their tapes.

The verdict…

They all weren't weaker than Rong Jun! There were even two of them who were much more terrifying than Rong Jun!

"The prince of the Manka." Luo Feng looked at the distant silver clothed youth. That youth with eyes burning with a mad battle spirit was also another absolute genius regarded as one able to make it to the top 10! There hadn't been such an exceptional young genius from the Manka planet in a very very long time.

……

Genius were all around him. This made Luo Feng's battle spirit burn with passion.

Strong!

This was the gathering of the geniuses from the 1,008 universe countries. Just from the surface there were about 20 able to match up to Rong Jun. And what's more they were probably hiding their powers too! Just like how when Savage Rong Jun battled against Luo Feng, he didn't even intend to reveal his space origin laws, and if he hadn't revealed it during that battle, who would know Rong Jun was that strong?

One theory!

1,008 universe countries, over a million geniuses. From the surface, one can see that the number of absolute geniuses

definitely wasn't just 20. Like Luo Feng, ones who had the power to make it into the top 10 were hiding their their strengths. No one knew who these geniuses were until during the battle..

"Hm?" Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

Silence!

The entire plaza went silent.

100,000 geniuses from all over, all turned almost simultaneously to one direction. Luo Feng turned too, from the distant large skyscraper a white clothed youth walked out. He looked very handsome except he had no expression. His entire being was like a frozen mountain, carrying two blood red long blades.

Walking towards the plaza, his ice cold gaze swept over the 100,000 geniuses, without even a ripple of emotion.

"Death god!"

"Death God Bolan!"

"It's him!"

"This round's undisputed number 1."

Finally the discussions had unified and converged. Simultaneously the Howling god youth clad in a black robe, that absolute beauty from the Dream shell clan, that Manka prince in armor, that seemingly unstoppable Savage, the one carrying blood colored huge axes, a fat strong looking youth at least 6m tall with slit eyes, the green haired youth with peculiar green engravings on his face...

From all corners of the plaza, the absolute warrior that stood above these over a million geniuses, everyone stared at this white clothed youth carrying the blood red long blades.

Amongst these warriors, naturally included was Luo Feng as well!

“Death God.” Luo Feng stared at the distant silhouette, muttering, “Death god Bolan?”

Chapter 60 – Cruel Elimination

Death god Bolan, was the most unbelievable absolute genius of this genius battle between the 1,008 universe countries!

Even when compared to the earlier competitions from before, it had been a very long time since such a perverted existence like that had appeared.

“From the gathered data, this death god Bolan had once created over a hundred mirror images. That’s… that’s just unbelievable.” Luo Feng looked at the distant white clothed youth carrying the blood red long blade on his back. He was very clear within that he wasn’t a match at all for this genius that had long been regarded as the undisputed number 1 this time.

According to the 10,000 thread levels.

The 3rd level was the 100 thread.

The 4th level was the 10,000 thread. That was already the highest level of the 10,000 thread technique. The legendary teleportation was after all just a myth.

And this Bolan’s revealed strength so far has indicated that he was obviously close to the 4th level. To be considered as such an anomaly in just the star level…looking at the previous number 1s of the ten earlier competitions, they all seemed to be stronger than Savage Rong Jun. However none had reached such a level before. Death god Bolan, he was invincible.

Even sector lords!

It was very hard to comprehend the space origin laws. To be able to reach the 4th level of 10,000 threads, that only happened with 1 amongst the 10,000!

If it was 1 amongst 10,000 for even sector lords, one could imagine for a star level punk...just how scary that was. It was no wonder that even before the genius battles had yet to begin, many undying had already concluded that the number 1 undisputed winner of the competition would be this white clothed youth.

“How did he train?”

“Just how did he train?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, “I rely on the Mosha clan to train, and I’ve only broken through to 1 thread, still very far from the 9 threads. After all the space origin laws...that’s one of the 2 hardest laws to comprehend, next to time.”

“Big brother.” An elegant green haired beautiful girl with her long hair curled up, her face covered with green engravings said, “That’s death god Bolan? That’s the one teacher said...the only one we have no chance of defeating?”

“Right.”

Beside her was another youth with similar green hair and

engravings on his face. He was nodding, while staring hard at the distant white clothed youth, “That’s him, a star level who’s reached such abnormal levels of comprehension with the space origin laws! Even in the recent million years of genius competitions number 1s, there hasn’t been anyone like him before!”

“However, Qian Shui.” The youth lowered his head to look at the lady beside him, “Even though we aren’t any match against death god Bolan, there’s still 2nd and 3rd place. We siblings must grab them.”

“Qian Shui understands.” The lady nodded.

This pair of siblings had terrifying reputations within this genius competition. They were from the mysterious place Augustus planet.

Within the vast universe, there were a few planets that were very mysterious, or had huge reputations.

Like the Manka planet, Augustus planet, Mu Zu planet and so on.

These planets all had undisputable power that made people’s hearts tremble. They could very easily send out a group of undying’s! These planets, could completely name themselves a universe country’s core. Like the Manka planet was one of the two cores of the Barbarian universe country.

……

Within the center of the plaza, 100,000 geniuses couldn't help but look at the white clothed youth, causing him to crease his eyebrows and enter a restaurant.

"Hu."

"That's death god Bolan."

"I really don't know how he trains. No matter how powerful the bloodline, he shouldn't be that abnormal."

"I suspect he isn't even human."

Discussions were rampant in the plaza among the gathered 100,000 geniuses in the plaza, along with the beings in restaurant number 1.

As time passed, the leaders of the 1,008 universe countries of geniuses…the great undying's, all arrived here at restaurant number 1. Be it in the 1st level or the 2nd level, they were all chatting casually.

"This youth called Bolan, although he is only a star level, his comprehension of the space origin laws is that strong. Who knows, in a hundred eras…he might become a space knight."

“Space knight? That’s too much.”

“To become a space knight, that’s still a long ways to go. Many undying’s have trained for trillions of years and still have been unable to become space knights. He’s still far off.”

“Hm, becoming a space knight is not that easy to achieve.”

“Hard, hard, hard.”

“Even his physical body passing through space and teleporting is still far from it. Much less becoming a space knight.”

“That’s excessive flattery!”

“In our 1,008 universe countries, how long has it been since we’ve had a new knight. That youth may be an exceptional rare genius from many generations of competitions. However in terms of geniuses…if you had said he’d become like us as undying’s, I’d agree! However to become a space knight, that’s simply too…”

Space knight, these two words had aroused the objections of a large group of the undying’s, as all of them were rejecting the idea.

“Haha, what are you discussing, it’s so noisy!”

A bright voice resounded throughout the entire restaurant number 1’s 1st and 2nd floors. Immediately all the undying’s

turned to look. At the entrance, was a man dressed in a very simple green robe. He had a gently smile and his eyes contained a friendly gaze. His head was covered in purple scales.

Although his entire being was standing there, it almost seemed like he didn't exist, almost as though he was in a different time and space from the other undying's.

Rumble!

All the undying's on the 1st level immediately stood up, including that scale armored giant 13, they all bowed respectfully.

"Sir knight!" The hundred or so undying's bowed.

"This time, for our Virtual Universe Company's organized genius competition, all your great universe countries have supported us. I represent the Virtual Universe Company and express our thanks." The green robed purple scaled man smiled.

"That's what we ought to do."

The 1st and 2nd floor undying's all resounded.

"Hm." The green robed purple scaled man smiled and nodded, "Continue your discussions, in a bit, I will gather all the youths." After which, he turned and left.

After he left.

The entire 1st floor of undying's, including many constantly coming down from the 2nd floor, began their discussions.

"It's actually Sir nine blades."

"I heard that Sir nine blades was recently at the Automaton territory, in one of their universe secret areas. I didn't expect him to host this genius competition."

"Speaking of which, about 100,000 eras before, when Sir nine blades was still at the star level, he took part in the genius battle too! Back then, he was the number one of that time during which he had shook the entire competition. His reputation and show back then doesn't seem any less than this youth Bolan."

"Hm."

"So what if one has good talent? Just the path to become an undying alone is a very bumpy road, and large amounts of sector lords fall right at the final doorway. That Bolan, has to go through a lot on the bumpy road to becoming undying, much less the 10,000 times or million times harder path of a space knight."

The group of undying's sighed.

These were all undying's from the many universe countries with high amounts of power and authority, all of them were important

and authoritative people directly under their country leaders. They could easily destroy a few planets or stars with a flip of their hand. However if they could become a knight of any path...that would be one with the ability to own a few starfields and create a universe country already.

A space knight, with a wave of his hand could turn the flow of stars and change the space altogether. A planet in front of them, was akin to a glass marble.

At evening.

Sipping drinks in one of the restaurants in the plaza, Luo Feng suddenly heard a voice invade his consciousness: “Participants from the 1,008 universe countries, please gather at the center plaza.” Unconsciously Luo Feng stood straight up. It wasn’t just him, all the geniuses in the restaurant stood up too.

1,008,000 geniuses, be it flying from the sky or from the skyscrapers all flew out, some even flying from the edges of the plaza all gathering in the center.

Over a million geniuses were gathered there!

At this time!

With 1,008,000 geniuses there forming a large square formation, stood in the center of the plaza. After which...they all awoke.

“What happened?” Luo Feng awoke.

“What’s going on?”

“Ah, why am I here, I was just within the house.”

The entire square formation of over a million geniuses had woken suddenly, even that death god Bolan too had the same shocked expression.

At this time, above the square formation, 1,008 undying’s stood there. These undying’s naturally released their auras and pressure, with the pressure of over a 1,000 undying’s...these caused the over a million geniuses to immediately go silent, not one daring to even make a sound.

“Welcome to all participants in our Virtual Universe Company’s pinnacle genius competition.” A gentle voice resounded within every ear.

Everyone turned over to look, and were completely shocked.

The originally empty space in front suddenly had a green armored purple scaled man appear. He was all smiles...however standing in mid air, he seemed like an ancient god. The aura he naturally emitted made the over one million geniuses submit unconsciously.

Also!

Even though they could see him there with their eyes, all the geniuses felt as though this great being himself was almost like in a different space altogether. That time and space disorderly feeling made them feel extremely uncomfortable.

“1,008 universe countries, a thousand from each, a total of over a million geniuses.” The green robed man stood in mid air, surveying the over a million geniuses below, his voice was gentle, “Our Virtual Universe Company is going to pick the 1,000 strongest from you all and absorb them into the core of our Virtual Universe Company.”

“The million of you will contest for 1,000 slots.”

“The rules are as below.”

“Tomorrow, all of you will separately enter a training space. Our Virtual Universe Company has prepared over a million training spaces, one for each of you.”

“There’s a total of 7 towers within the training space! Every tower has 7 levels!”

“From the 1st tower you will begin your battle, after finishing the 1st tower and all of its 7 levels, then you can enter the 2nd tower. If you die at any point, you will be kicked out of the training space!”

“According to your training space results, we’ll calculate the

points.”

“The top rankers in points from rank 1-100 will immediately be absorbed into the Virtual Universe Company’s core members, acquiring 100 slots.”

“From rank 101 to rank 7300, these 7200 people will engage in arena duels and fight for the remaining 900 slots.”

“As for those 7300 and behind…they’ll be eliminated!”

The green robed man’s words caused the over a million geniuses to be stunned.

There were a total of 1,008,000 people this time, meaning that just from this training space, over a million were going to be eliminated!

Chapter 61 – Luo Feng's Plan

That mysterious being that represented the Virtual Universe Company left straight after that simple announcement.

Even though Luo Feng and the others were still curious, they could only return to skyscraper 0825 to rest.

Daybreak of the next day.

"Everyone please get ready, we'll begin the group teleportation soon, which will send all the participants into their respective training spaces." A clear voice resounded within the entire space where the skyscrapers were. The geniuses within the 1,008 skyscrapers were up much earlier, awaiting the beginning of the elimination.

First the elimination and later the duels.

However in terms of brutality of the round, it was obvious that the training space round made their hearts tremble.

"All the best."

"Work hard." Within the large hall of the skyscraper 0825, the geniuses from the Ganwu universe country wished each other, it was too brutal. This 1st wave of elimination alone eliminated over a million people. Of the 1000 geniuses in this hall, less than a count of 10 fingers worth of people may be left.

“Madman, good luck.”

“Windmill, all the best.”

Luo Feng and the green haired youth Windmill encouraged each other.

Suddenly…

Rumble!

A formless peculiar energy descended on the space, causing the 1,008,000 geniuses within to immediately be teleported. As for the undying’s still in that space, along with the waiters and staff etc, they weren’t affected at all.

There was a large meteorite that was close to 100km in size, rectangular shaped, floating in mid space.

Shua!

Luo Feng appeared on the meteorite. As he looked around, there were distant little stars around him. And not too far from himself, ordinary planets without any life could be seen. He couldn’t help but exclaim, “The virtual universe created more than million training spaces, just this one alone is so realistic.”

This meteorite which was floating in the universe had 7 towers!

Every tower, was high like a mountain, at least 10km tall and several km cubic meters in area. The 7 towers were spread out in different locations on this huge meteorite.

Luo Feng lowered his gaze to look at his wrist. On it was a screen, just like during the elimination back in the Ganwu universe country selection.

“Participant: Luo Feng (Ganwu universe country)

Points: 0

Rank: None

Training space location: Number 027 9378

There were a total of 7 towers in a training space and each one of these towers had 7 levels.

The 1st training tower, every level alone had a maximum score of 10,000 points. If one completed all 7 levels, they could at most acquire 70,000 points.

The 2nd tower, every level’s maximum score was 100,000 points. Completing all 7 levels would gain one a maximum of 700,000 points.

……

The 4th tower, every level's maximum score was 10 million. Completing all would give one 70 million points.

……

The 7th tower, every level's maximum score was 100 trillion points. After completing all 7 levels, one would acquire 700 trillion points.

Note: The moment one dies, the training ends.

There were two ways to get past every level. One of them was to kill all the targets within that level, acquiring all the points possible and being transported immediately to the next. The second way was, instead of killing all targets, if one still survived without dying after ten days, he would be immediately transported to the next level and continue on.

When all of the participants have died, the training ends. The final ranking will be determined then.

Below shows the ranking."

……

“Madness.” Luo Feng looked at the screen, shaking his head, “When everyone dies, the training ends? What does this mean... does it mean that there is a possibility that no one can actually make it past the 7th tower!”

Obviously, the difficulty of the towers were extremely high.

The Virtual Universe Company had confidence in killing off everyone of the participants!

“This is pretty similar to the elimination stage of the Ganwu universe country. However that time it was just within that one world, and it was just a part of the Ganwu universe country’s selection and ranking within that one world. And this time! It’s actually the pinnacle geniuses from the 1,008 universe countries all gathered. The strong are numerous as the clouds, and ranking below 7,300, one would immediately be eliminated.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows and pondered.

Obviously!

The 1st tower was meant to be easier, and it got gradually harder towards the end!

“This states that there are two ways to get past every level. One is to kill all the targets and the other is to survive for 10 days? Then he’ll be automatically transported.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, “Doesn’t this mean...in every level, I can stay for as long as 10 days?”

“Each training tower has 7 levels!”

“Then, just in one tower I can stay for as long as 70 days!”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but reveal an expression of excitement, “That’s great, this way the 5 towers will give me one year’s worth of time.”

What did he lack the most currently? Time!

The golden horned beast just broke through to the universe level, it’s natural talents had just begun to flourish, comprehending the domain and studying the gold origin laws. And the Mosha clan body...had just been born last year October, its training till now hadn’t even reached a year. If he had one more year of time.

He would definitely be even stronger!

“Right!’

“This is it!” Luo Feng made the decision, “I won’t rush forward anxiously at the start. I’ll let the Mosha clan body in reality work and train hard, maximizing my growth as much as possible. The stronger I get! Then I’d definitely be able to go further in this training space...till then...”

“Hm!”

“Maybe my ranking will be extremely low at first. However there’s no rush, the more important thing is the final rank.”

“I’ll shock everybody with a single brilliant move.” Luo Feng laughed.

Rumble!

He became a beam of light and flew towards that 1st tower. That tower that was at least 10km tall with an engraving ‘1’ on its entrance. This was the 1st tower. Luo Feng prepared his spirit weapons and armor etc, and entered.

The moment he entered.

The words on Luo Feng’s screen moved, “1st tower, 1st level: 10,000 ferocious beasts Hairy Blood Mammoths.

Killing one beast would get one point, while killing all would give 10,000 points and teleporting him straight to level 2.

If one didn’t kill them all and survives for 10 days, he’ll be transported immediately to level 2 as well.

Death will mean the end of training.”

At the side of the screen, there was even a countdown timer. Obviously the moment the 10 days were up he would be

transported.

“Just like what I thought.” Luo Feng smiled, “Then let’s begin!”

……

In reality.

Solar system, mars.

A golden horned beast at least 10m long let out an excited cry. “Roar…” after which images of the golden horned beast appeared about, continuing to study the Absolute space. As a being favoured by space itself, the Mosha clan clone was studying a space technique with total enjoyment, that feeling was wonderful.

Virtual universe, within that plaza stood the 1,008 undying’s, casually spread out.

The training space elimination wasn’t broadcast publicly in the entire universe. The only thing broadcasted were the rankings. And only the final duels would be broadcasted publicly! However… the undying’s from the many universe countries had special privileges, they could watch the stream of every participant.

“This Bolan, indeed he’s vicious, the moment he started, he has been ranked number 1.”

“Hm!”

“So fast, this Bolan’s score is rising at such a shocking speed. It far exceeds the number 2 ranker.”

“13, your Ganwu universe country’s Rong Jun is not bad too, right now he’s ranked 12.”

The 1,008 undying’s could easily watch the rank table and the situation of each participant. Right now they represented each universe country. And so, naturally they’d wish for their own geniuses to be more outstanding, that way they’d gain more respect. To these eternal beings, face and respect was extremely important.

“Still ok.” The scaled armor giant nodded slightly, sitting in an enormous chair, watching the screen.

“Rong Jun.” He directly opened the stream of Rong Jun’s situation.

All that could be seen was the wild barefooted youth, with peculiar movement, extremely quick, wielding a battle blade and slashing at the winged, three eyed hairy lion like creatures, ferocious beast Chimera.

The scale armored giant couldn’t help but reveal a smile on his face.

“Hm?” His eyebrows creased, his anger showing, “This Luo Feng...”

He actually didn’t notice that the rankings had Luo Feng’s name. From his expectations, this Luo Feng should at least be able to make it to the top 10,000, following which he opened his own name list of the Ganwu universe country and saw Luo Feng’s name... “Luo Feng (Ganwu universe country), rank: 1,006,891.” This made the giant’s eyes rage, his anger revealing itself.

“What’s this idiot doing?” The scale armored giant opened Luo Feng’s stream, looking at it he creased his eyebrows, “He’s not even working hard, this punk, he’s using the training space to train?”

Exactly!

However the golden horned beast and the Mosha clan clone were both engaged in training. Even if Luo Feng’s earth body didn’t train and just constantly absorbed the comprehension from those 2 bodies, using it in battle, he would constantly grow even more.

1st tower 1st level, 2nd level...

In each level, he stayed for a full 10 days. He waited till the last moment to go kill all the targets. Obviously amongst the over 1 million geniuses, it wasn’t just Luo Feng doing this. Many others had used the same strategy during the easier earlier levels to squeeze out more time to strengthen themselves.

Hence this resulted in Luo Feng not being the last.

However he was still almost the last, amongst the bottom 1000 or 2000.

……

60 days later.

Rumble!

Luo Feng reached the 7th level of the 1st tower.

“The 6th level before, what was in it was actually the space beast Cang.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but exclaim as he thought about the previous level, simultaneously he looked at the screen on his wrist.

1st tower 7th level, Bug clan Mother Nest

Killing the mother nest would give 10,000 points, immediately transporting to the 2nd tower’s 1st level.

Bug clan Mother nest in reality, even the weakest mother nest was still comparable to a sector lord, sometimes even comparable to many undying’s. This training space’s mother nest was lowered in power to fit the participants level.

Suggestion: Kill the mother nest as early as possible. The later it gets, the mother nest will produce more and more bug clans, and stronger ones at that!”

Rumble!

The 7th level space immediately transformed into a vast desert. Within the center of the desert there was a patch of green and there lay a huge round ball, with a diameter of about 60m. The round ball had dents in it, simultaneously emitting...some poison. Even its body itself was covered in poisonous liquid.

“Bug clan mother nest?” Luo Feng stared, “Earth, earth... Shenlong Jia...”

Luo Feng thought of the three great dangers of earth. In Shenlong Jia there was a terrifying mysterious ball there, even Babata had forbidden him from touching that thing.

Chapter 62 – Bug Clan Mother Nest

“So that’s the bug clan mother nest?” Luo Feng was filled with fear within.

Right, fear!

Bug clan, they were one of the pinnacle of races comparable to the human race.

They were a very peculiar clan.

The population of the bug clan, one could say they were shockingly many. However from a different point of view, they could also be said to be shockingly few! One bug clan mother nest can produce trillions and trillions of bug soldiers, their dominating strategy is that of using their numbers to overwhelm others. However from a different standpoint, these slaughtering bug soldiers have very low intellect, even to the point of no intelligence at all, only physical capabilities!

Countless bug soldiers were all completely subservient and obedient to the mother nest’s command.

The mother nest could send them to their deaths and none of them would even resist.

Hence…

Within the bug clan, only the mother nest had the right to be considered a life form with intelligence. With the number of mother nests around, the bug clan could be said to be extremely few in numbers.

And within every mother nests, the weakest was comparable to a sector lord, while the strongest was comparable to undying's! One mother nest could produce countless bug races, enough to dominate one galaxy, even up to a vast starfield!

"Mother nest on earth?" Luo Feng felt a chill within, "Babata that bastard!"

In reality, solar system, mars.

A small golden horned beast's body suddenly became energy, swiftly forming a black clothed Luo Feng.

"Babata, what's going on?" Luo Feng raged.

The golden horned beast was currently at universe level 8, hence he could preserve his consciousness both within reality and the virtual universe. What's more, the natural talent, void pagoda, allowed Luo Feng's earth body to be able to gather his focus to do several things with his consciousness. All this while maintaining a basic awareness in the body itself.

"What?" Babata said unhappily.

“You can still ask? Let me ask you, that Shenlong Jia mysterious ball on earth, what is that?” The black clothed Luo Feng raged.

“Luo Feng, I told you before, don’t be anxious, when it’s time for you to know, I’ll let you know.” Babata said, “That thing is not something the current you can deal with.”

“That’s the bug clan Mother nest!”

Luo feng roared angrily, “The moment it awakens it can produce countless large amounts of bug soldiers. When that happens, countless soldiers will swiftly dominate the entire milky way! Even spreading throughout the black dragon mountain star field! This is a disaster, disaster! The moment it awakens, earth will be finished!”

“There was such a big danger. Yet, you actually kept it from me.” Luo Feng was a ball of rage.

My god.

The mother nest was on earth, this was akin to when one went to bed only to know there was a bomb under the bed, one that could explode at any time.

“Oh, you know?” Babata was shocked.

“Hmph!” Luo Feng tried hard to suppress his anger, “Speak, what do we do now?”

The bug clan, as one of the pinnacle of races comparable to humans in the universe, any one mother nest would be considered a great disaster! Hence in the virtual universe network, any information with regards to the bug clan mother nest was all considered classified, not easily widespread or easy to acquire. However the terrifying abilities of the bug clan...Luo Feng knew long ago!

The inherited memories of the golden horned beast, back then just gathering all the memories alone took 16 days.

The information contained within these memories was too huge.

Luo Feng had only slightly organized it, and not looked at everything. With regards to the mother nest, Luo Feng too had only briefly browsed through the basics. The basic introductions didn't have the picture of the bug clan mother nest, it stated, "Bug clan, the core lies in the mother nests. And the mother nests are lairs built by the queen."

"The queen's body is fragile and soft, yet it has a very powerful spirit reading energy. However it's physical body is weak, hence it builds a strong mother nest, that itself becomes its armor."

"The queen can produce countless bug soldiers, the nest it builds is specially designed for its body, although it's appearances differed."

.....

Luo Feng back then had only briefly organized the inherited memories, looking through only the most basic introductions. At this time he was shocked to discover that there was a bug clan mother nest on earth!

Hence he had to go and look at the information in detail.

The introduction of the mother nest only had so few words. However the detailed introduction had large amounts of pictures and 10s of millions of words. The information contained the detailed scariness of the bug clan mother nests, the many types of bug soldiers it could produce etc, along with large amounts of pictures. This made Luo Feng very clear.

On earth, indeed there was a mother nest.

“Don’t be angry, don’t get anxious, what are you worried about, do you think I’ll harm your earth?” Babata said.

“I know you won’t, but I still must know. What’s the deal with this bug clan mother nest.” Luo Feng’s consciousness communicated, “If you don’t explain clearly, I won’t be able to relax!”

Who could?

A thing that could at anytime destroy earth and even the entire milky way, who could relax?

“Alright.” Babata said helplessly, “I’ll tell you, this bug clan mother nest was something your teacher brought back from the battlefield outside the starfield.”

“Teacher?”

Luo Feng asked more, “Let me ask you, within this mother nest, is there a queen?”

The mother nest was only a nest or lair. The bug clan queen was the true life form, because the body of the queen was fragile and weak…any warrior could easily destroy its body, plus the difficulty of building a nest itself was very high. Hence the queens of the bug clan couldn’t easily dispose of their nests and build others.

“Yes! There is!”

“And it’s still alive.” Babata said.

“Ah!” Luo Feng’s expression changed.

“However you can relax, it poses no threat at all to earth at the moment.” Babata explained, “Relax, you can think of it as…in a coma, and it’s an eternal coma. As for the details, wait till your soul imprint reaches the level of your teacher, and you’ll understand.”

“Nothing will happen?” Luo Feng still felt it was a ticking time bomb.

“No! Unless an undying with soul abilities even higher than your teacher comes.” Babata smiled, “That level of undying, if he wanted to destroy earth, he could do so with a flip of his hand. He wouldn’t waste the effort to keep a living bug clan mother nest.”

Only then did Luo feng relax, curiously asking, “What did my teacher want to actually do with this mother nest, he even went as far as keeping it alive?”

“The bug clan mother nest’s potential energy is very huge. If one could enslave this mother nest just like he does humans, and nurture it well, then your teacher would have a very powerful force with him. Just that endless bug army would be enough to save your teacher’s life from that attack before.” Babata exclaimed.

Luo Feng nodded.

The bug clan mother nest could produce 10s of millions of bug soldiers.

Once one could truly control a mother nest, that was extremely powerful. Against an endless sea of bugs...even undying’s would have problems! If it wasn’t that strong, the bug clan wouldn’t be considered one of the elite races of the universe.

“Teacher’s ambition was really wild.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but

say.

Babata said helplessly, “However the bug clan mother nest’s life form itself is strange. Saying it’s a pure life form is not completely right. However, it’s soul can be distributed into every single bug soldier’s mind, and it can control all their thoughts. Your teacher’s enslaving soul imprint is unable to control it, and before he could come up with a way to do so, he put it into an eternal sleep.”

“Hence he threw it onto earth?” Luo Feng said.

“Well he can’t leave it on the Yun Mo Planet ship right.” Babata replied.

Luo Feng was speechless.

The genius battle elimination was still going on.

Over a million training spaces, the massacre continued.

“The powerful bug clan mother nest, had its strength lowered to such a level.” Luo Feng’s golden blades immediately slit open the mother nest, from within flew out a 6m tall, with an entire body white and translucent crystal like queen. It had beautiful translucent butterfly wings, its face covered with mist, emitting a unordinary charm, peculiar and powerful music like sounds resounded and entered his ears.

“Indeed a queen that’s proficient in spirit reading. It’s charm

alone is that powerful.”

At the same time! Chi!

A powerful spirit energy pierced into Luo Feng’s consciousness.

“Rumble!”

The void pagoda stood there, the spirit attack pierced in and dispersed.

……

Days passed one at a time.

That beautiful queen thought and tried many ways to attack Luo Feng. With its weak and fragile body, it could only rely on spirit attacks. As for Luo Feng with his incredibly strong consciousness and willpower, also with the void pagoda training, it was akin to an ant trying to shake a tree, it didn’t affect Luo Feng at all.

Actually if one was able to kill all the bug soldiers, usually the queen itself didn’t have much resisting ability.

The queen was strong, in the sense it could produce endless and many types of bug soldiers.

“Countdown, 10 days?”

Luo Feng looked down at the screen on his wrist, a few more minutes and the 10 days would be up, he stepped on the dark cloud shuttle…becoming a beam of light and shooting at the queen hiding in the distance that didn’t dare to mess with Luo Feng. That seemingly weak and fragile poor queen, it’s dark blue eyes filled with resentment looking at Luo Feng.

Chi!

The golden blade pierced right through it’s forehead.

“Still using its charm.” Luo Feng pondered, “The 1st level bug clan mother nest wasn’t strong at all. It could barely deal with normal star level 9s.”

Killing everything and finishing the 1st tower’s 7 levels, he was transported to the 2nd tower. The shocking thing was, the opponents of the 2nd tower were actually exactly the same as the 1st! The only difference was that their strengths had risen greatly!

“The same ferocious beast Hairy blood mammoth in the 2nd tower is much stronger than the 1st! Then the 3rd tower, the 4th, how scary would they be? Also the back 5th, 6th and 7th! No wonder the Virtual Universe Company has so much confidence that everyone would eventually die.” Luo Feng was shocked.

This Training space, was very difficult!

.....

The aim of the 7 towers and the numbers were all exactly the same. Only the strength of the creatures were different.

1st level, the ferocious beast hairy blood mammoth, a total of 10,000 of them.

2nd level, it was the demon 9 headed python, a total of 10,000 of them. The difference between the demons and ferocious beasts was...the intellect. Just like the beasts on earth, in truth they belonged to the demon race.

3rd level, the metallic life form Tuo Luo race warriors, 1,000 of them.

4th level, was the universe mysterious being, flying monkey, 1,000 of them. They belonged to a special breed of the ferocious beasts.

The 5th level, was the automaton race puppets, 100 of them!

6th level, was the space beast Cang, 10 of them!

The 7th level was the bug clan mother nest, just 1!

The 7 towers were all arranged the same way. However it was

very obvious that the strength of the creatures in the 7 towers rose greatly with each tower.

Chapter 63 – Smiling 13

The genius battle had created huge waves of excitement in every universe country, getting the attention of countless people.

And the pinnacle of geniuses battle currently from the 1,008 universe countries, made countless people from all over incredibly anxious. It couldn't be helped, after all the training elimination round wasn't broadcasted publicly, only the rankings could be checked.

"Rong Jun is too cool!"

"Look, on the virtual universe website, the newest footage of Savage Rong Jun has been shown." In the virtual universe streets of the Ganwu continent, a couple of youths pointed at the screen in the street. That girl said excitedly as the man beside her laughed, "The ranks are constantly changing. However, as long as they make it into the top 1,000, the Virtual Universe Company will create a broadcast for them. It's only our Ganwu universe country's Rong Jun has gotten that honor."

"Wasn't there a Luo Feng before?"

"Haven't you seen the ranks, he's all the way at the bottom." The man shook his head.

"Didn't a lot of big people say Madman Luo Feng was very strong? What happened, why is his rank so low?" The girl asked curiously.

“No idea.” The man shook his head and sighed, “It is rather disappointing. I still worshipped him so much before, I always felt he was more vicious than Rong Jun, however now…”

Over a hundred million galaxies in the Ganwu universe country, countless people were discussing the ranks of the genius battle, while many were expressing their disappointment at Luo Feng. Because, in the past…within the Ganwu universe the discussions were rampant with the ranking of the geniuses of the Ganwu country, Rong Jun was ranked 1 and Luo Feng 2. These two were the main stars.

However from the current look!

Rong Jun was intrepid, but Luo Feng? He was ranked right at the bottom. Within the over ten thousand star fields within the Ganwu universe country, their words about Luo Feng were already considered gentle. The ones from the Black Dragon Mountain starfield however had gone mad!

……

“Madman! Have you really gone mad, why are you so lousy?”

“You shouldn’t be so lousy!”

“Such a disappointment!”

“Madman, my beloved madman, my worshipped madman, where is he?”

“How can you be right at the back, I don’t expect you to rush to the front, but you should still make it to the top 10,000.”

“Madman, madman!”

“You are such a letdown.”

In the Black Dragon Mountain empire, the countless citizens that were proud of Luo Feng had intense feelings. Some so far that they scolded Luo Feng with rage, hating that he didn’t fight hard enough.

“The rankings are still moving, we’ll only know at the end. Luo Feng may just go at it at the end. Before in the 1st world, he did the same thing as he only showed his strength at the back.”

“Everybody has to believe in Madman”

“We will always support Madman!”

One spectrum was intense hate and rage after experiencing disappointment! The other was a solid support, keeping faith in Luo Feng! However...Luo Feng who represented the Black Dragon Mountain empire in the pinnacle of genius battles, had indeed hurt many of the citizens faith.

Virtual universe, in the plaza surrounded by 1,008 skyscrapers.

1,008 undying's all sat there, looking at the floating screen, laughing and discussing.

"There's really a bunch of geniuses who hid their true strengths in their respective universe country selections."

"Surprises."

The group of undying's were judging a few of the shocking performances, as the top 100 of this training space elimination would immediately receive a slot on the namelist. Hence many of the truly strong warriors who had been hiding their strengths unleashed it all, all using their full strengths, causing the undying's to be surprised.

"That apeman youth is really nimble. These sort of places with many opponents really suit him."

"Hm." Beside, the scale armored giant's voice rumbled "Training space is afterall just a test. It's nothing like a 1v1 battle! And whatever's been arranged within, there's metal life forms, automaton dolls, these are all things that don't fear soul attacks. Hence, those proficient in soul attacks are at a major disadvantage."

1v1, human duel.

Compared to this training space elimination, there would be differences in the people picked out.

“13, what you said makes sense.” Beside, a silver haired man in a silver long robe said, “However, a true genius would still perform well. And I feel that this training space has been designed well, because in the future, their enemies will be the many different strong races in the universe!”

“Hm.” The scale armored giant nodded his head, looking at the ranking on the screen, where it displayed the 1,000 geniuses form the Ganwu universe country.

“Rong Jun, ranked 16, not bad.”

“This Luo Feng!”

The scale armored giant was angry, “He’s really treating it as a training ground, taking the maximum 10 days every level. This punk, he really doesn’t care about others scolding him outside!” As he paid attention to Luo Feng, he could easily see…that Luo Feng was using up all the time given at each level.

“Hm? Eliminated?” The scale armored giant discovered that two other geniuses from the bottom had red universe language words behind them…Eliminated.

“Two more died!”

……

At this time, in the center plaza there were already up to 100,000 eliminated geniuses.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

Almost every few seconds, 10 or so human silhouettes would simultaneously appear in the center plaza.

“Windmill, you’ve been eliminated too?”

“Bu La Si, you were earlier than me.” The green haired youth Windmill joked back.

“I’ve never expected myself to be able to get into the top 7,300.” A handsome youth with curly hair, dressed in golden armor, shook his head, “When I entered the training space, I fought hard with the greatest speed through each level, wanting to raise my rank. And everything went as I expected, killing fast at the start, my name rose extremely fast, rushing to the top 100,000 even. However the 3rd tower later was really too difficult, my speed slowed down and finally I died! In an instant my rank dropped to the back 300,000, and after my death, at the 3rd tower 5th level, I was sat on by that automaton puppet, really tragic.”

“Sat on?” Windmill laughed loudly.

“How far did you reach?” That handsome youth asked.

“3rd tower level 7.” Windmill couldn’t help but curse, “That bug clan mother nest was too strong as the bug soldiers kept coming out. The production speed was much faster than the previous two towers, and much stronger as well. My killing speed couldn’t match up to the production speed…I could only watch as the soldiers increased in number and buried me alive.”

“Haha…” The handsome youth couldn’t help but laugh, “Oh, right, I just checked the rankings, the Madman from our universe country, the one that you are on good terms with, why is he so low?”

“Low?”

Windmill gazed about, “Have you looked around? There’s already over 100,000 eliminated geniuses. As long as Madman stays within the training space, his name will continue to rise, just wait! That punk, I’m very sure, just like the last time in the 1st world of elimination, this punk didn’t even do anything the 1st 10 days, and later went on a slaughtering spree. I’m sure this will be exactly the same!”

“So devious?” The handsome youth stared.

“This is called calm! Grounded!” Windmill mocked, “Unlike you, rushing headfirst, being eliminated at the 3rd tower 5th level.”

.....

7 towers.

1,008,000 geniuses, they had all passed the 1st and 2nd towers. However, the moment the 3rd tower began, many had been eliminated.

The 3rd tower had eliminated the most people. Almost 90% of the entire number!

“Luo Feng, right, just like that, stay low.” The 9th prince Brolin was within his own Black Dragon Mountain island’s palace, comfortably laying in his chair, looking at the floating screen. On it was a forum, he was watching a large amount of people scolding Luo Feng for not fighting hard enough.

“Interesting, interesting.”

Brolin was all smiles, “Luo Feng, even though I don’t want to mess with you, I don’t want you to be too strong too.”

“The position you are at right now is just right, it fits you.”

.....

Brolin could continue living his satisfied life as a prince. After all, the imperial family was backed by that emperor that opened the

country. As an undying being, Luo Feng couldn't pick a fight with him.

However Nuolan Shan was different.

Right now, Luo Feng could easily get people to help him settle Nuolan Shan. Hence, ever since Luo Feng made headlines in the genius battles, the cautious Nuolan Shan was scared out of his own family palace. He ended up moving to a distant Karma star field, on a harsh environment normal life planet and living a secluded life.

"Good!"

"Good!"

After his training, he flew back to his simple villa, his cold eyes looking at the quantum computer screen in the living room. The rankings changed occasionally. He couldn't help but smile coldly, "Forcing me to leave my family, this time you little punk, you will drop and fall hard, right at the bottom? Great!"

.....

In spite of the madness happening outside, rage, suspicion, scolding, cheers, Luo Feng maintained his position steady as a mountain, taking 10 days for every level, slowly progressing.

2nd tower level 7, passed.

3rd tower, 7 levels, passed.

The 4th tower's 7 levels, if the Mosha clan clone hadn't been born yet, Luo Feng wouldn't have been able to make it through. However, as like before, he took one step at a time and steadily passed all 7 levels.

……

Virtual universe, in the center plaza.

To the eternal undying's, staying one year here was a very casual thing altogether. Undeniably, this level of gathering, they couldn't leave so easily either. The 1,008 undying's were all in discussion.

"13, your universe country's Luo Feng has risen greatly again."

"Look at this broadcast, that punk has maintained a steady pace, not rushed but not slow either, and he passes every level easily."

"Look, he's made it into the top 500!"

The scale armored giant sat in a huge chair, looking at the screen before him. The ranking on the screen was very peculiar, the Ganwu universe country's genius number one was Rong Jun. He was currently the overall rank 13. However…Rong Jun had already died in a battle, and was kicked out of the training space.

“This Rong Jun made it earlier on to the 5th tower when he died. During that time, Luo Feng was still at the 1st level of the 4th tower slowly moving!” The scale armored giant couldn’t help but force a smile, he remembered clearly the joke that happened before.

Back then he said...

“Luo Feng is maintaining a very low profile. Slowly, just watch, towards the end he will rise to the top 3,000-5,000.” The scale armored giant had said to the other undying’s back then.

However later on.

Luo Feng’s name rose steadily, and right now he was in the top 500.

“5th Tower!”

“Luo Feng has entered the 5th tower!”

.....

“1st level, success!” Rank 128!”

.....

“3rd level, success! Rank 42!”

……

As time passed, the scale armored giant creased his eyebrows, under that helmet were eyes that were filled with a deathly aura, staring hard at the screen, saying softly, “This Luo Feng…he hides his power really well! However, I like these kinds of surprises!” His eyes had a sense of glee.

Chapter 64 – Four People

The scale armored giant used his right hand to gently tap the arm rest, looking at the broadcast of Luo Feng battling on the screen, he said softly, “He’s using the 10,000 threads, and he’s reached quite a high level.”

“During the universe country internal selection, he didn’t reveal any bit of space origin laws comprehension. But now, he’s able to use the 10,000 threads to such a level. This Luo Feng, still waters run deep!” The scale armored giant’s lips curled slightly, with an interesting expression.

“The 10,000 threads technique, even though it’s widely spread, however it’s still usually spread amongst the undying’s!”

“This Luo Feng actually has this technique, looks like his background isn’t simple.”

“Interesting, really interesting!”

“I don’t know which undying from our Ganwu universe country, undying or sector lord, nurtured such an exceptional disciple.” The scale armored giant was very clear. From the selection in the virtual universe, things like the Nan Shen Armament and the Dark cloud shuttle etc were all easily picked by the participants’ choices. However the training and techniques were all their own.

In reality, to be able to acquire the 10,000 threads technique.

In the Black Dragon Mountain empire, less than a 100 people had the ability or right to get it!

……

The undying's from the different universe countries were considered calm and collected.

Those participants that had been kicked out early in the training space however were agitated and jealous.

"Luo Kaxiu, your Ganwu universe country really has many strong geniuses. That Savage Rong Jun is ranked at 13th overall. As for that Madman Luo Feng, no one noticed him at first, however he's already made it to rank 42. No matter how you look at it, these two are definitely entering the core of the Virtual Universe Company."

"Madman is quite a vicious person from our Ganwu universe country. I heard that at the start of the elimination he wasn't rushed too, and only unleashed everything towards the end."

Over a million participants were watching the screen in the center of the plaza, there were only four screens left.

Because…

There remained only four people in the training spaces!

The Virtual Universe Company website had just published a latest broadcast...

“This time’s genius competition, at the current moment, there are four that have yet to die within the training spaces!”

“They are...”

“From the Noah universe country, Death god Bolan!”

“From the 9 Flames universe country, the Blood Tip Kandita!”

“From the Ancient Wheel universe country, the Blade of Life Yi Feng!”

“From the Ganwu universe country, Madman Luo Feng!”

“Death god Bolan, is wearing an eternal white cloth, hauling an eternal blood red blade! This training space, from the beginning he’s been in the lead. However, since the 2nd tower began, his speed declined greatly and he has slowed down a lot. There was even once when someone overtook him. However, right now he’s the overall number 1! His points far exceed the 2nd rank!”

“Blood Tip Kandita, this tall and sturdy wild youth, seemingly a fighter, however in truth he’s a powerful spirit reader controller.

Using one of the 9 godly controller weapons the Blood Tip Armament, he was at the bottom towards the beginning of the training space stage. However, as time passed, he continued to head towards the higher levels and had great progress! Right now he's ranked at 43, he's long been accepted into the core of the virtual universe company!"

"The blade of life Yi Feng, this small and skinny punk, is actually a shockingly powerful fighter. His blade represents the beauty of life itself. His face always carrying a bashful expression, at the start of the stage he was at the bottom, however right now he's made it to a very high level, and currently ranked over 45! Similarly earning the right to enter the core of the virtual universe company!"

"Madman Luo Feng, similar to Kandita and Yi Feng, was at the bottom at the beginning. However, he has showcased shocking speed, progressing through the levels. However the main difference between him and the other two is...Luo Feng's battle techniques, brings along with him a bone chilling bloodthirst. His eyes are cold and carry the look of brutality and slaughter. He is indeed a Madman! And right now his overall rank is 42, earning the right to enter the core of the Virtual Universe Company."

This time's genius competition, is definitely considered one of the highest in quality!"

"In the training space, the absolute geniuses all revealed their true powers, surprising us all."

"And right now!"

“With only four absolute geniuses remaining, on the day they are kicked out of the training space, that would be the end of the training space stage as well.”

“Let us all wish the four absolute geniuses to bring us even more surprises!”

There was a total of 5 parts to the latest broadcast. While explaining the four geniuses remaining, the other four parts were individually special broadcasts for each genius! The entire human race from the 1,008 universe countries, trillions of galaxies with 10s of millions of human races, countless humans were all waiting in anticipation and nervousness.

……

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

“Luo Feng!”

The Ganwu universe country had erupted! The Black Dragon Mountain empire..was even crazier!

“Madman Luo Feng, Madman Luo Feng!!!” On the Black Dragon Mountain empire, it was frequently seen that many people were

before the screens on the streets, raising their wine glasses and shouting excitedly and roaring, all cheering for Luo Feng.

“He’s from our Black Dragon Mountain empire!”

“He’s from our Black Dragon Mountain empire!”

“Luo Feng!”

“He’s from our Black Dragon Mountain empire, who is an absolute genius after a trillion years! He’ll definitely…definitely become a strong warrior within the universe! I believe, I always believe!” There were many disappointed people before from the Black Dragon Mountain empire, however with his rank raising rapidly, many people had been stunned.

With his rank rising greatly, rushing into the top 10,000, top 5000, top 1000, top 500 and top 100…

It was a straight path upwards!

Finally lighting the flame of passion within the trillions of people within the Black Dragon Mountain empire. My god, in the vast universe of human owned territories, the Black Dragon Mountain star field was indeed nothing but a small dot, not noticeable at all. Who would have thought this time that an absolute genius would arise from their little spot and compete with the other pinnacle geniuses altogether!

Madness!

The entire empire was in madness!

Especially when Luo Feng was confirmed to have the right to enter the core of the Virtual Universe Company. Even the Black Dragon Mountain empire's emperor made a whole celebration for it! That was the core of one of the 5 great leviathans of the human race. In terms of position and power, it was thousands to tens of thousands of times bigger than the imperial family of the Black Dragon Mountain empire.

"Luo Feng!"

"Madman Luo Feng!"

"Go! Rush into the top 10, rush to number 1!"

The Black Dragon Mountain empire's citizens had totally lost it, especially the countless youths who were blindly devoted to worshipping Luo Feng. At this time, Luo Feng was the idol of all the citizens in the Black Dragon Mountain empire!

Within the specially opened space for the genius competition, center plaza.

Over a million geniuses from the 1,008 universe countries watched the four screens in mid air. The utmost left screen, even the undying's in the huge thrones were all watching that one

screen.

When that blood red slash sliced past the bug clan queen's weak body, the entire plaza let out a suppressed shocked sound.

"My god!"

"That Death god Bolan has already passed the 6th tower."

"That's crazy."

"Right now, from ranks 2 to 6, they all died at the 1st level of the 6th tower. And this Death god Bolan actually passed all 7 levels, completing the entire 6th tower!"

"His points, will leave everybody far behind."

Too strong.

Looking at the white robed blood red blade human silhouette, all the geniuses felt a sense of envy within them. If the other geniuses could bear with it, it could be said that this Death god Bolan had completely exceeded all the different geniuses from the universe countries expectations altogether.

Death god Bolan was so strong he made others despair!

……

Training space.

A meteorite in the universe, had 7 towers, and within the 5th tower, the 4th level.

“Hu! Hu! Hu! Hu!”

Standing on the dark cloud shuttle, moving as fast as lightning, becoming a peculiar arc beam of light bending 12 times and directly dodging from the surrounding flying monkeys, leaving behind four images in mid air.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng discovered the screen of his wrist moving. Looking down on the screen, the rankings displayed the remaining four people still in the training space, and with the movement it meant that there was some change.

“Number 1 Bolan (Noah Universe country, points, 7,777,770,000

Number 2 Gu Si Luo (Yi Mu universe country, points: 1,682,970,000

……

The screen displayed the top 100, in which included Luo Feng and the four... Bolan, Yi Feng, Kandita and himself!

"That Death god Bolan?" Luo Feng's expression changed, "He actually made it through the 6th tower!"

From the points he could deduce.

"Ranks 2 to 6, were all eliminated in the 1st level of the 6th tower!

Every tower had 7 levels and every level had the same number of points. Hence, even though the difficulty of each level increased, however the increase itself wasn't that huge! The great jump was... when one moved to a new tower! Just like the 1st level of the 6th tower, the points was 10 times that of the 7th level of the 5th tower!

With so many more points, the difficulty too rose greatly!

Hence...

From ranks 2 to 6, they all made it to the 6th tower. If they were able to make it past the 1st level, it meant they had more hope of making it through level 2 and 3.

"Who knows whether he'll be able to make it through the 1st level of the 7th tower!" Luo Feng thought, "If he's able to do even that, then that's just too terrifying."

……

In an instant, the over million geniuses in the plaza, along with the 1,008 undying's and even other undying's were watching the broadcast. Undying's had the privilege to watch the broadcast.

"He's made it to level 7 of the 6th tower, and it still seems easy for him."

"However, with every tower, the difficulty greatly rises! The 1st level of the 7th tower, compared to the 7th level of the 6th tower is much harder by a few times."

"Who knows if he'll be able to make it through."

Countless people were staring and watching.

Passing the 6 towers before brought his score to 7.7 billion. And right now the 7th tower, just the 1st level alone gave 10 billion! The high points…represented the difficulty too.

"Too scary."

"The blood hairy mammoth from the 7th tower is actually so strong! 10,000 of them, I think every one of them has the power of the top 100." The spectating geniuses were all shocked. The difficulty of the 7th tower was an extreme leap. The 10,000 blood

hair mammoths from the 1st level...all their attacks were infused with origin laws and were extremely powerful.

"He's injured! Bolan is injured!"

Death God Bolan was injured for the 1st time!"

Explosion!

Continuously passing the 6 towers, the relaxed Death god Bolan finally unleashed his true terrifying strength!

Even the Virtual Universe Company and the other four great leviathan's many powerful people who could shake the entire universe were all watching this battle. After all, the 7th tower's difficulty was set so that a star level had absolutely no chance of passing. They could only watch how this Death god Bolan was going to perform now.

Chapter 65 – The Beauty of Life

In the 1st tower, the ferocious beast blood hairy mammoth was completely easy to defeat, as it was very weak.

However with the 2nd and 3rd tower…

The blood hairy mammoth got stronger with each new tower. The moment it reached the 7th tower, the 10,000 mammoths, any one of them was enough to kill 99.99% of the 1 million geniuses in this competition! When 10,000 of them surround and attack…that was simply a nightmare.

“My god, they are all images!”

“This Death god Bolan has unleashed it all.”

On the screen.

The mad mammoths covered the entire area. It attacked, while stomping at the same time and in an instant, surrounded the blurred images of the white robed youth’s silhouette which looked incredibly realistic. Within a set space, a green energy was being emitted the green energy flow alone had over a thousand white robed youths, almost like the Death god Bolan’s absolute domain. It seemed like he could attack from anyone of them at any given time.

The light of his blade was ice cold!

Every slash was almost as though the space was sliced open!

He was ss quick as lightning!

Every slash was so fast that the geniuses there could barely see it clearly!

He was as swift as the wind!

Every blade was so unpredictable in nature, it was almost as though there was no rule to it!

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

Every blade slashed at the heads of the blood hairy mammoths, as fresh blood spewed all over. The mammoths who were comparable to the top 100 geniuses were slowly getting killed, while the others grew even crazier and rushed to surround and attack him. The thick iron hoofs were stomping at the Death god Bolan.

Precision! Incomparable precision!

The mammoths slowly fell and died one by one. This was the Death god Bolan’s blade, the moment it showed itself, it meant certain death!

“Pu Chi!” One of the mammoth’s tusk pierced through the Death

god Bolan's arm, fresh blood flew out, simultaneously all the images vanished.

"Hmph!"

The cold white robed youth's eyes flashed, the blood blade immediately pierced the head of the mammoth before him.

"Rumble..." The other mammoths rushed and stomped over to attack him. After about three continuous heavy attacks, the white robed youth was finally knocked into the herd of large mammoths and was trampled upon till he died!

10,000 blood hairy mammoths, Death god Bolan killed 5,612 of them!

Just from the 1st level of the 7th tower alone he had acquired 56.12 billion points, making his total exceed 10 billion.

However!

He still failed at the 1st level of the 7th tower!

.....

"Hu!"

Over a million geniuses gathered within the center of the plaza let out a sigh of relief. The Death god Bolan's battle had completely made them hold their breaths. His blade was extremely quick, unpredictable and fierce! Also complemented by his unbelievable movement, it made them all envy him.

"He failed."

"What a pity!"

"The 7th tower is too difficult. If it wasn't Death god Bolan, anyone else would have been instantly trampled on by the herd of mammoths."

"He actually managed to kill over 5,000 blood hairy mammoths! Doesn't that mean that he alone can kill over 5,000 of the top 100 geniuses?"

Even though the Death god Bolan had failed, it had made the geniuses that managed to make it to the top 100 all shocked. The genius siblings from the Ao Gu Si planet, along with the Manka prince, even the dream shell lady and the wild youth Rong Jun... these people all stared at the screen.

"Too strong." Savage Rong Jun gripped his fists tight, staring at the screen, "Doesn't matter which side, he far exceeds me. If I fight against him...just one move, I won't be able to receive even one move!"

“Big brother, no wonder teacher said we have no chance at all in defeating him. He is too strong.” The green curly haired gentle girl with an engraving on her forehead said softly. The green haired youth beside her nodded, “Right, Qian Shui, I feel that even I won’t be able to block him, not even just one move from him.”

……

The Death god Bolan’s strength made the others look on in envy!

The people who ranked overall between 2 to 6 had all died at the 6th tower level 1. The ones ranked between 7 to 11 all died at the 7th level of the 5th tower. The ones between 12 to 21 died at the 6th level of the 5th tower…

And the number 1, actually reached the 1st level of tower 7!

From these results alone, rank 2 and others weren’t too far off from each other.

Except for the one ranked number 1!

He had completely cast everyone far behind him, the distance was too huge!

Death god Bolan was kicked out of the training space. The only ones remaining were the three people…Blood tip Kandita, Blade of life Yi Feng and Madman Luo Feng!

……

5th level of the 5th tower.

Standing on the whirlwind tape, his face with two purple streaks, a bald strong looking Kandita squinted his eyes, looking at the scene before him unfolding. It was a huge automaton testing base. Its surface was completely made of an alloy, at the same time on its alloy surface there were 100 8m tall, completely silver humanoid automaton puppets.

Automaton puppets, these were soldiers created by the automaton race.

Every one of the automaton race were all living AIs. All of them could be considered control terminals. Anyone of them can form an automaton empire! And the automaton puppets were one of the soldier weapons the empire had created.

“Weng!”

The 100 tall automaton puppets began to move. Their eyes were shooting out red light which immediately locked onto the human… Kandita.

“Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!”

The automaton puppets immediately became beams of light, running until they began to fly, swiftly heading towards Kandita.

“Their speeds are obviously much faster than the puppets of the 4th tower!” Kandita stood on the whirlwind tape, becoming an arc and dodging the puppets’ frontal attack. The best way to win against the puppets was to kill them one by one, matching force with force was simply crazy.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Formless railgun beams shot out from the automaton puppets’ arms. The rail guns were separated into many categories, the highest of the lot could reach light speed. However railguns were extremely expensive. Even the automaton empire of the automaton race could only install such light speed weaponry on the most important of devices.

And these automaton puppets shot from far, their speeds were far below light speed.

“I hate these long distance attacks the most!” Kandita grit his teeth.

As time passed, the battle grew more tragic and Kandita got injured. The automaton puppets were slowly getting their heads destroyed along with their chips inside being destroyed.

Rumble!

The automaton puppet's iron fist slammed hard, but Kandita managed to dodge barely, causing it to hit the ground. The alloy ground immediately had a huge dent, creating a huge crevice.

Iron fists! Leg knives! Railguns! Flame! Body slams!

These huge automaton lumps were insusceptible to spirit attacks. One could only destroy them through forcefully breaking their chips!

"Peng!"

The heavily injured Kandita who was facing against iron fists aimed at him finally failed to dodge. One fist directly slammed him into the alloy ground, he instantly became a pile of meat.

Kandita, 5th tower, 5th level, failure!

Final ranking 28!

……

Similarly on the 5th level of the 5th tower!

"Big bastards, big bastards, come, come!" A handsome purple haired youth was almost like a monster. Like a gust of wind, floating above the heads of the large automaton puppets, the

reaction and movement speeds of this 5th tower automaton puppets, along with their attack strengths were all set to be very high.

To actually dare to weave through amidst these puppets, that was simply madness.

He was the Blade of life, Yi Feng.

This shy youth's eyes were very pure. They had a sort of glee, almost as though dancing in the face of death didn't bring any nervousness at all to him.

"Pu Chi! Pu Chi!"

Blades infused with endless amount of life energy lit up. Be it harming the joints and parts of the puppets, or directly piercing through them and damaging or killing them, he smiled happily as he unleashed every move, and every move was simply dazzling.

He, Yi Feng was born in the Ancient Wheel universe country imperial family. The imperial family had been around for trillions of years. The imperial family title alone didn't give him much though, if he wanted to get wealth or position, he had to rely on himself. However, since he was young, he had some problems mentally. The lower half of his body didn't respond to him at all, only the upper half was normal.

Although there were advanced technologies, which were able to

change bloodlines or a body's internal organs etc.

However!

The brain is the core where the soul resides. Hence the brain was something that couldn't be changed, changing it would mean it would become a totally different person. As for repossession, he didn't have the power to do so, and no one could help him.

Ever since he was young, he sat in a wheelchair and watched the other young children of the imperial family train. He couldn't hold it in any longer, he thought that acquiring the most basic training methods of the imperial family, and according to other sayings... maybe through the training, his body would naturally improve, and cure itself.

He trained hard., Since he couldn't use the lower half of his body, he used his two hands instead.

Swinging the blades over and over!

The blades gave him hope, and was his understanding of life! His blade skills continued to improve, to the point where it was unbelievable. Eventually, l it gained recognition from the imperial family, and he was finally passed to an undying who personally helped him, allowing him to be able to stand finally and control the lower half of his body.

He was able to stand up!

Being disabled for tens of years, this gave him an incomparable enjoyment of flying. Everytime he flew, he used his movement, dancing with the blades, he would laugh, happily...

His blade work allowed him to enter the wood origin laws!

Movement, allowed him to enter the wind origin laws!

Stepping through the gateway of two origin laws allowed his position to rise greatly within the imperial family. Even though his position got higher, he was still that same shy youth from before. In his heart he had a burning passion for life, he was in love with the 'wind' he produced when he flew ...

.....

The blade of life Yi Feng, destroyed 100 automaton puppets and successfully made it thought the 5th level of the 5th tower, and later moving on to the 6th. However the 6th level was filled with 10 space beasts Cang. The Cang's nimbleness was much higher than the puppets from before, and these were all Cangs that had stepped through the gateway of origin laws.

Yi Feng killed three Cangs before ultimately failing!

This shy youth, made it to the 6th level of the 5th tower! And eventually ranked 16!

.....

At this time!

With Blood tip Kandita and blade of life Yi Feng being kicked out of the training space, the only one still within was...one person, Madman Luo Feng!

Chapter 66 – Explosion

At the 6th level of the 5th tower.

It was a boundless wasteland. On it were 10 enormous dark golden beasts, some either lying down or others walking about surveying the area…the space beast Cang.

“The targets of the 6th level, space beast…Cang!” Luo Feng looked at the 10 space beasts.

From his inherited memories he had already known the exact details of Cang.

Accurately speaking,

Cang and the golden horned beast had a special relationship.

Among the golden type space beasts, ranked top was naturally the one who stood at the peak of the 12, the golden horned beast. And ranked number 2 was Cang! Even though it was a simple difference of one rank, in truth the difference in their battle abilities was huge.

The golden horned beast, once it reached maturity, it automatically became sector lord level.

Cang at its peak, however only reached the domain lord level!

Even though it was one of the stronger space beasts, it still couldn't compare to the 12 leading bloodlines of the space beasts. However Cang had powerful natural talents, as one favoured by the gold origin laws, they had fierce and powerful attacks. They could naturally fly, even without any wings.

None of the space beasts couldn't fly.

In terms of battle ability...their average level was stronger than even the most elite of human bloodlines!

These 10 space beasts Cang, their body length alone ware 300m. The tail was almost as long as the body. Its entire body was covered in dark gold scales and its back had sharp protrusions. Its head was extremely large, just the size of its bloody mouth sent chills down one's spine, its teeth and biting strength were also incomparably shocking. The top of its head was shiny and covered in scales, and its corneas were triangular, filled with cold bloodlust.

"Howl!"

The 10 space beasts Cang all turned to look at the tiny human Luo Feng.

"Interesting." Luo Feng's eyes were filled with an even more chilling killing intent!

When Cang meets a golden horned beast? What would happen?

Right now…

Cang had met with a human form golden horned beast Luo Feng.

“Rumble!” Luo Feng stepped on the dark cloud shuttle and became a beam of faintly discernable light. Immediately the 10 space beasts became beams of lights and chased him. However after 5 years of training, Luo Feng’s speed on the dark cloud shuttle was much faster than even Rong Jun during his battle before.

And much more nimble!

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

In mid air, 8 Luo Feng’s appeared! The 10 space beasts Cang all blinked for a second. Almost as though they were confused as to which to chase, immediately spreading out and aiming at one individually.

“What arrogant punks.” Luo Feng curved and simultaneously 5 golden lights floated around him. It was the 5 golden blades, and they immediately shot towards the head of the Cang that was closest to him. That Cang’s reaction was extremely quick, using his powerful claws to slash at it.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

5 golden blades, 2 of which clashed with the claws, the 3rd too was knocked away by its tail.

“Chi!”

The 4th blade however pierced right through its throat, and right through its brain portion, killing it! Different from the golden horned beast, as a middle level space beast, Cang had no internal world. Hence it didn’t have an internal core, its life and soul was similar to that of a large portion of the flesh and blood life forms.

Before reaching the domain lord level, the soul was in the brain.

“Howl! Howl!”...

After losing one Cang, the incredibly intelligent 9 other Cangs understood that this opponent wasn’t easy to deal with. Hence, they immediately stuck to each other and did not separate.

“It’s no use, you’ll just waste time.” Luo Feng was very clear. Even though the space beasts were very powerful and quick, with terrifying natural talents and strength, a same level human had no ability to match force with force against them. However, their one weakness was that their sizes were too immense!

With a bigger physique, it created a dilemma against a human who was much smaller. Hence Luo Feng trained hard in Absolute space and Deities of the World techniques. Deities of the world allowed him to shrink and condense his size, the Absolute space

increased the nimbleness, instantaneous explosion and raising his movement effect.

……

To be able to create 8 images, plus being extremely familiar with the habits and weaknesses of Cang, even though Luo Feng took up to 10 days to finish this battle, in truth the battle was still simple and clean. The main thing was that last Cang, Luo Feng purposely waited till the last half hour to actually go and kill it.

……

5th tower, level 7.

The space was a blur, Luo Feng entered the 7th level.

“The 7th level is much more troublesome than the 6th.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, as a spirit reader controller against numbers and surrounding attacks, he had an advantage over the fighters. However that’s because he had higher speeds to dodge and using movement and space to create an advantageous position. However when the opponent’s numbers are too crazy, anyone would be caught in a dilemma!

This was an endless desert.

In the distant green patch in the desert, there was a bumpy round ball with a diameter of 120m, its surface emitted poisonous liquid,

while poisonous gas surrounded it.

120m was akin to the 40 floor building. This 40 floor building mother nest's surface with bumpy holes, all began to produce green mucus triangular brain like bugs with outer shells, all with 2 horns. Their huge compound eyes all focused, their 2 hind legs supported their bodies, with 4 other legs in front, their bodies were like blades, and on their backs they even had 2 translucent wings.

Within the 40 storey tall huge mother nest, every hole itself was at least 1m in diameter. Almost in an instant, the surface of the mother nest had produced 1,000 bugs!

Hu! Hu! Hu!

After three Continuous rounds, it produced about 3,000 bugs altogether and all of them were the same green praying mantis.

The green praying mantis was a very common cannon fodder seen in the bug clan warriors. Even though they were called cannon fodder, these were still cannon fodder that battled outside the starfields. Luckily the entire power of the bug clan mother nest had been pre-arranged, otherwise a true mother nest could produce many different species of bugs. From their abilities, they could be split into the scanning types, assassin types, long distance, attacking force etc.

If they were split according to their structure, that would be even more.

“3,000 green praying mantis.” Luo Feng looked at the mantis that flew or marched over, as they covered both the land and skies. Creasing his eyebrows, “The mother nest sent everything it could at one go, the next batch should be 20 minutes later.”

The mother nest required time to produce the bugs.

These 3,000 were prepared long ago. Of course in reality the mother nest’s ability wasn’t that weak. Otherwise how could it easily dominate a galaxy or entire starfield.

“Kill!”

Luo Feng’s gaze was cold, immediately producing 8 images. Maintaining his highest speed, he began his massacre. He immediately released his limit of 9 blades, these 9 rainbows were like lasers, piercing through each and every bug, as they killed the green praying mantises.

“A bit stronger than what I expected.” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

He could at will control the 5 blades. However, if he pushed it, he could control up to 9 blades. But that way, nimbleness, direction and precision were all affected slightly. Because right now there were 3,000 bugs, Luo Feng decided to do so, killing as many as he can by striking their heads.

However...

“Ke chi ke chi!” The body of one of the bugs was sliced in half. However it bit and swallowed the corpse of a dead bug beside, and it began to recover and completely heal itself.

“This is the most annoying part of the bug clan.”

8 images immediately appeared throughout. The 9 blades danced about and pierced through time and again, working hard to pierce the heads of the bugs. However, as bugs of the 5th tower, their nimbleness and reactions were obviously higher. And they covered the land and skies and engulfed everything. Their speed was also much higher. Luo Feng couldn’t dodge too far, he needed to stay close to fully control the Nan Shen Armament and attack.

Hence he couldn’t avoid getting hurt occasionally.

20 minutes later.

There were still 682 bugs surviving, Luo Feng’s face went pale, there was an injury on his face. “The 2nd batch is coming!” That huge mother nest’s surface once again produced red shelled bugs, a total of 100 of them.

“Not good.” Luo Feng’s expression changed, “Blood praying Mantis! And 100 of them!”

The first time, the mother nest actually released everything,

3,000 green praying mantis.

And every 20 minutes it could produce another 1,000 green praying mantis, however it did not necessarily produce green mantises, it could produce even more terrifying bugs, however in smaller numbers.

With Luo Feng fighting hard and killing over 2,000 of the green mantises, with only 682 left, if the 2nd batch was another 1,000 green mantises....he may get heavily injured, but he could still win.

However this time, it was the blood mantises. These were much more intrepid and stronger than the green ones. In the 1st tower to the 4th, Luo Feng had never met the blood mantises at all.

“This is big trouble.” Luo Feng’s expression changed.

Weng weng weng...

The surviving 682 green mantises immediately formed a 100 little groups, some with 5 or 6 green mantises and 1 blood mantis, some with 7 green mantises and 1 blood mantis! Anyway, immediately there were 100 little bug groups. Under the blood mantis leadership they began to surround Luo Feng progressively and began their hunt.

“I’m not afraid of their strength, what I hate the most is the blood mantis leadership ability.” Luo Feng’s expression changed.

According to his inherited memories, the intellect of the bug clan was much lower. However there were certain bugs that had the position of leaders within. And these blood mantis were often used to lead the little teams of green mantis. A dispersed and unorganized group of 100 green mantis, compared to 10 of them working together as one body led by a blood mantis...the latter was much more terrifying!

"Weng!"

"Weng!"

"Weng!"

The 100 little teams were like a well organized party, 70 or so teams attacked from above while the remaining 30 or so attacked from the ground or even underground, that plus the blood mantis leading and acting as the blades, Luo Feng was in big trouble.

"Kill!" Luo Feng grit his teeth, he could only fight it out!

.....

5 minutes later, Luo Feng's right arm was broken, his expression pale, his spirit energy usage was extremely high. And with 82 of the 100 teams left, 82 blood mantis were leading 353 green mantis. Luo Feng killed a lot more green mantis.

“If I’ve reached the 9 thread level, pity…” Luo Feng faced the overwhelming force of the bug clan from all directions, almost seeing the scene of him being devoured beforehand.

“Even if I die, I have to kill more!”

Luo Feng’s eyes went red.

“Bug clan, all of you go and die!!!” Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle, and his speed accelerating even more. Against the 82 little teams, he clashed and killed 1 green mantis at a time, and occasionally killing a blood mantis with great difficulty. Luo Feng fought until there was only 76 teams left, while his entire being had gone insane.

“Hm?”

Even under such strenuous situation, his whole being felt ice cold, this was the quality of the golden horned beast.

Luo Feng felt a familiar ripple of space movement, gradually feeling slightly different.

“It’s this way!”

“Just like this!!!” Luo Feng could even feel the square domain formed within the space, almost as though it was a 9 palace grid. Immediately Luo Feng’s speed increased obviously a little, at the same time in his surroundings 9 images formed!

10,000 thread 2nd level...9 threads!

Even though his speed had only increased a little, and there was only one more image than before.

However in truth, it was a change from the foundation itself!

Secret technique, what was a secret technique?

The secret technique was a way to unleash the strength after understanding the origin laws, reaching a more effective way of usage!

If one comprehended the space origin law, producing 3 images, 4 images...8 images, 9 images...he would feel the limit of his strength increase! Even though the difference between 8 images and 9 images wasn't too big. However, after training the 10,000 threads technique, this was completely different!

Each thread represented a special battle technique.

Nine threads however represented another special technique. If one reached 9 images, only then could he use the 9 threads. 8 images wasn't sufficient.

.....

And Luo Feng's Moshan clan clone trained for a long time. In truth, the Mosha clan could produce over a 100 images much earlier, considering it was favoured by space itself, it could naturally unleash it easily. And while Luo Feng was in the virtual universe, his body had been stuck at the limit of 8 images.

In times of crisis!

Madness!

Luo Feng could finally feel that special feeling, similar to the Mosha clan using the 9 threads feeling. Because it was a familiar feeling, Luo Feng swiftly grabbed onto it.

"Nine threads, haha, 9 threads! I've finally made it!" Luo Feng was extremely happy within. It was too difficult, it took so long for him to finally reach the 2nd level 9 threads.

Rumble!

Following that familiar feeling of space, he swiftly moved the dark cloud shuttle and immediately became a string of images, every one of them dispersed, following the layout of the 9 palace grid, the efficiency of the 9 thread was at least 10 times higher than the 8 images before.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

His movement was incredibly unpredictable, the golden blades

too became nothing but blurs, with extremely high power, at times the blades even pierced through a few blood mantis and green mantis at the same time.

At this time!

After killing almost all the bug clan, he slashed open the mother nest with lightning speed, immediately heavily injuring the queen. Following which he rested for half a day to let his body recover and regenerate, before directly killing the queen!

He didn't have to wait anymore!

No longer waiting for 10 days, since the 9 threads had already been achieved, what was the point of waiting 10 days?

From the beginning of the losers circle duels till now, it had been over 5 years. 5 years of seclusion, 5 years of hard training, he had finally stepped onto a new platform. The 9 threads was a lot more terrifying than the 1 thread, his strength too naturally rose to a new plateau.

"To the next tower!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

.....

5 years of seclusion, the moment he exploded, it rocked the skies itself!

.....

The plaza.

Over a million geniuses along with the undyings all watched that one remaining screen. The only remaining participant Luo Feng suddenly unleashed his strength and produced 9 images destroying all the bug clan in a sweep, the scene had made all the geniuses go totally silent.

“9 threads, he actually reached the realm of 9 threads.” The scale armored giant 13 watched the screen, his eyes giving off a heart palpitating gleam.

Chapter 67 – Bypass

“9 threads?”

“13, your Ganwu universe country hasn’t had any punks make it into the top 20 for over a 100 competitions, who’d knew there’d be two of them this time!”

“Haha, Mo So is right! There are 1,008 universe countries here, and you’ve taken up 2 slots.” Around him, the undyings all laughed and made fun of the scaled armor giant. Even though Luo Feng’s performance was extremely shocking, to these pinnacle of strength undyings in their own universe countries, he was still nothing but a punk.

“Didn’t the Ao Gu Si planet siblings both make it to the top 20 too?” The scale armored giant revealed a smile on his face.

“Haha, you punk, you actually know how to laugh.”

“It’s very rare.”

“I’ve met him three times during this 100 eras, this is the first time I’ve seen him smile.”

“He’s proud. So, of course he’ll smile.”

The surrounding undyings were all chatting and laughing. There

were a total of 1,008 undyings here, and the scale armored giant was naturally sitting with those he was on better terms with! These powerful undyings, some were friends, some enemies, some with distant or close relationships, naturally they formed their own cliques and chatted.

"Haha, what do you all think of this Luo Feng from my Ganwu universe country?" The scale armored giant looked at the surrounding undying.

"Reaching the space flying technique 10,000 threads to the 2nd level, and the Nan Shen Armament, capable of brandishing 9 blades." one dark green long hair man with a huge nose, his gaze seemingly endless like the ocean, calculated, "His basics are very solid, his temperament is steady and calm, and his potential is very huge! His current strength can rank in the top 10!"

"He can indeed make it to the top 10."

"Within the training space, he can definitely make it to the top 5. Even if it's the true arena duels, he should be able to make the top 10." The other undyings nodded.

Training, didn't exactly reflect a person's true strength.

Because...

This training compared to the 1v1 duel was extremely different. A spirit reader controller on a spirit weapon could distance himself

and attack from far. A fighter however had to kill until he is within range and attack...also, with the automaton puppets and metal life forms and other beings that weren't susceptible to spirit attacks, it made it hard for some to unleash their full strength.

Just like before, the absolute genius regarded as being able to make the top 20...the Hypnotist from the Holwing god clan, Jia Lai Xi.

That hypnotist Jia Lai Xi, during his own universe country's selection, he only had to look at his opponents and defeat them, it had been relaxed all this while. However during the training space, against the automaton dolls etc, his hypnotism had no effect at all, and all spirit attacks were useless.

Hence...

Hynotist Jia Lai Xi only ranked 189 in the training space round. Does this mean he was weak?

In the plaza, over a million geniuses looked up at the screen of which Luo Feng was making his way into the 1st level of the 6th tower.

"Your majesty, this Luo Feng is very strong." An iron like man who was like a steel cast said softly. Beside him was the silver armored black haired youth, the Manka prince had ranked 18 in this round. His eyes gleamed as they stared hard at Luo Feng on the screen, saying, "Hm, I admit, I made the wrong conclusion before."

From earlier, the Manka prince had even said, “From the looks of it, he can’t take it anymore. He won’t be able to make it past the 7th level of the 5th tower. I estimate his final rank will be around 9 or 10. Even though he’s higher than me, however the training space is different from a 1v1 match. In a 1v1 match, he definitely isn’t my match. I have confidence I can defeat him!”

He was still filled with confidence before.

However now…

“What a strong opponent.” The Manka youth’s eyes gleamed like crystals, completely locked on Luo Feng, “He’s training the 10,000 threads. He’s already reached the level of 9 threads…hm, a strong opponent indeed. If I want to enter the Primal secret area…this Luo Feng will be a huge barrier, I will definitely defeat him!” Following which he clenched his fists tight, sparks of lightning flashed.

……

“Luo Feng!” With messy hair, barefeet, the wild youth Savage Rong Jun stared hard at the screen, saying softly, “He’s already become so terrifying. However, no one can stop me, I will definitely become the strongest, I definitely will!”

……

Covered in a black robe, a youth amongst the other geniuses stared all at the screen, saying softly, “Luo Feng? Enjoy the spotlight, just watch, very quickly, I will let you all know…that training space, is just a camel beast’s shit! I will defeat all of you! Including that Death god Bolan…”

……

The elite and most outstanding of geniuses were gathered here. All of them didn’t submit easily, all of them had absolute confidence and pride! However, almost all that had made Luo Feng their opponent weren’t easy to mess with.

……

“He can’t continue anymore.”

“He’s about to fall.”

“Even though he’s strong, however the 6th tower’s difficulty is much higher by a few times compared to the 5th. Oh, he’s injured.”

“It’s going to end soon.”

The geniuses all started discussing.

During the 1st level of the 6th tower, the battle was already at its

craziest point.

“Go and die all of you!” Luo Feng’s eyes were filled with shocking killing intent. His body was filled with blood stains, there was even a hole in his waist. He stood on the dark cloud shuttle , his movement unpredictable, producing 9 images. These 9 images weren’t continuous, but they formed a circle, and within those 9 images, that was almost like Luo Feng’s absolute domain.

His movement were unpredictable!

He was extremely nimble!

“Rumble…” The blood hairy mammoths engulfed the land and skies and stomped over. Their huge bodies clashing all about. These large amounts of the mammoths had their own domain. With countless domains spread out, it caused the entire battlefield to become their domain, Luo feng couldn’t dodge at all.

“No wonder the Death god Bolan didn’t even make it past the 7th tower’s 1st level.” Luo Feng thought.” The difficulty jump is too much, so much higher than the 5th tower’s level 7.”

Right.

In the 7th level of the 6th tower, Death god Bolan was still very relaxed. He didn’t even seem to use much energy. However the moment he entered the 7th tower level 1, even after unleashing all his strength he still failed. And Luo Feng could feel right now

where the problem was...even though his strength had increased a lot after comprehending the 9 threads.

However the 1st level of the 6th tower was simply too difficult.

“Peng!” A blood hairy mammoth’s tail hit Luo Feng’s body, causing his movement to be disrupted. The already mentally tired Luo Feng fought hard to dodge but got hit by the iron hooves around.

Following which, it all became black and he lost consciousness.

.....

Genius battle, the final participant Luo Feng killed 6,892 blood hair mammoths. This was comparable to the previous ranked 2 to 6, stopping at the 1st level of the 6th tower.

Final rank, 3!

Luo Feng felt the space before him turn, and after which he appeared in the plaza. The geniuses of the human race from the different universe countries all looked over.

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s gaze swept past them, swiftly determining the location of the Ganwu universe team and heading over.

“That’s Luo Feng.”

“Final rank 3, I have never heard of him before, yet he’s that strong.”

“Within this training space process, suddenly a lot of people popped out of nowhere. However this Luo Feng, he belongs to the strongest of those that appeared”

Hearing the various discussions about, Luo Feng walked back to the Ganwu universe team.

“Madman, you really gave me a shock, you are truly vicious!” The green haired youth Windmill shouted.

“Luo Feng, congrats.”

“Congratulations.”

The other youths that Luo Feng wasn’t exactly very close too all smiled and congratulated him. Afterall, 99% of these people knew they had no hope of making it into the top 1,000.

“Luo Feng, Rong Jun, follow me.” That thick voice resounded within Luo Feng and Ron Jun’s ears suddenly.

“Hm?” Luo Feng and Rong Jun turned to look at an area within the plaza. The 1,008 undyings had already stood up, and flew towards their own teams, of which the scale armored giant

immediately reached the Ganwu universe team and shouted, “All of you head back to the living quarters.”

Rumble...

1,008 teams of geniuses, under the leadership of the undyings returned to their quarters.

Skyscraper 0825, level 1.

The 1,000 geniuses of the Ganwu universe country all stood there. Under the pressure of the scale armored giant, all of them were extremely respectful and silent.

“This time, our Ganwu universe country’s team’s performance is very good!” The scale armored giant’s voice resounded within the entire level 1 hall. It was rare for him to actually praise them, “Except for Luo Feng and Rong Jun making it into the top 100 and gaining direct entry into the core of the Virtual Universe Company, there are 3 others who made it into the top 7,300 and gained the right to contest for the final 900 slots.”

“And other than these 5, everyone else...”

“Your pinnacle genius competition ends here.” The scale armored giant said.

Causing the geniuses from the Ganwu universe country to get slightly depressed. Even after fighting for so long, right now they

were simply eliminated.

"You all, can return to reality now and leave here. You can also wait a while and the Virtual Universe Company organizing team will send you automatically back to your universe country continents." The scale armored giant said, "Luo Feng, Rong Jun, you 5, follow me!" Following which he took long strides towards a walkway.

Luo Feng, Rong Jun and the other 3 followed.

The atmosphere within the large hall was depressing.

"It has ended."

"Our journey has ended."

"Haha, everyone, even though we've failed, we've still been offered to enter the Ganwu secret area, that's not bad too."

"Right!"

"Even though I'm weaker now, I don't believe that I will still be weaker in the future! We are only star level now...the training process has just begun. There is still the universe level, domain lord and sector lord level, our journey is still far and long!"

"Spoken well!"

“Even if you enter the core of the Virtual Universe Company, it’s still extremely hard to become undying! And our Ganwu secret area too can produce eternal undyings!”

“Right!”

“Let’s go, We’ll go drink.”

These young ladies and gentlemen, all had the right to enter the Ganwu secret area. Except for a few that returned straight to reality, a large portion of them left towards the restaurant in the plaza.

……

At this time, the 1,000 geniuses of the Ganwu universe country split into two paths.

Many of them entered the Ganwu secret area.

A few entered the core of the Virtual Universe Company.

How the future unfolds…no one knew.

Chapter 68 – Milky Way Leader

The geniuses were still considered calm, the 1,008 universe countries however were bustling with excitement, especially the countless citizens in the over one trillion galaxies within the Ganwu universe country. That was a gathering of over a million absolute geniuses from the many universe countries, in the top 20, there were actually 2 from their own, what degree of honor was that?

“We, our black dragon mountain empire actually has a genius who made it to rank 3?”

“That’s the entire universe!”

“He’s from our black dragon mountain empire!”

My god!”

“Luo Feng is too, too strong.”

“Entire universe, that’s 1,008 universe countries!”

The black dragon mountain empire was completely stunned by this piece of news, even though the black dragon mountain star field could be considered vast and endless, compared to the 1,008 universe countries, that was simply tiny! Even the Ganwu universe country hadn’t had a genius make it into the top 20 for a very long time, much less the tiny black dragon mountain starfield?

There probably hasn't been one in the past trillion years!

.....

"Luo Feng, black dragon mountain!"

"Luo Feng, black dragon mountain!"

"Luo Feng, black dragon mountain!"

All of the black dragon mountains internal websites broadcasted this news day and night, any footage regarding Luo Feng, the passion and support for him within the black dragon mountain empire had reached an unbelievable level. Even the emperor of the empire said excitedly... "Luo Feng is from our black dragon mountain empire, he is the hero of our empire!"

This little starfield that wasn't even worth a mention, because of Luo Feng, gained recognition from many citizens from other universe countries.

"Luo Feng is the hero of our black dragon mountain empire." A news broadcast spread on the black dragon mountain island sites, the emperor exclaimed, "He's from our black dragon mountain starfield milky way galaxy, I've decided...to officially give him his home, the milky way galaxy, from today, he is the leader of the milky way galaxy!"

The emperor decreed!

The black dragon mountain empire's imperial family were all prepared, in truth, the emperor had already earlier on promised to give the milky way galaxy to Luo Feng. However with the public declaration...obviously it was to raise Luo Feng's position even more.

Luo Feng, to be able to gain such a reputation within the empire, the work by the imperial family was nothing to be sneezed at.

.....

"Bastard!"

Brolin sat in his study, gritting his teeth hard, breaking the cup in his hands, "It's over, there's no more hope, the entire upper echelon have all decided to rope in Luo Feng."

The imperial family along with the backing Sacred land black dragon mountain, the upper echelon all decided to use all their strengths to try and rope in Luo Feng, with his home galaxy and relationship, as long as he doesn't die...also with his rank 3 talents, he will definitely have enough power in the future even within the virtual universe company core.

Virtual universe company, one of the 5 great leviathans, even standing ahead of the other 4 themselves.

Even the 1,008 universe countries had to respect the 5 leviathans.

The moment Luo Feng grasped solid authority...during times of crisis, the black dragon mountain empire would exhaust their resources to help him. As for that 9th prince Brolin, he wasn't even considered amongst the upper echelon of governance, how could he sway any of the decisions by the empire?

.....

"It's over."

Nuolan Shan looked at the screen, his eyes unwilling, "With his status as a core member of the virtual universe company, the moment they discover me, killing me would be as easy as killing an ant."

"Seclusion!"

"Seclusion!"

Nuolan Shan grit his teeth, "Unless I become stronger than him in the future, otherwise I'll have to remain forever silent, not leaking any trace of myself at all."

"Since it's come to this!" Nuolan shan's eyes gleamed coldly, "Then I will go outside the starfield to the battleground! Otherwise I'd have no chance of ever exceeding him!" Nuolan Shan was a ruthless and absolute person, to be able to survive 1,000 life or

death battles in the huge axe dojo, that was also a strong decisiveness, the moment he detected danger he left his nest.

And now, he sat in a universe ship and immediately left the planet.

Earth.

“Omg, what? Luo Feng is the leader of the milky way galaxy? North America continent, Washington base in America, a group of upper echelons were shocked.

“Leader of the milky way?”

“How can that be, before, the information we gathered from the virtual universe all stated that a universe level warrior could acquire 10s of planets as territory, only a sector lord could be given a galaxy as territory? According to the information, sector lords are terrifying warriors that could destroy the earth with a flip of their hands, even stars, or the white dwarf planet was nothing in the face of a sector lord. How did Luo Feng get such a gift?”

The upper echelon of America were extremely shocked.

The 5 great countries of earth, even though they were grateful to Luo Feng, however they weren’t like the chinese, bound by blood ties, the other countries were actually a little unhappy, why did the leader of earth have to be chinese? Why couldn’t he be from America, or india?

Of course, no one dared to voice themselves, but the news now had completely stunned them.

“Attention all, please allow me to explain the meaning behind the universe genius competition.” A golden haired lady said, “Once you’ve heard it, I believe you’ll all understand Luo Feng’s current status, and what he represents! Why he can actually receive the treatment of a sector lord.”

……

“Milky way leader?”

“Haha, Luo Feng sure is powerful, Old Wang, how many life planets are in our milky way galaxy?”

“According the information from the virtual universe network, the milky way galaxy has over 210,000 life planets.”

“Haha, over 210,000 life planets? And they are suddenly all Luo Feng’s? Alright, fight for our earth, he’s also fought for the name of our chinese people. We chinese, even though we’ve been regarded as aboriginals, however from us a genius has appeared and made it to rank 3 amongst the entire universe.”

……

The 5 great countries of earth, all the leaders of the bases received the news, all dumbfounded by the milky way galaxy leader news. However the leaders didn't tell the ordinary citizens, in truth, the majority of the people of earth still didn't understand much about the universe, the upper echelons of earth didn't want to allow them to connect with the universe that quickly either.

"3rd brother's improvement are really shocking." Sitting cross legged in a cottage, the black clothed youth Hong opened his eyes, "I can't relax either, teacher sure has weird friends...an undying is actually willing to live on a planet without any technology." His gaze swept through the cottage, looking at the outside world and 100s of km of sky.

In that sky were several wild men dressed in animal fur flying about.

This planet was the living quarters of an undying, the entire planet was conditioned in a very primal state, the humans of the planet all forced out their potential energies and gradually created sects. And this was the living quarters of an undying, these sects didn't even seem to know...there was an undying of the universe living here.

"Hong, let's go."

The time sector lord Luo Suddenly appeared in front of the cottage, Hong immediately stood up and flew, sitting in a universe ship and leaving the planet.

The aboriginal sects of the planet didn't even know that 2 strong warriors of the universe had just passed through.

……

"Not bad, I allow you to rest." Lord Wu shouted.

"Not enough, still not enough. Thirdie has already made it to rank 3, my improvement is still not enough." On Mars of the solar system, Thunder god was training according to Lord Wu's plans, improving himself.

Luo Feng didn't seem to know that his being ranked 3td in the entire universe had such an influence, he was with Rong Jun and the other 3, listening to the lecture from the scale armored giant.

"Tomorrow the duels to get the remaining slots, depend on your performance."

"Understood!"

"You 3 can leave first, Luo Feng and Rong Jun stay." The scale armored giant said, immediately the 3 other youths left the huge room respectfully, leaving behind only Luo Feng and Rong Jun.

The scale armored giant's gaze landed on the 2 of them.

"Rank 13, rank 3." The giant's voice was thick and powerful, that

powerful pressure caused both Luo Feng and Rong Jun to barely be able to maintain standing, “Are you both feeling proud within, thinking you are very strong?”

“No!” Savage Rong Jun said.

“The training space doesn’t prove anything.” Luo Feng said too.

“Hmph.”

The scale armored giant roared slightly, “It’s good you too still manage to keep calm and collected, not letting this small honor and glory get to your heads. Right! Luo Feng what you said was right! The training space doesn’t prove anything...let me tell you, the top 10 of the training space, consist of 2 fighters and 8 spirit reader controllers!”

Luo Feng’s expression slightly changed, there were actually 8 controllers in the top 10...

“Understand?”

“This training space, has a big advantage to spirit reader controllers! Next to fighters! To hynoptists, it’s the worst.” The giant said, “That howling god clan genius Jia Lai Xi, many of us undyings have regarded him as being of the top 10, however his rank is only 189!

In the training space, to be able to make it to the top 20, naturally

they are all strong."

"However some of them in the 30-50 ranks, are not necessarily weak. Especially spirit reader hypnotists, they are all ranked above the 100s, in battle however it's a completely different story." The giant emphasized, "Hence you 2 must never get careless, otherwise, you'll be stepped on by others."

Luo Feng and Rong Jun listened obediently.

"Of course, the training space does reflect some level of strength."

"From the many undyings here, watching the broadcast and concluding...Luo Feng, amongst our conclusions, you rank among the top 10." The scale armored giant turned to look at Savage Rong Jun, "Rong Jun, you are within the top 20!"

Luo Feng and Rong Jun both remained silent.

The giant looked at the 2 and paused for awhile before saying, "Of course, in true battle, it depends on how you perform altogether, and also how you strategize and deal with your opponent. Anyone from the top 20 can make it into the top 10, the top 10 can still lose to anyone from behind. Afterall everyone's strengths are pretty close."

"Alright!"

“You 2 go rest, you’ve both acquired your slots, there’s nothing for you tomorrow. Get ready for the final slaughter.”

“Even though there are a 1,000 able to enter the core, the treatment within has big differences, the core itself has its lower and higher levels, just like that death god Bolan, he’ll definitely be able to enter the primal secret area, as for you 2, work hard and do your best!” The scale armored giant said.

Chapter 69 – 4 Great Secret Areas

Luo Feng and Savage Rong Jun both walked out of the scale armored giant's room together.

"Luo Feng." Rong Jun shouted.

"Hm?" Luo Feng stood there and turned around, Rong Jun's tiger like eyes were gleaming, saying softly, "Your improvement has earned my respect, I hope to meet you in the arena and once again defeat you!"

"Defeat me?" Luo Feng's lips curled into a smile, "I'll be waiting!"

Rong Jun turned to leave after, Luo Feng watched his back as he left, "This Rong Jun, seemed to be in disagreement with the scale armored giant's conclusion, he seems to have a guarantee of defeating me or something." Luo Feng didn't have any other feelings, only anticipation, one of which against a very powerful opponent, the stronger he was, the more it would shape and improve him!

.....

That day, over a million eliminated geniuses were all teleported away, the entire skyscraper 0825 had only 6 people left...the undying leader and the 5 youths.

……

Daybreak of the 2nd day.

Including Luo feng and Rong Jun, 7300 geniuses had gathered in the center plaza, suddenly a formless energy engulfed the entire plaza, causing the 7300 human geniuses to uncontrollably submit, they all looked up and in mid air, a familiar silhouette appeared.

He, dressed in a seemingly normal but actually infused with mysterious energy green armor, he had purple scales on his head, his face carrying a smile, however no one dared to actually match his gaze as he looked about.

“Sir Knight!”

The 1,008 undyings all said in unison and bowed respectfully.

This caused the 7,300 geniuses to be shocked.

“The training space stage has ended, first I’d like to congratulate the ranks 1 to 100 participants, you’ve all gained the right to enter the core of the virtual universe company! Right now, anyone who’s unwilling can speak out, our virtual universe company will never force anyone.” The green armored purple scaled man’s voice was light, resounding in their ears and minds.

Silence!

No one made a sound.

“Good.” The man nodded satisfied, “Ranks 101-7,300, these 7,200 geniuses, according to your training space performance, the virtual universe company has already automatically arranged your arena duels. Continuous 3 victories will earn you a slot, any losers will be eliminated.”

7200 people, in 1v1 battles, eliminating half every battle, with 3 consecutive victories, only 900 would remain.

The moment the words left his mouth, a large portion of the geniuses below were suspicious.

“Consecutive 3 victories to get a slot? If 2 strong warriors met, wouldn’t that eliminated 1?” Luo Feng thought, the same situation had happened in the Ganwu universe country selection, he and Rong Jung had met.” Luo Feng thought...this was probably what many of the geniuses were thinking.

“The virtual universe company’s system arrangement is definitely the best, no need to worry!” The green armored purple scaled man said, “Right now, 7200 participants, will begin their arena duels!”

Rumble...

The plaza slight shook, the 7200 geniuses participating were

suddenly teleported away, with only the 100 remaining.

.....

Luo Feng looked around, with only 100 youths left, the plaza seemed empty. Within, the white robed blood blade death God Bolan, the Manka prince filled with battle spirit, the genius siblings from the Ao Gu Si planet, almost like a meat mountain at 6m tall strong looking man with a blood axe on his back, the dream shell youth, a huge youth with a face full of fur like a bear, the seductive Black Thread young lady with 4 arms, the shy and bashful youth...

100 people!

They were all the top 100 in the training space stage, absolute geniuses set to enter the core of the virtual universe company.

These 100 all took note of the people around them, understanding that they would all become competitors.

“There are seats there, you can all go watch the broadcast.” The green armored purple scaled man pointed in the distance, immediately 100 large chairs and several tables appeared in the corner of the plaza, on the tables were drinks and food, and the green armored man himself sat with the 1,008 undyings at another spot.

Death god Bolan, Luo Feng and the remaining 100 all sat, and Luo

Feng and Rong Jun sat close together, no matter what, they were from the same universe country, naturally they felt closer, what's more the 2 felt good about each other.

"Look, 3,600 screens."

"It's about to begin."

"Howling god clan hypnotist Jia Lai Xi, on that screen." Some absolute geniuses who were well informed spoke, indeed 3,600 large screens appeared in the center of the plaza, every one displaying a different battle that was about to begin.

Very quickly!

On the 3,600 screens, the battles began almost simultaneously! The battle for the remaining 900 slots had begun!

The victors progressed while the losers were eliminated, everything was very cruel!

.....

A youth knelt on the floor of the screen, with a hole on his forehead, his gaze dazzled, his lips moving, one could make out what he said, "I can't accept this."

Absolute geniuses falling one by one!

5 minutes had yet to pass, and 3600 had already been eliminated.

They couldn't accept this!

Naturally the eliminated people were unhappy, they had already reached this level, just a little more...being in the universe country compared to the core of the virtual universe company were 2 completely different things! The 5 great leviathans...were the true pinnacles of the humans of the universe, these absolute geniuses all considered themselves powerful, only the pinnacle of the universe was worthy of themselves.

If they wanted to enter, they'd want to enter the best!

.....

After half an hour, the 2nd round began.

3,600 geniuses, once again half fell, the remaining half proceeded.

.....

Another half an hour later, after resting and preparing, the 3rd round began.

These 1,800 absolute geniuses all wished with great anticipation,

they were only 1 step away from victory…however there was only 1 out of 2 on every arena duel that could enter the virtual universe core, the other half were all eliminated.

……

Luo Feng and Rong Jun focused on tens of screens at a time, to these absolute geniuses with powerful willpower and consciousness, multi tasking was very easy, and the present 100 geniuses were all watching many screens at a time, however they all focused on 1 together.

The howling god clan hypnotist Jia Lai Xi's broadcast.

"He won."

"He still won the same way." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, Jia Lai Xi's 3 matches, the 1st and 2nd battle he didn't even move and just stood there, the opponent immediately crumbled. And in the 3rd match…his opponent managed to barely withstand the 1st soul attack, however he still fell after the 2nd.

3 consecutive victories! Hypnotist Jia Lai Xi, acquired one slot.

"This hypnotist is terrifying." Savage said softly.

"Hm."

Luo Feng stared at the screen, “Normal soul attacks are usually not too scary, however, if mixed with hypnotism, that’s terrifying, the hypnotism can make one unconsciously enter into a fantasy land, oblivious to the fact itself. This sort of terrifying hypnotism…is a fighter’s natural enemy!”

“Hm.” Savage Rong Jun nodded.

Like Luo Feng studying the soul imprint and void pagoda these 2 great techniques, his control of spirit energy had already reached an extremely high level, his defense was very strong too. He still had some confidence of defending against hypnotist Jia Lai Xi.

However the fighters, many had powerful willpowers and states, maybe against spirit attacks they could withstand it, however against hypnotism, many fighters wouldn’t receive it too well.

Hypnotist Jia Lai Xi, against automaton puppets, metal life forms, Mosha clans etc, beings without a soul, his hypnotism had no effect.

However against others with souls, his power was huge.

……

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

900 silhouettes suddenly appeared in the plaza, these 900 absolute geniuses mostly had excited expressions, right, they had

passed the 3 rounds of elimination, among the 7,200, these final 900 had made it. However amongst this group of geniuses, some still had no expressions.

Just like the tall and skinny man covered in a black robe.

“No wonder the group of undyings concluded that Hypnotist Jia Lai Xi has the strength to make it to the top 10.” Luo Feng and the others of the 100 stood up, walking over to gather, his gaze fixed on the black robed tall and skinny man.

“Hm.” The black robed tall and skinny man suddenly looked over at Luo Feng.

The peculiar gaze seemed to bring with it some sort of formless suggestion, however Luo Feng’s willpower was extremely strong, not getting affected at all, his cold eyes staring back, almost as though a golden horned beast was eyeing its opponent.

The 2 regarded by the undyings as top 10 material, at this time, they couldn’t wish any more to get matched up against each other.

……

The 1,000 geniuses gathered together, many regarded as top 10, top 20, or regarded themselves as absolute geniuses, all looking at each other.

“Congratulations to you all!”

A floating dreamy voice, entered the 1,000 minds, all of them realized the green armored purple scaled man had appeared before them, “You all are this genius competitions most elite 1,000 of the human race 1,008 universe countries. Our virtual universe company will nurture you to the best of our ability, if anyone wishes to not enter the virtual universe company, you can speak now.”

Silence, no one made a sound.

“Very good.”

“However, you should understand that there will always be competition within the universe, where there’s competition, you 1,000…cannot expect to all receive the same amount of nurture and resources, even our virtual universe company doesn’t dare waste such valuable resources.” The green armored purple scaled man smiled, “I’ll announce this.”

“Of the 1,000 of you, ranks 101 to 1,000, you can receive 10 mixed elements in cash, you can enter the beginning universe to study, you can enter the core of the virtual universe company’s ‘last phase secret area’.

“Ranks 11-100, you are awarded 100 mixed elements in cash, you can enter the beginning universe to study and enter the core of the virtual universe company’s ‘Heaven and land secret area’.

“Ranks 3-10, you are awarded 1,000 mixed elements in cash, you

can enter the beginning universe to study and enter the core of the virtual universe company's 'Absolute beginning secret area'.

"Ranks 1 and 2, you are awarded 10,000 mixed elements in cash, you can enter the beginning universe to study and enter the core of the virtual universe company's 'Primal secret area'.

"Under normal circumstances, the primal secret area only accepts one genius every competition, however this batch's level is more outstanding, hence the virtual universe company's upper echelons have discussed and given your batch 2 slots to enter the primal secret area."

Chapter 70 – Position

Silence, the 1,000 absolute geniuses were curious, Last Phase, Heaven and land, Absolute Beginning and Primal secret areas, just what was behind these 4 places, however just from the names everyone could tell...very obviously, the Primal secret area was the best of the group.

"You 1,000, there are still the strong and the weak, the rewards naturally will be different."

"From tomorrow the duels will begin, selecting the final victor." The green armored purple scaled man's voice was dreamy and distant, resounding in everyone's minds, "The rules for the battle have already been sent to everyone of you, get a good rest today."

Rumble!

The green armored purple scaled man immediately vanished after he finished, at this time the 1,008 undyings began their discussions.

"Primal secret area, they are absorbing 2 this time!"

"I initially thought the slot of that primal secret area will definitely belong to that Bolan punk, I never expected to have an extra slot."

"The virtual universe company, it's rare for them to be so

generous.”

……

During the time the undyings were discussing, Luo Feng and the rest of the 1,000 all lowered their heads to look at the screens on their wrists, on it displayed the duel rules they had received.

“Hm?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows as he looked.

“The rules are as follows:

The 3 round duels that just ended, of which the 900 that made it through and received the 900 slots, they will be judged according to their performance in these 3 rounds, the virtual universe company system will choose from these the most outstanding 100, they are, Jia Lai Xi, Ka Peng Te, Lasha, Lei Shi, Wu Te Wei Si Ke…

These 100 will engage in duels with the initial 100 from the training space, a total of 200 people engaged in 1v1 battles!

The victorious 100 people have the right to enter the Heaven and land secret area. As for the other 900, they will all enter the Last Phase secret area.

Amongst the victorious 100, according to the judgement of the virtual universe system, they’ll pick out the most outstanding 20 and allow these 20 to battle 1v1…deciding the final 10.

The top 10 have the right to enter the Absolute beginning secret area.

The 1st and 2nd of the top 10 will also be chosen from there to enter the Primal secret area.

The attachment below has specific details of the battles.

“This rule…sure is dogmatic.” Luo Feng thought, “They actually let the virtual universe system pick 100 out of the 900, to battle with the current top 100. Looks like the virtual universe company has absolute trust and confidence in their system, anyway the problem doesn’t affect me, I have the right to battle.”

“How can it be this way?”

“They don’t even give us the right to duel?”

“That’s too much!”

“This, this is overconfidence in the virtual universe system.”

In the plaza, the other absolute geniuses erupted in rage, the rules of this round meant that 800 of the final 1000 were immediately out of the game, not even giving them the chance to display their strengths! Naturally many of the geniuses were extremely unhappy and dissatisfied.

“Virtual universe company!” A sharp voice roared fiercely, Luo Feng even felt some discomfort in his ears, turning to look.

Amongst the group.

A 5m tall, skinny bodied, with a vertical eye in the middle of his forehead, this youth’s expression was pained, there was madness in his 3 eyes, raging and shouting: “I have a 100% guarantee of entering the top 100, even the top 20! How can, how can you immediately rely on the virtual universe system and just toss me aside? I won’t accept this! I won’t accept this!!!”

“Unfair! It’s unfair!” Beside, others began to shout out.

“This way is unfair!”

“Actually fighting, whoever loses gets eliminated, that’s the fair way, otherwise we won’t accept this!” Immediately about 10 youths from different universe countries began to shout out.

Luo Feng, Rong Jun and the others on the 200 namelist remained calm, the other 800 however were raging madly with the 3 eyed youth, the rest of them were extremely unhappy.

“Shut up!”

“What are you doing?”

“All shut up!”

The distant 1,008 undyings, many of them raged, simultaneously that strong consciousness and pressure extended over, immediately pressuring the 800 youths, causing all of them to go pale, all shivering, their legs trembling, “Pa!” Finally some couldn’t take it and knelt down, and later, “Pa! Pa! Pa!” They all knelt down, unable to withstand the pressure.

800 youths kneeling down.

Rumble...

1,008 undyings, all of them appeared before the geniuses, looking over them.

“I wont accept this! I wont accept this!!!” Amongst the kneeling group, that 3 eyed youth slammed his fists on the ground, his muscles twitching like an earthworm, forcing his head up and roaring.

“Idiot!”

From the 1,008 undyings, the scale armored giant looked coldly at the 3 eyed youth.

At this time, a dreamy distant voice resounded, “If one doesn’t

accept or doubts the rules of the virtual universe system, one can choose not to join our virtual universe company, our virtual universe company will never force anyone to join." The voice resounded throughout the entire land and skies, making the expressions of the kneeling 800 geniuses change.

Too...too...that's too brutal!

Standing beside, Luo Feng, Savage Rong Jun, Death god Bolan and the other 200 were all shocked.

"He actually replied like that." Luo Feng was shocked.

The 800 geniuses didn't dare to believe, the 3 eyed youth too had an expression of disbelief, right, they were all true absolute geniuses, in their universe countries, they were number 1s! Always sitting high on a pedestal, even the universe country leaders heavily respected him, his opinion respected by many undyings.

From that youth's point of view, this rule was simply overbearing, his request should be able to be met, however the answer of the virtual universe company was that simple...

If you don't agree, just leave, no one is forcing you to join!

That simple!

"Really stupid!" Among the 1,008 undyings, a long black haired undying, looking at the kneeling 800 people, saying coldly, "The

virtual universe company's upper echelon made the rules and decisions, do you think you little punks can actually change it? You are really ahead of yourselves!"

"If it was that Death god Bolan punk that raised an opinion, maybe it might get noticed. But that's only because he was long regarded as the one to enter the Primal secret area, a member of the Primal secret area!" An old man in a white robed covered in silver scales looked at the 3 eyed youth, "As for you…only the outer layer of the core, how can you dare to reject?"

"Little punks, remember! You may be the most elite geniuses of your universe countries, however in the virtual universe company…they organize a star level genius competition every 10,000 years, and a universe level genius competition. Within the virtual universe company, there are countless geniuses, the strong are numerous as the wind…you all should just stay low profile, it fits you better!"

"Going against the decision of the upper echelon is a big mistake!"

……

1,008 undyings, they were all very clear that these were all extremely talented geniuses, however geniuses normally had pride, temperament issues. And the path to the pinnacle of strength was extremely long and tedious, if one always kept this sort of pride, it was very easy to fall, hence fiercely knocking them back down was a good thing.

Within the large hall of skyscraper 0825.

Luo Feng and Rong Jun sat in chairs, as for the other 3, they were all eliminated in the 3 round duels.

“Before, I was still a little proud, however that scene before...I understand now, in the eyes of the virtual universe company, we are only some seedlings they are absorbing.” Luo Feng shook his head, “The virtual universe company itself has accumulated many many geniuses.”

“The position is not the same, naturally our words and opinions matter at different levels too!” Savage said softly, “The 4 secret areas are the virtual universe’s way of distinction between their members, didn’t you hear what that undying said before, maybe only death god Bolan’s opinion would get some recognition?”

Luo Feng nodded.

“Primal secret area, the namelist is extremely short.” Savage said, “The virtual universe company, such a huge power, the number of sector lords in the primal secret area, I heard there’s only a hundred!”

“100?” Luo Feng was greatly shocked.

Sector lords had long life spans, even in the Ganwu universe country the sector lords exceeded a million...and the 100 to 1,000

times stronger and bigger virtual universe company, just how many sector lords did they have?

And the number of sector lords that entered the primal secret area was only a total of 100!

“So, you should understand just how special this primal secret area absorbing 2 members is.” Savage spoke, “The primal secret area...as the core of the virtual universe company’s internal level, like death god Bolan, even though he’s only a star level or later a universe level, his position is still extremely high, even your emperor of the black dragon mountain empire cannot match up to him.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng was stunned.

The position of a primal secret area member, was higher than the emperor of the black dragon mountain empire?

Right!

The sector lords in the virtual universe company’s primal secret area was only a 100! One could easily see how special being a member was. Being higher than the emperor of a starfield wasn’t strange.

“Also, I heard, the members have special bodyguards.” Savage spoke, the leader of the guards is an undying, and within the guards there are 10 sector lords and a 100 domain lords.”

No matter how calm Luo Feng was, he couldn’t help but stare wide eyed.

“Damn!”

“Is it really true?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but lose his composure.

Members of the primal secret area having guards wasn’t strange, however the leader of the guards was actually an undying! This, this, this was too terrifying.

“Don’t be surprised, The virtual universe company, as one of the 5 great leviathans, even undyings...in the virtual universe company, many are mostly only in the Absolute beginning secret area. Just from their position, they are much lower.” Savage spoke, “You should understand, just how valuable and high the position of being a member of the primal secret area is, anyone of them, are extremely important elites in the company, just the resources spent on them, if changed to cash, are incredibly unbelievable amounts.”

Luo Feng was completely stunned.

Chapter 71 – 1st Battle

When Luo Feng returned to his room, he was still disturbed, it took awhile for him to calm down.

“Ah, that Savage Rong Jun, how does he know so much?” Luo Feng thought, “He actually knows quite a bit about the 4 secret areas of the virtual universe company, looks like his background isn’t that simple.” The 2 from the Ganwu universe that made it to the top 1,000, Luo Feng and Rong Jun came from their own star fields.

While they seemed to not have any background at all…

In truth, Luo Feng inherited the Yun Mo Planet teachings and is also a golden horned beast.

And Savage Rong Jun, his true identity and background, was obviously not that simple either.

On earth, Yangzhou city Westlake courtyard, within the castle.

Sitting in the tea room, pouring a glass of tea and taking a sip, his consciousness was communicating with Babata, “Babata, just what’s up with the 4 secret areas of the virtual universe company?” Luo Feng told Babata everything he had just heard from Rong Jun, telling him the rules for the duel too, also about what happened in the plaza.

“That group of idiots, they actually dare doubt the virtual universe company system? My god, their brains must be flooded with water, the virtual universe system is a transcendental existence that can emulate the origin laws.” Babata exclaimed.

“Oh…” Luo Feng realized.

Babata obviously stood on the virtual universe system side.

“Hm, that Savage Rong Jun said the right thing! The primal secret area members have extremely high positions.” Babata said, “To the virtual universe company, to be able to enter the primal secret area…these are the extremely rare geniuses of the entire universe, hence they are willing to spend huge amounts of treasure and wealth to nurture them.

“How much?” Is it as much as my teacher’s wealth?” Luo Feng asked.

“Luo Feng, you have to understand one thing.” Babata said seriously, “Your teacher was indeed a very powerful undying, even the black dragon mountain empire had to lower its head in front of him! However…your teacher, compared to the Ganwu universe country, was a completely different level!”

Luo Feng nodded.

Ganwu universe country leader, that was an ancient being that had lived for trillions of years, creating and opening an entire

universe country.

“The leader of the Ganwu universe country, has to show respect to the Virtual universe company!” Babata said, “1,008 universe countries, who’d dare offend the virtual universe country? That’s the true huge power! Such a huge powerful existence, nurturing geniuses in the primal secret area, they have very strict plans, numbers extremely small and pitiful, the wealth that they actually spend…do you think your teacher’s wealth can compare to that?”

Luo Feng was silent.

“You vision must be broader! Look further, don’t limit yourself to the black dragon mountain empire, or the universe countries, but look to the entire universe!”

“Actually I’ve known, since the day you possessed the golden horned beast successfully, your path would be even further and brighter than the path of your teacher’s.” Babata said, “Of course, from what I know getting into the Primal secret area isn’t the end of it, but comes with a lot of competition. The weak will be kicked out…and those in the Absolute beginning secret area, the absolute geniuses within might rise up to the primal secret area.

“Hence!”

“To enjoy the most pinnacle of resources, you have to constantly work hard. Because in the future, there will be a large amount of absolute geniuses eyeing your position, the moment you relax, others might catch up.”

Luo Feng could feel hot blood rush through his veins.

Anticipation!

Yes, that was the life he wanted, the strong rise while the weak fall, just that simple!

“Babata, I don’t understand too well now...the primal area members, just the star levels, they are able to get guards, and the leader of the guards is an undying.” Luo feng said, “No matter how it is, that’s an undying, a great undying!”

“Yes, undying are great!” Babata said.

“However a primal area member is also a great being itself.”

“Luo Feng, I’ll explain it to you this way...” Babata said, “What determines the level of position, isn’t just strength alone, it depends on many factors. Like the virtual universe company’s business division, some of the business geniuses or investors, their strength may be very low, however they still enjoy an extremely high position, just like the investor genius in the universe 1st bank, Fei Te, he invests with unbelievable amounts of wealth, even though his strength may be weak, but he still has undyings to take care and protect him.”

Luo Feng was shocked.

“Same logic.”

“Just like that death god Bolan, right, he’s very weak now. But you have to understand…he’s an absolute genius, the pinnacle of the human race in a trillion years! One only appears every trillion years or so. And a trillion years is akin to a sector lord’s life span, 1,008 universe countries, every universe country has over a million sector lords. You calculate, how many sector lords are produced by the entire human race over a trillion years?”

Luo Feng held his breath.

“That death god Bolan, in terms of value, position, one can only imagine!”

“Everyone who enters the Primal secret area are all the most important elites of the virtual universe company! That’s their root.” Babata exclaimed, “Comprehension of the origin laws, is easiest during the sector lord stage. And during the difficult star level stage, the death god Bolan already has such a level of comprehension of the space law, think about it…how high will his achievements be in the future?”

“No doubt about it!”

“As long as he doesn’t die.”

“In space origin law itself, he will definitely exceed your teacher! As long as he becomes an undying, he’ll be the pinnacle being even

amongst the others, almost invincible." Babata exclaimed, "And the space origin law, as one of the 2 hardest origin laws, if he can become an undying, that would be terrifying. You have to remember...even amongst undyings, the differences are huge, hence that time sector lord had such ambition."

"However he didn't succeed, if he did, and became an undying. His strength would be close to your teacher."

"Of course!"

"The virtual universe company core is separated into 4 secret areas. From high to low, Primal, Absolute beginning, Heaven and land, Beginning phase. Many undyings are in the Absolute beginning secret area, don't bite off more than you can chew, if you can enter the Absolute beginning secret area, that would be considered a success already. What's more, your most important task right now...is to settle your 1st opponent Wu Te Wei Si Ke!"

Luo Feng lifted his tea cup and drank it all.

Wu Te Wei Si Ke, that was his opponent tomorrow.

Daybreak of the 2nd day.

Plaza, the 1,000 geniuses gathered.

Luo Feng was mixed in the crowd, looking at the distant tall 3 eyed youth, those 3 eyes were gloomy, obviously the blow he

suffered yesterday was huge.

"Sir Knight!"

The distant 1,008 undying bowed respectfully.

"Hm."

In mid air far away, the green armored purple scaled man nodded, then turned to look at the 1,000 youths, speaking, "Today is a good day, we will, in one day pick the top 100, top 10, and 1st and 2nd from the 1,000 of you."

"Are you all ready? Then the battle will begin now!"

The green armored purple scaled man surveyed the crowd, with a wave of his hand, 100 huge arenas appeared above the plaza, at the side of each arena, a black net covered and surrounded them. Simultaneously, Rong Jun, Jia Lai Xi etc and the 200 youths were transported into the arenas.

Every arena had 2 people.

Immediately the undyings, along with the participants that didn't qualify, all turned to watch death god Bolan's battle.

In one of the arenas, was Luo Feng and Wu Te Wei Si Ke!

The silver white arena, had an area of 10 square km, the black net covered the entire arena.

“Madman Luo Feng, from the Ganwu universe country black dragon mountain empire, rank in the training space 3, displaying madness with extreme calm, hence the name.” A skinny youth with completely black lips stared at the distant Luo Feng coldly, shouting, “My rank in the training space was 113, I will let you know…that the training space didn’t stand for anything!”

“Cut the crap!” Carrying the dark golden long rod on his back, Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and floated in the distant air shouting back.

“Very well!” The skinny youth smiled, “I’ll settle you and I’ll be able to enter the Heaven and Land secret area. Then I’ll settle another and I’ll enter the Absolute beginning area!”

Hu!

A gust of wind blew, the skinny youth became a gust of wind and headed towards Luo Feng, seemingly slow but actually extremely fast.

Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and surveyed his opponent from mid air, details of his opponent flashing in his mind, “Wu Te Wei Si Ke, nicknamed Gale, uses a level 5 genetic energy weapon Void shadow blade, during battle his blade moves extremely quick, mixed in the mad winds, extremely fierce and swift, hard to block.

“Go and die.” The skinny youth’s eyes gleamed.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The originally wind like skinny youth suddenly increased his speed, simultaneously the Void shadow blade in his hand became a fierce engulfing gale, endless blades gathered together to form a mad wind that engulfed everything, this mad wind blade dance surrounded even Luo Feng, allowing him no space to dodge.

“Hmph!” Luo Feng snorted.

Standing on the dark cloud shuttle and suddenly becoming a mysterious trace, in that seemingly overwhelming blade wind dance, he found an opening to slip through, leaving 9 images behind, causing the skinny youth’s expression to change, “He can even escape this, the information on the 9 threads is indeed terrifying.”

In the time Luo Feng took to dodge the attacks, the dark golden long rod on his back shot out 5 golden lights, forming 5 golden blades in mid air.

“Go!” Luo Feng stared coldly at his opponent, as though he was staring at a dead person.

With the golden energy flow wrapped around it, the 5 golden lights became like 5 golden dragons roaring towards the center of

the blade wind dance, the skinny youth.

“Go and die!” The skinny youth’s expression struggled, his eyes filled with a sense of longing.

Xiu!

He waved his hand and shot out a white light, the white light immediately pierced through a 100m of distance, almost reaching Luo Feng, it was even faster than the golden rainbows.

Luo Feng’s expression changed, quickly relying on the dark cloud shuttle’s fast speed to dodge and simultaneously unleashing 16 shields.

Chapter 72 – A True Pinnacle Battle

As the white light shot over suddenly, Luo Feng however maintained total calm, immediately coming up with the best decision...1 was to rely on the dark cloud shuttle to dodge it as quickly as possible, 2, use the soaring shuttle's sword matrix for defense, 3, use the dark golden long rod from behind to produce 4 more golden blades to block that white light.

The 4 golden rainbows shot out from behind Luo Feng, almost like a net that engulfed the sky, wrapping over that white light.

"Dang!"

A clashing sound!

Causing the distant skinny youth's expression to change greatly: "He stopped it!"

That was his trump card, one that he had trained long for, with comprehension of the wind origin laws, a move infused with wind origin laws to unleash its full power.

This Leaving Blade had the properties of the wind origin laws, its speed was extremely quick, it floated and arced about, its power was huge, it was his biggest trump card! During the training space stages, he didn't have any use for secret weapons, and later during the 3 round duels, his opponents werent enough for him to have to use it, hence it had been kept a secret til now,he had been preparing to use it on an unready opponent.

Trump card, they had the biggest power when unexpected.

Without preparation, it was easy to get hit!

The moment it was found out however, they would automatically have defenses for it, the trump card's power would be weakened.

However Luo Feng was too calm, even though this move was sudden, Luo Feng's terrifying calmness, without any hesitation acting in the best course of action to deal with it, not only did 4 golden rainbows block it, unleashing the sword matrix along with his dodging made it completely useless.

"Go and die!" Luo Feng looked coldly at his opponent.

The other 5 golden rainbows surrounded the skinny youth, his speed obviously couldn't match up to the golden rainbows, in an instant, he was pierced through!

Wu Te We Si Ke, Fail!

Luo Feng, victory!

……

Luo Feng descended from mid air and looked at the white light

that was stopped, it was a silver white little blade, “Anyone capable of making it into the top 100, indeed they are not to be sneezed at.” Within the universe, a spirit reader could control their spirit weapons from far, and fighters too could use throwing weapons, like javelins, short hatchets, short blades etc...

Using earth terms, these were called secret weapons!

Secret weapons were indeed powerful, and rarely seen.

After winning the first battle, Luo Feng entered the top 100, his prize rose to 100 mixed elements, and he gained the right to enter the virtual universe company Heaven and land secret area.

.....

Congratulations to the punks in the arenas.” The green armored purple scaled man stood in mid air, surveying the 100 young ladies and gentlemen within the arenas, “Firstly, I want to congratulate you on entering the top 100, able to enter our virtual universe company’s heaven and earth secret area, right now, we’ll pick the top 20 from you all.”

“According to the virtual universe system choices, I’ll report the 20 names.”

Immediately the 100 just victorious youth geniuses began to get nervous, even though they had won, however only 20 of them would get the chance to go to the next round and battle, picking

out the final 10!

Luo Feng stood in the arena he battled in, looking at the green armored purple scaled man in mid air, creasing his eyebrows, “I didn’t reveal my strongest trump card, my rating in the virtual universe system might be lower, however, according to what the scale armored giant said and concluded, I should be able to rank in the top 10, then, I should get chosen!”

“Bolan!”

The green armored purple scaled man began reporting the 20 names.

“Gu Si Luo!”

“Ai Chen!”

“Wuka!”

“Yi Feng!”

“Jia Lai Xi!”

“Rong Jun!”

……

As the names were read out, those who didn't have their names read could barely suppress their nervousness, they were all victorious, yet only 20 could participate in the next battle!

"Qian Shui!"

"Luo Feng!"

.....

"Tao!"

"The chosen 20 are the names that I just reported." The green armored purple scaled man smiled, "Will the 20 of you rest and recover from the battle before, in a short time, we will begin the next battle. As for who your opponent is...you'll find out when the battle begins!"

A group of youths sat casually in the plaza.

"Kandita, congrats on making it into the top 100."

"Don't even talk about it, even though I made it to the top 100, however I wasn't chosen in the final 20." The tall and sturdy Kandita had a look of dissatisfaction, "Even though those in the top 20 are all powerful, and I don't have a chance of winning. However without actually making a move, I still feel

dissatisfaction!”

“Kandita, don’t be upset, we are all unhappy too. I didn’t even get the chance to make it into the top 100.”

The youths that didn’t have any more battles to fight were chatting casually, everyone chatted and got to know each other, because from today on, many of them would become long term partners in the universe.

And the final 20 sat in the corner quietly, they were quietly resting and controlling their mental state. Because in a moment... the more important battle was about to begin, the next battle would pick out the top 10, these 20 that were able to get on the namelist, probably only death god Bolan had a 100% guarantee, the other 19 werent sure of their victory.

“My opponent, just who is it?” Luo Feng’s gaze swept his surroundings, 2 of the other 19 too were looking in all directions, one was the Manka prince Wuka and the other was the fat man carrying the blood axe Tao.

The Manka prince smiled at Luo Feng and waved his fist.

The fat man too glanced at Luo Feng and rubbed his ears.

“The arrangements of this battle, they didn’t reveal, we’ll only know when it’s time to battle. This is probably a test too on our mental state.” Luo Feng stopped worrying about it, closing his

eyes, and according to his big and 2nd brother's methods, cleansed himself and emptied his mind, entering a calm state, patiently waiting for the battle to begin.

.....

About half an hour later.

"Rumble..." The plaza shook, in the vast plaza 10 arenas rose gradually, all were enveloped in large amounts of black netting, simultaneously the 20 resting people were immediately transported to the 10 arenas.

Within the arena.

"Damn!"

"Tragedy! That blood axe Tao actually faces death god Bolan?"

"We've been guessing who'd be so unlucky to meet Bolan, it's actually Tao, poor fellow." In the distance, the 980 other geniuses spectating laughed, and in the arena the wild unrestricted fat man Tao gripped on that terrifying huge Axe, almost like a ferocious beast staring at the white robed youth, however anyone could have predicted the outcome.

Death god Bolan, that was an absolute genius that only appeared once after how many competitions?

The virtual universe company even specially included one more slot for the Primal secret area just because of him, the chances of the blood axe Tao being able to violently defeat the death god Bolan were simply too low, unless he was a terrifying genius that appeared once every trillion years.

“Gu Si Luo against Rong Jun?”

“Gu Si Luo was the training space ranked 2, a very perfect, no error kind of strength. Among these 20, probably only he has the ability to fight Bolan. That Rong Jun meeting Gu Si Luo, its over.”

……

Many in the entire arena stared at Bolan against Tao, however there were many watching another match…Hypnotist Jia Lai Xi against Madman Luo Feng!

“That Hypnotist has met the Madman.”

“The 2 sick ones have met.”

“From beginning to end, Hypnotist didn’t even make a move, just staring at his opponents and defeating them. Who knows whether that Madman can withstand it.”

“It’s hard to say! Hypnotist is the most terrifying spirit reader

hypnotist of this competition, till now no one has been able to withstand it...and besides using hypnotism, he can also use a spirit weapon to engage in long distance attacks, when the opponent is caught in the illusion without any defenses, it'll be over quickly. Up till now, he hasn't even used a spirit weapon! Always only using hypnotism, his hypnotism must be extremely terrifying!"

"Don't look down on Madman, I've seen his battle footage, so many footages, I've never seen him nervous or at a lose. His eyes... always cold, almost as though nothing affects his mental state."

"Hm, Hypnotist was regarded as the top 10, Madman too was regarded as the top 10, these 2 meeting, it'll be interesting!"

.....

10 arenas, 10 battles.

Every match was a pinnacle fight, compared to the fights to become the top 100 before, the match ups now...only now were they truly worthy of the title pinnacle fights!

In the arena.

One on the dark cloud shuttle, dressed in a dark grey armor, carrying a dark golden long rod, a skinny black haired youth.

The other stood on a black disc, a tall and skinny silhouette covered in a black robe.

Both were spirit readers, however they walked 2 different paths of a spirit reader, one was a controller while the other a hypnotists. The controller directed spirit weapons to destroy the physical body while hypnotists directed their attacks to destroy the soul directly.

It was extremely hard to make progress as a hypnotists, however once that was achieved, they were terrifying.

Becoming a controller was easier, however to become powerful, that too was difficult.

“Madman Luo Feng.” The hypnotist Jia Lai Xi’s voice was coarse, saying softly, “You have the strength of the top 10, however meeting me…you’ll only be able to rank outside the top 10.”

“So confident?” Luo Feng smiled, his eyes gleaming.

The 2 awaited the announcement.

In the 10 arenas, they all awaited…

“The victor will enter the top 10, little punks, don’t get careless, your opponents are all very strong. Let the battle…Begin!” The green armored purple scaled man said from far away, his voice resounding in everyone’s ears, simultaneously, the 10 arena battles erupted!

……

Jia Lai Xi who was standing on the black disc, his gaze cold as his lips slightly moved.

Weng…

A formless traceless spirit energy immediately rippled towards Luo Feng, invading his mind, his spirit energy was simply too fast. While unleashing his hypnotism, Kia Lai Xi waved his hand simultaneously, the black disc below his feet had become a black light cutting straight towards Luo Feng’s head.

The 1st time!

In the arena battles, this was the first time the hypnotist Jia Lai Xi used hypnotism and his spirit weapon in a simultaneous attack!

Chapter 73 – Top 10

A formless spirit energy sneakily invaded Luo Feng's consciousness.

His consciousness was vast and endless, however a huge golden pagoda almost took up the entire space. This void pagoda had a total of 2 levels. This void pagoda with engravings appearing all over looked completely like a transparent crystal glowing with a golden light. It looked almost perfect, non damaged and was completely able to protect his soul core within.

The void pagoda, level 2.

This was a secret technique passed down from the master of the Yun Mo Planet. Luo Feng had studied and focused on the Soul imprint and Void pagoda, of which the soul imprint was created by his teacher. However, the deeper he delved into these arts, the more they favored soul attacks. Since his specialty was a controller, he slowly reduced his training on the soul imprint. Once he reached the basic 10,000 blade soul imprint and was able to condense his enslavement imprint, he stopped going deeper.

On the other hand, the void pagoda was very important in Luo Feng's plan. As a spirit reader controller, he may be weaker in soul attacks. However, his defense had to be strong, he shouldn't have any obvious weaknesses! Hence…he never relaxed on that training!

And the void pagoda was a very powerful technique.

His teacher back then only acquired it by chance too, and before death, he had only reached 6 levels of the pagoda. If he had reached the 7th level...according to what his teacher assumed, that tragedy back then, he wouldn't have died! One could only imagine how powerful the void pagoda was.

During the past 5 years, Luo Feng had never relaxed during his training. With the gold and space origin law comprehension, he reached level 2 of the pagoda.

Void pagoda, was purely for defense!

"Hu!"

The hypnotist Jia Lai Xi's traceless spirit energy invaded Luo Feng's consciousness, immediately hitting the Void pagoda. Upon contact, it didn't attack, but spread like a membrane to wrap around the void pagoda, gradually contacting it.

The void pagoda, in essence was made of spirit energy which was incomparably condensed. However, it was still spirit energy.

And spirit energy was always infused with a trace of consciousness.

Soul, in truth was a complete fusion of countless amounts of spirit energy. With the formless spirit energy making contact with the void pagoda, Luo Feng's consciousness fell into a terrifying hypnotism.

……

A second ago he was still clearly battling Jia Lai Xi, however in an instant his consciousness was in a different scene altogether.

“How can this be?” Luo Feng stood above the Pacific ocean. Looking at a over 100km long huge ferocious beast wreaking havoc, creating enormous waves. Simultaneously there were two 10km fierce absolute beasts spewing fire towards the ground.

The skyscrapers and entire base city was in ruins, people were screaming in pain, while countless of them were running away.

“Thirdie, what do we do? Just what can we do? These are at least domain lord level ferocious beasts, we can’t match up to them.” A panicked thunder god voice transmitted from his communicator watch.

“Third brother, quickly protect the final seedlings and leave earth. Quickly flee! These are the last seedlings of earth.” Hong’s panicked expression appeared on his communicator too.

“Something is not right!”

“Wake up! Wake up!” Luo Feng felt as though he was dreaming when he was young. Even though he consciously knew that he was dreaming, it was still difficult to wake up. Although he was in this state currently…the main thing was that his consciousness was too

strong. Along with his mental state training and golden horned beast influence, his soul was incomparably cold. Hence his consciousness detected the hypnotism immediately.

Being conscious of the fact was one thing, actually waking up was the important thing!

Luckily the void pagoda had a tight defense on his soul core. So even if the hypnotist Jia Lai Xi's spirit hypnotism was incredibly powerful, it could only slightly affect him, as it was unable to penetrate deep into his soul.

"Wake up! Wake up! Wake up!!!" Luo Feng's willpower let out a strong and powerful roar, and the illusion world began to shake.

Peng!

The illusion was broken.

Luo Feng had completely regained consciousness. Unlike that dreamy illusion world, everything before his eyes was incredibly clear, this was the true 100% simulation of the virtual universe.

"Xiu!" The black disc had already reached close to Luo Feng.

"Just nice." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. Standing on the dark cloud shuttle, his speed fiercely accelerated, simultaneously brandishing many shields. As the distance was too close, he didn't have time to use the Nan Shen Armament.

“Dang!”

The black disc clashed on the shield causing the shield to get knocked away. It brushed Luo Feng’s arm, cutting through the armor and a large part of his flesh, fresh blood spewed out from mid air, while Luo Feng had already dodged far away.

“Go and die!” Luo Feng roared within, pointing at the distant Jia Lai Xi who had an expression of shock.

Rumble!

Six golden energy flows flew out from behind Luo Feng and immediately formed six golden blades, piercing towards Jia Lai Xi. Jai Lai Xi’s expression was filled with shock, “Impossible!” Simultaneously, large amounts of golden shards formed around him to become an armor.

“Peng Peng Peng, the six golden rainbows pierced right through his helmet, eventually reducing his body to nothing but a mess.

Rumble!

An explosion and fresh blood flew all over.

Jia Lai Xi was defeated!

Madman Luo Feng was the Victor! He entered the top 10!

That was how fast a match between two absolute geniuses was like. If Luo Feng had awoken any later, it would have been him who would have died instead with his head sliced right off! However the moment he awoke, it meant Jia Lai Xi's death!

……

"How can that be?" Covered in a black robe, Jia Lai Xi's eyes were filled with shock, "My Confusion god technique… according to my country leader, he said that only Bolan had reached a level where he wouldn't be affected. Others wouldn't be able to withstand it. Even within the top 10, I had a guarantee. I should even have had the hope of making it to the top 2. How, how come he…even if he wasn't caught in the illusion, to actually struggle and break out of the dream requires time. Within that little time, I should have been able to kill him, but he…"

He indeed had defensive methods.

That defensive spirit weapon which formed his armor, could barely withstand the six golden blades attack. However Luo Feng's attack was simply too strong and ended up destroying him.

Strong defense! Along with an even more terrifying spirit weapon attack with hypnotism…

1v1, he was indeed a terrifying opponent.

However, he still lost.

……

“Hm, he lost?”

“Jia Lai Xi lost?” Many spectating geniuses were all shocked. From the previous footages of Jia Lai Xi, he was simply too intrepid. He did not even have to use his spirit weapon before, just his soul attack alone along with hypnotism could kill the enemy and his moves were outstanding every time.

This time, Jia Lai Xi didn’t even take his enemy lightly, as he regarded Madman Luo Feng as a true enemy. Hence, he used hypnotism and his spirit weapon simultaneously, however he still lost!

With his full strength, he still lost!

“Ah?”

“Luo Feng actually won?” The distant 1,008 undyings, their eyes gleamed. Over half of them had regarded Luo Feng as the loser of this match from the get go, because they were very clear about the difficulty of training in hypnotism, and just how terrifying a powerful hypnotist was.

“To be able to immediately awaken, just how strong must one’s willpower be? How calm? This punk is powerful, definitely powerful.” A 10m tall man who looked like a bull with a horn exclaimed and complimented, his voice booming like thunder.

……

Luo Feng’s victory was considered quite a surprise. The main thing was Jia Lai Xi was long regarded by the undyings…as one that only Bolan could withstand. Afterall, with his comprehension of the origin laws being that deep, his consciousness was affected by the universe energies. Hence, he wouldn’t so easily be shaken.

The stronger a fighter, the stronger one comprehends the origin laws, his willpower and strength were more terrifying.

If it was anyone else against Jia Lai Xi, their losing percentage would have exceeded 80%!

Actually, of the top 20, other than Bolan, the other 18 would naturally feel apprehensive against Jia Lai Xi. Even Luo Feng didn’t have full confidence, however this difficult person, was actually eliminated by Luo Feng.

10 arenas, within one of them, the white robed youth carrying the blood blade won. He turned and was obviously shocked when he saw the arena Luo Feng was in, creasing his eyebrows slightly, saying, “Luo Feng?”

“Luo Feng?” The green haired lady Qian Shui who had similarly achieved victory, looked at the distant Luo Feng in his arena, with her bright and intelligent eyes..

Right.

During the time Luo Feng won, three victors had been decided. They were Bolan, Qian Shui and Luo Feng. It may have seemed like a slow exchange, but Luo Feng’s was actually very fast.

“Chi!”

Similarly a green haired youth with engravings on his face revealed a smile in his arena.

“Big brother, big brother!” Qian Shui shouted and cheered.

Her big brother Jiang Mo had entered the top 10 aswell, both siblings entered the top 10.

……

The victors of the 10 arenas began to emerge one by one.

Bolan, Qian Shui, Luo Feng, Jiang Mo, Lancelot, Wuka, Ai Chen, Long Yun, Ao Pa Te La...and the final one...

Rong Jun!

The battle between Gu Si Luo and Rong Jun was the longest one of the 10. Gu Si Luo was a so called perfect spirit reader controller. From the beginning of the battle, he seemed to be in control. As the rank 2 of the training space round and the one with the most hope of being the 2nd one to enter the primal secret area, actually…he actually lost to Savage Rong Jun?

“Rong Jun won?”

“Gu Si Luo actually lost?”

“The one with the most hope of getting number 2, Gu Si Luo, he actually lost?”

The spectators on site, over 900 absolute geniuses were all completely shocked. At the same time, the 9 victors in the arenas, all stared hard at the blood covered wargod Rong Jun who looked like he just came from the wilderness.

“Powerful blade work.”

“What terrifying blade work.”

Even death god Bolan creased his eyebrows. Everyone else including Luo Feng could barely contain their shocked expressions.

“This blade work…” Luo Feng stared at Savage Rong Jun. Looking at the huge blade, he remembered that brutal slash that could even slice mountains.

Chapter 74 – Low Profile Opponent

“So, so his movement wasn’t his strongest trait, it was his blade work instead.” Luo Feng stared at the youth Rong Jun. At the same time he reminisced about his match with him from five years ago, “My true aim… is the entire universe’s number one!” that roar seemed to resound in Luo Feng’s ears once again.

Number one?

So, this Savage Rong Jun wasn’t just making bold comments.

“Yes, Rong Jun had so much knowledge on even the 4 secret areas of the Virtual Universe Company. Obviously he wasn’t just a simple frog in the well.” Luo Feng thought, “He had so much information on the standards of the previous number one’s of the competitions, and he dared to actually say his aim was to be the overall number one, meaning he had some guarantee!”

Before unleashing that completely shocking blade work, Rong Jun was regarded as one who would reach within the top 20, but now that he’s defeated Gu Si Luo.

“Top 5, he definitely has strength who could reach top 5.” The large youth that was completely black, Ao Pa Te La said softly.

“That blade work, is simply…”

The green robed purple scaled man flew in mid air, a formless

pressure naturally caused the 1,000 geniuses to turn to him.

"Congratulations to the 10 victors. You've entered the top 10, your prize has risen to 1,000 mixed elements and you have the right to enter the Absolute beginning secret area." The green armored purple scaled man smiled, "This time's top 10 battles have been very exciting, some punks have actually really surprised me.

The 1,000 geniuses along with the 1,008 undyings all listened obediently to that Nine blades knight.

"Bolan, Qian Shui, Luo Feng, Jiang Mo, Lancelot, Wuka, Ai Chen, Long Yun, Ao Pa Te La, Rong Jun, congratulations to the ten of you."

"In a moment, we'll pick the top 5 from you 10 and finally the top 2 from the final 5." The green armored purple scaled man smiled, "As to how you are separated into your groups, according to the virtual universe system's set rules on how fast you completed your match before, there were some quick and slow matches before, the fastest will battle against the slowest, the 2nd fastest will battle against the 2nd slowest...and so on!"

Hua!

The 1,008 undyings were shocked. The 990 spectating geniuses were shocked too. Even the 10 absolute geniuses who were about to battle were stunned.

The time sequence was Bolan, Qian Shui, Luo Feng Jiang Mo, Lancelot, Wuka, Ai Chen, Long Yun, Ao Pa Te La and Rong Jun.

If the fastest were to match up against the slowest, then...

Bolan was up against Rong Jun!

Qian Shui versus Ao Pa Te La!

Luo Feng against Long Yun!

Jiang Mo against Ai Chen!

Lancelot against Wuka!

The most outstanding from the earlier battle, Rong Jun, actually matched up against the terrifying Death God Bolan. According to what everyone present thought, including the 1,008 undyings, everyone regarded meeting the Death God as a sure loss without doubt!

“Rong Jun against Bolan?” Luo Feng looked at the distant wild youth. “That’s bad, even though Rong Jun’s true strength is terrifying, no matter how much his strength explodes, his opponent is Bolan. And Bolan far exceeds the rest of us, Rong Jun will definitely lose!” As Bolan was too strong, one could see just from the training space what the outcome would be.

Being ahead of everyone by an entire tower, almost everyone held their breaths for Rong Jun. One had to know that the settings by the virtual universe system couldn't be changed, and only accepted.

Also, other than the 9 present, no one else would want to meet Bolan. However, one would ultimately have to. And this unlucky person was Rong Jun.

"Rest for awhile, the arena duels will begin shortly." The green armored purple scared man's voice resounded in everyone's ears.

"Interesting, really interesting."

"13, your two seedlings from the Ganwu universe country are both very powerful. Especially that Rong Jun! While others are using techniques created by ancestors and earlier generations, that Rong Jun actually created his own technique. That bladework, after fusing both the ground and space origin laws together, the strength is actually so powerful. If he didn't meet Bolan, he could have totally made it to number 2!"

"Don't compliment him so much. He is strong, but that other one ... Luo Feng doesn't seem any weaker. His mental state and will power is perfect within his generation. One's willpower and mental state will determine how far one finally goes later on. In comparison, I actually prefer Luo Feng. As for Rong Jun, actually he's still too weak now in the star level, creating his own technique at this time is too early. Learn from others first, at least become a sector lord and when your sights have widened and your understanding of the origin laws have gotten deeper, it wouldn't

be too late to create your own technique then."

"Hm, makes sense."

"What you say is isn't exactly right. That Rong Jun creating his own technique, even though it's just the beginning, you can still see how huge that power is. And by creating one's own technique, when unleashing its strength, it becomes even greater. Other people's techniques are after all still others, your own would be best."

"It's much too early for that. Now isn't the time to be creating your own technique."

Surrounding the scale armored giant, the other undyings began to discuss.

"Hm."

The scale armored giant creased his eyebrows. Looking at the distant Rong Jun and Luo Feng, his eyes could hardly suppress the happiness. "These two punks really surprise me time and again. Among the 1,008 universe countries competing, there are actually two of them in the top 10 from our Ganwu universe country. Haha, if the leader knew, he'd be very happy."

.....

The 1,008 undyings in the plaza, along with the 990 other

geniuses were constantly discussing. However the final 10 geniuses were quietly waiting. Initially they felt a little pity for Rong Jun, but after, they all began to notice their own opponents.

“Long Yun.” Luo Feng looked at the distant silhouette.

He was tall at 2m, he had a muscular built and looked strong. Wearing a strange style of heavy armor, he had a helmet with a horn on it. His gaze was deep and unfathomable and the side of his face even had some yellow fur. He was Long Yun, a very low profile youth from the Lan Ting universe country.

He had never attracted anyone’s attention.

Since the beginning of the gathering of the million geniuses, people like Hypnotist Jia Lai Xi, the Manka prince, Ao Gu Se planet’s genius siblings, Savage Rong Jun etc, many had reputations that were much more renowned.

However no one really paid attention to Long Yun.

During the training space, even though he was in the top 100, he was still in the back 50.

As for making it into the top 100, Long Yun’s victories were simple. These victories were not very glaring or outstanding, because everyone else’s victories were simple too eye catching.

Making it into the top 10, Long Yun’s victory seemed very taxing.

“This Long Yun’s strength?” Luo Feng jumped within, “Right, I’ve never really noticed him before!”

Very average and keeping a low profile, this was Long Yun!

What seemed like a rather normal punk actually made it to the top 10!

“Luo Feng.” Sitting not too far from Luo Feng was the wild youth, communicating via genetic energy.

“Something the matter?” Luo Feng looked over.

“Be careful of Long Yun.” The wild youth communicated, “From my observations and information gathered before, among the top 20, 19 of them have comprehension of two origin laws. Only one person has comprehension of just one origin law.”

Luo Feng stepped through the gateway of gold and space laws.

Rong Jun stepped through the gateway of ground and space laws.

Everyone else was similar, like the Death God Bolan stepped through the gateway of wind and space laws, while Yi Feng stepped through wind and wood, or that Ai Chen stepping through light and time...

“Of the 19 that stepped through two gateways, 8 had stepped through space, 6 stepped through time, the other 5 didn’t have any comprehension of time or space at all. However, no matter the case, these 19 are all that stepped through two gateway laws.”

“Only one person had comprehension of just one origin law, and that’s Long Yun.” The wild youth communicated.

“Ah?” Luo Feng was shocked.

He hadn’t researched so much in detail. In the history of every genius competition between the 1,008 universe countries’ absolute geniuses, those that were able to make it into the top 20 were mostly all who comprehended two origin laws, or focused on space or time.

“He comprehends the ground origin laws, which are very heavy and grounded. His defense is extremely strong, and his attack is very strong too. His comprehension far exceeds my single use of the ground origin laws. Be careful.” Rong Jun communicated.

“Thanks.” Luo Feng replied.

“No need, I don’t have a big chance of victory in my fight. If you can win, I’ll be happy too.” Rong Jun said.

Luo Feng looked at Rong Jun and smiled, “All the best, you never know, you might be able to topple that Bolan.”

“Haha! You never know, however I will never admit defeat easily.” Rong Jun smiled back.

Half an hour later.

The original arenas in the plaza had vanished, tremors began again and 5 even more luxurious and beautiful arenas rose and floated above. The light cover on the arenas were translucent light membranes. These membranes, under the light ball in the sky reflected 7 colors of light below, it was beautiful. As for the 10 youth geniuses, they were all transported to their respective arenas.

Rong Jun against Bolan, Luo Feng against Long Yun...

Five absolute pinnacle battles, it was about to begin!

Within the beautiful arena, Luo Feng faced Long Yun.

Long Yun’s entire body was covered in heavy armor. His helmet had a horn on it. With a flip of his hand he brandished a terrifying huge axe, his eyes staring hard at Luo Feng, a powerful strength based fighter.

The skinny Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle, carrying the Nan Shen Armament on his back. He was a proper spirit reader controller.

“You are very strong.”

A thick booming voice, almost like a bull roaring. Long Yun stared coldly at Luo Feng, emphasizing, “You are much stronger than what I expected. To show you the respect I have for such a strong warrior like yourself, I will use my full strength and defeat you.” The moment his words ended, yellow energy began to emanate from his body. This yellow energy rippled about, the surrounding space seemed to almost condense and solidify.

A formless heavy pressure was formed, this made the distant Luo Feng’s expression change.

“It’s, too abnormal!”

“Monster!”

“This, this…”

“Madness.”

“This Long Yun is really sly and simply too devious.” The spectating 990 geniuses were all shocked. Even the distant 1,008 undyings, among those who were watching this match, many of them revealing a look of shock.

“Right, to be able to rely on only the ground origin laws to make it into the top 10. Also, to have such deep comprehension of the ground laws, yet not stepping into the space laws is the weird thing. But it’s really true, it’s just this way! And just his domain

alone was already that terrifying…”

Chapter 75 – The End of the Genius Competition

Luo Feng squinted, staring at the distant wild fighter Long Yun who was releasing his domain.

The top 10 of the universe, all of them had their domains, and most of their domains were at level 9s! Having a domain wasn't strange at all, however this wild fighter's domain had almost perfectly melded the ground origin laws with it. The moment he released his domain, the space around it felt almost like it condensed and solidified.

It was terrifying!

"His comprehension of the ground origin laws is even stronger than Rong Jun's! As for the space origin law comprehension, there's no way to confirm...but from the look of his domain, it shows that his fusion is almost perfect." Luo Feng understood that he was in a predicament.

He had comprehended two origin laws and melded them together perfectly.

Like the Nan Shen Armament, which required two types of origin laws to be fused together. However, this was something Luo Feng was able to achieve only when he actually used Nan Shen Armament. As for himself, after all the gold origin laws were reliant on the Golden horned beast and the space origin laws were reliant on the Mosha clan clone, using them together was his earth

body.

Luo Feng's improvement was too quick indeed.

The resulting fusing efficiency was not able to keep up with the Golden horned beast and Mosha clan's speed.

"Let the battle being!" The green armored purple scaled man shot a look at the distant Long Yun in the arena and said.

The five battles began immediately!

"Go!" Standing on the dark cloud shuttle in mid air, Luo Feng pointed at Long Yun.

Immediately 9 golden energy flows shot out from the dark golden long rod on his back, immediately forming 9 golden blades, with the golden energy wrapped around it. The 9 golden rainbows were like 9 golden dragon heads, roaring as they rushed towards that wild fighter Long Yun solidly standing on the ground.

"9 golden rainbows, let's see how many you can block." Luo Feng looked on.

Chi Chi...

The yellow domain with a diameter of 50m seemed incredibly solid. The 9 golden rainbows' speeds dropped drastically the

moment they entered the domain, so much so that one could even see the difference in speed. It was almost as though piercing through the domain was incredibly difficult. when they reached about 50m away from Long Yun's body, their speeds had already dropped till only 1/3 of the original, their power were also reduced compared to before.

"Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang!"...

The golden rainbows clashed with his armor, Long Yun didn't even budge.

"This domain has already..." In mid air, Luo Feng's expression changed greatly.

"Earth's thickness and heaviness, space and domain best combination, these three are perfectly fused." The distant 1,008 undyings, that tall and huge bull man laughed loudly, "It seems like just from his domain's pressure alone, Long Yun ranks number 1 in the top 10."

"Bolan emphasizes more on speed, Long Yun emphasizes on defense, these two are completely different."

"This Luo Feng is unlucky. The last time he met the difficult Jia Lai Xi, and now the even stronger Long Yun. Haha..."

When the distant undyings were discussing Long Yun, he had already taken a big step and rushed towards Luo Feng.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The running Long Yun, every step made the entire arena rumble, almost as though an entire mountain was rushing forward, following which his body became a blur and flew into the air. Luo Feng immediately used the 9 threads and left 9 images in mid air, dodging far away.

Rumble! Long Yun landed on the ground.

“Long Yun, take my strongest move!” In mid air, Luo Feng roared, gritting his teeth, Sky piercing formation!!!”

Ang!

The 9 golden rainbows immediately stopped in mid air, they simultaneously swiftly flew together and fused. These 9 golden lights immediately became one body as large amounts of blurry golden threads weaved through each other. The golden light it formed also constantly shrank and the golden threads were constantly growing thinner.

Even though it seemed like it was shrinking!

In truth, every golden blade was formed from 9 little blades. This golden light fusion was actually made from 81 little golden blades together, and these 81 blades were small in form. The only thing was it was closing the distance between each of them. In the blink

of an eye, the 81 blades had fused perfectly, forming 1 single true golden blade.

This golden blade didn't seem like an illusion at all, it was solid.

At 1/3 of a meter long, it was completely formed by the 81 little golden blades melding together. As they continued to condense and tightly fuse, simultaneously countless golden threads weaved through it, causing this blade to be incomparably real and perfect. Examining it further, one couldn't even find a trace or mark of the parts, almost as though it had always been this 1/3 m long golden blade.

The golden engravings on its surface, caused the entire blade to emit an ancient aura.

Nan Shen Armament 2nd level…sky piercing formation!

"Xiu!"

The golden blade wrapped with the golden energy flow was almost like a comet, leaving behind a golden energy flow as it streaked towards Long Yun.

"Hm?" Long Yun's expression changed, the yellow domain he controlled shook the ground.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Like a needle piercing through layers of cloth, even after entering the yellow domain all the way, it still had 80% of its power!

“Roar!” Long Yun waved his terrifying huge axe, the area around the axe seemed to be pressurized, immediately hitting that golden blade.

“Rumble…”

The arena shook violently.

Long Yun took 3 heavy steps back, every step itself shaking the arena.

990 spectating geniuses, along with the 1,008 undyings were all surprised as they watched this scene.

“Surprise! What a surprise! This Luo Feng has not only reached the 2nd level of the 10,000 threads, his gold origin laws comprehension has improved greatly too! He can actually use the sky piercing formation.” A group of undyings were shocked. This time’s competition not only had the once in a trillion years exceptional genius Death god Bolan, simultaneously it had others that could definitely made it to number 1 in the other competitions.

Jia Lai Xi, Luo Feng, Gu Si Luo, Rong Jun, Long Yun, if they were in the earlier competitions, they definitely could get number 1.

Even if it wasn't number 1, they'd have made it to the top 3.

And this time, it was a gathering of the elite.

In terms of origin laws, Luo Feng was indeed much better at his gold laws than the space laws. One must know Luo Feng had began to feel the gold laws much earlier, and in terms of difficulty, space laws were much harder than the gold laws.

Ever since he began using the 9 threads.

Fusing the 9 threads along with his gold laws comprehension, Luo Feng could fuse the 9 blades into 1 to form the sky piercing formation. This was his big trump card, he had no rush to use it. When he was in the training space 6th tower before, he faced 10,000 blood hair mammoths.

Against 10,000, Luo Feng's blades weren't enough, naturally using the 9 made more sense!

Against Long Yun however, 1v1, the sky piercing formation was stronger!

"Very good!" Long Yun's eyes gleamed, immediately rushing forward with a stride.

"Hm? He managed to deflect the power? Only suffering light injuries!" Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, the power of the sky piercing formation was shocking, one could be said to be invincible

in the star level for being able to use the 1st dream blade formation. If that was the case, then using the sky piercing 2nd formation was even more invincible. This was comparable to even the golden horned beast in the same level, or even pressuring it. (It was mentioned before that the golden horned beast wasn't the crazy training types)!

This meant that only in these pinnacle genius competitions, will one even meet a match.

Rumble!

Long Yun rushed into the sky, the yellow energy flow following and covering that huge axe. Luo Feng however had long formed 9 images and dodged.

"Go!" Luo Feng dodged and roared.

Xiu!

The golden blade once again pierced towards Long Yun!

"Rumble!" It seemed like a simple straightforward pierce. However, it was infused with unimaginable strength, only slightly weakening in Long Yun's heavy domain. However, Long Yun still only stepped back and deflected the power.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!...

Time and again the golden blade pierced forward. Long Yun was like a tortoise blocking it over and over. He wanted to chase Luo Feng…however Luo Feng's speed on the dark cloud shuttle was too fast.

Within the 5 arenas, the matches ended one after another.

Bolan against Rong Jun, Bolan wins!

Qian Shui against Ao Pa Te La, Qian Shui wins!

Jiang Mo against Ai Chen, Ai Chen wins!

Lancelot against Wuka, Wuka wins!

Only one battle remained at this point. That was between Long Yun and Luo Feng. Long Yun was like a shelled warrior blocking the sky piercing formation time and again. Even though his body's injuries were still within his control, the golden blade's attacks had also affected his speed, making him unable to immediately explode and chase after Luo Feng!

The fighter's close range explosion in speed was very shocking, enough to close in and kill a controller.

It was a pity, the sky piercing formation stopped Long Yun, and he couldn't do anything against Luo Feng!

And Luo Feng had used even soul attacks, yet he couldn't do anything against Long Yun!

These two were at a stalemate!

Minutes and seconds passed and the arena space gradually shrank, the longest one of these pinnacle fights lasted was 10 minutes, the arena would continue to shrink till its diameter was but 1m. This was to stop a controller from constantly flying far away, a constant rule throughout.

"Damn!"

"Luo Feng's in trouble."

"As the arena continues to shrink more, there will be only 1km in diameter left, Luo Feng circling space will shrink too, it will be very disadvantageous to him."

When there was only 100m in diameter left, Luo Feng could only force a smile.

100m?

At star level 9, just one step could close that distance. The more important thing was that Long Yun's domain maintained the highest of pressures within an area of 50m. Considering that the

arena's diameter was only 100m now, his pressure almost covered the entire arena space! That meant, that no matter where Luo Feng flew to avoid him, he would still be in the domain.

In terms of domain pressures, no one was Long Yun's match Even Bolan would have been weaker.

"Peng! Peng! Peng!" In that little area, Long Yun's face flushed red. He was madly dancing with the huge axe, the domain pressure had completely stifled Luo Feng, persevering until the space had only a diameter of 50m left, Luo Feng finally fell.

.....

His loss seemed unfair, yet not unfair at all.

It was unfair because if the space hadn't shrunk, Long Yun would never have gotten the chance to close in and kill him.

It wasn't unfair because in terms of law comprehension and fusion and usage, his opponent was indeed stronger in every way!

The top 5 had been picked out, they were Bolan, Qian Shui, Ai Chen, Wuka and Long Yun. 3 men and 2 ladies.

"Very exciting, these 5's battles have indeed been exciting with many surprises." The green armored purple scaled man smiled and looked at the 1000 youths, "Everyone take a rest, in a second, these 5 will engage in a winner's round duel. The rules are...everyone of

the 5 will have to battle each of the other 4. Each victory will get 1 point, and the final points will determine the top 1 and 2."

.....

After a while.

Luo Feng lifted some tea and drank, Rong Jun sat beside him and both of them watched the distant battles in the arenas.

"What a pity." Rong Jun sighed, "You actually reached the sky piercing formation. You definitely had the power to make it to number 2."

"If one said that Long Yun was strong in defense, than you Ron Jun are strong in offense! If you hadn't met Bolan, you could have the chance to make it to number 2." Luo Feng laughed too.

These two exchanged glances and laughed.

These two were both strong willed and well planned people. Luo Feng insisted on his path of a controller while Rong Jun insisted on his own created techniques. Each road had trillions of pathways, the main thing was being committed to one's choice. Afterall any road could lead to becoming an absolute strong warrior. The only fear would be that in doubting oneself.

In this genius battle, the two of them were considered unlucky.

One of them met Bolan, while the other lost due to the shrinking of arena

It had ended.

The journey for both of them had ended here, as they were finally able to reach within the top 10.

“This Long Yun sure is strong.” Rong Jun exclaimed, as he looked at him defeat the Manka prince in the arena.

“His domain fusion is stronger than you, however his axe work, cannot compare to your blade work.” Luo Feng said, “Look, that Qian shui…is really powerful, she won.”

“She’s the only controller of the top 5. However, her attack strength obviously cannot compare to your sky piercing formation. If you were there, you could have easily defeated Qian Shui.” Rong Jun said.

While they chatted and watched the battles.

The matches passed by quickly. Soon, the final results were out.

Bolan, after four consecutive victories, he became the undisputed number 1!

Long Yun, with 3 wins 1 loss, became number 2! He lost against Bolan. Bolan's bladework was simply too fast and vicious.

……

Bolan gained the right to enter the primal secret area, and everybody accepted that.

As for Long Yun entering the primal secret area, that aroused many people's suspicion. After all, Jia Lai Xi, Luo Feng, Rong Jun were all comparable to him. However if any of these made it into the primal secret area, they too would have aroused the same suspicion

Similarly, without any clear exceptional lead, everybody wouldn't be convinced.

……

The 1,000 geniuses and 1,008 undyings stood in the plaza and listened to the purple armored purple scaled man speak.

"Number 1 and 2."

"Numbers 3 to 10."

"Numbers 11 to 100."

“Numbers 101 to 1000.”

“The 4 levels have been picked out. This times pinnacle genius competition of humans, has ended perfectly today.” The green armored purple scaled man smiled, “You all have been a very exceptional batch. I believe that in 10 to 100 eras, there will be many of you whose names alone will shake the entire universe.”

“Later there will be a specialist contacting you to take you to our Virtual Universe Company’s main headquarters. There, you will gather and later head to the primal universe.

“From today on, your paths will no longer be ordinary.”

“Our Virtual Universe Company will use our full strength to assist you. As for whether you become powerful beings who shake the entire universe, or normal warriors, or die mid way, it all depends on yourself. Work hard, your path to become strong has just begun!” The green robed purple scaled man’s voice resounded in everyone’s minds.

This genius competition had finally ended!

Volume 11: Yu Xiang Mountain

Chapter 1 – Distance

The genius battle had finally ended. Whether it was the mighty 9 Blade Knight or the 1,008 undyings, they all left immediately.

Luo Feng and the 1,000 youths still remained there as the worker beside them shouted, “Everybody please stay for awhile. We still have some matters to discuss with you all regarding us taking you to the Virtual Universe Company headquarters.

After a while.

Within restaurant number two in the plaza, Luo Feng and the 1,000 geniuses sat in the meeting room.

“Let me introduce myself, I am Mana.” At about 2.67m, wearing a smile with a streak on his neck, the man stood at the front of the meeting room, “As our Virtual Universe Company has to arrange for the universe ships to specially go receive you all, can everybody please fill up the paper in front of you with the correct planet address, and I will collect them.”

Luo Feng picked up the pen and began to write, “Ganwu universe country, Black Dragon Mountain starfield, Milky way galaxy, “Bai Lan star.”

The 1,000 youths from the many universe countries were writing.

“Do we even need this? Just tell us where to gather and we’ll take our own ships and head over, wouldn’t that do?”

“Right, there’s no need to pick us up, it’s troublesome.”

Among the group there were some shouting.

Mana smiled and said, “As the travel will pass many universe countries, it is very very far away, and the normal universe ships travel very slow within the dark universe. To actually reach our company’s headquarters, would require a very long time. To save everybody’s time, naturally, our Virtual Universe Company will specially arrange for the best universe ships to receive you!”

“This 1,000 here, the one that’s the furthest from our headquarters is 1.5 billion light years away.” Mana smiled, “And the ratio of distance between the dark universe compared to the real universe is 1:10081 thousand times. Even if one moved at light speed all the way, it would still require 150 years to reach.”

Silence!

The initially bustling meeting room went silent. Even Luo Feng who was seriously filling out the form couldn’t help but look up.

150 years?

“My god, 150 years?” A beast man who looked like a lion in the corner exclaimed as he was shocked. “The longest I’ve sat in a

universe ship and travelled was for only about two months, this 150 years…”

The universe was too huge.

Back then, just heading from earth to Horned dragon star, by utilizing that universe travel within the Black Dragon Mountain star field, required about half a month.

And that was only one starfield!

Above the starfield, was the bigger star sector, and every star sector was incredibly vast! That farthest away from the headquarters being 1.5 billion light years, wasn’t an exaggeration at all.

“If everybody took their own ships.”

“1st point would be that the speed is too slow, hence it would require too much time.”

“2nd point would be that due to long period of travel, the amount of energy wasted by the ship would be shocking.”

“3rd and also the most important point is that when you travel in the dark universe, there are some special spots which are not safe, you’ll meet universe pirates. Or even some other races that will rob you. To all here, safety is of utmost importance.” On the stage, Mana smiled, “Right now the best normal universe ships can at

most do a couple of times light speed in the dark universe. This means that the travel would still take far too long."

Luo Feng nodded.

By reaching light speed in the actual universe, according to the rules of calculation, one could immediately reach the dark universe. However, there was a base speed but no upper limit. As long as your ship was good enough, one could reach even faster, 1 time? 2 times? 3 times light speed?

If your universe ship was good enough, you could reach that speed in the dark universe.

A C grade Black Dragon Mountain ship could reach up to 1.5 times the light speed in the dark universe. Even with that speed, for a distance of 1.5 billion light years, one would still have to fly continuously for a 100 years.

"Du!"

"Collection complete." Beams of light landed on each person's paper, and a screen appeared at the front of the meeting room. On it was a large galaxy map, and beside it were complicated numbers and symbols. Mana took a look and turned back to the 1,000 geniuses, smiling, "Attention all, your written addresses have all been recorded in our file. According to your 1,000 different locations and our ship resources, we've already chosen the best route for each of you."

“How long will it take?”

“How long will it take for us to reach the virtual universe headquarters?” A few couldn’t help but ask.

Luo Feng creased his eyebrows too and stared at Mana on the stage.

150 years? 100 years? No matter what it was, it was still too long.

“As you all have different distances, the arranged ships will travel at different speeds too, I can still guarantee you that the maximum travel time will be 3 years.”

“3 years?”

“So short?”

“How is that possible? How fast can that universe ship reach for it to travel 1.5 billion light years in 3 years?” The 1000 geniuses including Luo Feng all mostly stared wide eyed. They were anything but naïve, even Luo Feng who had participated in 2 Ganwu auctions was shocked.

3 years of travelling in the dark universe, with a distance of 1.5 billion light years, that meant the ship could reach 50 times light speed!

This was simply an unbelievable number.

A C grade ship was normally a little above 1 time. Even an E grade ship was probably just a few times, like Luo Feng's acquired automaton ship, that level of technology was much more than a regular human's 3 grade ship. However that automaton ship could at most travel 10 times light speed in the dark universe.

"Our Virtual Universe Company will arrange an F grade ships for everybody." Mana smiled, "And these aren't the easily purchasable F grade ships. But rather...special F grade ships that are only manufactured in the Virtual Universe Company. The technology far exceeds that of regular F grade ships within universe countries."

Silence.

Stunned.

Shocked.

F grade ship, the Yun Mo Planet master Hu Yan Bo spent countless amounts of wealth to get one F grade ship. Many undyings couldn't even afford it. Just from those two facts, one could see how expensive and valuable an F grade ship was. Within the many star field empires, like the Black Dragon Mountain empire, there wasn't even one F grade ship in the entire empire.

Even though the universe countries normally had it, the majority

of the F grade ships couldn't even reach 50 times light speed in the dark universe.

"Incredible!" Sitting on Luo Feng's right was the Manka prince.

The Manka prince Wuka stared at Mana on the stage and said softly, "Really incredible. It actually, actually can send 1,000 F grade ships, and all of them with such technology. My imperial father had said before that the Virtual Universe Company's technology is like the sacred land for humanity's technology. But that's just simply too incredible."

Among the groups in humanity, the Virtual Universe Company's technology ranked first!

Even in the vast universe, within countless races, those who were actually be able to compete with the Virtual Universe Company's technology were far and few. Only races like the automaton race or other very few races had such level.

"Mr Mana, can we buy these F grade ships?" Someone shouted.

"Right, can we buy them?" The manka prince shouted.

"These are internal items of our Virtual Universe Company. As core members within our company, you all can definitely purchase them. However you can only use them for yourselves. You can't sell it to others...if you want to sell, you have to sell it back to our Virtual Universe Company." Mana smiled, "The only thing is that

these F grade ships are too expensive. Even among the undyings, many of them can't afford them. You all shouldn't be too anxious, train hard and when you become absolute warriors within our company, the company may just give you one altogether."

A group of the youths smiled immediately.

Absolute warriors Were given an F grade universe ship?

To actually be allocated one, just what level of strength did one have to reach. To these bunch of star level punks, that was indeed too far away.

"Awesome." Luo Feng couldn't help but mutter.

"Sigh, Madman." The manka prince Wuka beside turned over and said softly, "Don't listen to this guys boast so much. There's no such thing as a free meal in the universe. If you want to receive one, you'd definitely have to pay for it in one way or another, that's what my father said! However let me tell you, the Virtual Universe Company is definitely a sacred land for the human race, with countless treasures and techniques. It's a pity we didn't enter the primal secret area, but it's still ok. We've entered the Absolute beginning area, there are many perks there too. You'll know in the future."

"Ah?" Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

"Let me inform you all." Mana smiled, "The top 1,000 ranks, the

prize money for each is being sent now, please go check your bank accounts when you return."

"As for now, everyone can leave. When our Virtual Universe Company sends a special letter to you all later to inform you of the pickup time, please be present at the written addresses and be ready. Don't let us not be able to find you." Mana smiled, "So then, go back and accompany your family and friends. Very soon, you'll all be leaving your home for a long period of time."

The bustling meeting room became silent suddenly.

Right.

They'd have to leave their homes for a long time. Just heading to the headquarters alone took 3 years, and that was in the expensive F grade universe ship they sent. One had to say, facing the vast universe...just the travel alone took up a shocking amount of time.

Human silhouettes began to vanish from the meeting room, everyone left.

******

After leaving, Luo Feng's consciousness once again entered the virtual universe and entering at the set location of Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay district.

Hu!

He appeared in the grass patch, there was however no one at all there.

“They are all not around?” Luo Feng shook his head and laughed, “Right, I haven’t told them about the competition ending today.” The genius competition wasn’t broadcasted publicly. The footage was edited and cut after everything to produce the best and most exciting footage to broadcast. Afterall many battles happened simultaneously, and they happened very quickly.

“My wife should be at her company now.” Luo Feng sat in a chair in the grass patch. Her company headquarters seemed to have moved to the Ganwu continent, truly fierce.”

Xu Xin was originally very good at business. Opening a business on earth didn’t give her much accomplishment, hence she entered the virtual universe and opened it there. This virtual universe... was humanity’s largest market in the universe as it gathered 1,008 universe countries’ almost 100% of elites. Hence there were many companies in the virtual universe. With Luo Feng’s financial support, Xu Xin had enough capital and grew very quickly.

“Little Hai and Ping Ping should be at the Ganwu dojo, or playing virtual games.” Luo Feng muttered, “My parents should be playing virtual games too. Who knows how they came to like the chinese immortals kind of virtual games.”

The virtual universe had tens of thousands of different kind of games.

Types like the chinese immortals, even though the names may vary, but many were similar. His parents came to like them, his dad even shouted, “I’ve always thought of such a day when I was young, that I’d be able to experience virtual games like these, this is so thrilling.”

His parents were happy, naturally Luo Feng didn’t bother them.

“I need to go. I’m going to leave my home for a very long time.” Luo Feng’s feelings were complex. He could kind of understand Hong’s thoughts back then.

“Big brother! You are back?” Suddenly a voice resounded. From the balcony of a distant 3 storey villa, Luo Hua was looking over and shouted.

Chapter 2 – Farewell

His little brother was extremely excited, and he swiftly contacted everyone else. They all arrived shortly. Even Hong and Thunder god arrived.

“What, Little Feng, you are leaving for so long?” His mother Gong Xin Lan couldn’t help but exclaim. Because of the large amounts of treasures that helped alter and enhance them from the inside out, whether it was his mother or father, they both still looked very young, like they were in their 30s.

“That’s pretty long.” His father Luo Hong Guo couldn’t help but say too.

“The most important thing is.” His little brother Luo Hua said, “Just the travel alone will be 3 years, and returning will take another 3 years. And you have to stay at the headquarters for a long time. Just the primal universe participation will take 100 years! This, this is simply…”

Luo Feng sat there, feeling uncomfortable.

He had just received the e-mail from the Virtual Universe Company informing him that they would pick him up in 12 days time from Bailan star. Within the e-mail it spoke of the participation within the primal universe being 30 years. However the time flow in there was different compared to outside, as the time flowed slower within that space.

30 years in the primal universe would mean a 100 years in the actual universe.

The good news was that even though he was within the primal universe, he could still enter the virtual universe network.

“Hm?” Luo Feng felt his hand being squeezed. He turned to look at his wife Xu Xin beside him, who was still dressed in her office attire. She held his hands, and her eyes filled with reluctance.

“Alright, be good.” Luo Feng gently touched the back of her hand.

“Dad, mum, it’s actually not as serious as you think. Even though I’m leaving earth, I can still enter the virtual universe once in awhile.” He forced out a smile, “The virtual universe 100% simulation is no different from meeting in reality.”

“Even though it says 100%, however, daddy, it’s still not reality.” Luo Hai couldn’t help but say.

Luo Feng extended his hand and pulled his two sons over.

……

He couldn’t bear to leave them.

He really couldn’t bear to leave his whole family behind.

However Luo Hong Guo and Gong Xin Lan had both experienced the great Nirvana era. Luo Hua and the others too experienced the swallowing beast disaster etc...disasters that happened to earth time and again, along with their perceptions widening with more information from the universe, they understood that what he was doing was right.

"Third Brother, you are doing the right thing." In the grass patch in front of Luo Feng's house, Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god stood together.

"I see it clearly." Dressed in all black, Hong gazed far away, "Back during the great nirvana when I was young, I saw the many painful scenes of countless fellow people dying. I understood that someone from us had to stand out. We couldn't survive without anyone taking the lead! Hence I built the Dojo of Limits, built the competition structure and raised the strength of human fighters."

"However!"

"The universe is tens of thousands of times more dangerous than just earth." Hong exclaimed, "The competition will be even more intense. Just look, even though there are trillions of human races, some of the races have completely been enslaved."

Luo Feng nodded, Thunder god nodded too.

"Why have they been enslaved? It's because they didn't have any true absolute warrior from their race. Their race itself isn't strong enough!" Hong shook his head, "If their race had just one undying,

even if that undying wasn't within their area, but somewhere else in the universe, just one undying alone...would scare off the slave traders and intimidate others!"

"1 aboriginal race."

"If an aboriginal race enters the universe for the first time, there are usually three outcomes. 1 is to be stepped on and become subservient, which was still ok. The 2nd outcome is to immediately be enslaved, just like goods and sold around, the females will be sold as waitresses etc while the men will be sent to do dangerous level of work. The 3rd outcome...is to rise up and become a strong race within the universe of humans. Just like our earth now!"

"Earth people, they haven't been enslaved and haven't been stepped on!"

"Because of third brother!" Hong looked at Luo Feng, "You, you are the leader of the milky way galaxy! The leader of the milky way galaxy is a person from earth, and this leader has even entered the core of the Virtual Universe Company, along with a very high position within, which was the Absolute beginning secret area. Even the Black Dragon Mountain empire wouldn't dare mess around, even the Ganwu universe country has to respect you. With such influence, who'd dare bully or mess with the people of earth? Who'd dare?"

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

"Third brother, you've done well." Hong took a deep breath and

said, “For a human race to rise up, especially during its early stages means that someone had to stand out, someone had to lead and take that bold first step!”

“Third brother, Thunder god and I, we are still weak right now!”

“You are doing well right now because of the genius battle. However…genius doesn’t mean one is strong.” Hong emphasized, “People do not dare mess with you because of your position and reputation. However the moment you fall, with our little strength, how will we protect earth?”

Even universe level slaves could be bought in the market. Hong and Thunder god were only star level, how could they protect earth?

“Hence!”

“Third brother, we have to rely on you now to carry the burden.” Hong emphasized, “We both will work hard too. In 10,000 years, earth will have the three of us to protect it. By then, earth itself would have produced generations of strong warriors. Then its power will rise greatly and when it’s that strong, we wouldn’t have to rely on one person to intimidate others.”

When a race could produce universe levels one generation after another, occasionally producing a domain lord, no slave trader would dare mess with them anymore.

“Work hard!” Hong emphasized.

“Relax, Thirdie, we will chase up to you very quickly.” Thunder god laughed.

“We three will work hard together.” Luo Feng smiled too.

To earth, this was a very important era.

An era of great change.

Whether the people of earth would be placed in the middle levels amongst the countless human races, or be stepped on right at the bottom, doing the most tedious and dangerous works, getting the least amounts of pay or even nothing as slaves…it all depended on these 10,000 years! And Hong, Thunder god and Luo Feng, these three had long realized this.

They were earth’s strongest, if they didn’t take this burden, who else would?

Night.

Yangzhou city Westlake courtyard, the moonlight was mesmerizing as it was shining through the window into the bedroom.

Inside the bedroom, a thin blanket covered two bodies which

were wrapped tightly around each other, almost as though they were venting out all their reluctance madly. After some time...

Luo Feng wore his pajamas and walked onto the balcony, looking up at the sky and the moon.

This was the moon of his home!

Earth's moon!

And in the coming hundred years or so, he wouldn't be able to witness this scene.

"You are leaving tomorrow?" Similarly dressed in her pajamas, Xu Xin hugged Luo Feng from behind as she gently snuggled to his back.

"Yes."

Luo Feng gently nodded, "Sor...sorry."

"What are you sorry about, we are an old couple already." Xu Xin walked to his side, looking at the moonlight, she laughed, "Time passes so quickly. In the blink of an eye, we've been married for over 10 years."

"It is indeed fast." Luo Feng nodded.

They had been married for over 10 years. These 10 years, with the sea creatures invading the bases, with the swallowing beast disaster, with the Nuolan Shan family invading earth, with the world within the world fight for treasures, and the recent 5-6 years of the genius battle... his wife had quietly supported him from the shadows throughout these ordeals.

“I still remember back in high school.” Xu Xin smiled. “You were still a student at the dojo.”

“You were still a plain and simple lady back then.” Luo Feng laughed.

“The main thing was my grandfather made me attend a normal high school, not some expensive private school.” Xu Xin said, “And he also restricted me from revealing my family roots, or talk about love or anything. owever honestly, the reason our Xu family was able to rise up was indeed because of my grandfather. He’s a very knowledgeable man.”

Luo Feng nodded.

During the Great Nirvana, when the bases were first built, the Xu family initially didn’t have much background, but because of her grandfather’s hard work, they made it to this level. He was indeed an exceptional figure.

“Back then you used to secretly look at me from behind.” Xu Xin smiled.

“Haha.” Luo Feng laughed too.

“You were even caught many times. The moment you got caught, you’d get shy. Even I wasn’t like that.” Xu Xin couldn’t help but say.

……

The married couple spoke a lot during the night. They even left Yangzhou city and flew to many places on earth to look around.

They went to Egypt to see the pyramids, to the ancient Great wall, looking at the traces of the wilderness breaking into the city.

Finally they stood before the yellow river.

The water creatures were plenty within. Luo Feng stood by the shore and grabbed some soil from the ground and used a bowl to store some of the river water. He then kept it within his storage ring. Beside him, Xu Xin watched this quietly.

“Let’s go, we’ll go back.” Luo Feng gripped Xu Xin’s hand.

Sou!

His domain became a light net, becoming a golden shooting star and heading towards Yangzhou city.

……

2071 September 18th.

The pinnacle of the humans of earth, Luo Feng sat in the universe ship and left earth. This trip was going to be a very long one, and by the time he returned, the world would have changed drastically.

Bailan star.

“Master!” His slave guards said respectfully.

“Hm.”

Luo Feng turned to look at his two soul slaves. Both of them were universe level 9s. He said seriously, “Di Fan, Bai Kalo, this time I’m heading to the primal universe located within the Virtual Universe Company’s headquarters. I have no way to bring anyone along. Hence I have to leave both of you on earth.”

“Understood.”

Di Fan and Bai Kalo nodded.

“I’ve already passed all the techniques to you. If you do not understand anything, you can enter the virtual universe network and contact me.” Luo Feng said seriously, “I think, with your

talents...and the techniques I've given you, the next time I see you you'll both have entered the domain lord level."

The two slaves had extremely high talents. Only thing was that one was a slave before and the other one had a teacher that was Nuolan Shan. Without a proper teacher, you wouldn't get good techniques.

Many strong warriors in the universe lacked good teachers and techniques, as a good teacher's instructions could raise the efficiency of a strong warrior being produced by ten times.

"Hm?"

Luo Feng turned to the distance. An ancient translucent black long blade like simple ship descended from above.

"I have to go." Luo Feng turned and looked seriously at Di Fan and Bai Kalo, "When I'm not around, help me to protect my family. As for earth's safety...with the intimidation of the Virtual Universe Company, no one would dare come mess with earth."

"Yes, master."

Di Fan and Bai Kalo replied respectfully.

Following which Luo Feng flew directly towards that simple ship.

Chapter 3 – Yu Xiang Mountain

This was a long ship that was about 600m in length. Its width was also close to 100m. As a battle blade shaped universe ship, it's entire body was black. Facing this ship, it gave off a faint sense of ancient energy, almost as though it had existed in the flows of time for a very long period of time.

The cold winter wind blew and the snow fell heavily.

Amidst the snow, Luo Feng walked towards the ship.

Jade essence, this is a F grade ship made of jade essence." Within his consciousness Babatas shocked voice resounded.

"I know it's F grade." Luo Feng replied. As he looked ahead, a group of people flew out of the ship's cabin door, leading them was one similar in appearance to that of earth's humans. He was dressed in dark armor. The skinny old man with a roman nose had intrepid short hair. As he smiled, one could even see an ice mark on his forehead.

That energy feeling that dominated the sky and land. This made Luo Feng understand that this was a sector lord that had gained the recognition of the universe origin laws.

"Shawu greets your majesty!" The skinny old man bowed slightly.

“Greetings to your majesty!”

Behind him were a group of domain lords and universe levels that were incomparably respectful to Luo Feng and bowing.

“Your majesty?” Luo Feng was taken aback.

“It looks like your majesty is still oblivious to many things.” The skinny old man laughed, “Your majesty, we’ll first enter the ship. The entire trip to the Virtual Universe Company takes three full years, we cannot waste any time.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

Under the protection of this group, he entered the F grade ship. The interior of this ship was enormous, the entire space for the defense mechanism of this ship was the main cabin itself. There were even cabins laid out throughout the lower decks. At this time, Luo Feng flew into a 300m long and 60m wide luxurious hall.

Comfortable sofa, enticing wine, precious fruits, all were already laid out. At the back were even beautiful waitresses awaiting his command.

“Your majesty, please sit.” The skinny old man smiled.

Luo Feng sat down facing the skinny old man.

“This place is not bad.” Luo Feng looked around and nodded, “This F grade universe ship with its entire body made of Jade essence is definitely a treasure!”

“Your majesty has good taste.” The old man’s smile got even wider, “This is the F6 grade Jade essence. The sides of the ships are extremely sharp and even infused with origin laws, incredibly piercing. Once it accelerates, it can immediately pierce right through a planet. Also, going through planets doesn’t even affect its speed much.”

Luo Feng nodded.

This was similar to the Yun Mo Planet ship. When one compared the the materials it was constructed from, the Yun Mo Planet ship was actually still a little stronger.

“Mr Shawu, what’s this about you calling me your majesty?” Luo Feng asked curiously.

“Looks like your majesty has many points to uncover.” The skinny old man smiled, “Let me first introduce myself. I, Shawu, am a sector lord from the Virtual Universe Company’s last phase secret area.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Last Phase secret area?

There were four large secret areas. Their names were actually very easy to understand. Take a world's change and evolution for instance, it would first begin in the Primal phase, and later slowly begin to reach the Absolute beginning, and finally expanding and forming the skies and land. Hence heaven and land and right before it dies, it reaches the Last Phase.

Primal, Absolute beginning, Heaven and land, Last Phase, it was simply the process of evolution of a world.

"Our Virtual Universe Company's core members are very few." The skinny old man smiled. "Absorbing these core members usually has three ways of doing so. One is from the genius battles, picking the strongest from the universe's most elite. Another is the company's internal nurturing of their own elites and the last is a small number of sector lords being selected and absorbed."

"Small number of sector lords?" Luo Feng was shocked.

Sector lords, even they didn't have the worth to become core members.

"Hm." The skinny old man nodded, "As normal sector lords usually have no chance of breaking through to the undying, or some not even gaining the recognition of the origin laws. How could the company respect or even absorb them? After all, there are simply too many sector lords in the company.

Luo Feng couldn't help but nod.

Right, the Ganwu universe country alone had millions of sector lords. Then compared to one of the 5 great leviathans the Virtual Universe Company? A hundred times of a universe country? Or even more?

“The true elites and warriors, only they can become core members.” The skinny old man smiled. “As for the term your majesty…In the four secret areas within, the Last Phase secret area belongs to the most outer layer. The members in this area, as long as they meet any other members from the other three secret areas, even if their ranks are lower than undying, we have to call you all your majesties!”

“And your majesty has entered the Absolute beginning secret area. Hence, your rank is much higher.” The skinny old man smiled, “Also, those normal helpers who are not in the core, if they meet any members under undying, they also have to call them your majesties.”

“Ah.” Luo Feng nodded.

Your Majesty?

In the universe, these were normally emperors or kings that received such titles. Obviously the Virtual Universe Company core members that were below undying level were comparable to emperors and kings, given the hope of becoming the next ultimate warriors. In terms of position, they were much higher than those universe country princes. Those princes almost had no hopes of ever succeeding the throne!

“Your majesty, let’s enter the virtual universe together.” The skinny old man smiled, “I’ll take you to the Virtual Universe Company headquarters.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

The universe ship had long began its universe transfer through the dark universe. It’s speed was rising continuously, until it reached 20 times light speed and later maintaining this speed as it progressed.

Luo Feng first entered the ship’s most luxurious resting room, and later his consciousness entered the virtual universe network.

……

Right now Luo Feng had the status of a core member. Hence his virtual assistant Babata automatically gained a feature. The moment he entered the virtual universe, he could immediately be transferred to a special location.

“Teleport!”

Hu!

Luo Feng vanished from the Black Dragon Mountain island 9 star bay.

……

Virtual universe headquarters.

It was a mountain peak covered in clouds and mist and was incredibly huge, even more so than a planet in real life. A person suddenly appeared within one of its stone paths, it was Luo Feng.

“Hm?” Luo Feng glanced around.

There were many people in the distance and also on this path. There were also many constructs all around him and on his left there were many beautiful villas.

“Your Majesty. A silhouette ran over from afar, it was Shawu.

“Mr Shawu.” Luo Feng smiled and shouted.

“Your Majesty.” The skinny old man smiled, “This entire space is our Virtual Universe Company’s virtual headquarters. Actually, compared to the real headquarters, the virtual headquarters is more bustling. As there are many huge figures here who can’t always stay within the real headquarters.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Come.”

The skinny old many brought Luo Feng about to sightsee, “This is a mountain peak that floats and it is named Yu Xiang mountain. Its diameter alone is about 89,000 km.”

“That big!” Luo Feng was shocked.

The earth’s diameter was only about 10,000km, and this mountain peak alone was 7 times that of earth.

“Of course it has to be big. Otherwise, there wouldn’t be enough space for the training spaces.” The skinny old man laughed, “The entire Yu Xiang Mountain is separated into 5 regions. Each for the Primal, the Absolute beginning, Heaven and land and Last Phase regions along with the Public region. These 5 regions are about the same size.”

“Of which, the Primal region has less than 120 people.”

“The Absolute beginning region has about 1,000 people.”

“The Heaven and land region has about 10,000 people.”

“And the Last Phase region has over 10 million people.” The skinny old man said, “As for the public region, they are filled with shops and entertainment etc. Any one from the other 4 regions can enter there. Right...your majesty, the Primal region, Absolute beginning region, Heaven and land region, and Last phase region, none of the members can enter regions other than their own.

Luo Feng nodded, curious, “You said that the area of each region is about the same, the Primal region has less than 120 people, yet the Last Phase region has over 10 million?”

“This is ranking.”

The skinny old man exclaimed, “The internal department of the company picks out the elites to enter the core, these all enter the Last phase. A few exceptional sector lords that get absorbed in also enter the Last phase! The genius battles and warrior competitions mostly enter the Last phase too...hence this results in the last phase having the most people. The living quarters of the last phase are skyscrapers, and everyone gets an apartment.”

“Within the Heaven and land region, everyone gets their own villa.”

“Within the Absolute beginning region, everyone gets their own training space, their own learning grounds etc, these are considered very luxurious.”

“The Primal region however, with less than 120 people, they get villas and mansions with territories of diameters over 10,00km. Within them they have training facilities and they even have specially placed undying teachers stationed long term there. They also have large amounts of helpers and staff to be called over at anytime to help in training etc.” The skinny old man’s eyes were filled with envy.

Luo Feng was stunned.

The difference in treatment was too huge. The last phase stayed in skyscrapers, the Heaven and land got villas, the Absolute beginning got villas and training areas, the Primal region however...my god, building a huge villa with a diameter over 1,000km. What kind of villa was this? It was bigger than any base on earth during the Great Nirvana! It was simply an empire! And they even have undyings specially stationed there?

“The primal area has less than 120 people. The number of sector lords there doesn’t exceed 100. Every sector lord who are present there, in the universe they would be considered to be at the pinnacle and invincible.” The skinny old man smiled, “They are all the true elites of the country, getting this kind of treatment wasn’t strange at all.”

Under Shawu’s instructions, Luo Feng got a good understanding of the entire Yu Xiang Mountain. This was where the core members under the undying level of the Virtual Universe Company gathered...

.....

Standing on a precipitous mountain stone, the skinny old many pointed to the distant clouds where an incredibly huge island floated. It was surrounded by lightning snakes. “See, that’s Lightning island, also named Undying island. It’s a hundred to a thousand times bigger than Yu Xiang mountain. All the undyings from the Virtual Universe Company normally live there. If one said that Yu Xiang mountain was were the geniuses and core

members under undying level gathered, then Lightning island was were the truly strong gathered. It was the undying gathering area."

"Hm." Luo Feng looked at the Lightning island amidst the clouds, nodding.

That place was named as one of the sacred lands of the all the universe humans.

"Your majesty, I'll send you to the Absolute beginning region, of course I can only send you to the entrance." The skinny old man smiled, "Even though the benefits of the Absolute beginning region are slightly lousier than the Primal region, however it is still the second best. The living quarters you've been assigned to, once you see it you'll understand why countless people are vying hard to get in. And the absolute beginning rank is assigned only to a little more than a 1,000. On average, one for every universe country."

Absolute beginning region, let's go!" Luo Feng couldn't wait anymore.

Chapter 4 – This is a Treasure Trove!

Yu Xiang Mountain, it was where they gathered the core members under undying level.

Lightning island was where all the undyings of the Virtual Universe Company gathered. It was the gathering point of the those with highest authority.

Walking in the public region, he would see sector lords everywhere, easily spotting up to 100 of them. And 99% of them were recognized by their law origins, with marks on their foreheads.

“Sector lords that gain the recognition of their origin laws, in the Black Dragon Mountain star field, they would be at the level of Jiang Tian Chen.” Luo Feng exclaimed, “However in the Virtual Universe Company, even though they were such a great leviathan, they only barely received the right to enter the Last phase secret area. There were probably over a hundred million sector lords that can’t even enter the core!”

No wonder during the genius battle, even for the top 1,000, one of the three great prizes was to become a core member.

After a while, they reached a spacious quiet limestone road. The sides of the path were covered with flowers. Through the flowers’ organization and arrangement, one could make out the words in universe language, “Absolute beginning region.”

“Di!”

The skinny old man’s body glimmered slightly and he couldn’t proceed further. He had to shout out, “Your majesty, I’m no longer able to proceed any further. Follow this path and the region ahead is the Absolute beginning region. There’ll be managers there to lead you within.”

“Thank you Mr Wusha.” Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

Following the beautiful and quiet limestone path, smelling the fragrance of the flowers and plants beside, his footsteps got quicker as he moved. After half a minute of walking and about 10km of distance, he reached an incredibly luxurious entrance to the Absolute beginning region. There were many staff around. Seeing Luo Feng approach, one leader stepped forward to invite him over.

“Your Majesty Luo Feng, we’ve been awaiting your arrival.” A beautiful lady with a fox tail was very passionate. There was a fire mark on her forehead, “You can just call me Fox, I am the manager placed specially for the affairs of the Absolute beginning region.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

Actually as this was the virtual universe, things like cleanliness or sweeping, maintenance of the plants and flowers, these could all be easily simulated immediately. However...maybe for the realism effect, these were all 100% simulated, even arranging for a large amount of staff to specially sweep and maintain the gardens, and

even service the members.

When one was hungry, he'd have to buy something to eat. When one was thirsty he'd have to buy something to drink, one had to spend money even within his own house even in the virtual universe. Everything that happened here was truly like it would happen in the real world.

As it was too realistic, in the vast universe, many people who were rich and always protected by their ancestors from the beginning, without facing any dangers in their lives, would spend most of their lives in the virtual universe or play virtual games, doing whatever they pleased. Many of them had already treated the virtual universe as their reality.

However!

This type of illusory lives, only few people could actually enjoy it. Afterall, doing anything in the virtual universe still required money. Even maintaining contacts had its usage fees, without funds from their ancestors, one was unable to live such a life.

"Your Majesty Luo Feng, please follow me." The sector lord Fox smiled and led the way.

Hu! Hu!

The two of them flew up into the sky. As one of the five regions, its area was huge. Afterall, even though it was 1/5 of the entire Yu

Xiang Mountain, it was still bigger than the entire surface area of earth! And this whole area was given to only a little more than a thousand people to live in.

"The Absolute beginning region, has a total of 1,138 members." Flying in mid air, Lady Fox pointed below. Within this region there are many training spaces, Libraries, restaurants etc. As for the living quarters, they are all right at the back. The 1,138 villas, every one of them with a length of 98km and width of 81km."

Luo Feng was shocked when he heard this."

98km long and 81km wide, such a huge villa was simply too extravagant. This was the treatment for the people of Absolute beginning, and the lowest last phase region had to live in apartments. The highest level primal region had areas of diameters over 1,000km.

"Your majesty Luo Feng's villa is number 1136." Lady Fox pointed at a distant incredibly quiet villa. It obviously looked very ancient, and on its walls were many different kinds of plants.

Sou! Sou!

The two descended.

"Your majesty!" The large door of the villa was 100m high. Two 6m tall bull giants bowed respectfully.

“Your majesty Luo Feng.” Lady fox smiled, “As a member of the Absolute beginning secret area, your guards form a large team. This team comprises of a general, 10 captains and 100 soldiers. Of which, the general is a sector lord of the Last phase secret area, the 10 captains are domain lords and the 100 soldiers are universe level. In the virtual universe, they’ll be stationed here by your majesty. In reality, they will similarly protect your majesty and listen to your command.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded, feeling shocked within.

Even though he had heard from Rong Jun earlier, however actually seeing it was pretty shocking.

Two domain lords, guarded the doors.

One guard team, the leader of the group was a sector lord recognized by the origin laws!

However, according to the news he acquired before...the guard team of the Absolute beginning member paled in comparison to the Primal members. Their guard team was led by an undying!

“Other than the guard team, there are 100 helpers and staff standing by within the villa to assist you.” Lady fox smiled and said.

At this time a gust of wind blew over as a group of people suddenly appeared at the entrance. Leading the group was a bald

old man who looked very similar to the people of earth. This bald old man looked at Luo Feng and bowed, “Your Majesty.” The large group of people behind too all bowed respectfully, shouting out simultaneously, “Greetings Your Majesty!”

“This is the leader of the guard team. His full name is Ao Duo Li Ke Wen Sheng Lai Suo.” Lady fox smiled and said.

“Your majesty can simply call me Ao Duo.” The bald old man said.

“Mr Ao Duo, I’ll be in your care from now on.” Luo Feng was respectful.

“Of course.” Ao Duo Li Ke said. Internally he wasn’t fully comfortable though. From the Virtual Universe Company’s arrangement and status ranking, he was indeed lower than Luo Feng, but he was afterall a sector lord recognized by the origin laws. His majesty before him was a genius no doubt, but still not a strong warrior. He may even fall before he reached the sector lord level.

Lady fox said, “Your majesty Luo Feng, then I’ll take my leave. Everything within here, Ao Duo knows well, he’ll inform you if you need.”

“Thank you Lady Fox.” Luo Feng nodded.

Lady Fox immediately became a beam of light a vanished into the

distance.

“Your Majesty, please.” Ao Duo Li Ke led the way and Luo Feng entered his own villa.

……

Within the villa, with a glance, he was able to see that everything was filled with greenery and looked very natural.

“Over there is your majesty’s training grounds.” Ao Duo pointed at the distant large construct that was sealed. “The entire grounds is 50km long and 30km wide. The height is 300m, and the interiors are all incredibly solid.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded satisfied.

His speed on the dark cloud shuttle was shocking, if the space was too small, he wouldn’t be able to unleash it all. 50km long and 30km wide and 300 tall, that was not bad for a controller, he could get by! Of course such a huge space for a fighter would be too much. What if he wanted a bigger place?

He’d have to get into the Primal secret area. Primal secret area members even had undying teachers stationed there specially for them.

“That’s the swimming pond.” Ao Duo pointed at a large pool at the other side, “The pool is separated into the internal pool and

external pool. The internal pool is infused with special qualities. Lying in it can help a tired body recover quickly, and it is further separated into 6 regions according to the temperature of the water. Actually this actually simulates reality...in the actual Absolute beginning secret area, your majesty's living quarters is even better than here."

"Ah?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, shaking his head, "Unfortunately, it will still take a while to get there."

His trip in the universe this time was three years long. After three years he'd enter the Primal universe and only after exiting from there would he be able to enter the Absolute beginning secret area.

.....

Ao Duo continued to introduce the facilities of the constructs. He pointed to the distant quiet three storey building, "Your majesty, there's where you'll spend your regular life. Whatever you want in there, you can arrange for virtual helpers to make it happen according to your likes and hobbies."

Within the villa, this construct's 1st level was for welcoming guests. The 2nd level was for fun and the 3rd was a bedroom with a huge screen and other things within. He started changing the system to what he was accustomed to on earth, a laptop like computer, along with some news and the entertainment broadcasts he changed to somewhat like a television. Even the book racks on the side he translated all to mandarin. He also immediately altered a few chairs and bed structures.

“That’s about right.” Luo Feng smiled and sat in the chair.

After which he opened his laptop and opened a Treasure Trove mail.

Di!

Opening it, the screen immediately displayed eight categories. The secret laws, secret weapons, unique treasures, technology weapons, materials, tools, living things and other special types. Every one of these categories had many little subdivisions, like under the living things floated plant life, metal lives, beasts etc, and under techniques were different types...

Tens of millions of categories to open.

“Luo Feng, open the treasure category from the trove.” The fist sized little demon Babata shouted out.

“Hm.” Luo Feng gently tapped.

Immediately a huge blur of countless words appeared along with pictures.

“10k spirit purple blood juice, 120k points for one portion (Primal area 70% of the price, Absolute beginning 80%, Heaven and land 90%, Last phase full price)”

“7 color fruit 100k for 1 portion (Primal area 70% of the price, Absolute beginning 80%, Heaven and land 90%, Last phase full price)”

“Ke Li Crystal 200k for 1 portion (Primal area 70% of the price, Absolute beginning 80%, Heaven and land 90%, Last phase full price)”

……

“My god, my god, it’s… it’s too extravagant, it’s simply bullying people. Even when your teacher wanted to buy them, they limited his portions. Every time he went for the auctions to buy them, they’d be astronomical prices. And they have everything here, requiring only points to exchange for, what bullshit is this points?” Babata shouted, “Open, open the techniques category, soul techniques!”

Luo Feng opened again.

Looking at <7 Starlight>…<Eternity>…<Void pagoda>…<Di Er Si’s secret works> looking at all these extremely well reputed techniques in the universe, it was almost as though everything had simply appeared with just one look, and this was only the 1st page.

“Madness, madness.”

“Outside, the undyings are all fighting extremely hard just for a

small treasure. Yet, this Virtual Universe Company actually uses some bullshit point system to exchange for them? Points, points, this is completely their internal system, not like cash outside.” The demon Babata was completely agitated.

“Open.”

“Open it for me.” Babata stared and roared.

Luo Feng obediently opened file after file. The numbers were extraordinary, anything one could imagine could be found there. the Virtual Universe Company’s treasure trove list had completely shocked Babata. He already knew the Virtual Universe Company was terrifyingly strong. The master of the Yun Mo Planet who was leading that solitude life as an undying, couldn’t compare to even a strand of hair of this. However looking at these, Babata was still utterly shocked.

Chapter 5 – Choice

Even though Luo Feng was shocked after seeing the treasure trove, it was still within his threshold. One of the reasons was because the inherited memories of the golden horned beast were filled with many techniques as well. Naturally those were suited only for golden horned beasts. The second reason was that because of the names of many treasures, Luo Feng didn't even know what they represented.

Babata was different!

He had followed the Yun Mo Planet master Hu Yan Bo battling over countless galaxies and experiencing life and death situations countless times, having seen too many strong warriors killing each other. He was very clear in regards to the meanings of those names and what they represented.

One of these techniques was enough to make even the Black Dragon Mountain Empire crumble.

One of these treasures was enough to make up to 10,000 undyings crazy.

……

Babata was able to see the meanings behind those names, hence he was completely stunned and agitated at the same time.

“Madness, this is too crazy.” The little demon looked at the screen on the laptop. His eyes gleaming with even tears, saying softly, “Big boss, you, if you were willing to lower your head and follow that man back then, even though you would have been only in the outer layers of the Virtual Universe Company, when you became an undying, you’d naturally enter the core, the core of the Virtual Universe Company. How could you have ended up like that then?”

Luo Feng turned to look at the little demon on his shoulder.

“No problem.”

The little demon shook his head, “I’m only exclaiming about your teacher. There’s a saying on earth that goes like this, a stupid bird flies first, however if a smart bird took that first leap and continued to fly, no matter how hard a stupid bird tries, it would never catch up. One theory is that If one starts ahead and continues to lead, naturally he would stand at the pinnacle!”

“Your starting line far exceeds your teacher already.” The little demon exclaimed.

“I’m only a star level. Teacher was even able to create techniques like Soul Imprint, I’m still far behind.” Luo Feng said.

“Right, this kind of mentality is right. Don’t ever get cocky, no matter how impressive the genius battle was, it was only at the star level. This path to be strong has just begun!” The little demon shook his head, “What you must do now is to grab these valuable

resources, strengthen yourself, and even more so! Let yourself ditch the others far behind!”

Luo Feng nodded.

Suddenly, the screen’s mail slightly shook, displaying a newly received mail.

Opening the mail.

A mail was received.

“Luo Feng: Congratulations on becoming an Absolute beginning member. The Virtual Universe Company’s training plan for the young generation begins from the universe level. Hence, the first thing you need to do is become universe level. You don’t have to worry about this though. By the time you complete your training in the primal universe, I believe you’d definitely have already broken through.

You’ve been awarded 10,000 points. You can use these points to purchase any item within the treasure trove. As long as you have enough points, you can buy anything.

I suggest that you purchase the techniques you require. This three year journey, utilizing this time frame to train would be the best choice.

Also!

I advise you to not waste any time on training your body and spirit energy.

From the star level 1 to 9, these levels are based more on quantity. However from the star level to the universe level, that's an evolution of life itself.

From the universe level 1 to 9, domain lord 1 to 9, sector lord 1 to 9, these are all simply quantity and time based!

Star traveller, star level, universe level, domain lord level, sector lord, level breakthroughs, these are all evolutions of life. They belong to one's essence actually breaking through.

The company will spend money on every one of you, giving each core member an invaluable way to strengthen their bodies and to raise their genetic and spirit energy. This will help one to grow from level 1 to 9 in a short time, allowing one's body to reach saturation quickly. As for the life evolution itself and breakthrough, that requires each member to work hard to breakthrough themselves.

The company will not let the core members waste time on building just strength itself. For all core members, their time should be used to strengthen their battle ability, to comprehend the origin laws and to learn techniques!

Virtual Universe Company"

This mail wasn't considered long, but Luo Feng and Babata were both stunned for quite awhile after.

"What?"

"From level 1 to 9, the company will provide the body strengthening?" Luo Feng was in disbelief.

"The sayings, the sayings were all true?" Babata was stunned too.

A strong warrior had to seriously train to absorb energy, this was common knowledge in the universe. However there were countless treasures in the universe, like the life fruit that was able to make a cloud contact vine breakthrough to universe level 2 immediately. Humans couldn't withstand such powerful treasures, however to the greatest leviathan of the human universe, the Virtual Universe Company, they were able to supply such items to the core members to strengthen themselves.

The moment you broke through to the universe level 1, the company will help you strengthen you to level 9!

The moment you break through to sector lord level 1, the company will help you to reach level 9!

One didn't have to waste time quietly sitting and absorbing universe energy, there was no need to!

“Wealthy indeed, wealthy.” Babata shook his head, Your teacher’s nest the Yun Mo Planet, is only reserved for the most important disciples. Even then he wouldn’t use it like that. Sector lords level 1 to 9, how much energy does that even require, how many treasures, your teacher’s entire fortune wouldn’t even be enough. No wonder…no wonder the Virtual Universe Company has such strict regulations on its number of core members.”

“Your majesty!”

“Your majesty!” A voice resounded from outside.

“Ao Duo.” Luo Feng walked onto the balcony, looking at the entrance of the 3 storey building, “Something the matter?”

“There are majesties Rong Jun and Wuka outside here to visit.” Ao Duo Li Ke said respectfully.

“Rong Jun, Wuka?” Luo Feng’e eyes gleamed, “I’m coming.”

After a while.

Luo Feng invited Rong Jun and Wuka back into his living room.

“Rong Jun and I were just at the library. Upon hearing that you’ve come, we rushed over to take a look.” The Manka prince Wuka sat on the Sofa, laughing loudly, “This virtual universe is really not bad. The treatment of this Absolute beginning members is even better than the treatment on Manka planet.”

Luo Feng and Rong Jun exchanged glances.

“Vicious.” Luo Feng said, “I got stunned just from looking at the mail.”

“Shock from just the mail? What’s there to be shocked about, you are talking about the Pool of Life?” Wuka said nonchalantly, “On Manka planet, the younger generation are all treated this way. As long as they reach universe level 1, they’ll immediately go bathe in the pool of life and raise to universe level 9. This amount of training...training so much is simply a waste of time. In the universe, it’s not just our Manka planet, there’s also the Huang Shen clan, the Dream shell clan, the Muzu planet...even the 1008 universe countries’ secret areas, the top 10 to 100 geniuses would get such treatment!”

Luo Feng and Rong Jun were both speechless.

He was the prince of Manka, his sights and vision was different.

Luo Feng and Rong Jun were already considered not bad in terms of sights, however even an undying didn’t have such resources to nurture his disciple this way. Only the Ganwu secret area of the Manka planet, this level of super power, their core could get such treatment. And only the top 10 to 100 had such treatment.

Yet, in the Virtual Universe Company, they nurtured up to tens of millions this way!

They were wealthy indeed!

“These are all the external things.” Wuka shook his head, “The Virtual Universe Company can give only so many benefits such as the best environment. As for whether one is actually able to make any achievement, that will still rely on himself!”

“The universe is extremely mysterious, with tens of millions of miracles and sights.”

“However every ten million years, how many absolute warriors can actually stand out?” Wuka exclaimed, “Don’t bother looking, even though there are up to 10 million people on Yu Xiang mountain, with countless sector lords, all with shockingly good conditions. However after ten million years, 99.9% of them would have fallen, while the remaining became undyings! Yet even then most of them are just normal undyings.”

“If you want to become an absolute warrior even amongst the undying!” Wuka shook his head, “Out of a batch in ten million years, trillion years, with so many geniuses being nurtured, and so many falling along the way. As long as they can produce a few absolute beings, that would be considered a success!”

“Our batch of 1,000, according to the records of history, in ten million years, there won’t even be 10 of us left.” Wuka said.

……

The 3 chatted for a long time, feeling the pressure.

Normal people would be satisfied after reaching the universe level. For some geniuses, the moment they reached sector lord and owned one galaxy, that was enough. However...with different foresight, their aims would naturally be different. Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka, they all had extremely far reaching visions.

Luo Feng had the golden horned beast and Mosha clan, the two great races of the galaxy. He could reach the sector lord even in his sleep. Even if he became an undying, he wanted to become a pinnacle warrior amongst the undying. He even wanted to reach the level of the country leader of the Ganwu universe country, opening a new universe country and dominating for a trillion years.

Rong Jun, his talents were no lesser than Luo Feng's. His enemy was even more terrifying, becoming a normal undying couldn't satisfy him at all.

Wuka, a rare absolute genius from the Manka planet, his father was one of the universe's ultimate warriors. With his father as his target, he similarly had his sights set very high.

.....

However facts were facts. According to history's probability, out of these 1,000, less than 10 would become undyings!

Even the golden horned beast, with so many generations being stuck in the sector lord level, they were unable to break through. The path to undying was indeed tough. Luo Feng's path had only just begun!

Luo Feng sat before the laptop and chose the technique trove.

"The golden horned beast's inherited memories have countless techniques, I don't need to buy anything."

"The Mosha clan doesn't have any inherited memories, however with its high talents...it's battle abilities are all based on its natural talents. It doesn't have any effective battle techniques." Luo Feng opened a large amount of fighter close combat weapons, "Weapon choice..."

"Level 5 genetic energy weapon Gold shadow blade. It requires 12 points. You can customize your own design, hm, according to the shadow blood blade design."

"Shield, I'll choose a level 5 Absolute Void shield. It only requires 8 points, I'll set the design to the 6 edged shield design."

Gold shadow blade, Absolute void shield, these were all for the Mosha clan to use.

"Battle techniques." Luo Feng opened the techniques and swiftly found the most suitable one. With Babata's help, he was able to

make a quick decision.

Absolute space fits the golden horned beast, 9 threads fits a controller's flight, what about a fighter?

"The techniques are that expensive?" Luo Feng was shocked.

The gold shadow blade was only 12 points. However the techniques before him, the cheaper ones were tens of points, many of them were worth hundreds of points and even thousands, the highest reaching even a million, tens of millions, it was exorbitant.

"The techniques are all something the absolute warriors treasure and never spread. It's their life's work and blood! Your teacher's soul imprint, even though it is special and powerful, but according to my estimate, it's only worth about 10,000 points." Babata said.

Chapter 6 – 3 Years Later

The points given out by the Virtual Universe Company were very precious. As a new member of the Absolute beginning secret area, he was given 10,000 points, of course he had to treasure them. Even though there were many techniques on the list that were enough to make undyings go crazy, however their prices were exorbitant too, as some of items were millions of points, or even tens of millions.

Luo Feng could only drool as he looked.

“Not good, I’ll choose this.”

“Luo Feng, as they say, one’s feet should be firmly planted on the ground, save your points.”

“That’s really expensive!”

“I bought it.”

Luo Feng was discussing and debating with Babata while calculating his 10,000 points, he ended up spending close to half an hour before he finished his final exchanges.

……

Golden horned beast, he used 0 points.

The Mosha clan, he spent 9820 points on it, buying a complete set of techniques and weapons for it.

One was the close combat technique <Illusionary Body> worth at 3200 points, and the more basic shield techniques <Illusionary shield> worth 800 points and buying a not bad blade technique <Illusionary 7 blades> worth 5800 points, the gold shadow blade was worth 12 points and the absolute void shield was 8 points. Movement, shield work, blade work, these formed a complete set and were extremely powerful in both movement and technique.

Luo Feng himself, he used 180 points, buying the golden shadow blade and absolute shield cost 20 points, buying 2 life fruits cost 100 points and he also bought 30 swelling water fruit at 60 points.

10,000 points, he used it all!

The universe ship travelled through the dark universe at 20 times light speed, continuously progressing.

Within the ship.

Luo Feng grabbed onto a wine bottle and glass, walking straight into the resting room beside the bedroom, opening the screen and looking at the news program.

On it displayed the genius battle that had ended not too long ago.

“My points were used up so quickly.”

Luo Feng poured himself a cup of fruit wine before lying on the comfortable sofa, “Especially the techniques, I spent almost all of my points on just one complete set. Hopefully they don’t disappoint me, otherwise I’d definitely feel the pinch.”

“Luo Feng, these Illusionary body, Illusionary shield and Illusionary 7 blades form one complete Illusionary technique set, they definitely won’t let you down.” Babata said, “Even though they are more basic techniques, afterall you are only a star level punk. At least before you become undying, these will be enough.”

Luo Feng nodded.

He understood too that some techniques weren’t too deep and difficult, however undyings would still fight hard to study them.

If he got something heavenly but couldn’t grasp even the basic understanding, what was the point? Buying something like this that was cheaper but being able to help him grasp the strong basics, that was more effective. Even the soul imprint his teacher created, with so many types of soul techniques, Babata estimated it would only be worth about 10,000 points.

This complete Illusionary set, which had 3 techniques in total and worth a total of over 9000 points, it was comparable to the soul imprint.

“Babata, which battle techniques do you think the golden horned beast should train?” Luo Feng asked.

“We are allowing the golden horned beast to begin training battle techniques?” Babata asked, “How about we first work on the foundation.”

Golden horned beast, right now it only knew Deities of the World and Absolute Space.

Absolute space was related to movement.

Deities of the world was purely about shrinking and condensing its body. It didn’t have any battle techniques. Right now it battled relying totally on it’s natural ability, which was its strength, or its bodies inner quality, it didn’t have any system or battle technique. According to Babata’s point of view, it was better to get a solid foundation first, then learning the battle techniques would be easy.

And within the golden horned beast’s inherited memories, there were battle techniques, it could begin training at anytime.

Different types of battle techniques!

From the claws, to the scaled wings, the tail and strengthening its body, while becoming a slaughter machine. The many generations of golden horned beasts had created many many techniques and knew how to unleash the greatest strength when in battle as many

of these techniques were extremely brutal.

"Basics?" Luo Feng pondered, "That's good too, there'll be a long period of time in the future where I won't be using the golden horned beast to attack anyway."

Following which Luo Feng lifted his head and finished the wine. Eventually standing up, his eyes gleamed with battle spirit, "Time to begin!"

……

Time was fleeting, as months passed on.

The Jade essence F grade universe ship continued to progress towards the center of the human universe where the Virtual Universe Company's headquarters was located. Luo Feng naturally spent his time within the ship, his consciousness in the virtual universe was almost like a sponge absorbing every bit of information.

While within his internal world.

The golden continent's length and width had already reached 9,000km. Obviously during the time Luo Feng spent in the genius battle, the golden horned beast had already evolved till universe level 9. From universe level 9 to domain lord level 1, normally it would require 500 years. Even with the highest efficiency of metal groupings, it could only be raised 56 times, requiring about 9 years

in total.

Feeling the internal world constantly expanding and condensing with the ripples of the golden origin laws, the golden horned beast seriously listened, looked around and experienced, working hard at its domain and gold origin laws.

The Mosha clan was in the form of a little golden horned beast while training in Absolute space and raising the comprehension of the space origin laws. It was either that or staying in human form, using a blade, shield and training the Illusionary techniques...

Virtual universe, Absolute beginning region, within the training space of villa number 1136.

The completely sealed training space was empty.

Barefooted and in shorts, Luo Feng held the 6 edged shield Absolute Void shield and carried a blood shadow blade life golden shadow blade.

“Simulate battle!” Luo Feng shouted, “Opponent, Rong Jun, simulate him with his highest battle ability during the genius pinnacle battle.”

Chi Chi...

The huge training space that was 50km wide and 30km long. It formed the silhouette of a person within, who eventually turned

into the over 3m tall Savage Rong Jun. Rong Jun was carrying a huge battle blade on his back, his entire body dressed in a simple animal skin, barefooted. His eyes however were lifeless, as he was just standing there and not moving at all.

"Begin!" Luo Feng shouted.

Rumble!

The simulated Rong Jun's eyes lit up and he became like a mountain rushing straight at Luo Feng.

"Bring it." Luo Feng brandished his blade in one hand, and the other hand with a shield, becoming 18 Luo Fengs, almost like 18 demon golden lights rushing forward.

"Dang!"

The two clashed.

Luo Feng began using his blade work and in an instant he had slashed almost 10,000 times. It was simply too fast, not only were his movements shockingly fast, even his bladework was terrifying, totally like a demon floating about. His bladework seemed like it wasn't strong, however the instantaneous explosion of power was terrifying.

"Slash!" The Savage Rong Jun's hair flew in the wind. His gaze was like lightning, and roaring like thunder, he swung his huge

blade down!

“Slash!”

“Slash!”

Each roar was extremely powerful.

In terms of offensive strength from the genius battle, the strongest was Bolan. In terms of mysteriousness was probably the hypnotist Jia Lai Xi’s hypnotism. In terms of being unblockable it was Luo Feng’s Sky piercing formation and in terms of brutality it was Savage’s bladework!

They fought head on for a few minutes.

“Chi!”

Fresh blood spewed everywhere, Luo Feng’s entire body was knocked away, dropping like a torn sand bag.

“Rumble…” The training space warped, the simulated Rong Jun from before vanished and Luo Feng’s wounds were healed.

This was a specially customized training space with the effects of the slaughter house. It was able to completely simulate any opponent, however its space was limited.

“Hm, there’s improvement.” Luo Feng smiled and stood up, “My close combat probably has the ability to make it into the top 100 of the genius battle.”

Close combat!

Right, Luo Feng’s greatest weakness was close combat. During the pinnacle competition, he had two losses. One against Rong Jun and the other against Long Yun. This happened because he had to fight them in close combat and hence, he lost. As a controller, Luo Feng had the ability to easily kill his opponent when he distances himself.

However the moment he got close, that was it.

As one’s attention itself had limits, Luo Feng didn’t have time to dilute his training, however now was different. The Mosha clan itself was a master at close combat, naturally it had to train the Illusionary techniques. Three great bodies with the same soul and consciousness. If any one of them learnt something, the other two would naturally learn it too!

“In terms of comprehension of the origin laws, I’m stronger than Rong Jun. However, my close combat still loses to him.” Luo Feng shook his head, “There’s indeed a difference between the human body and the Mosha clan body.”

When the Mosha clan body unleased the Illusionary techniques, that was the true Illusion!

With the Mosha clan body, even if he compared to death god Bolan, the difference wasn't that huge. His human body however was way different.

"Continue to persevere!"

"I will not only be able to attack from far but also in close combat. This way, there truly would not be any weakness!

……

Luo Feng continued to work hard.

Finally, after travelling for about 2 years and 3 months in the universe, Luo Feng finally killed Rong Jun in close combat!

"I defeated Rong Jun of the genius battle. The current Rong Jun must be similar to me, using the resources given by the Virtual Universe Company and strengthening himself. He would have definitely gotten stronger." Luo Feng didn't dare relax at all.

Indeed.

3 years journey, none of the 1,000 absorbed geniuses dared to relax. This genius battle had too great an effect on them. In the past, it was hard for them to even meet a match, however the many life or death battles in the competition had affected them greatly. Many of them had been training ever since then and had improved a lot since the battles.

That and the fact that they could pick any techniques they wanted. To Rong Jun, Wuka and Ao Pa Te La etc, the ones from the Absolute beginning region, the 10,000 points was enough for them to buy almost anything they desired.

At their level, they didn't need anything too expensive.

Within these three years of training, they all improved a lot.

Within the hall of the universe ship.

Dressed in a completely fitting armor and boots, the black short haired youth stood there. Beside him was a skinny old man with silver hair saying respectfully, "Your Majesty, we are about to arrive at the Virtual Universe Company headquarters."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

3 years!

This was considered his fastest improvement in 3 years. However the deeper he went, he could feel that the universe itself was unfathomable,. The entire mysteries and profoundness of the universe, and that the techniques he used could only be considered under undyings or normal undying level, however he still felt they were profound, this path was indeed a tough one.

“I’ve improved so much, I wonder how the others are doing.” Luo Feng thought, “I have the golden horned beast and the Mosha clan, this level of miraculous combination! However…the universe is vast, just about anything can happen. Who knows, there may even be someone within the top 1,000 geniuses with an even greater miracle within them.”

Never looking down on others or being arrogant.

The universe was incomparably vast and mysterious, with trillions of races. Humans were but one of them, one had to always maintain a level of respect to the universe.

“Beginning universe travel, entering the actual universe.”

“10……9……8……7……6……5……4……3……2……1 ! ”

Luo Feng felt the entire ship slightly shake. After about 10 seconds everything returned to normal, he shouted, “External simulation 100%.” Immediately the entire large hall became transparent, he could see the simulated space, in the distance, there was an incomparably vast continent floating in space.

Luo Feng was stunned.

The headquarters of the Virtual Universe Company, they had finally arrived here.

Chapter 7 – Ship

“That’s, a, a continent?” Luo Feng stood within the universe ship, looking at the distant floating endless continent, staring wide eyed.

“Planets, stars, nebulas etc, all the heavenly bodies, wandering the universe for a long time, one would have seen them all, even occasionally spotting remains of universe ships, even living space beasts, Luo Feng wouldn’t even be shocked by these, however to see such a huge continent in space itself…it was simply too shocking!

This wasn’t the virtual universe, it was reality!

“So huge?” Luo Feng was speechless.

This huge continent floating in space had stars and planets beside it, however they were nothing but little dots beside it! Even the universe ship which was constantly getting closer, after awhile, it still seemed as though the continent was as far away as before.

It’s bigger than any planets I’ve seen before, by at least 10 million times, it’s too huge.” Luo Feng held his breath.

“Your majesty, how’s the headquarters?” Beside, the skinny old man smiled.

Luo Feng asked curiously, “Just how big is it?”

“How big?”

The skinny old man shook his head, “If we don’t go through universe transfer through the dark universe, just relying on the universe ship to fly from side to side, will take at least 10 years.”

“You mean…” Luo Feng was shocked, “It’s diameter alone is about 1 light years?”

1 light year, was a little more than 90 quintillion km.

The earth’s diameter was but 10,000 km.

It was no wonder the distant stars and planets seemed nothing more than little dots, this continent floating in the universe was simply outrageous.

“Hm.” The silver haired skinny old man nodded his head.

“Such a big continent, where did it come from?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask, “Was there such a large naturally formed continent in the universe?” Even though the universe was mysterious, with many mysterious places, however naturally forming a 10 light years diameter continent was simply unbelievable.

“Not sure.” The skinny old man shook his head.

Luo Feng didn't ask more.

.....

Even though he could see the distant floating continent was incomparably vast, however with the f grade universe ship travelling close to light speed and about 13 hours later, he finally reached the entrance of the virtual universe company headquarters, during the flight, Luo Feng could only gaze in awe as he appreciated the beauty and perfection of the construction of this continent.

Even though it seemed like it was a wonder naturally formed by the universe, as his ship drew closer, Luo Feng could feel this 'natural' continent was infused with high amounts of technology.

"Your majesty, those stars, planets and nebulas surrounding this continent are actually very terrifying technological weapons." Within the ship's luxurious hall, the skinny old man introduced.

"Ah?" Luo Feng nodded, "With the company's measures, those planets and stars are indeed easily controllable like toys to them.

Even undyings could play with the stars.

With the virtual company's unbelievable technology, changing the stars and planets to where even a sector lord knows they are weapons, these too were probably just for show...the virtual

universe headquarters' true defenses probably weren't that simple.

Hu!

The universe ship entered the continent through an opening and flew at light speed for a few minutes before finally slowing down and stopping.

Luo Feng and the sector lord Shawu and others flew out of the cabin door.

Outside there were 10 men and women dressed in uniform waiting, when Luo Feng arrived, these 10, with a silver armored man with a green horn leading, said in unison, "Your majesty Luo Feng, Knight Feng is awaiting your arrival, please follow me."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Thanks Shawu." Luo Feng turned back and looked at the skinny old man.

Sector lord Shawu revealed a smile, "It was my honor to accompany your majesty for 3 years."

After which, the 2 separated.

Luo Feng followed the silver armored green horned man and others through a dreamy like pathway, the later half of the

pathway was translucent, with one look, one could see the beautiful space outside, along with the surrounding mountain scenery.

“Your majesty Luo Feng, your majesty Luo Feng.” Along the pathway there were 3 people waiting.

“Hm” Luo Feng looked curiously at the 3 approaching people.

“Your majesty, these are the items you ordered, according to your majesty’s request, the exchange will be done here in the headquarters.” The 3 immediately submitted the items.

As Luo Feng’s 3 year journey was in the dark universe, also plus the fact that his training was mostly in the virtual universe, hence the golden shadow blade, the absolute void shield and the life fruits he purchased didn’t require an immediate exchange, since the cloud contact vine already had enough food prepared, he decided to exchange for these at the headquarters itself.

Of course, something like the Illusionary techniques, he learnt it in the virtual universe.

“Hehe, thanks.” Luo Feng opened to take a look and immediately kept it within his storage ring.

……

At that time, he was taken into an oval shaped large hall, the

entire surroundings of the hall was completely transparent, looking up, one could see the endless space, viewing the distant beautiful scenery, also one could also see universe ships, and shooting star like undyings flying past.

"Luo Feng."

"Madman, you've come."

"Haha, Madman."

Luo Feng's entrance immediately attracted welcomes from many.

"Long Yun, Wuka, Jiangmo." Luo Feng laughed and immediately waved at each of them, training hard in Yu Xiang Mountain for 3 years, this same batch of youths had interacted quite a bit, over the 3 years, except for a small number that preferred solitude, many of them had become good friends, at least they were able to chat and laugh.

There may have been some that preferred solitude, but this was also because they were too lonely, having never met anyone of their level.

And to be able to enter the genius battle's entire universe top 1,000, at least they'd recognize each other's strengths, becoming good friends was normal.

"Rong Jun hasn't arrived?" Luo Feng surveyed his surroundings.

“He’ll be here soon, he’s almost within the headquarters.” The Manka prince Wuka laughed casually, “Come, sit here.”

“Hm.”

Similarly in the Absolute beginning region, the 8 of them were closer than with others. Just from the sitting arrangement within the hall, one could easily see…cliques and circles had been formed within these 1,000.

“Bolan.” Luo Feng looked at the side where a white clothed youth sat beside the window, Luo Feng smiled and shouted out.

The white clothed youth turned and glanced over, “Hm.” Just making a sound and immediately turning once again to peer outside. These 3 years on Yu Xiang Mountain, death god Bolan had been in solitude, only seldom communicating with a few people, but actually speaking very little. However for the contact they had, Luo Feng and the others realized that even though Bolan was very cold and enjoyed being alone, his character was still not bad.

“The Absolute beginning few seem to be pretty proud, actually sticking and talking to Bolan…thinking they are much stronger than us.”

“Right, back then we made it into the top 100, the virtual universe company immediately picked the top 20 from us to fight for the final 10, not even giving us a chance.”

“And it’s been 3 years, these 3 years, those of us in the Heaven and land region have all made improvements, some even shocking, I believe there are a few of us even stronger than those in the Absolute beginning region.”

“Just wait, there’ll be time to compete.”

At the other side, about 10 youths relied on genetic energy to communicate, chatting amongst themselves.

They remained unconvinced.

Since the time the virtual universe system back then had directly picked the people to eliminate, many had remained unhappy with the decisions, what’s more over these 3 years, many had improved by quite a bit, especially since some didn’t have good techniques back then…over these 3 years they had time to exchange for fitting techniques, their improvements were huge. They were all confident now.

……

After about 6 more hours, all 1,000 had gathered.

“Attention all, please follow me.”

Once the 1,000 had gathered, a man with red eyes dressed in a

simple but elegant white robe spoke hoarsely, that aura he emitted made the 1,000 youths feel a sense of fear within, almost as though a normal person was facing a venomous snake, the tall red eyed man left the hall and immediately released a powerful invincible aura that completely subdued the 1,000 youths.

Sou!

Immediately becoming a light ray and flying for a few minutes, they stopped before a peculiar ship, before releasing the 1,000 youths.

“Phew.”

Only then did Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief, that inability to resist, that aura that made their hearts tremble, the surrounding geniuses all felt the same.

“Attention all, please enter the ship.” The tall and skinny red eyed man spoke coldly.

Luo Feng looked up and saw the peculiar ship before them.

“This is a ship?” Luo Feng was shocked, this ship before them was simply too strange and special, mainly because it’s entire shape was simply like a fish! A translucent dull blue huge fish, its tail was even waving about, its entire length was about 1,000m. However the stomach portion of this huge fish actually had a cabin door, through it one could see the internal pathways.

Dumbfounded.

The 1,000 geniuses, very few of them actually knew about these kinds of ships, the others seemed confused and stunned, under the coaxing of the tall and skinny red eyed man, they all entered through the door.

“The interiors are similar to other ships, how come its exterior is just like a fish?” Luo Feng and the group walked within the ships pathways, “f grade universe ships were made from pure natural metals, even the ships that went to receive us were all f grades, and right now this ship that’s taking us to the primal universe, this is definitely at least an f grade I think.”

Pure metals were supposedly strong and durable.

This one was exactly like a fish, it was unbelievable.

“Stupid!”

“You don’t even know about this, this is a universe ship that’s been fused with other life forms.” Babata’s voice resounded, “And it’s a very high level of life form, at least an undying level, like the metal life forms, plant life forms, there are some special races that can actually fuse and become one with ships. This universe ship… is much better than your teacher’s Yun Mo Planet ship, if what I’m guessing isn’t wrong, it can be considered even as surpassing the f grade…a g grade universe ship. To be able to have such a ship, in the vast universe, that would be one who stands at the pinnacle of

existences.”

“Fusing an undying life form with a ship?” Luo Feng didn’t even have time to react before he followed the others into the ship’s large hall.

Within the hall.

A formless pressure caused the 1,000 geniuses to not dare to make a sound, even the 10 undyings within the ship, including that tall and skinny red eyed man slightly bowed.

Luo Feng glanced over and spotted the green armored purple scaled man standing right in front, even though he still felt as though he wasn’t truly present, giving a sense like he was virtual projection, not a real person, the purple scaled man looked at the youths and said, “Let’s depart, towards the primal universe.”

Rumble...

The fish like universe ship waved its tail and immediately vanished from its position.

Chapter 8 – Primal Chaos City

Within the large hall.

None of the 1,000 geniuses dared to make a sound, against such an intimidating undying. It felt almost like a mountain pressing down on you. Against this purple scaled man who seemed like he was there physically, yet not at all…it was completely different. He wasn't intentionally pressuring them at all.

It was simply his natural aura, it naturally made others respect him.

That was life submitting itself!

"Stop!" A thunderous roar resounded from outside, entering within the universe ship interior and eventually resounding throughout the entire ship. Feeling this level of pressure…all the geniuses were shocked still. As they were only a bunch of star levels with some that have broken through to the universe level, they were simply helpless. Against such great beings, if they didn't control their auras, probably just a look would make their souls crumble.

Geniuses were after all just geniuses, they weren't truly strong yet.

Their path had just begun.

“It’s me, open the universe pathway!” The purple scaled man said indifferently.

His voice passed through the universe ship and reverberated even outside.

“Rumble!”

A low rumbling came from outside and the ship continued its path.

“Hm?”

“This is really uncomfortable.”

“Not right.”

The 1,000 geniuses had gone pale, even Luo Feng felt his head ache badly and it started to throb. He tried hard to keep his eyes open, yet he couldn’t even see his surroundings clearly.

“We are currently within the pathway between the actual universe and the primal universe.” The purple scaled man looked at the group of pale youths, some even falling to the ground. “The primal universe and the actual universe have different time flows, hence creating a chaotic time flow within this pathway. This will make you all uncomfortable for awhile.”

Of the 1,000 youths, only about 300 of them could barely stand.

“I can’t see clearly anymore.” Luo Feng fought hard to keep his eyes open.

“Wow, Luo Feng, this is the legendary universe pathway. The chaotic time flow actually feels this way. Even I, a living AI feel kind of weird. Haha, it’s too mystical, simply too mystical.” Babata however was incomparably excited, “These chances are extremely rare.”

After about 5 or 6 minutes, the feeling passed.

Luo Feng regained his full consciousness.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked around, discovering that many were lying on the ground, their expressions pale, and some even had tears flowing out. Following which, they all began to climb back up, brushing off their tears and regaining their composure.

“Right now, we’ve already entered the primal universe.” The purple scaled man smiled.

“Primal universe?”

“We’ve already reached the primal universe?”

The geniuses from many universe countries were all filled with

curiosity. Even the 10 undyings that came along with the purple scaled 9 blade knight, their eyes were filled with anticipation as they started looking around.

"Open the top." The purple scaled man said.

Chi chi...the large metallic roof actually automatically opened above the hall, revealing a transparent glass outer layer. Immediately, the top of the hall became transparent and everyone looked up to look through that layer towards the outer world. Luo Feng raised his head too, with one glance, he discovered that there was a dark aura floating about outside, some energy flowed above them.

In the distance, he could barely make out the lands and skies splitting apart. Even large amounts of engravings flowing through these splits in spaces, threads weaving in and out, with engravings floating all about, almost like a loom slowly rebuilding and growing the land and skies further.

"This is?" Luo Feng felt a space split open in the distance with crystal like threads flowing within, which were filled with engravings.

Even the 10 undyings kept looking up, occasionally closing their eyes to ponder and then opening to observe again.

The ship continued to move forward.

They frequently saw spaces splitting apart and the peculiar threads of engravings...

“Stars and planets all have their own lifespans. This universe too has its own lifespan, only that it’s incredibly long.” The purple scaled man smiled, “This primal universe, is a new universe belonging to when a universe is in it’s beginning stages. During this period, the universe will constantly improve itself and form anew. Hence the universe origin laws will be flowing about and will be very obvious to the eyes.”

“The universe space splits will continue to regrow and recover, even the flowing energy flows all contain within them the origin laws.”

Luo Feng and the rest of the 1,000 all listened wide eyed and stunned.

The crystal threads that rebuilt the splits all over, these large amounts of threads with engravings were all the universe origin laws energy flow?

“The actual universe in which we live in is incomparably vast, huge, and perfect.” The purple scaled man said, “And because it’s perfect, we cannot easily see the energy flow. Hence comprehension is much harder. However in the primal universe, the naked eye can easily spot such energy flows. You’ve all seen how perfectly the different laws work together, how the universe forms and the law energy flows. Since everything can be seen with your eyes, the comprehension here is much easier.”

“The namelist for the primal universe is incomparably valuable.” The purple scaled man said, glancing at the 10 undyings.

The 10 undyings all continued to look up, obviously treasuring every bit of time.

“Close.” The purple scaled man said.

The roof immediately sealed up.

Actually, just from looking at the splits in space and the threads of engravings about, Luo Feng understood that the virtual simulation couldn’t simulate something like this, because these engravings were meant to be felt and not just seen. Relying just on technology to simulate it wasn’t enough. If it could be simulated then there would be no need to even enter the primal universe.

“In a while, we will arrive at Primal chaos city.” The purple scaled man said, “The Primal chaos city is where the participants within the primal universe train and live. You are all under me, I hope to see all of you alive in 30 years.”

“We can die here?”

“There’s danger?”

Luo Feng and the others were suspicious.

“Remember, after entering Primal chaos city, first listen to the person receiving you, listen clearly to the rules...oh, we’ve arrived.” The purple scaled man said and the universe ship’s speed began to slow down.

This large fish, began its travel through this vast universe space.

In the short time since the roof closed, the large fish had flown to an ancient city in the air. It’s stomach portion cabin door opened and the 1,000 geniuses flew out. Following which the door closed and the large fish waved its tail and immediately disappeared into the distance.

“The feeling of this primal universe sure is special.”

“This feels really comfortable.”

“Right, extremely comfortable.” A group of youths stood in mid air. Luo Feng looked down at the ancient majestic city. As a city built within the primal universe itself, it gave off an aura of profoundness.

In the distance a black light flew over.

“Attention all, I am the receiver of Primal chaos city.” A low voice resounded. A black robed man flew over, following which he stopped and smiled. His head was filled with green scales “This city is called primal chaos city. Its time in existence is even longer than

many of your universe countries themselves! Right now it's governed by the Virtual Universe Company, Huge Axe dojo, Universe 1st bank, Universe galaxy bank and the Universe Mercenaries altogether."

Silence.

The 1,000 youths looked at this receiver of Primal chaos city.

"Follow me." The receiver smiled and flew down.

The 1,000 people flew downwards and landed in the streets of the city. The pathway allowed up to a few tens of people to form a line.

"The primal chaos city has been around for a very long time." The receiver walked ahead, explaining as he walked, "Among the participants that come to primal chaos city, many absolute beings have already been produced."

"Hm?"

Luo Feng looked around. This city had many buildings around, and on the balconies of these buildings there were many human like people sitting crossed legged. Some were drawing several things on the grounds, strong auras from all over, much stronger than sector lords, some even muttering things from their mouths.

Luo Feng looked up at the sky.

In the sky above, close to one of the universe splits, he could make out undyings all around it floating about. Occasionally these beings even looked down at Luo Feng's group.

"Another group of punks have arrived."

"It's receiver number 11, those are the punks from the Virtual Universe Company."

"I heard that among the Virtual Universe Company's batch, there's someone called Bolan, he's not bad." Beside that universe split, a few great beings floated and chatted.

.....

Luo Feng and their group of youths, they were all very low profile. They could feel that there were many undyings around. And these undyings were all being conservative, not daring to release their auras at all. However, within the city there were 10 absolute energy flows that were simply heavenly, even Luo Feng could clearly feel them.

Just like 10 absolute ferocious beasts, stationed at different locations within Primal chaos city.

"There are many absolute beings within Primal chaos city." The receiver turned and said, "Don't ever go disturb any of them when they are studying the origin laws. The moment you disturb them, I

can only send you out of the primal universe and end your participation."

The group nodded.

The receiver immediately entered an empty building beside.

"There are many buildings within Primal chaos city. If the doors are white, it means there's no one is living there." The receiver pointed at a large door, "As long as you place your hand on the surface of the door, the door's system will automatically activate and cause it to change to a dark grey. You'll then become the building's owner, and it'll automatically record your signal. Everyone can only choose one living quarter."

After which, he walked up to the balcony.

The balcony was pretty huge, as the length and width were close to 100m, enough to stand 1,000 people.

"This is." Luo Feng looked at the many pictures engraved on the surface of the balcony. Many of them were mysterious and peculiar.

"This, this..." Luo Feng looked carefully, getting lost in the engravings.

Many youths too were completely immersed within.

“Space origin laws.”

“This has been infused with space origin laws.” Many youths shouted out.

“Attention all.” The receiver’s voice entered everyone’s minds. All their souls were immediately awoken. “Primal chaos city has many generations of countless absolute beings sitting on the balconies and studying. During their progress, they occasionally draw and carve as well. Hence they’ve left behind many of their thoughts and origin law studies. If you have interest in them, a good half of Primal chaos city is vacant right now. You can go from balcony to balcony to take a look. You never know, you might find some comprehension engravings of some knights from the past.”

The group of youths’ eyes gleamed.

“Let me first tell you all a very important rule!” The receiver emphasized, “Within the primal universe, any human against human killing is strictly forbidden. Whoever makes a move will be punished and killed without a doubt.”

“Understood.”

The group of youths nodded.

“The primal universe compared to the actual universe has a time ratio of 1:3.28” The black robed receiver laughed, “Your

participation time in here this round is a little more than 30 years.

Chapter 9 – 52 Ancient Primal Chaos Tablets

“Time is very precious, don’t waste it.” The black robed receiver jumped down from the balcony, landing on the ground below. The 1,000 geniuses behind followed suit and jumped, like a big group of locusts, covering the skies as they landed in the spacious pathway in front of the building.

“Follow me, we’ll head to the city owner’s mansion.” The black robed receiver said, “That’s where the city owner stays, and it’s also the core of the entire Primal chaos city.”

“City owner?”

Luo Feng was shocked when he heard it. As the only city within the entire primal universe, the history of the primal chaos city was even more ancient than many universe countries. The owner of this ancient city…one could only imagine his position. As he was able to take on such a position, his strength definitely wouldn’t be weaker than those country leaders.

“Rumble…” Ahead in the distance, a 30m tall single horned beast clad in red scales walked over. It took up more than half of the entire pathway, and on its back stood a purple short haired youth. He was dressed in a dark blue armor, with similar dark blue boots, while carrying one huge purple blade on his back, looking up at the sky.

The black robed receiver bowed respectfully to display his respect and the 1,000 youths watched as the huge beast left.

“Beast taming?”

“You can even bring tamed beasts into primal chaos city?”

The group of youths couldn’t help but discuss softly. Ahead, the black robed receiver smiled, “That person before is an eternal resident of primal chaos city. As an eternal resident, he has the privilege to bring tamed beasts in.”

“Eternal resident?”

“I heard that even undyings who want to enter here, the slot alone is incomparably expensive and valuable.”

The youths were all shocked, Luo feng couldn’t help but exclaim, “How can that be?”

His own teacher, even as a powerful being amongst the undying, couldn’t even afford a slot to enter the primal universe. However that youthful looking man from before, was an eternal resident?

“Nothing’s impossible.” The black robed receiver smiled, “As long as one has a large enough contribution, or absolute strength, and eventually acquiring the admittance from the alliance, one can become an eternal resident.”

Luo Feng pondered, alliance? Right, this primal chaos city was

governed by the 5 leviathans together. He guessed that the alliance he mentioned was that of these 5 together.

"May I ask, how does one become an eternal resident?" Amongst the crowd, the Manka prince Wuka shouted.

"The requirements are extremely strict." The black robed receiver smiled, "When you've become an undying, you'll know them. Asking now is just futile."

The black robed receiver led the bustling group of youths who were of many different human races, walking along the pathways. It was indeed quite a sight.

Luo Feng however discovered that on the balconies of the buildings along the pathway, among those quietly meditating warriors, only very few of them actually opened their eyes to glance over at this group. Many were too immersed within their training. Many had beards and hair that grew extremely long, almost as though they hadn't been trimmed in hundreds to thousands of years.

"Ahead is the city owner's mansion." The black robed receiver pointed ahead.

Luo Feng looked up.

There was a majestic construct which was over 300m tall. Even from afar, one could distinctly see the most glaring three words in

universe language on the building... “City Owner Residence”. Just looking at those words, one couldn’t help but get enticed by it. Almost as though hidden within those words was a new space or even universe. One’s entire focus couldn’t help but get drawn into it and entering into the universe space within those words. This shocked Luo Feng so much he lowered his head and didn’t dare take another look.

“The three huge words City Owner residence, just take one quick look and don’t look at it often.” The black robed receiver laughed, “It’ll cause you to lose yourself in them. Even undyings normally wouldn’t dare stare at it.”

“Ah?”

“That mystical?”

Many geniuses that hadn’t noticed the three words before looked up curiously to see, with that, they all fell for it.

“Haha...” The black robed receiver couldn’t help but laugh at the scene.

He normally attended to groups of absolute warriors. He’d have to be more rigid and felt uncomfortable. However with these punks, it was much more relaxing.

.....

Although it looked like it was located fairly close, as they continued to walk, they realized that it was pretty far.

Even though they were walking pretty quickly, it still took several minutes to reach the entrance of the building. With one look they spotted frequent black robed receivers heading over and away. They also occasionally spotted a few undyings and sector lords entering and leaving the building.

“Primal chaos city is the only city within the primal universe.” The black robed receiver smiled, “In this city, there are three treasures.”

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, listening intently.

“The 1st of the 3, which everybody knows about, is that one can naturally see the origin laws movement in the universe.” The black robed receiver smiled, “As for the 2nd, it’s within the city, it’s located within the city owner’s mansion. The 3rd, is located outside the city.”

“Just what are these treasures?”

A group of youths couldn’t help but ask.

The black robed receiver pointed around. “The surrounding balconies where many have trained before. For over a trillion years, many warriors have stayed and left this city. During their training, any spark or idea would be carved into the grounds and

surfaces of the walls, and with deep thought, or whatever gains they discovered, they would also carve there."

Luo Feng nodded. Indeed, comprehending the origin laws was akin to flashes of inspiration. When one suddenly comprehended something, one would carve it down. Afterall, a picture was worth a thousand words.

Even though some people would casually write down a line of words, after a few years, by looking at those few words could easily jolt the memory of the time from before. And ironically, if one typed it into a computer, after a few years, looking at it may not even help recall anything.

Personally drawing and writing, it was a very good comprehending medium.

"Primal chaos city, this sort of tradition has been around for countless years." The black robed youth exclaimed, "Because the records are all casually left behind, there are no rules. Many of them are even just odd bits and pieces, hence many of them only help a little here and there."

"However!"

"Over a trillion years, countless such flashes of inspiration and records have left behind very strong and systematic training aids." The black robed receiver emphasized, "In our primal chaos city, there are also the most valuable 52 primal chaos tablets. Every tablet records a large amount of mysterious pictures etc. These 52

tablets are the 52 large pathways of training. These are the pathways that lead directly to the top! If one manages to comprehend even one entire tablet, then he would immediately become an absolute existence within the universe. Even opening your own universe country would be simple."

Luo Feng couldn't help but hold his breath, beside him Savage Rong Jun, Manka youth and the 1000 men and women were all excited.

52 primal chaos tablets infused with the pinnacle pathways. After comprehending just one tablet, one could open a universe country?

"These 52 primal chaos tablets are the 2nd treasure located within this city." The black robed receiver smiled, "As for the 3rd treasure...it's outside the city. At the entrance there's a stone monument with specific details, you can all go look at it yourselves."

The group were extremely excited with anticipation.

The 1st and 2nd treasure both had huge benefits to everybody, this 3rd treasure couldn't be anything less.

"The 52 primal chaos tablets." The black robed receiver said, "Everyone who comes into the primal chaos to train will have one chance to look at them. Every time, you'll have a total of 7 days!"

"7 days?"

The group stared.

That short?

“The primal chaos tablets are the treasures of humanity. They are clearer than any technique manual and they were pathways to the pinnacle of strength. Just the 7 days of viewing would be sufficient for the likes of you.” The black robed receiver immediately walked towards the entrance door, “Enter, get ready to pick your tablet.”

The residence was a huge place. Even the normal balconies in the living districts were a 100m long and wide, one could only imagine just how big this residence was.

“Everyone can only pick one tablet to view and study.” The black robed receiver led the group and quickly entered a mystical pathway.

The pathway had two walls, and hung on them were the many huge pictures.

Luo Feng took one glance and knew immediately there were 52 pictures.

“Hung on these walls are the 52 stone rubbing copies. Every picture depicts the primal chaos tablets. You will first take a look at these and even though they are unable to infuse within them the

energy flows of the original tablets, they will still make you feel a strand of their original energy flow. Just take a look at these 52 pictures...and later decide which tablet you will study." The black robed receiver spoke.

The group of youths walked along the pathway and were stunned by the 52 pictures on the walls. They had to pick the tablets just from these pictures.

Every picture was specifically 10m long and wide, and beside them were their names.

I'll give you all half an hour." The black robed receiver stood outside the pathway.

Luo Feng and the group began to look around.

Luo Feng randomly picked one to begin, this first one he looked at had an ancient tree that rose to the skies. Its leaves were already yellow and countless of them were falling. These floating leaves that were in mid air of this picture, with Luo Feng's mental calculation, in an instant he deduced there were definitely over 10,000 leaves.

On the picture, the yellow leaves fell one after another.

There were still some leaves on the tree itself, the ground however was fully covered in them.

Looking on...Luo Feng felt that the leaves floating in mid air were like soldiers one after another, forming an entire army. That incomparably complex formation, with every 100 forming one complex little group, just adding one extra leaf, that 101 immediately made the formation even more magical and mystical.

"One Minute up!" Babata's voice resounded within his mind and woke him up, "Luo Feng, you only have half an hour to look at all the pictures, you cannot spend more than 1 minute on one picture."

"Understood." Luo Feng awoke and looked at the name on that picture...Mu Zu primal chaos tablet.

This made Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, "Mu Zu? Is it linked to the Mu Zu planet?"

He didn't dare think too much. Afterall, there were 52 pictures to go through, Luo Feng quickly went to view the rest, he had to look for the most suitable for himself within that half an hour. And the most suitable, only that would have the highest efficiency for his training. As for the Mu Zu tablet, it gave Luo Feng some headaches when he looked at it.

101 leaves, compared to the 100 leaves formation, it was a hundred times more magical and mystical.

Those over 10,000 leaves, just how much would they change and evolve, it was impossible to imagine.

Picture after picture, total silence.

The 1,000 geniuses were like starving wolves, their eyes were all gleaming while staring at the many pictures. Before, they were all dissatisfied on having to choose their tablet from looking at pictures, however they still got totally immersed in them. Luckily everyone had their own AI systems to remind them, otherwise they would spend the entire half an hour on one picture.

“Hm?” Luo Feng stared at the large picture before him.

On it were many slash marks. Every mark gave off a different feeling, the entire picture had a total of 10,081 slashes. The name of the picture was Scarred Heart primal chaos tablet.

“Alright, your half an hour is up, tell me your tablet choices and I’ll record them.” The Black robed receiver shouted.

Chapter 10 – The Skies and Land Change in Color

“I choose the Dragon Order Primal Chaos Tablet.”

“I choose the Wind Shadow Primal Chaos Tablet.”

The black robed receiver walked from the outermost layer of the group, slowly progressing inwards, simultaneously asking for each of the genius’s choices. However, behind the crowd , Luo Feng creased his eyebrows and his gaze sweeping past the 52 pictures. Honesty, out of these 52, there were a total of 38 that actually caught his attention and piqued his interest, including that Mu Zu Primal Chaos tablet, even though it had enticed him, it did however work with a very complex flow movement...

“Most suitable for me?”

Luo Feng looked at the picture on the left, and another on the right, in the distance, his most favorite the 9 Universe primal chaos tablet, and the final one he saw, the Scarred Heart primal chaos tablet. When he looked at the 9 universe tablet, his entire being cheered excitedly from within, feeling that the 9 universe tablet was the most suitable for his Nan Shen Armament’s progress. With slight changes, he could even incorporate it into his close combat techniques.

However the Scarred heart tablet, Luo Feng looked...

He could faintly see the skills and blade works appearing within his mind. Those 10081 slashes, they could be said to fully incorporate an extreme level of bladework.

“Which should I choose?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

He wanted to train them all.

The 9 universe was most suited for his Nan Shen Armament, while the Scarred heart tablet was most suitable for his bladework. Of course his current strength was still very weak, he could only make out very little bits of each of the complex tablets that were infused with extremely profound elements. These 52 tablets were after all the huge pathways to the pinnacle of strength.

Theoretically speaking, every tablet in itself could help one comprehend close combat and long distance combat.

“He’s come.” Luo Feng turned to look.

The black robed receiver had already recorded over 700 answers. He had already reached beside Luo Feng, looking up and staring at him.

“Which do you choose.” The black robed receiver asked.

“I choose the 9 universe Primal chaos tablet.” Luo Feng replied seriously.

The black robed receiver nodded and the screen on his arm recorded it immediately. He turned and continued on to the next person...

“Even though the Scarred heart tablet and the 9 universe tablets are both my favorites, and my close combat improves at a fast rate, my strongest skill is still without doubt my long distance attacks! Right now my close combat is improving...mainly because of the Mosha clone training the Illusionary techniques. A true warrior doesn’t need every skill and technique to be that strong. If they are all strong, it also means they aren’t all that strong in general.”

Strengthen my strong point!

Constantly strengthening my strong points, making them become absolute and powerful! That’s a true absolute warrior.

“And the Scarred heart tablet begins from the gold origin laws entrance. The 9 universe tablet approaches however from the space origin law.” Amidst the many origin laws, it was without a doubt that space and time were the two strongest. If he had to pick, he would pick the stronger one.

******

The black robed receiver walked till the end of the pathway and recorded everybody’s answer, turning and smiling, “I’ve already sent your choices out, follow me.”

Luo Feng and the rest of the 1,000 followed the black robed receiver and left that pathway to go deeper, eventually leading to an empty training ground. This training ground was extremely empty and spacious, about 10km long and wide. If it were an ordinary person from earth, he wouldn't be able to see end to end, naturally Luo Feng and the rest could see it all clearly.

Within the empty training ground.

The 1,000 people gathered, the black robed receiver stood in front of them.

"Right now, among the secret rooms of the 52 tablets, 12 of them currently have people in them. The other 40 are empty." The black robed receiver looked at the group before him, "I will now read out the names of these 40 empty rooms..."

"Yan Shan primal chaos tablet, Scarred Heart primal chaos tablet..." The black robed receiver swiftly reported the 40 names in one breath.

"Those that have chosen these 40 tablets, immediately head towards the left entrance ahead. You will be arranged to enter the secret rooms." The receiver pointed into the distance, on the left end of the training ground, there was a 30m tall entrance, "Head over there now."

Immediately, at least 800 over of the youths became beam of lights and left, leaving behind only a little more than a 100 youths.

“You 139 will wait a while.” The black robed receiver said, “The tablets that you have chosen currently have people in them. When other people are in there, it is absolutely forbidden for anyone to open the room and disturb them. Hence…when they’ve finished, you all will enter. The longest time you’ll have to wait will only be 3 days.”

“This way, you can go to the city owner residence’s tower.” The black robed receiver pointed ahead, “Over there, you can train there first. When it’s time for your turn, I’ll inform you all.”

……

Luo Feng, Savage Rong Jun and the rest of the 139 youths could only head to the tower.

“So unlucky.”

“52 primal chaos tablets, only 12 of these had people in them, and it’s actually us.” Along the way, the youths were somewhat helpless, Savage Rong Jun smiled and looked at Luo Feng, “Luo Feng, you and I are really brothers in arms, we entered the top 10 together, up to the top 5 battles, even the choices of the tablets, both our choices have people in them.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded, asking, “Which did you choose?”

“Me?” The Huge Axe tablet.” Savage Rong Jun said.

“Rong Jun, I too chose the Huge Axe tablet.” The Manka youth Wuka who was speaking to others turned and suddenly shouted, running over and spoke softly, “Luo Feng, Rong Jun, do you know just who left behind this Huge Axe Tablet?”

Every tablet was left behind by true pinnacle warriors of the human race history in the universe.

52 primal chaos tablets, they became the treasures of humanity.

“Who?” Rong Jun asked.

“Don’t tell me it’s connected to the Huge Axe dojo?” Luo Feng thought and asked.

“Right!” Wuka nodded, saying softly, “This huge axe tablet is left behind by the founder of one of the 5 great leviathans, the Huge Axe Dojo, it holds within unbelievable power, the moment one completely comprehends it, that’s simply…simply heavenly! You’d become the pinnacle of pinnacle existence within the entire universe.”

“The founder of the Huge Axe dojo?” Luo Feng and Rong Jun exchanged glances.

My god.

One of the 5 great leviathans of humanity!

If one actually wanted to put a ranking to these 5 leviathans, it was actually pretty simple from one thing, the entire universe humans, 1,008 universe countries, every 10,000 years they hold 2 genius battles, 1 was organized by the virtual universe company and another by the Huge Axe Dojo. The most exceptional geniuses were picked by these 2. The universe 1st bank, the universe galaxy bank and universe mercenary alliance however never do such things.

So who's stronger in the 5?

The virtual universe company and the Huge Axe dojo naturally stand above the rest!

And as the founder of the Huge Axe Dojo, his status was much higher than any of the 1,008 universe country leaders.

"Hehe, hence I chose the Huge Axe tablet." Wuka was satisfied, "Also amongst the sector lords and undying, this tablet is also the most popular."

"Haha." Rong Jun laughed.

Luo Feng twitched his lips.

"Of course, the rest of the other tablets are also not ordinary in any way, otherwise they'd never gain the right to be erected beside

the Huge Axe tablet." Wuka consoled Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, study that 9 universe tablet properly, you still have a bright future." As he said, Wuka held his stomach and laughed.

"You punk." Luo Feng shook his head.

.....

In the tower of the residence.

Luo Feng and that group of over 100 youths sat within, gazing into the distance.

It was too huge.

The entire Primal chaos was extremely huge, as for the distant areas outside the city, they were a complete blur and hard to see clearly. The main thing was...a large amount of primal chaotic energy was flowing within the primal universe, causing people to be unable to see too far.

"So comfortable."

"This primal universe is so much more comfortable than the actual universe."

The group of youths were discussing.

Luo Feng could feel it too, ever since they entered the primal universe, his entire body was incomparably comfortable, from internally to external, from mental to his body, they were all comfortable.

“This is the reason for the primal universe.” In the distance a middle aged man in a loose purple golden long robe walked over, “You are the winners from this time’s genius competition organized by the virtual universe company?”

“Hm.”

Luo Feng and the rest of the 139 turned and nodded.

“The reason why you feel so comfortable, is because of this!” The middle aged man pointed beside to the primal chaos energy flow floating, “This, is what we call primal chaos energy. It has different properties from the elemental universe energies in the actual universe, it’s also different from those mixed universe energies, this primal chaos energy has the peculiar energy to nurture and evolve many types of things.”

“Surrounded by this energy, naturally you’ll feel comfortable.” The middle aged man smiled.

Luo Feng and the rest realized.

“However, this type of energy is only present in the primal universe.” The middle aged man in the purple golden long robe

shook his head, even if you try and bring this energy back to the actual universe, it will only dissipate into other forms of energy."

.....

When Luo Feng and the group of youths were chatting with this powerful warrior.

Suddenly!

"Rumble..." In the distant land and skies powerful ripples were happening, the sounds shook both the land and skies.

"Waze!!!"

An angry roar resounded throughout the skies of the entire primal chaos city, a fearsome lightning energy immediately pierced through 10s of millions of Li, causing the strong warriors on the balconies of the buildings to all open their eyes and look into the distance.

Luo Feng and the group who were suppressed by that powerful energy had all gone pale, looking shocked from the tower.

In the distance...

A tall and sturdy bull giant dressed in ancient copper armor was almost like a god of the land and skies, wielding a huge axe that

was almost his size and waving it and slashing towards another great being that was currently a beam of lightning fleeing, that lightning energy they all felt was from this absolute being fleeing.

Silence.

Luo Feng and the rest of them were all shocked and pressured by the energies of these 2 absolute beings.

“They actually dare to battle in Primal chaos city?” The purple golden long robed middle aged man looked in the distance, saying shocked, “Waze, how can this bull man be so stupid?”

Chapter 11 – Primal Chaos City Leader

“Waze, you just entered Primal chaos city for a few days and you actually dare to make a move on Leibo?”

“Isn’t making a move in Primal chaos city looking for death?”

Engulfed in the blurry chaos energy within the city, it was impossible to see the end of the city. On the balconies of the many buildings, the warriors of the universe all opened their eyes wide and stared at the distant two people. The one being chased was completely engulfed in lightning, he purposely let his lightning pierce through the entire skies.

“Roar!” The tall and sturdy wild bull giant, with his bright red eyes, raged as he waved that terrifying huge axe. His opponent simultaneously fled as he too waved his lightning pike.

The space around them crumbled, chaos energy rippled throughout.

In the tower of the owner’s residence.

Luo Feng and the group of individuals had all gone pale. They were simply like ants, while the two in the distance were like giant ancient gods.

“These two...” Luo Feng held his breath, looking at the distant space crumble, his eyes opened wide, “They are too strong!

Undyings are actually that terrifying.”

Most of the undyings he had met were mostly in the virtual universe. Even the ones he met in reality were controlling their auras. This was the first time he was witnessing an undying actually raging, and this rage, with just a wave, was enough to crumble space within the universe.

“Just his strength alone can break space?” Luo Feng looked up, the surge of lightning snakes in the air, “The lightning pierced through 10 million Li.”

With a flip of their hands they could easily destroy a planet, these were undying!

Luo Feng finally understood.

“Rumble...”

Within the entire primal chaos city resounded a rage filled roar, suddenly the land and skies completely went dark. Luo Feng was shocked to realize that the initial occasional splits and crumbles in space had sealed by itself, the flowing origin law energies, and even the chaos energies, these all completely went silent and stopped moving altogether.

In the distance, the two absolute warriors went silent too.

“Rumble...”Above them, large amounts of chaos energy had

formed a giant hand, almost like a mountain size hand.

This chaos energy hand violently smacked down, like the heavens smashing down altogether!

Chi! Chi!

The two undyings had a look of shock and fear in their eyes. Waze and Leibo, these two had pretty high reputations even within the 1,008 universe countries as powerful undyings. Nevertheless, they were immediately reduced to powder, almost like smashing tofu, the powerful warriors within primal chaos city all stared wide eyed...

Both of them became nothing but powder, even their souls turned to dust!

“Chichi...”

“Chichi...”

In the distant space, the dust began to swiftly gather again, forming 2 human shapes, one was the bull giant and the other the skinny man engulfed in lightning, their faces both pale, the skinny man shouted out, “City leader, it’s him who wants to kill me, it’s Waze who wants to kill me, I’m innocent!”

“I only hate I wasn’t able to kill you!” The bull man’s eyes were red, staring hard at the skinny man, roaring softly.

“Stupid!” The skinny man laughed coldly and glanced at him.

“Ah!” The bull man roared with rage.

It couldn’t be helped...

Just a thought from the city leader and 100,000 Li of chaos energy formed a hand, causing these two undyings to barely survive through it, with no ability to fight back at all. That level of attack control...it was terrifying!

“The 3rd law enforcement team, will kick both Waze and Leibo out of the primal universe. Waze will be locked in the 9th starfield jail, Leibeo in the 2nd starfield jail.” A low voice, infused with traces of metal or something similar, resounded throughout the entire primal universe.

“Yes!”

A resounding reply echoed through the airs of the city.

Five blood colored lights flew over, against the law enforcement team, the two undyings that had already suffered a heavy blow from before had no resistance at all and not even a trace of resentment. They obediently followed the team and left in a entirely blood red universe ship.

……

Within that blood red universe ship.

“Waze, you are considered lucky. This time you didn’t kill anyone, if you had killed someone, you’d be dead without a doubt, you wouldn’t be simply locked up in the 9th starfield jail.” Dressed in a blood red armor, carrying a peculiar round blade, the law enforcement undying shook his head.

“Hmph.”

The bull man raged softly, his expression struggling as he stared at the distant skinny man, “I only hate that I didn’t kill Leibo, Leibo! So what if you hide within Primal chaos city, I will still come to kill you!”

“Stupid, even after you came in you were unable to kill me? This time I’m entering the 2nd jail while you the 9th starfield jail, haha, I’ll watch how you die!” Leibo laughed maniacally.

“Die? How can I die before I kill you!” The bull giant seemed to want to swallow his opponent.

“You’ve been injured this badly, you won’t be able to recover within the next hundred years, and you can still rave on so crazily.”

“Silence.”

The law enforcements, five undyings roared simultaneously. The bull giant and the skinny man finally stopped bickering with each other.

******

Everything happened in an instant and the group of youths in the tower were all stunned. Most of the primal chaos cities' tens of thousands of warriors too were calm. Only very few who were close or had spoken to Leibo and Waze began discussing, many continued their training. After all, the time within primal chaos city was simply too valuable.

For undyings to enter, just one slot was incredibly shocking.

"They even became dust, but they still survived."

"I dare to guarantee, both their souls were dead beyond dead."

"What do you know? Those two undyings have already reached the immortal body level. Their every cell has been infused with their mental memories, even if their souls are destroyed and reduced to ashes, as long as one cell remains, they can swiftly absorb energy and their body bits and regain their form."

"Immortal body?"

“I heard that even amongst the undying, very few actually make it to this level.”

“Those two undyings don’t even mean anything. That city leader that made that move, now that was a truly terrifying being. He didn’t even show himself, with just a thought…the entire universe space stopped its movement, even the space splits and origin law engravings all stopped.”

The group of geniuses were discussing rampantly.

Luo Feng and the group were both shocked and excited over what had happened , especially that move by the city leader…it was simply overwhelming. Their bloods rushed with adrenaline, this was because they could all see that the city leader didn’t even reveal himself, and he actually controlled the entire space within the city.

Just how big of a deal was this?

All of the universe laws, all of primal chaos city stopping its movement. Within an instance all beings were forced to freeze, just what level was this? Simply unbelievable!

“To be primal chaos city’s leader, his position must be much higher than all the universe country leaders. Even in the entire universe, he must be an absolute being, with just a thought he can control the entire universe space and freeze its movement.” Luo Feng was completely stunned, the leader of primal chaos city…he felt like he was the master of the universe!

Right, Master!

“Damn, I’ve followed your teacher for over 60 million years. I’ve never seen such a powerful and brutal being.” In his mind Babata’s high voice resounded, “That’s sick, I’ve seen a universe country leader make a move. I thought that was terrifying as within an instant he controlled the space and destroyed or and injured countless within a starfield. However it still pales in comparison to that primal chaos city leader’s attack! This leader must definitely be a pinnacle being. I even feel like this primal universe is his!”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

There was indeed that feeling of the city being the leader’s, and the leader was the universe itself.

“Primal universe, there’s just this one primal chaos city.”

“It’s a lot more ancient than many universe countries. The leader of this city, is the true pinnacle being of the vast universe.” Luo Feng completely held his breath, he had the confidence of becoming an undying, even the power to head towards becoming a universe country leader. No matter what happened, as least he was able to see and touch this dream of his!

A universe country leader, opening a new universe country, not

falling for a trillion years.

That was already a heavenly goal.

In the history of the entire humanity in the universe, it took trillions of years for a universe country leader to appear. Hence, one could only imagine it's difficulty.

As for the even higher primal chaos city leader…Luo feng felt like he did when he was young looking into the skies.

He was mortal, that leader was like the gods himself. For someone that small to look up, it made him wonder…is that a place a normal person can actually reach?

"Universe country leader, dominating for a trillion years, they were all unbelievable existences, and even during your teacher's life span, there was no news of any new universe country leaders being produced at all! Even stronger than a universe country leader? My god." Babata had completely descended into madness.

……

The ancient primal chaos city, Luo Feng and the group of youths stood in the tower, watching the splits in spaces within the skies. Those splits had threads of origin laws interweaving between each other. Watching them gave off a feeling of the origin laws and their peculiar ripples mixing with each other.

Luo Feng and the group were immersed within.

They were all geniuses that had stepped through the gateway of the origin laws, hence it was naturally very easy to get immersed within. If it was some normal fighter or spirit reader that hadn't stepped through the entrance, they'd only be stunned while watching this scene in front of them.

They had been stimulated.

Of the hundred, they were all proud geniuses, all absolute geniuses within their universe countries. However no matter how absolute a genius they were...there was a group every 5000 years! Just how many were there in a trillion years? However, since the primal universe had humans from a long time ago, with countless vast and long time flows, how long did it take for a primal chaos city leader like person to appear?

They were all stimulated!

The group of proud geniuses were all holding their breaths within. Even if they couldn't become a primal chaos city leader, they would still become universe country leaders. However their logical side was telling them...even for the most genius of the group ... Bolan, his chances of becoming a universe country leader was probably at most 1 over 10 million, much less the rest of them.

"...Wei Te, Luo Feng...you 12 follow me, enter the 9 universe primal chaos tablet room." The black robed receiver came to castle and called 12 names.

Standing there with his eyes closed and immersed in his training, Luo Feng had to be awoken by his living AI Babata before he startled. After which, he followed the other 11 young geniuses who chose the 9 universe tablet, all being led by the black robed receiver into the training room.

Chapter 12 – Participation

The city leader's residence was extremely spacious. There were many constructs within, taking up a circular area of 1,000 Li.

The black robed receiver took Luo Feng and the group of 12 through a pathway that was about 60m wide and 120m tall. The sides of that pathway had huge bronze doors, every one of them were 160m long and 120m tall and each of them had ancient words on them.

Muzu, Huge Axe, Dragon age...

Before each door stood a kind looking old man.

The peculiar thing was!

The old man standing before each door all looked exactly similar.

"There are a total of 52 doors here, each of them leading to one of the 52 primal chaos tablet rooms." The black robed receiver smiled, "Ahead is the 9 universe tablet training room entrance. Oh, we've arrived."

Luo Feng looked at the huge bronze door.

The bronze door that had been here for over a hundred million years had two universe language words on it. 9 doors, at 120 tall, it

made one able to help but look up to see it in its entirety! Beside the door stood an old man with a vertical eye on his forehead, similar in appearance to all the other old men.

“Lord Kandeli.” The black robed receiver bowed.

“Hm.” The 3 eyed old man smiled and looked at Luo Feng and the group, “A new group of punks from the Virtual Universe Company?”

“Yes.”

The black robed receiver was incomparably respectful, following which he turned and looked at the group, “This is Lord Kandeli, the guardian of the primal chaos tablet training rooms. Before each of the 52 tablet doors...they are all clones that Lord Kandeli has conjured. He has been guarding the 52 doors for over a million eras, he’s the most respected warrior in primal chaos city.”

Hua!

The group of youths were shocked as they looked at this ordinary kind looking 3 eyed old man. They were surprised to find out that it was actually one person guarding all 52 doors. As one of the 3 treasures of Primal chaos city, the importance of these 52 tablets were inconceivable. Allowing one person to conjure 52 clones to watch over them, just how strong was this person? And he had been guarding them for over a million eras...

As for the master of the Yun Mo Planet Hu Yan Bo, he had only been living for over 6000 eras.

“Lord Kandli.” Luo Feng and the group bowed respectfully.

“Hehe, they are really young, looking at you is akin to looking to the future hope of humanity.” Kandeli smiled and nodded, “Wait a moment, the group inside are coming out momentarily.”

“Yes.” Luo feng and the group obediently complied.

“Incredible! Primal chaos city is indeed the sacred training land of humanity. The strong are like clouds, powerful beyond reason. In an instant we met a guardian that has been watching over the rooms for over a million eras, an old monster.” Babata shouted shocked, “Your teacher was stronger than you and he had lived longer too. However the amount of strong warriors he’s met pales in comparison to you. The difference in the circles you travel in, really depicts the people you meet.”

The master of the Yun Mo Planet was after all a lone warrior. Him meeting even one universe country leader was a rare occurrence.

Even though Luo Feng was weak, however he had entered the core of the Virtual Universe Company. Hence, getting the opportunity to interact with the pinnacle of the human race and other unbelievable beings was not a surprise at all.

“Lord Kandeli, Lord Kandeli.” A shout resounded.

Shua!

With a gold band on his head and boots on his feet, an ape youth emitting a strong aura suddenly appeared at the entrance of the bronze door. He immediately bowed respectfully at Lord Kandeli, and looking at Luo Feng’s group, he smiled from his eyes, “Lord Kandeli, looks like my timing was just right. I’ll be able to enter with them to participate. If I was a bit slower, I’d have to wait another 7 days.”

“Ah, you’ve broken through?” Kandeli smiled as he looked at the ape youth.

“Right, I’ve successfully passed the 6th level, thereby getting another 7 days to view and study the tablet.” The Ape youth said.

Kandeli closed his eyes for a couple of seconds and opened after, nodding, “Hm, you’ve indeed received another 7 days to study the tablet.”

“Addition?”

In the group beside, Luo Feng thought, “When you first enter primal chaos city, one can receive 7 days to study the tablet. And from the looks of it...it seems like fulfilling a condition, or passing some test, one can get another chance.” How does one actually receive another chance to study the tablet? Luo Feng and the group

still didn't know. However they believed they would learn about it soon, after all they were going to stay in primal chaos city for 30 years.

They quietly waited.

After about 5 to 6 minutes, "Rumble..." The entire bronze door opened gradually. The chaos energy leaked out from within, making it impossible to see clearly within.

"Come out!" Kandeli looked inside and roared softly.

His voice resounded continuously within the training room. Very quickly, human silhouettes began to emerge from the chaos energy flow, and many seemed to be covering their ears with their hands. There was one tall and sturdy youth with 6 eyes on his forehead. He seemed reluctant as he turned back to take one last look, however he still left in the end.

"You 13, you can enter now." Kandeli looked at the group before them, "After 7 days, the door will open and you will exit immediately, understood?"

"Understood."

The group nodded.

"Ok." Kandeli nodded, "Go in."

The group immediately entered one after another, filled with anticipation and nervousness.

The training room was extremely huge and the chaos energy revolved within.

Luo Feng carefully surveyed the area, looking at the chaos energy revolve about a huge stone tablet, “That’s the 9 universe tablet?” Luo Feng felt both anticipation as well as nervousness. The other 11 youths too were similar, only that ape youth was very familiar with the insides of the training room as he began his study immediately.

Drawing close to the primal chaos tablet, only then could one see it clearly.

This was a 100m tall, 100m wide primal chaos tablet. On it were 9 pictures and at the sides of the tablet were universe language words...9 universe. Every picture was similar to the pictures on the walls they had seen before. However the feeling it gave off was obviously different.

From the earlier viewing of the pictures of the 9 universe before, they already knew how it looked.

The 1st picture was that of a drizzle of rain. However on careful examination, one would realize there were only 9 drops of rain!

The 2nd picture was that of continuous rain. On careful examination, there was a total of 36 rain drops.

The 3rd picture was that of a downpour. Large amounts of rain gathered together, there were a total of 108 rain drops.

The 4th was that of a star diagram. One planet had 4 moons surrounding it.

The 5th was that of a galaxy. With 12 planets within, everyone with different amounts of moons.

The 6th was Galaxia, with countless planets forming a vast galaxia. Even when Luo Feng was viewing the picture before, he had asked Babata to count them but he too was unable to determine the number of planets, as there were many areas that were distant and faint. They seemed to be filled with planets, yet it was impossible to count the exact number.

The 7th picture, seemed like a peculiar beast.

The 8th was also similarly to the peculiar beast.

The 9th picture was one with countless peculiar beasts, it was impossible to count them.

If one said that with these set of 1-6 pictures, Luo feng could still faintly understand a little and feel the faint origin law paths within the 9 universe tablet, then the final set of pictures 7 to 9, they were

extremely abstract.

Luo Feng simply felt they were some weird beasts. How could they possible hold anything with regards to the origin laws, they were simply too abstract.

However!

The 52 primal chaos tablets were still the treasures of the humanity of the universe. By comprehending any one of the tablets, becoming a universe country leader would be simple. As such, countless absolute warriors had regarded the set of pictures 7 to 9 held unbelievable profound mysteries within. It's simply Luo Feng's power was too weak. Hence, he couldn't even feel a hint of its meaning.

……

Luo Feng had seen the entire 9 universe tablet In the picture before, however now when faced with the actual thing…

Especially when seeing the 1st drizzle picture, his consciousness immediately got immersed within. Those 9 rain drops began to morph into limitless images within his mind. One had to know that Luo Feng had 3 bodies, and as all 3 bodies had consciousness conduits, like the one of an earth human was within the consciousness of the soul.

The golden horned beast's conduit was the internal core within.

The Mosha clan's was within the life crystal.

And as the 3 were one, their consciousness was linked.

Hence whatever Luo Feng saw, naturally the other two would see within his internal space.

"Roar..."Within the golden horned beast's eyes, the 9 rain drops became extremely sharp claws, a powerful waving tail, even like golden horns shooting out...

The Mosha clan clone, who was in the form of a black clothed Luo Feng, wielding a shield and a blade, the internal life core slightly revolved, melding perfectly with the space origin laws. He felt that the 9 drops formed blade work which was infused with space laws. As the mosha clan was favoured by space itself, the Mosha clan automatically began to unleash its bladework.

And the human being standing right before the 9 universe tablet, looking at the 9 drops...

He could faintly see 9 different concepts, almost as though it became 9 golden blades that continuously formed and rippled over and over like strong waves...

.....

They were all good at different things, hence the things they saw were different.

Yet all these different paths led to one destination!

To be able to be called one of the treasures of Primal chaos city, a treasure of the entire humanity, the 9 universe tablet was indeed a mysterious and incredibly profound. The energy and origin laws emanating from it, would automatically suck the viewer in to subconsciously study it. As it was incredibly valuable, one would get the chance to study it when one first enters primal chaos city. However, one would have to rely on his own comprehension after to perceive the profoundness of these tablets.

Resources were limited.

A true strong warrior, only he would receive 1, 2, maybe even 3 more times ...to study them again. Every time lasting 7 days!

.....

The 13 people within the training room were completely immersed, unable to even comprehend the amount of time that passed.

“Rumble...” The huge bronze door rumbled open, the 13 still immersed within weren’t even awoken from that.

“Come out!”

A voice resounded within, immediately piercing into all their minds.

“Come out! Come out! Come out! Come out!”...The voice repeatedly resounded within their minds, getting louder as it continued, causing all of them to be startled and awoken. That continuous roar within his mind caused Luo Feng to grab his head unconsciously.

Sou, sou, sou, the 13 quickly rushed outside, during the time they passed through the entrance, only then did the repeated roars vanish, and they regained comfort.

“Has it ended?”

When Luo Feng walked through the entrance, he turned back reluctantly to give it one last look. However with the chaos energy revolving within, one couldn’t see the tablet clearly. Only now did Luo Feng understand why the previous group was reluctant as they left.

Chapter 13 – Heavenly Bridge

In front of the training room, the ape youth bowed respectfully at the guardian Kandeli and later became a beam of light and left.

“You 12 wait for a moment.” The guardian Kandeli smiled.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng looked curiously at the old man. The other geniuses were also curious as Kandeli smiled, “This is the first time for you all entering the training room. Let me give you some advice...First go look for the place where you will stay for the next 30 years. Then enter the virtual universe and request to enter the Heavenly Bridge.”

“Enter the Heavenly bridge?” Luo Feng and the rest were curious.

“Once you enter the virtual universe network and enter the Heavenly bridge, you’ll understand.” Kandeli smiled indifferently, “You can leave now.”

The guardian didn’t wish to speak any more, Luo Feng and his group could only leave.

Leaving the residence, Luo Feng separated from the 12 and began looking for his quarters.

The amount of area Primal chaos city had was vast. Except for several special constructs, the rest of the buildings were identical, and most of the doors were white, meaning there wasn't anybody living in there.

"Where should I choose to live for the next 30 years?"

Luo Feng pondered, "Hm, I'll choose the center of the city, the quieter buildings." The city leader's residence was the center of the entire city. Surrounding this residence were many buildings, which were mostly empty. Luo Feng very quickly found a more deserted living quarters.

Standing before the door, he placed his hand on it.

"Di, di, di..." The door made several noises and simultaneously started to turn grey, from white to grey, until it finally stopped.

"Welcome master." An electronic voice resounded.

"Hm."

Luo Feng entered the living quarters. The 1st level was an extremely huge living room, within it the facilities were incredibly luxurious and advanced, the electronic voice continued, "I am a service AI. During your time of stay, I will service you. Whatever you need, for example food, drinks etc, please feel free to order."

"Hm." Luo Feng followed the stairs upwards and became a beam

of light, immediately reaching the balcony on the 3rd floor.

On that balcony there were several casual markings left behind by warriors that had trained there before. However they were random and unruly, even though he could faintly feel some of their special energies, however after seeing one of the 52 primal chaos tablet, he didn't have much interest in such random messy scribbles.

His time in the primal universe was extremely valuable, he couldn't waste any of it on such low efficiency methods.

"Hu!"

"From today on, I'll truly begin my training days within primal chaos city!" Luo Feng surveyed his surroundings. In the distance he could see warriors training hard on their balconies. Many of them had almost similar appearances, their hairs had grown extra long, almost as though they hadn't moved in many years.

"I'll first enter the virtual universe network."

.....

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang Mountain, Absolute beginning region, villa 1136.

Luo Feng appeared within his villa.

“Your majesty!”

A group of staff and waiters bowed.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded and asked simultaneously, “Request to enter Heavenly bridge.”

“Understood.”

On his shoulder, the fist sized virtual helper Babata immediately connected to the virtual universe main system and requested. Very quickly, a sound rang in Luo Feng’s mind, “Identity confirmed, Luo Feng, you’ve gained eternal access to enter the Heavenly bridge, we hope you work hard and reach the end of the Heavenly bridge. Beginning transfer!”

Shua!

Luo Feng immediately vanished from the villa.

……

Virtual universe, within a special space.

This was an endless ocean, the waves flowed one after another.

And above the ocean there was one single beautiful island. Beside it were 52 ports, and every port had an endless bridge extending out of it, all the way till the end of the horizon...almost as though it was connecting into the distant horizon. These 52 bridges completely covered the entire air above the ocean.

Above the ocean, there was even a slight mist, making one unable to see clearly above the ocean. With the mist engulfing everything, it made the bridges look mystical and dreamy.

Luo Feng suddenly appeared in a plaza in the center of the island.

“Luo Feng.”

“Luo Feng, you’ve come too.”

There were already 9 other youths there. Luo Feng looked, these 9 were those that had studied the 9 universe tablet together with him.

“Do you all know, just what this place is?” Luo Feng asked curiously.

“’You can ask the lord watchman.”

The 9 pointed not too far away, there stood in the plaza a man dressed in a black star robe. He had 4 ears, no nose, his entire being seemed friendly as he smiled and walked over, “How are you, Luo Feng. I am the Heavenly bridge’s watchman Bevin, however I

prefer others to call me watchman."

"How do you do Lord watchman." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"Let me introduce you." The watchman Bevin nodded, "This Heavenly bridge is built specifically for the 52 primal chaos tablets."

"Over the trillions of years, our universe humanity has had many people studying the 52 primal chaos tablets. Hence within primal chaos city, they naturally formed 52 sects." The watchman Bevin exclaimed, "For example, you all studied the 9 universe tablet, naturally you will belong to the 9 universe sect and will be one of their members. However while you've all studied the same tablet, your comprehension levels will be different, and only the strong ones will receive another chance to study the tablet from Primal chaos city."

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

Another chance to study?

After just one study of the 9 universe tablet, he had already understood his direction and training for quite awhile. This level of improvement and growth was very addictive. If he could study the tablet once again, how perfect would that be.

"How does one prove his strength, that doesn't rely on words." The watchman Bevin smiled, "Hence we've built this Heavenly

bridge within the virtual universe. By passing each level and reaching further, would mean one's strength is growing!"

"On this island there are 52 bridges, each for the 52 tablets. You studied the 9 universe tablet, hence you will venture into the 9 universe heavenly bridge. This 9 universe bridge is incredibly long, each level gets harder, there are a total of 27 levels!"

"If one can pass the 1st level, he'd receive another chance to study the tablet. Every time one passes a level, he'd receive another chance!" The watchman Bevin smiled as he looked at Luo Feng.

"Ah." Luo Feng realized.

Right.

The ape youth they had met at the entrance of the training room before, he had said, "Hm, I've successfully passed the 6th level, I get another 7 days to study."

Obviously one would get another chance after passing one level.

"However, the heavenly bridge is extremely hard to pass." The watchman Bevin exclaimed, "For young people such as yourselves, normally you wouldn't even be able to pass the 1st level."

Luo Feng was shocked.

“The 9 universe heavenly bridge has a total of 27 levels! The further you make, it represents your understanding of the 9 universe tablet is getting deeper and stronger. If you fully comprehend the entire tablet, you’d be able to make it past all 27 levels, however…that’s simply too difficult.”

“Even the Undyings normally only make it to level 10.” The watchman Bevin sighed, “If you can make it to the 18th level, you’d be an undying that’s almost invincible. Making it to level 21…one can become a universe country leader.”

“What?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Making it to level 21, one can become a universe country leader!

Becoming a universe country leader was incredibly difficult, then one could only imagine how hard it was to make it to level 21. Even becoming undying was incredibly difficult…hence making it to level 10 of the tower was already impressive. As for the highest level 27, only those that fully comprehended the entire 9 universe primal chaos tablet could accomplish it, that was too far away.

“Work hard!” The watchman Bevin smiled, “This is the path to the pinnacle, there’ve been many who’ve walked down the 52 paths in humanity. The moment you pass the 18th level, you’d also receive the right to become an eternal member of primal chaos city, you don’t need any slots in the namelists or anything else!”

“Ah?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

Eternal member of Primal chaos city?

However passing 18 levels was simply too difficult.

“Those that entered before have failed.” The watchman Bevin looked at Luo Feng and the group, “Next one, go pass the heavenly bridge.”

“I’ll go.”

The 9 that arrived there, one after another they became beams of lights that flew towards the 9 universe heavenly bridge. After 2 minutes, the watchman said, “Another failure, next one.”

“Another failure, next.”

“Failure, next.”

……

“All have failed, there’s only you Luo Feng left.”

At this time, the number of new people trying to pass the bridge was a total of 12, two of which had tried before Luo Feng arrived, and the 11 before him had all failed, leaving only Luo Feng left. This made him feel extreme pressure. “Obviously passing the bridge is extremely hard, these were all geniuses, and there were 3 from the Absolute beginning region, yet none of them had even

passed the 1st level."

"Luo Feng, work hard." The watchman Bevin smiled at him, "From this batch, including the close to 900 who've tried before, up to 90% have tried passing the bridge."

"So many, except for Bolan, no one else has passed the 1st level."

"What?" Luo Feng was shocked.

There were many that had entered the training rooms earlier. Luo Feng had to spend his first day in the tower, hence he and this batch of youth geniuses could only now go through the trials, this was completely normal.

"Bolan is very strong, he continuously passed both the 1st and 2nd levels, receiving 2 extra chances to study." The watchman Bevin exclaimed, "As for the rest, even the other Primal region member Long Yun couldn't even pass the 1st level, none of them did."

Stress.

Luo Feng felt tremendous pressure. From his batch of geniuses, Bolan, Long Yun, Jia Lai Xi, they had all tried passing the bridge, based on the time they entered the training room. During the time Luo Feng entered his...those that had chosen the Huge Axe tablet, Rong Jun and the Manka youth Wuka had yet to enter theirs.

Hence, the only remaining geniuses from the Absolute beginning that had yet to go through the bridge were Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka.

“Go on!” The watchman Bevin looked with anticipation at Luo Feng.

Sou!

Luo Feng became a beam of light and immediately headed towards the extremely long Heavenly bridge. From afar he could see that the bridge he headed to had the stone tablet with the words 9 universe on it.

Chapter 14 – True Yan Emperor

The Heavenly bridge extended way beyond the horizon, with a white mist engulfing it, and the ocean below choppy with waves.

The moment Luo Feng entered the 9 universe bridge, within his mind Babata's voice resounded, "Luo Feng, we just received a mail, it's from the Virtual Universe Company."

"What does it say?" Luo Feng asked.

"It's the points reward system." Babata said.

"Points?"

Luo Feng stood on the bridge, excited within. There were many incredibly valuable items within the Virtual Universe Company, like the level 5 spirit weapons and sorts were only worth about 10 points, even the life fruits one could exchange for. This level of wealthy exchange was enough to make others speechless. However, one had to have sufficient points to exchange for them. Even with a crazy amount of wealth, within the Virtual Universe Company, they only recognized the point system.

"Point system exchange, there are many ways to gain more points."

"Right now in Primal chaos city, you have one way to gain more points, that's to pass the Heavenly bridge." Babata said, "There's a

total of 27 levels in the 9 universe bridge!”

“Passing the 1st level, you’ll get 100 points.”

“Passing the 2nd, you’ll get 200.”

“Passing the 3rd, you’ll get 400 points.”

“They compound as you go further, 800, 1600, 3200...”

Luo Feng calculated quickly, if one were to pass over 10 levels, 20 levels, the points would be absurd.

However, simply passing the 21st level, one would be able to become a universe country leader. This showed how hard obtaining the points truly was.

“Luo Feng, the mail even says that since you are a new person to primal chaos city, to the youth geniuses, the Virtual Universe Company has a special reward system. As long as one passes the levels in their first 30 years of their initial stay, they will get 10 fold of their rewards, meaning...”

“In these 30 years, if you pass the 1st level, your reward is 1,000 points, the 2nd level being 2,000...and so on and so forth! This 10 times reward is only for 1st timers and new people to primal chaos city. In the future when you re-enter the city, there’ll be no such good thing.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Originally the 1st couple of levels were 100 points and 200...

Right now they were 1,000 and 2,000 instead.

This was a special reward for the youths, however as they were youths, many had simply just begun comprehension of the origin laws. As the watchman Bevin had said earlier, of the 1,000 geniuses that entered in this batch, close to 900 had tried and other than Bolan, no one had even passed the 1st level!

Wishing to get points?

Difficult!

“I’ll give it a shot.” Luo Feng looked a the Heavenly bridge that extended forever. He finally squinted his eyes and became a beam of light flying forward.

Primal chaos city.

Luo Feng and that 12 were considered the later ones to go through the test. Others like Bolan and Jia Lai Xi, Ai Chen etc, many had already tested earlier on, and they swiftly understood more about primal chaos city already.

“If one wants to become an eternal member of primal chaos city, there should be several methods. However the most impressive would be passing the 18th level on the Heavenly bridge! Anyone who passes the 18th level on the bridge, that would be an invincible being even amongst the undying, and they’d earn the right to open their own sub sect within primal chaos city!” Jiang Mo exclaimed.

“52 sects, there are indeed many sub sects.” Qian Shui nodded.

“To be able to open a sub sect is very impressive.” Jiang Mo said, “Within their own sect, they have extremely high achievements. However to be able to enter these sub sects to listen to the strong warriors give lessons, one still has to at least pass the 3rd level.”

These were the sacred training grounds of the entire humanity. There were 52 great sects, and within each there were many strong warriors with their sub sects. And to be able to gain the recognition of the city leader, to have the right to create one’s own sub sect and be a leader, one has to at least pass the 18th level!

These sub sect leaders purely gave lessons.

The disciples would go listen.

One had to pass the 3rd level to gain the right to go listen to the classes. If one couldn’t even pass the 3rd level, he didn’t have the right to go listen at all.

“52 primal chaos tablets, with different levels of profoundness.”

Jiang Mo exclaimed, “Of the 52 bridges, some only have 21 levels, some have 24 and some have 27, while the highest being 32! These 52 primal chaos tablets, of which only the Huge Axe tablet heavenly bridge has 32 levels.”

The levels of the bridge was a definite reflection of the profoundness of the primal chaos tablet.

That was because for all the bridges, passing level 21 would mean that person could become a universe country leader.

“Being more profound doesn’t mean it’s better.” Qian Shui shook her head, “To produce a universe country leader is extremely difficult. Even though these 52 tablets have different levels of profoundness, however out of trillions of geniuses hardly anyone ever reaches level 21. If one can’t even pass level 21, than the Huge Axe tablet’s later levels, what point is there?”

“Right.” Jiang Mo nodded.

……

Within the 52 primal chaos tablets, the 9 universe tablet was considered one of the more profound tablets, ranking in the top 5.

Of course, before becoming a universe country leader, discussing which tablet was more profound had no meaning at all. Just like the 9 universe’s 9 pictures, especially the last 3 pictures, Luo Feng couldn’t feel anything from them whatsoever. They were simply

absurd, he couldn't even feel a trace of their origin laws.

.....

Primal chaos city, within a certain 9 level pagoda.

Primal chaos city was made up of most identical buildings and training quarters, however several special constructs...represented special areas and status.

On the 7th level of the 9 level pagoda.

A lady dressed in a black cotton dress was sitting crossed legged. The bottom half of her body was a huge snake tail, the snake tail coiled around and allowed her to sit crossed legged. Her expression was unclear and hard to discern, only her eyes were bright and resplendent, almost like the stars, like an entire galaxy was within, extremely enticing.

"You've come." A hoarse voice resounded from the snake tailed lady.

"Haha."

A tall and sturdy man, dressed in golden armor, with golden fur on his face, a strong looking ape man appeared within the pagoda, laughing loudly, "Wu Ni, you are also another sub sect leader within the 9 universe sect. No matter what you should open your doors and teach some lessons, give some pointers to the later

generations.”

The snake tailed lady said hoarsely, “True Yan Emperor, right now within the 9 universe sect, amongst the many sub sect leaders, you are the strongest. With you teaching the classes, I have no need to do it at all.”

“Haha…”The strong ape man laughed loudly, “We’ve both trained for a trillion years, burying our heads and simply training is already useless. Occasional inspiration may have some effect. From what I see, don’t keep locking yourself within this 9 universe pagoda, when we first built the 9 universe tower, we said we were going to comprehend all 9 pictures. That tall and mighty black mist emperor, how has she become so low profile?”

Amongst the undying, they had different statuses.

Normal undyings could become generals and lead an army.

The strong however are named emperors, like True Yan emperor or Black mist emperor, they were considered absolute beings amongst the undying, opening their own sub sects and teaching the later generations.

9 universe pagoda, its reputation within the city itself was huge, because back then when the black mist emperor built the 9 universe tower she said she would enter whichever level with regards to which picture she was studying. Obviously right now she had begun studying the 9 universe tablet’s 7th picture, hence she stayed within the 7th level of the pagoda.

“Let’s go, from my Virtual Universe Company’s newest batch of geniuses, there are 12 that chose the 9 universe tablet, let’s see if there are any good seedlings. No matter what, I am still the Virtual Universe Company’s True Yan emperor!” The ape man laughed.

“You are from the Virtual Universe Company, I’m from the Huge Axe dojo, why should I go with you.” The snake tailed lady muttered.

“You really aren’t giving me any face?” The ape man stared.

Even though these two had different levels of power, their relationship went deep. Both of them had opened their own subsect in primal chaos city, they both studied the 9 universe tablet together back then, discussing their own comprehension of the origin laws, and this had been going on for 18 eras, while becoming one of the legends within primal chaos city.

Their many discussions had led to the two breaking through the levels time and again.

“Let’s go.” The snake tailed lady shot a glance at the ape man.

“Haha.” The ape man laughed.

……

Virtual universe, Heavenly bridge.

Two people appeared in mid air above the island, the ape man and the snake tailed lady. The willpower and energy pressure that naturally seeped out from the both of them alone made others feel as though they were facing an entire endless space before them.

“True Yan Emperor, Black mist emperor.” The watchman Bevin was extremely respectful.

“How are the results of the test in the 9 universe sect?” The ape man looked at the watchman, the watchman Bevin replied respectfully, “There’s a total of 12 for the 9 universe tablet this time, of which 11 have already ended their trial. Right now the last one is going on, and is probably the one with the most hope of these 12, he’s called Luo Feng.”

“The one with the most hope?” The apeman’s golden fur ruffled a little.

“Hm, the 11 before have all failed, none have been able to pass the 1st level.” The watchman Bevin said.

“Failure is not the matter.” The apeman smiled, “Some are defeated immediately, some struggle for awhile before losing, and some almost won. This also represents their differences in strength. Send me the footage of the previous 11, in awhile, also send me the footage of Luo Feng’s battle.”

“Yes.” The watchman Bevin immediately picked out the 11 videos.

As the watchman, Bevin usually had many matters to attend to, things like the footage of the people attempting the heavenly bridge and others.

Hu! Hu! Hu!

11 scenes appeared before the ape man True Yan emperor, he watched with interest as the battles simultaneously played.

“Hm.” True Yan Emperor rubbed his chin and stroked his golden beard, his mouth twitching.

……

At the time, Luo Feng had reached the end of the 1st level of the 9 universe bridge.

“Choose your opponent, you can choose a fighter, spirit reader controller, spirit reader hypnotist, pick anyone, if you win against your opponent, you’ll pass the 1st level.” Ahead of Luo Feng was a huge cloud mist, from it the voice boomed.

According to the information Luo Feng had acquired.

He had to defeat his opponent before the mist would dissipate

and he would be able to enter the 2nd level.

“I choose…controller!” Luo Feng exclaimed.

Hu!

From the mist flew out a black liquid. This black liquid began to condense and gather in mid air, forming a mysterious human silhouette with a black mask. This mysterious man stood on a dark cloud shuttle, carrying a dark golden long rod the Nan Shen Armament, behind the black mask his cold eyes stared at Luo Feng, and he shouted, “Let the battle begin!”

Chapter 15 – The 1st Level

“Defeat him, and you’ll be able to proceed to the 2nd level.” That cloud mist resounded.

“How is he so similar to me, using the dark cloud shuttle and the Nan Shen Armament?” Luo Feng squinted. With a thought, 6 square shaped Absolute Void shields along with the blood shadow blade’s Golden shadow blade, simultaneously a dark golden long rod behind him immediately shot out a total of 54 beams of light.

Every 9 beams swiftly combined and formed very real golden blades that were 1/3 of a meter long!

The Nan Shen Armament 2nd level…Sky piercing formation. The main form was to create one true blade, however Luo Feng immediately produced 6 of them. One of the reasons was because he had broken through from the star level 9 to the universe level 1, and more importantly, over his 3 years travel through the universe, his strength had increased shockingly.

“Kill!” The mysterious man roared, the dark cloud shuttle rushed over and he swiftly formed 3 real golden blades behind him too.

The two of them were both controllers!

Both rushed towards each other swiftly, one controlling 6 golden blades while the other 3.

“Over these 3 years, I haven’t relaxed at all. Compared to the genius battle, I’m much stronger than before! I will let you test my powers!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed with endless fighting spirit. 6 golden blades immediately seemed extremely well organized, working about each other and immediately piercing forward!

Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang!

In mid air, the 6 blades engaged in a frenzied battle against the mysterious person’s 3 blades.

“What’s going on?” Luo Feng was shocked within.

Before coming to primal chaos city, he was already able to unleash 6 blades...controlling these 6 blades had become comfortable and best for himself as he was used to it. Even after studying the primal chaos tablet for 7 days, with huge improvements, he still chose to use only 6 blades as this was his most optimum attack formation.

“He actually blocked it, I don’t believe this!” Luo Feng’s eyes were cold.

6 golden blades, almost like 6 excellent soldiers working together, attacking and pulling back together, very perfect, attacking time and again...trying time and again to break through the 3 golden blades to kill the enemy.

However!

Fail! Fail! Fail!

Failure over and over. That mysterious person's 3 blades were controlled in a very special way, almost as though the 3 weren't separate at all, but was one perfect body! The 3 blades gave off a feeling...of endless waves rushing towards the enemy! Like an enormous mountain that reached the skies, immovable!

"How is this possible?" Luo Feng was shocked within, "I'm using 6 blades, he only has 3, how can I not have any advantage?"

Hardwork!

He tried time and again with different methods to control the 6 blades with perfect precision, however the opponent stayed floating in mid air, easily blocking with the 3 blades.

"Stupid, you don't even know something so simple." The mysterious man's eyes through the black mask had a sense of ridicule, "And you think you can pass the 1st level, go and die!"

Xiu!

The 3 blades the masked man was controlling suddenly changed formation. They suddenly drew closer to each other, giving off a 3 become 1 feeling, like a huge blade that was insatiable and powerful. Luo Feng was shocked within as he controlled his 6 blades to block it, "Rumble..." With a huge clash, his 6 blades were

completely knocked away.

"How..." In the distant air, Luo feng was taken aback.

"Haha, stupid! Stupid! Stupid!" The mysterious man roared.

Against the 3 rainbows that pierced over, Luo Feng roared fiercely, "Rise!"

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

3 more golden blades rose from behind Luo Feng, the 6 that were knocked away rose back up too. Luo Feng's body glowed in a glaring golden light, it rippled throughout in all directions, and later swiftly condensed itself around the 9 blades, the 9 blades seemed to form a large formation!

With golden threads weaving in and through, the golden energy flowed throughout with the blades within, with Luo Feng as the center of a 300m round space, immediately a glaring golden energy world was formed, with countless amounts of energy flowing within that ball of space.

It may have seemed slow.

In truth, the moment the 9 blades rose, they swiftly formed the ball of space.

Nan Shen Armament's 3rd level, Heavenly blade formation!

Also known as the blade domain!

There were a total of 9 levels in the Nan Shen Armament, of which the 2nd level the sky piercing formation was the fusion of 9 golden illusionary blades to form one true blade. The 3rd level however required simultaneously producing 9 true blades, that's equivalent to 81 golden little blades forming them in total. It was extremely difficult, hundreds of times more so than the 2nd level!

Luo Feng was able to successfully unleash this.

With his huge improvement over the past 3 years, and his spirit energy reaching universe level 1.

Chi chi chi...

The 3 beams of golden rainbows, seemed to get lost within that round space, weakened by the countless blade energy, their speeds slowing by quite abit.

"I admit you are very strong, however against absolute strength, you will still lose!" Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and rushed swiftly towards the distant mysterious man.

Sword domain, with Luo Feng as the center.

Luo Feng rushed, the entire domain swiftly followed him.

“Break! The mysterious man swiftly dodged and let out a roar!

Chi!

The 3 blades he controlled immediately closed in together. Countless golden threads weaved through, surrounding these blades and forming a golden huge blade. The dreamy golden huge blade swiftly knocked away the countless blade energy obstructing it and with its dreamy rainbow light, pierced towards Luo Feng.

“What move is this?” Luo Feng was shocked, he trained with the Nan Shen Armament, studied it, yet he didn’t know this move.

“Heavenly blade!”

Luo Feng roared.

Chi!

The 9 blades that formed the sword domain immediately became one body and with his spirit reading control, immediately 1 of the blades was like a hunting leopard, bringing with it the power of the sword domain and immediately pierced towards that golden huge blade. The entire domain with the countless blade energy seemed to have received orders to empower the blade, following it from

behind,

A golden blade empowered with the sword domain!

A huge golden blade formed by the 3 blades!

They clashed!

“Rumble!”

The golden blade immediately got knocked back, that golden huge blade was like a large ship smashing its way forward, immediately knocking away his blade and reaching before him.

Without anytime to dodge, Luo Feng wielded his blade to form a shield.

“Rumble!”

Luo Feng used his shield trying to deflect some of the force away, yet he only felt as though a majestic mountain had crashed into him, causing his entire body to tremor with fresh blood spewing out of his mouth, “No wonder even the Heavenly blade couldn’t stop it, this power is too unbelievable.” Following which his consciousness was lost.

……

When he awoke, he had returned to the virtual universe's Yu Xiang Mountain, within the Absolute beginning region, his own villa.

"Your majesty." The waiters and guards bowed.

"hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Your majesty went to try the heavenly bridge, how did it go?" The villa head, also the leader of the guards, Sector lord Ao Duo Li Ke asked.

"Failure." Luo Feng shook his head.

"The heavenly bridge is very hard to pass, failure during the 1st time is very normal, your majesty needn't fret too much about it." Ao Duo Li Ke said.

Luo Feng seemed very calm on the surface, he returned to his study.

Within the study.

"I lost." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, "Our batch of 1,000, about 900 have been tested, except for Bolan passing the two levels, no one else has made it. Failure...I'm no exception, however the 1st opponent I met, similarly uses the Nan Shen Armament, using only 3 golden blades, he actually broke my Heavenly blade formation."

“Foundation!”

“Luo Feng, I’ve always said the foundation is very important. You are able to unleash 9 golden blades to form the heavenly blade formation, he only used 3 blades yet he can win. This is the importance of foundation.” On his shoulder, the fist sized Babata shouted.

“It’s not the same, he uses the Nan Shen Armament in a totally different way.” Luo Feng recalled the battle before, “Be it controlling 6 blades, or 9…no matter, they seemed to be single units, like 6 or 9 soldiers working together. The way he controlled it however, he was actually able to amplify their powers, like 1 true body. Especially that last move…the 3 blades fused together to form one huge golden blade!”

Nan Shen Armament 3rd level Heavenly blade formation.

The Nan Shen Armament’s 4th level Great work with little labor.

This 4th level, in truth was a great formation of the huge blade becoming one body, with absolute power to crush the enemy!

“I feel that his move was similar to the 4th level.” Luo feng creased his eyebrows, “However it’s still different from the 4th level, the 4th level is much more complex and stronger than his, and he was merely fusing 3 blades, however their fusion power was absurd.”

“This is the trial of the 9 universe tablet…”

The 1st picture of the 9 universe tablet flashed across Luo Feng’s mind…The rain drop picture, there were a total of 9 drops. After 7 days of study, he didn’t have a lot of comprehension from it. At this time he recalled the battle scene, thinking of the raindrop picture, he seemed to recall a part of the picture of which 3 drops seemed to fuse together.

“Don’t tell me…”

Luo Feng’s eyes glowed brighter.

The 7 days of study in his mind, began to fuse with his 3 years of study and experience of the Nan Shen Armament, the ideas clashed and ignited a huge spark of inspiration within, ideas and thoughts began to form continuously.

Excited!

Anticipation!

“I understand, I understand!” Luo Feng couldn’t help but shout out.

“I shouldn’t blindly follow the blueprints!” Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh out loud, “The Nan Shen armament was built as a

weapon by a strong warrior. Blindly following its most basic ways of usage is too rigid, and too stupid. No wonder he called me stupid, it was indeed very stupid! The raindrop picture, that's the true way to unleash the strongest power from the Nan Shen Armament!"

9 universe primal chaos tablet!

It held within it the true pathway. Even the usage of any weapon, among everything else can be comprehended through this huge pathway, eventually finding the most correct path. Even though he failed this time, however the benefit and thoughts that stirred from it was even better than success!

"Let's begin."

Luo Feng couldn't wait any longer.

Chapter 16 – Universe Country Leader

Virtual universe training grounds, the most optimum simulation place.

As the virtual universe allowed one to customize the most optimized simulation, it being 100% similar to reality was not a surprise at all. Hence compared to actually training in reality, in terms of experience, comprehension, effect etc, they were completely the same.

Just like how the cost of using the slaughterhouse was extremely high, countless warriors still go there, and as a core member and having his own training ground, Luo Feng was in no rush to look around in primal chaos city's skies for the origin law energies, but immerse himself in comprehending the sparks of inspiration he had about the 9 universe tablet from before!

"Your majesty, his majesty Wuka is here for a visit." The bald sector lord Ao duo Li Ke shouted.

"Wuka?"

Luo Feng left the training grounds, becoming a blur and piercing through 10km of distance, immediately arriving at the entrance of the villa.

"Luo Feng, Luo Feng, something big has happened." This silver clothed black haired youth rushed over.

“What’s up?” Luo Feng smiled and asked.

“It’s Rong Jun.” The Manka prince was flushed red with excitement, saying, “You probably don’t know, yesterday we went to the Heavenly bridge to test, our batch of 30 were all under the Huge Axe bridge. However including me, everyone else failed the 1st level, only Rong Jun passed! Our batch of 1,000, only Bolan and Rong Jun passed, Bolan passed 2 levels and Rong Jun passed 1, everybody else failed even the 1st level.”

“What?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Rong Jun succeeded?

In the genius battle before, he and Rong Jun were pretty close in levels.

And during these 3 years of travel, his 3 great bodies had been training at a shocking rate. Even though it was not evident on the surface, Luo Feng had concluded...he was enough to be ranked 2nd! However the outcome of the Heavenly bridge was still like that.

“And also, just earlier.” Wuka continued, “The Leader of the Yuan Chen universe country, accepted Rong Jun as his disciple within primal chaos city.”

Universe country leader?” Luo Feng was stunned.

Universe country leader, dominating a vast universe country, even within the vast universe, they were considered among the governing level, under them were large amounts of undyings.

“How can that be?” Luo Feng couldn’t believe it, “Even Bolan didn’t attract any universe country leaders to come accept him as a disciple.”

“Right, I couldn’t believe it either.” Wuka shook his head, “At the universe country leader level, there’s absolutely no need to accept a disciple. They are already absolute beings that haven’t fallen for over a trillion years, beings that oversee a universe country! Even Bolan…his chances of becoming a universe country leader are extremely slim. Hence, geniuses aren’t worth the universe country leaders taking in as disciples. However, the Yuan chen universe country leader really took Rong Jun in! The news I got is definitely accurate, right now the 1,008 universe countries’ upper echelons are all receiving the news.”

“This, this…” Luo Feng couldn’t help but lose his composure.

Did the heavens drop some treats for him?

Death god Bolan, an absolute genius that everyone else from that batch naturally had to respect. Even he didn’t attract a universe country leader to personally accept him as a disciple. However Rong Jun got a country leader as a teacher!

“This still isn’t the most shocking thing.” Wuka spoke in a

hushed voice, “I got this news from my father.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“It wasn’t simply one universe country leader that wanted to take Rong Jun as a disciple, it was 2!” Wuka’s eyes gleamed, “However, you should know that behind the 1,008 universe countries lie the 5 great leviathans. Among these 2 universe country leaders, one was from the Virtual Universe Company while the other from the Huge Axe dojo. As Rong Jun is a member of the Virtual Universe Company, he finally became a disciple of Yuan Chen universe country leader.”

“What! Two universe country leaders competed for him? Luo Feng was speechless.

“No matter, Rong Jun is currently stronger than us.” Wuka gripped his fist tight, “Anyway I won’t admit defeat so easily. My father once said, these 30 years in primal chaos city is our beginning 30 years, and the cornerstone of our future endeavors. The training in primal chaos city has just started, it’s still hard to say who will come out on top.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

Not just Rong Jun, but Bolan was the number 1 target Luo Feng wanted to overcome.

“How’s your study of the 9 universe tablet?” Wuka asked

curiously.

"Still ok." Luo Feng said.

"I suggest you go to the empty training balconies around to take a look. There are many casual markings left behind by the earlier generations." Wuka smiled, "With our movement speed, spending 10 days to half a month is enough to do a full sweep to find a marking that fits us. Afterall primal chaos tablets are too profound, and other markings left behind may spark some inspiration. With these ideas sparking and helping each other, it will become easy to understand. That's what my father said!"

Luo Feng looked shocked at Wuka.

His 1st attempt on the Heavenly bridge alone had given him much inspiration, much improvement. This sort of ideas bouncing around was indeed effective.

"Thanks." Luo Feng said seriously.

"What thanks? there's only meaning when I compete with a strong person. The stronger the opponent, the faster my improvement." Wuka smiled, "I'm leaving, I'm going to look for some markings, knowing that Rong Jun was accepted as a disciple of a universe country leader, I'm currently burning with battle spirit." Following which he vanished.

Luo Feng nodded.

He couldn't look down on anyone. To be able to rank in the top 10 of 1,008 universe country geniuses, no one should be overlooked. He had the Mosha clan, the golden horned beast, could others have other special hidden trump cards behind?

"I've digested most of my 7 days of study. The 1st raindrop picture of the 9 universe, if I want to study it even deeper, a few days isn't going to do it, I too have to go look at some markings." Luo Feng's consciousness immediately left the virtual universe and back to primal chaos city, following which he began a large search through the primal chaos city grounds!

Virtual universe, Lightning island.

Lightning island was the gathering spot of the undyings within the virtual universe, the gathering spot of the true elites.

On the incredibly vast island, with clouds engulfing it, there were lightning snakes slithering about the corners of the island. If one said that the Yu xiang mountain was larger than ordinary planets, then Lightning island was more than a million Yu Xiang mountains.

"This batch of 1,000 geniuses, after going through the Heavenly bridge, how are the results?" Sitting high in a throne, the green armored purple scaled man's voice resounded down, booming across the incredibly huge shrine.

"Sir knight."

Below stood what seemed like an iron tower giant. An ape man with golden fur, his golden fur was incredibly glaring, his entire being like a galaxy, glowing and glaring, he respectfully reported, “This batch of 1,000 geniuses, 998 have all failed their first attempt, Bolan successfully passed 2 levels and Rong Jung passed 1. And watching the footage of their battles, the Absolute beginning members seemed to have good performances, like Luo feng, Qiang Shui, Wuka were all not bad, compared to the genius battles, their improvements are huge.”

“Hm.” The green armored purple scaled man nodded, “Only that Rong Jun gave me a shock, everyone else is still normal.”

“Send the footage of Rong Juns Heavenly bridge battle to me.” The green armored purple scaled man ordered.

“Yes sir knight.” The apeman respectfully sent over the footage.

Following which a screen floated within the shrine, on it the footage played of which Savage Rong Jun was like a wild war god, brutal and fierce. That huge blade swung with perfection, every slash was incredibly fierce, finally killing the opponent using the same blade.

The green armored purple scaled man watched calmly till it ended, slightly creasing his eyebrows, “You can leave.”

“Yes.” The Apeman left respectfully.

There was silence within the shrine.

The green armored purple scaled man watched the screen, muttering, “It’s weird, this Rong Juns battle talents are indeed shocking. Even though his comprehension level isn’t too strong, however he’s able to unleash such terrifying strength! At such a young age creating his own technique, he is a very powerful genius. However, it still isn’t enough for Yuan Chen or Gu Lun, these 2 universe country leaders to compete to accept him as their disciple.”

“Yuan Chen, Gu Lun, these 2 have lived for a long time, much more ancient than I.” The green armored man creased his eyebrows, “And they reached the knight level earlier than I did, maybe they discovered something I haven’t from the footage.”

As an absolute being similar to the Yuan Chen and Gu Lun country leaders.

9 blade knight was very clear the geniuses had no attractiveness to the universe country leaders, what was the point of nurturing a genius? Unless it was nurturing a universe country leader, otherwise it didn’t have much benefit to themselves.

Even Bolan didn’t make anyone fight to accept him.

Rong Jun however, had 2 country leaders compete to accept him.

“There must be a secret, Yuan Chen, Gu Lun, these 2 old punks are the country leaders that have lived the longest, they must have discovered something.” 9 blade knight watched the footage, with his level of being, he had already seen the footage and all its details incredibly clearly, whatever could be discovered would have been discovered already.

“Why?”

“What’s the secret?” 9 blade knight pondered awhile, he could only think deep within.

Primal chaos city, 7th level of the 9 level pagoda.

Dressed in golden armor, the ape man True Yan Emperor was discussing with the snake tail lady about the Yuan Chen universe country leader coming to primal chaos city and accepting Rong Jun as his disciple.

“Rong Jun, his battle talents are extremely high.” The snake tail lady said hoarsely, “His origin law comprehension might be lower, but he’s able to explode with terrifying strength. Very exceptional! Among this batch of 1,000 geniuses from the Virtual Universe Company, except for Bolan, the next is him.”

“You can’t just say that!”

True Yan Emperor said, “Of the 12 punks that chose the 9 universe tablet, there’s one that isn’t beneath Rong Jun, maybe

even a stronger genius."

"You are speaking of Luo Feng?" The snake tail lady nodded, "True, that punk is only universe level 1 and he's able to unleash the Heavenly blade formation. However he doesn't know how to adapt, stuck on the basic formations of the Nan Shen Armament. However his origin law comprehension is very solid. With such instruction, his battle strength will rise greatly! In terms of origin law comprehension, Bolan is 1st and Luo feng is indeed number 2!"

"Hm."

The ape man True Yan Emperor rubbed his chin, muttering, "This Luo Feng is definitely a good seedling in our 9 universe sect, I shall give him some hints."

"What are you doing?" The snake tail lady was shocked.

"What, that Rong Jun even has a universe country leader as a teacher. I'm just throwing some hints out." The ape man shook his head, "Right now in primal chaos city, within the 9 universe sect, I'm considered number 1. Those universe country leaders don't even look up to Luo Feng and Bolan. My standards aren't that high, I still respect them. When that Luo Feng passes the 3rd level of the heavenly bridge, he'll earn the right to listen to our classes, and after 100s of thousands of years, we may have an absolute undying within our sect. Haha..."

The snake tail lady shook her head and closed her eyes.

Looking at the situation, the ape man didn’t disturb her any further, immediately vanishing from the tower.

Chapter 17 – Floating Blood

Within Primal Chaos city, the energies revolved about.

Dressed in the armor formed by the cloud contact vine, Luo Feng was standing on a training balcony, looking at the other distant balconies. These past 8 days, he had been searching all over the city, there were many empty buildings all about the city that had markings left behind by the countless warriors before on the balconies.

It wasn't just Luo Feng who was searching, the Manka prince Wuka, Long Yun who had entered the Primal region, and similarly others from the Absolute beginning region Qian Shui, Rong Jun etc, they were all looking for markings.

This group of geniuses were very clear. These 30 years in primal chaos city was their time to lock in their foundations, and the fastest way to improve wasn't to simply bury their heads in training. Using a dull axe requires greater work, picking the appropriate route was very important, they didn't need to begin by looking straight at the origin laws movement.

Hence, they were all looking for the markings left behind by their earlier generations of warriors.

"112 of the markings, I have some interest in." Luo Feng creased his eyebrows, "Which do I choose?"

The 9 pictures of the 9 universe tablet was profound and deep.

And the markings left behind by others were like detailed studies, they were able to let him further understand and study the tablet with greater efficiency!

“Luo Feng.” A clear voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned over.

A long curly green haired elegant girl with mysterious green markings on her skin descended onto the balcony, smiling gently, she said, “Luo Feng, have you found a marking suitable for you?”

“Not yet, I discovered 112 that are not bad, but I don’t know which to choose.” Luo Feng shook his head, “Qian Shui, have you found anything?”

Qian Shui, the genius pair of siblings from the Ao Gu Si planet, both were similarly Absolute beginning members.

“I’m pondering too. With teacher’s guidance, I currently have 3 to choose from.” Qian Shui smiled, “Hm, “I won’t chat more with you. After my teacher saw your Heavenly bridge battle, he said among our batch, your comprehension of the origin laws is comparable to Bolan, stronger than even Rong Juns comprehension.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng creased his eyebrows.

“All the best, having a lead now doesn’t represent you leading in the future as well. These 30 years, will be the greatest change.” Qian shui immediately flew up, “I’m leaving.” A green image was seen flying through the distant skies, vanishing within the chaos energy flow.

Luo Feng frowned.

“Your batch of 1,000 geniuses, many have pretty decent backgrounds, with strong people guiding them from behind.” Babata said, “It’s a pity…I cannot help you.”

“No problem.” Luo Feng smiled, not minding at all.

Suddenly, Babata shouted shocked, “Luo Feng, you’ve received a letter, it’s from the Virtual Universe Company internal department.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng was shocked, sending out a part of his consciousness into the virtual universe network.

……

Virtual universe network, Absolute beginning region, Luo Feng’s villa.

In the study, Luo Feng sat in front of his laptop and opened the mail.

“Luo Feng:

I’ve seen your footage on the Heavenly bridge. It’s not bad, only your usage of the Nan Shen Armament is too rigid.

The weapon is dead, we are living. How to use the Nan Shen Armament…naturally has many much wider ranges of usage to unleash its full potential. You are currently studying the 9 universe tablet I suggest you buy a battle technique Floating Blood. It only requires 800 points, after buying this technique, head to training balcony 0290028981 and take a look, there are markings there left behind by the creator of the Floating Blood. Amongst those within the 9 universe sect, this should be the most suitable for you especially for the 1st three pictures of the 9 universe tablet. Work hard, I’m expecting great things from you!

True Yan”

A simple letter, however since it’s from the Virtual Universe company’s internal department, it was anything but ordinary.

As he himself was a core member within the company, most people didn’t even know their own network ID. Finding another’s ID and being able to send a letter via the internal department, this person was obviously a high ranking person within the Virtual Universe Company.

“True Yan?” Luo Feng sat in the study, before, when he searched, he was only able to see several filtered normal news, other secret

files, like the bug clan or automaton race etc, important information, these were all classified to him.

However now his position was high, his privileges were much higher too.

“Understood.” Babata said excitedly.

The screen on the laptop immediately swiftly changed and large amounts of information appeared.

“These are all regarding True Yan.” Babata shouted.

“Ah?”

Luo Feng stared at the screen. There were many news articles and details, he couldn’t help but get shocked, “The True Yan technique was founded by the True Yan Emperor. Its purchase price within the Virtual Universe Company was actually priced at 800,000 points. My god, teacher’s soul imprint, Babata you estimated it to only be worth about 10,000 points. This True Yan technique is actually that expensive?”

“True Yan emperor?” Babata was shocked, “This True Yan is actually an emperor?”

“What about it?” Luo Feng asked curiously.

“Luo Feng.” Babata was extremely agitated, “You don’t know. Among all undyings, in terms of power and position, they have huge differences. Normal undyings can become generals and command a huge army of universe level warriors! Several extremely powerful undyings however, can get the title Official from the Virtual Universe Company of the Huge Axe dojo!”

Undyings with the title Official are considered absolute beings amongst the undying, like your teacher, he could barely get the title with his power.”

“And the pinnacle of Undyings, even stronger and more invincible, they get the tile emperors! That’s terrifying, and looking at this True Yan Emperor’s technique actually reaching 800,000 points, my god, he’s definitely one of the undyings amongst countless in the universe, closest to the universe country leader. That level of absolute being, this level of being, they are extremely powerful!” Babata said excited.

“Ah?” Luo Feng realized within.

General…official, emperor…

These 3 titles, had a definitely reflection of their strength.

“Babata, back then the enemy that killed my teacher, how strong was he?” Luo Feng asked, the excited Babata was stunned for awhile, his red eyes dimmed a little, before saying, “Back then the enemy that killed your teacher was very strong. Your teacher barely had the strength of an Official, the enemy was probably the

pinnacle of Official, almost reaching the level of Emperor."

Luo Feng was shocked.

His teacher, that level of being, was barely an official. His opponent was almost an emperor.

No wonder his teacher lost so badly then.

"That level of warrior, in your Ganwu universe country, he can rank amongst the top 3." Babata said solemnly.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked, "The Ganwu universe country has over 10,000 undyings."

"In 1,008 universe countries, the number that receive the title Emperor are extremely few. All the absolute warriors normally don't stay within one universe country. Those able to receive this title are mostly underlings under the 5 great leviathans or special lone wolfs." Babata said softly, "Every one of them are extremely strong, beings closest to becoming universe country leaders!"

"One technique manual alone is able to sell for 800,000 points. This True Yan Emperor, even amongst the emperors, must be at the top." Babata said, "I saw a manual of a technique created by a universe country leader before in the treasure trove, it only sold for 1 million points."

A technique made by a universe country leader sold for 1 million

points.

The technique created by the True Yan Emperor sold for 800,000 points.

It was clear that the True Yan Emperor was terrifying.

“Haha…” Luo Feng laughed, “Babata, you even said before, about who has big backgrounds etc, I Luo Feng, I don’t have any background or big person behind me, yet I’m able to attract others to give me pointers. Haha…”Within, Luo Feng felt extremely grateful to that mysterious absolute warrior True Yan Emperor.

This letter for the True Yan Emperor was but a casual thought.

To Luo Feng however, it was a huge push in the right direction in solidifying his basics.

“Have you found Floating Blood?” Luo Feng asked.

“Found it.”

On the screen floating blood appeared with its information.

Compared to the vague introductions of True Yan Emperor before, the information on Floating blood was a lot more detailed. Obviously the information on True Yan Emperor was extremely secretive, Luo Feng’s level of access only allowed him to find the

most basic of information.

“Floating Blood, creator Lian Luo, is a basic technique in the 9 universe sect, mainly explaining the 1st 3 pictures, and it requires 800 points to exchange.”

“Lian Luo was number 1 in an earlier genius competition. When chosen to enter the primal region, he chose the 9 universe primal chaos tablet. After over 10s of thousands of years of training, he created the basic technique that was named one of the best Floating Blood. After becoming undying, he was immediately given the title Blood clothed official, he fell in a particular universe secret area expedition.

Luo Feng continued to read in detail.

The information had more on Lian Luo’s life. He was the number 1 in the genius competition, an absolute genius. The moment he became undying he was immediately given the title official! It was a pity he lived less than 100,000 years and he died, he died way too early.

“It’s a pity.” Luo feng shook his head.

“If he hadn’t died too early, his future would have been limitless.” Babata exclaimed and shook his head too.

Floating blood was a basic technique, made for those under undying to study, hence it wasn’t priced high.

However just because it was low in price didn't mean it was lousy.

Luo Feng required a basic level technique, and this floating blood was recommended by True Yan Emperor, it was obviously not lousy at all.

"800 points, I only lack 800 points." Luo Feng forced a smiled, "I regret spending my 10,000 points at one go too easily, it's all gone."

"Who told you to spend so quickly." Babata muttered.

"Wasn't it you who instigated it?" Luo Feng shot a glare at Babata on his shoulder, "Forget it, I'll first head over to 0290028981 balcony to take a look, looking at the marking left behind by the genius Lian Luo from a trillion years ago." Looking at Lian Luo's history, Luo Feng could only sigh at this genius from a trillion years ago.

He died too early.

Not even living past 100,000 years, amongst the undying it was definitely considered a very short life.

……

Primal chaos city.

Luo Feng immediately became a beam of light and swiftly flew within primal chaos city, looking for the training building balcony that Lian Luo had used back then.

Chapter 18 – Shocking

Luo Feng had gone to look for that training balcony from a long time ago. Within the virtual universe, Yu Xiang Mountain's Absolute beginning region, Rong Jun's training grounds within his villa.

"Teacher." Carrying the Earth splitting blade, the Savage youth Rong Jun bowed respectfully. Ahead of him stood a tall and majestic man in simple training clothes. Looking at this man was like looking at a black hole within space, giving off a natural form of awe and respect, his gaze seemed to pierce through space itself.

He was the universe country leader of Yuan Chen, an undying from who knows how long ago, older by tens of thousands of times than even planets and stars, an ancient eternal being.

"Hm." Yuan Chen country leader nodded, "I'll now demonstrate to you the 1st form of the Huge Axe primal chaos tablet!"

Rong Jun's eyes gleamed.

The country leader waved his hand, a huge axe appeared in his hand, simultaneously the space around the training grounds warped, changing into a universe space scene.

"Look closely."

The Yuan Chen country leader's eyes were deep and profound,

almost like they contained within them the universe space itself. He raised the huge axe in his hands, immediately his entire being seemed like it became a huge axe itself. Just the willpower and energy emitting from the huge axe alone was enough to cause the space around to tremor and seem to almost split open.

Hu!

He waved the axe!

The country leader coldly waved the huge axe, immediately the space around seemed to gather and condense like paper, and tearing apart after. Even the stars ahead were completely split apart, after which the entire space tremored and the space dissipated, returning to the original state.

“Hm?” Rong Jun’s eyes stared wide, in his mind recalling the scene over and over again.

“Raising the axe, condensing his energy to its maximum!

Waving the axe, the space gathered and later tore apart like paper!

“The huge axe tablet is the most profound of the 52.” Yuan Chen country leader said coldly, “When you’ve comprehended this 1st form, and eventually make it past the 4th level of the Heavenly bridge, I will then demonstrate the 2nd form for you!”

“Yes, teacher.” Rong Jun said respectfully.

“Hm.”

The country leader nodded and his lips curled, almost like a smile. Following which he vanished.

“So it’s that way, it’s like this.” After his teacher left, Rong Jun’s eyes gleamed, “This 1st form is unleashed this way.” Actually, as the country leader was demonstrating, he purposely slowed down his actions, releasing his energy to teach and let Rong Jun feel it thoroughly, allowing him to witness and comprehend to the highest of his ability.

“Adoptive father!”

“Just watch, watch this barbarian reach the peak.” Rong Jun muttered softly, following which he began to study the 1st form. As the 1st form of the huge axe tablet, it was indeed profound and mysterious, if he could completely comprehend this 1st form, he would be able to easily defeat that absolute genius Bolan. Afterall Bolan only managed to finish the 2nd level.

Outside Primal chaos city.

“So this is the primal chaos city’s 3rd treasure.” Carrying a blood blade, the white robed youth Bolan stood outside the entrance of Primal chaos, looking at the huge stone tablet with the words introducing the 3rd treasure. His cold eyes gleamed with

excitement, “Teacher, you told me to look for you once I reached the undying level, I will get to the undying level with the greatest speed, I definitely will!”

Bolan.

Out of 10s of millions of years of genius battles, he was able to be number 1 throughout. Even though he had heard that some universe country leader had accepted Rong Jun as his disciple, he never thought of anyone else as an opponent.

There was no opponent within, hence he was invincible!

His opponent was himself.

“Faster, faster, faster! Reach the undying level faster, become an absolute being amongst the undying, become an official! Emperor!” Bolan muttered, as he had high confidence and aspirations, his improvement and comprehension of the space origin laws constantly rose greatly. His comprehension was extremely strong, naturally his comprehension of the other elements linked within space were strong as well.

Actually, he was completely able to study gold, wood, water, fire, and earth, as these 5 were all very compatible with space.

However, he chose wind!

As wind, thunder, light, these were more compatible with time,

his ambition was great, even more terrifying than the time sector lord. However in terms of talent...he was far more talented than the time sector lord Luo, he had the capability!

.....

Rong Jun had the Yuan Chen universe country leader as his teacher, his own battle abilities and talent were also extremely strong.

Bolan, had never once thought of him as an opponent, his opponent was himself.

The other geniuses, like the hypnotist Jia Lai Xi, Wuka, Ai Chen, Jiang Mo, Long Yun etc, they all had their own backgrounds and strengths. To be able to make it to this level, no one would admit defeat easily, they were all still aiming to make it into the absolute beginning region, the primal region! Like Long Yun...a primal region genius, now that he's been pushed aside by Rong Jun, how could he take it?

.....

The chaos energy revolved within.

Luo Feng walked along the alleys, looking at the training place ahead. On this wall there was a line of words...9 universe sect, any wall with such words of the sect on them, represented that the area belonged to that sect and was a public area, not for private use.

Afterall other than the 52 primal chaos tablets, there were many other markings within the city that were exceptional, hence these all became public training areas, anyone could come view them.

Of the 112 Luo Feng had picked before, 103 of them were public training areas.

“Floating blood’s founder Lian Luo, he stayed here during his time. The 112 I chose before didn’t include this place.” Luo Feng sighed within. There was no way around it, Primal Chaos city was too huge, the training spaces were too huge. Just 8 short days of searching around, there was no way to search in full detail every marking in each space, he could only make quick decisions.

Entering the training area.

Quickly following up the stairs up to the balcony, the balcony with a width and length of 100m had messy random scribbles all over, simultaneously there were several special words all over.

“This was the training space of the genius Lian Luo?” Luo Feng frowned curiously, “True Yan emperor was talking about this?”

Shua!

Luo Feng jumped down from the balcony, landing at the entrance, he looked at the number and it was indeed, 029002891.

“The number is right, it’s this one.” Luo Feng jumped and returned to the balcony.

“The markings on this balcony...” Luo Feng carefully examined it. All the buildings of primal chaos city used almost the same kind of stone, this stone in the primal universe, they didn’t decay even after trillions of years. It was mysterious, even after trillions of years, the markings were still extremely clear.

“Blade meanings?”

Luo Feng looked at the messy scribbles all over, squatting down, he carefully examined the bodies of them. The seemingly casual markings indeed had many similarities in the 9 universe tablet, “They do have a similar feeling compared to the 9 universe tablet. However they are just bits and pieces, not forming a whole picture, what’s the use?”

“But True Yan Emperor told me to come here.” Luo Feng swept his gaze over the area, suddenly spotting several special peculiar words at the side.

“Babata, translate for me, what’s the meaning.” Luo Feng thought within.

“No problem!” Babata swiftly translated.

The screen on his shoulder immediately filled with some words, “I, Lian Luo, while comprehending the 9 universe tablet, have

experienced over 3,000 years of study. Finally I've created the floating blood secret manual. Haha, once the floating blood is completed, the 1st 3 pictures no longer hold any mystery for me, everything became incredibly clear to me. These 1st 3 pictures are mostly comprehending the foundation of the 9 universe primal chaos tablet. My basics are incredibly solid, even if others can compare, even if they are studying the 4th picture, their comprehension of the space origin law may not even match up to mine. The 4th, 5th and 6th pictures and how to train them, I've already got full confidence, I'll definitely become an undying, gaining the title Emperor!"

A few lines of words, a total of 108 words.

However after translating to mandarin, the word count had several differences.

"So confident?" Luo Feng was shocked, these words were infused with exciting and strong confidence. Even after a trillion years of difference, Luo Feng could almost see the distant ancient, an absolute genius after completing the floating blood, he was absolutely confident about his future, leaving behind such words.

"Indeed, his improvement was indeed shockingly fast. After becoming an undying, he was immediately given the title Official. Until the point he fell...his life span hadn't even reached 100,000 years. If he lived just a bit longer, becoming an Emperor was really no problem." Luo Feng nodded within, his improvement speed was no lousier than Bolan's.

.....

Standing on the balcony, Luo Feng thought for awhile.

“Luo Feng.” Babata shouted, “This Lian Luo was speaking right, the 1st 3 pictures are the foundation of the 9 universe tablet. This floating blood was worshipped as the best basic technique by True Yan Emperor. For him to be able to create this technique, obviously his comprehension of the first 3 pictures had already reached the pinnacle level.”

“The stronger one’s basics are, the stronger he’ll become later. Just like how when you attempted the 1st level on the Heavenly bridge, your opponent only used 3 golden blades, yet he’s still stronger than you using 9 blades and unleashing the Heavenly blade formation.”

Luo Feng had known about the importance of the basics from early on. To be able to build a tall skyscraper, the foundation was the beginning, the stronger it was, the higher it would be able to go. The basics of Lian Luo, obviously had reached the pinnacle level of his basics.

Luo Feng thought hard as he looked at those lines.

Quietly looking...

“What are you looking at? Are you listening?” Babata shouted unsatisfied.

“Don’t make noise.”

Luo Feng’s expression was serious, his eyes gleamed, staring at the 108 peculiar words that he didn’t understand at all, “True Yan emperor asked me to come here, it should have been to look at these 108 words.”

“Ah?” Babata was shocked.

“I didn’t notice before, however after looking for awhile, I can feel it.” Luo Feng stared hard at the words, “These 108 words, every word has a different feeling behind them. However the 108 words together form a complete picture, anyone who doesn’t pay close attention to each word wouldn’t discover the different feeling and energy behind each words.

The 3 pictures of the 9 universe tablet flashed past Luo Feng’s mind.

The 3rd picture, was the downpour picture, there were a total of 108 drops.

“Terrifying.”

“It’s too terrifying.”

Luo Feng’s gaze was filled with a hard to suppress gleam of excitement, “He actually put all of the feelings within the downpour picture, all expressed through these 108 words.” Even

though he still couldn't see it clearly, however on careful examination he discovered it. Compared to the raindrop picture, this was more complex, each word was like a blade slash began to form within.

"The information before had explained that the floating blood was a technique to use a blade. Right, every word here is a blade form, 108 blade forms, completely explaining the basics of the 9 universe tablet." Luo Feng finally understood, just how terrifying the genius Lian Luo back then was.

He didn't have time to be surprised.

Luo Feng was already completely immersed within the 108 words, comparing his mental thoughts of the 9 universe tablet before with this. He worked hard to find the 108 blade forms within.

Chapter 19 – The 3rd Treasure of Primal Chaos City

“There are a total of 9 pictures in the 9 universe tablet. The 1st raindrop picture has 9 drops, every 2 drops have different meanings behind them.” As Luo Feng was immersed in the 108 words, he constantly compared his mental notes of the words to the tablet, “These 108 words, there are 9 words that resound with the raindrop picture.”

These 9 word, just like the 9 drops, Luo Feng could feel that their meanings were seemingly identical. These 9 words had complex strokes, causing him to feel 9 blade forms.

“Profound.”

As Luo Feng studied the 9 words more, he felt it get more and more profound.

Every blade form was a texture of the universe space itself!

Every blade form, seemed to explain a certain essence of the universe space itself!

……

Even though its surface meaning resounded between the 9 words and the 9 drop picture, deducing and comprehending had a huge

difference, even people who didn't understand English, looking at 2 similar letters in different words, one could still discern them. However to actually learn the entire language was 10s of thousands of times harder than simply identifying letters.

Luo Feng was like this currently.

As Luo Feng stood on this balcony, immersed in these words, within that wrist space, Babata was bored and sighed, "Madness, what space origin laws are there within, even the teacher before, when he became an undying, he didn't study the essence of universe space that deeply. This Lian Luo, is indeed a number 1 of the genius battle from a trillion years ago, geniuses indeed, they do things at another level."

Comprehending the space law, it needn't be that complex.

Just like how many people on earth learn the computer, they learn how to use the program Word, they only learn the usage methods, simply using was enough! However Lian Luo back then actually explained the essence of the universe space, even using 108 words to express it. Just like learning the Word program, this Lian Luo didn't simply learn how to use it, but explain the entire program and how it worked, explaining how the program was written!

Explaining the essence!

Comprehending the universe origin law was the same...those still in the midst of comprehending, comprehending allowed the

warriors to understand how to get better and to realize what was right. Hence, borrowing the feeling from these principles, allowed them to unleash their attacks infused with the laws, hence the power increases drastically!

However those feelings, they were regarded as mysterious."

If people questioned, they had no way to actually explain.

They could only exclaim, "You can only experience, you can't pass on simply through words!"

Wrong!

It was bullshit that it couldn't be passed by word!

It wasn't that it couldn't be passed by word, only that many strong warriors and even undying hadn't fully comprehended clearly the essence, naturally they said it was unclear! Just like the Mosha clan, it blends with space itself, maybe their battle strength was intrepid and a blur, however in terms of comprehending the space laws themselves, the Mosha Clan was similar to the earth human body,

"True Yan Emperor is indeed a being close to the universe country leader, making Luo Feng come study the essence of space itself, it is indeed a very precise path." Babata was very clear, because he had witnessed the master of the Yun Mo Planet Hu Yan Bo's entire training process.

The initial period was fast.

However!

The further back he went, the harder it got, the further he went the more he felt the space origin laws got more and more profound, harder to see it clearly.

“If from the beginning, he had studied the essence of the universe space laws itself, slowly studying, the start may have been slower. However towards the end, the improvement speed would be faster and faster.” Babata exclaimed softly, “No wonder, even though the boss used a trillion years, he barely had the strength of an Official. And this Lian Luo, didn’t even take 100,000 years, yet the moment he became undying he was immediately given the title Official!”

Difference!

……

“When I unleash my movement, with a move I’m able to produce over 20 images. However as to why I’m able to produce these images, I don’t fully understand.” Luo Feng studied for awhile, beginning to feel his mental state grow weary as he immersed himself in the study, he couldn’t help but exclaim, “At least now I understand a little.”

Only a little.

However just understanding that little bit made him shocked.

“Babata, how long have I been studying?” Luo Feng asked.

“A little more than 18 days” Babata replied.

“Over half a month, and I only understood a little bit of the 1st form?” Luo Feng was shocked within. This comprehension of the origin laws, when compared to studying the essence itself, obviously had a different level of difficulty.” At my current speed, how long would it take me to study the 1st form? It’s a pity I don’t have the floating blood manual.”

These 108 words were after all just words.

The floating blood manual was the true training method left behind by Lian Luo. If he had the manual, Luo Feng was confident that the studying process would definitely be much faster.

“Just 800 points!” Luo Feng gritted his teeth.

“Luo Feng, just passing the 1st heavenly bridge, wouldn’t that give you 1,000 points?”

“I know.”

Luo Feng shook his head, “However my current self doesn’t have enough guarantee to pass the 1st level.” These few days, at least the previous study session of the 9 universe tablet he had almost fully digested. His understanding of the space law was deeper now, and if he unleashed the sky heavenly formation, its power would be much greater. He may win, but he didn’t have full confidence.

“If only I can fully comprehend the 1st form!”

“9 golden blades, with this first feeling as the link, can form one complete perfect form. it’s power would definitely be absurd” Luo Feng’s first study, he finally began to understand what benefits that 1st form was going to add to him.

Luo Feng looked into the distant Primal chaos city.

“After training for so long, my mental state is weary. I’ll head outside the city to take a look. Previously, the black robed receiver said there were 3 treasures. This 3rd treasure had a stone tablet outside explaining.” Luo Feng knew himself that at his current state, he couldn’t continue studying. Hence he headed directly to the entrance of the city, just what was this 3rd treasure?

The 1st treasure was the primal universe’s obvious revolving origin laws.

The 2nd was the 52 primal chaos tablets.

The 3rd, just what was it?

Primal chaos city, within an ancient mansion that was extremely huge.

“Go out.” The ape man waved his hand.

“Yes, Teacher.”

About 10 undyings below, sector lords, they all bowed respectfully and left the mansion.

“That Luo Feng actually didn’t buy the floating blood manual?” True Yan emperor sat in the chair frowning, simultaneously part of his consciousness communicated with his AI, “He’s a member of the absolute beginning region, he should have been awarded 10,000 points. What? He used it all right at the beginning?”

From his AI, he found out that Luo Feng had used all of his 10,000 points, True Yan was speechless.

“He actually, actually bought a Illusionary manual?” True Yan Emperor shook his head, “His current strength, definitely has no need to buy the Illusionary manual. He should buy a more basic technique, what’s suitable is the most apt. This little punk actually used all his points straight away, that’s really, really…”

True Yan Emperor frowned, “How troublesome!”

“Lian Luo that sick genius, back then he still took a few tens of thousands of years to explain the 108 forms. This explanation of the origin law essences, is much harder than simply comprehending, especially since it tests one’s intelligence, temperament, and also his level of comprehension. Unless one is an absolute genius, it’s hard to study it.”

From the beginning, one would begin to comprehend the essence of the space origin law, and in the future, his achievements would be high.

This point, from the absolute beings within the 1,008 universe countries, who didn’t know?

However even after knowing, this method still wasn’t spread wide. Mainly because the requirements on one’s temperament, intelligence, space comprehension, these were extremely and absurdly high. One first had to have a high comprehension of space, if one couldn’t even feel the space laws, how could he study deeper. As for intelligence and temperament, one had to maintain his state and calmness while studying, the moment one gets fickle and impatient, one would lose a lot of the work he’s done.

Temperament was very important, just thinking about it one would know.

And this level of comprehending the universe space origins, comprehension was even more important.

Walking this path, to many strong warriors would only waste

away long periods of time, that Lian Luo (Number 1 in the genius battle) also required tens of thousands of years. Someone with lesser talent and intelligence (Like Jiang Mo, Ai Chen and Wuka that level) one would require millions of years. And those other normal geniuses would waste away their entire sector lord 1,000 eras and not succeed.

"Hm, even though these 30 years in Primal chaos city are very important to him. However, making him feel some loss, wasting a few years is fine." True Yan Emperor shook his head, "Let him remember for the long term, understand that some valuable items and stuff shouldn't be used completely before understanding their full uses for the future."

True Yan emperor didn't think more about it.

Even though he was paying attention to Luo Feng, it was mostly only due to him picking the same path and sect. Just hinting him slightly was enough. That' all, he wasn't involved enough to help or do anything for him Luo Feng currently wasn't worth him doing anything.

Primal chaos city, with walls that went on forever.

The doors opened and several warriors left or entered, Luo Feng too followed the door and headed out.

"Where's the stone tablet?" Luo Feng stood at the entrance, looking at the continuous walls that extended forever, engulfed in the chaos energy. Suddenly he spotted on the left there was an

incredibly huge stone tablet. On it were scribbles of universe language words, at the top wrote the 3rd treasure of Primal Chaos city.

“Primal chaos spirit?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

The contents of the stone tablet was roughly…

Primal chaos spirit: When a universe is in its primal state, the primal universe will naturally produce peculiar beings. These beings have peculiar appearances, they are currently called primal chaos beasts. These beasts have different levels of strength, they are all proficient in different origin laws, some more so than others.

Killing the primal chaos beasts, their bodies will decay into large amounts of chaos energy and a dark green light will be produced. This dark green light is where their core lies, they don’t have souls, only a life light, this light has been named as primal chaos spirit.

As long as one absorbs this primal chaos spirit into their bodies, one’s soul will naturally absorb it and with absorption, their soul will slightly change, melding better with the universe space.

……

“Luo Feng!” A voice caused Luo Feng to turn before he finished reading the entire tablet.

The distant Savage Rong Jun descended from mid air, immediately landing on the ground and walking barefooted to Luo feng, smiling, “Haha, I haven’t seen you around these past days. Are you getting ready to head out to hunt the primal chaos beasts? However you have to be careful, just from hunting these primal chaos beasts, we’ve already lost a few from our batch.”

Chapter 20 – Primal Chaos Spirit

"What?" Luo Feng was shocked, "You said we've lost a bunch from our batch?"

"Hm." Rong Jun shook his head, "When I first found out, my reaction was similar to yours. However after heading outside and hunting the primal chaos beasts, I didn't find it weird anymore. Also, do you remember? When we first took the universe ship and came over to the primal universe, that knight also said those words."

Luo Feng recalled the scene and nodded, "I remember."

Back then the green armored purple scaled man had sent the 1,000 geniuses here, saying, "You are all under me, I hope to see all of you alive in 30 years." When he had first heard it, Luo Feng had guessed...there would be some dangers within primal chaos city, however when he had studied within the city for awhile, he felt it was very safe.

The feeling was simply a sacred land for warriors to study and train.

The city forbids any humans killing each other! Anyone who kills another, would face certain death, even if he just made a move and didn't kill...he would face severe punishment.

And even looking at the large amounts of warriors training on the balconies, feeling the ancient energies revolving, there wasn't

any sense of danger.

"It's very dangerous."

Rong Jun emphasized, "Don't get careless, those beasts aren't easy to deal with, of the 1,000 geniuses that came this time, they were all awarded by the virtual universe company with gold, prizes, and the lowest amount was 10 mixed elements, their points were enough to exchange for valuable things too, who doesn't have trump cards?"

Luo Feng frowned and nodded, things weren't looking good.

The geniuses were all not easy to deal with, yet they had already lost a few of them, the primal chaos spirits were good things, yet they weren't easy to acquire.

"The most important thing is they have numbers, even if you bring a powerful weapon, an advanced universe ship, however if you are careless and get surrounded, you'll be killed instantly." Rong Jun emphasized, "I'll warn you, be more prudent and careful, this is reality, not the virtual universe network, the moment you die, it's over."

"Hm." Luo Feng held his breath.

Watching Rong Jun leave, Luo Feng was startled and shaken by Rong Jun's earlier words, he turned to continue reading the stone tablet.

“……

The more the soul melds with the universe, then comprehending the universe origin laws will get clearer and easier.

When a sector lord becomes undying, that’s when the soul itself undergoes change.

And absorbing the primal chaos spirit. Is a slow gradual change, the scope of change is small, an Undyings soul is already eternal, absorbing the chaos spirit is ineffective, these spirits only have an effect on those below the undying level.

Important note one, Undyings are forbidden from making a move on the beasts.

Two, the primal chaos beasts have low intelligence, they’ve already been separated by the strong warriors in primal chaos city into 3 regions, the 1st region, is the closest to the city, about 2,000km area away from the city walls, they are all universe level primal chaos beasts, this has been called the internal region. The 2nd region is from the 2,000km mark to the 10,000km area, this is the middle region, there the beasts are all domain lord level. The 3rd region is the outermost region, there the beasts are sector lord level.

Primal chaos beasts, their strengths are from the universe level to the sector lord level, the moment there are any undying level beasts, primal chaos city will send out strong warriors to eliminate

them.

Three, domain lord level warriors can only kill beasts within the middle region, they are forbidden from entering the internal region. Sector lords are only allowed to hunt in the outer region, they are forbidden from entering the internal and middle region!”

Finishing the details of the tablet, Luo Feng was silent.

“Damn!” It’s obviously for nurturing the later generation.” Babata shouted, “These primal chaos beasts have already been separated into 3 regions. With Primal chaos city’s strength, they can easily kill all the beasts immediately, however they didn’t... and bred them! And the domain lords can only hunt in the middle region, sector lords outer region, obviously the internal region is left for you all.”

Luo Feng nodded.

Primal chaos city was the sacred land of humanity in the universe.

Here, almost everything was arranged to train the generations of warriors, allowing humanity to evolve and strengthen. Allowing the youths to risk dangers and hunt the beasts, obviously this was for training the later generations...staying safe would mean there would be limits in growth, even though primal chaos city’s 30 years was rather safe, having some sense of danger was a good thing, it was good for nurturing the young.

“Primal chaos beasts!” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved and a dark red armor extended and formed a helmet, covering his entire body in the cloud contact vine armor, revealing only his eyes.

“Let’s take a look, just what it’s about.” Dressed in the dark red armor, Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and carried the dark golden long rod on his back.

The chaos energy revolved about, making it impossible for one to see too far with the naked eye.

In the vast wasteland, weeds were growing everywhere, this wasteland that had been here for who knows how long, even the nameless weeds and plants, along with the rubble, they were all made up of special properties, nurtured in the chaos energy over long periods of time, they all had the same special point.

No matter how long, they would never decay.

Luo Feng carefully moved forward.

Sha...

“Hm?” His ears moved, immediately lowering himself and hiding behind a stone, carefully looking ahead.

In the distant weeds, a black silhouette walked out, this was a 3 m tall ape like being, his body bent his hands landing on the ground, except for white fur on his face, there was only one vertical brown

eye and a mouth, no nose or ears, its tail waved high and moved about.

"What's its strength?" Luo Feng communicated to Babata mentally.

"No idea, there's no such primal chaos beast in the real universe, hence the energies it is emitting...I'm unable to gauge, just what level of strength it's at." Babata said.

"Ah." Luo Feng nodded.

The ape like beast that was running in the distance, it's tail high in the sky like lightning rod suddenly stopped, violently turning to look in Luo Feng's direction, that single eye seemed enraged and filled with killing intent, "Rumble!" the tail violently swayed, the beast immediately became a beam of light heading towards Luo Feng, its huge palms grabbing at him.

"Go!"

Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle, as he retreated, he controlled with his thoughts.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

9 golden lights shot out from behind him, simultaneously 6 of them shot towards the approaching beast.

“Howl...” The ape like beast waved its tail again, creating an image and actually dodging 3 of the golden blades, “Dang! Dang! Dang!” 3 clashes, with a wave of its claws, it knocked away 3 of Luo Feng’s golden blades.

As the blades were knocked away...

“Heavenly blade formation!” Luo Feng frowned.

Immediately the surroundings golden energy rippled together, the 9 blades floated and formed a blade domain, compared to the one on the heavenly bridge before, the blade domain now was obviously more organized and tighter, at least it didn’t have blade energy dispersed in all directions anymore, right now it was more condensed and controlled.

With the glaring golden rainbow, one of the golden blades pierced forward bringing with it the countless condensed blade energy and the domain behind it, piercing towards the beast.

“Howl!” The beast let out a struggled howl and its furry tail waved as he accelerated to flee, as though he felt a terrifying force was attacking him, however how could his running speed match up to the Nan Shen Armament’s attack.

“Rumble!”

The beast that couldn’t flee in time used both hands to clash with

the blade rainbow.

With a huge clash, the beast's thick arms were smashed open, golden blood spewed out, blood and bone flew in all directions, and the golden blade rainbow immediately pierced right through its head.

"Rumble..." this ape like beast immediately fell on the floor, simultaneously, its golden blood and flesh etc began to decay quickly, becoming chaos energy, a dark green light floated up from the corpse.

"Primal chaos spirit!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, using some spirit energy to wrap around and retrieve the light.

Chi!

When his spirit energy touched the spirit, the spirit began to meld with his spirit energy.

"Spirit energy is mental energy, and the spirit is large amounts of this formed together, it isn't strange that spirit energy is able to absorb the primal chaos spirit." Luo Feng took the remaining spirit and absorbed it into his internal core, none of his 3 bodies were the true core, the internal core was the true center.

"Rumble..."

The surrounding energies violently tremored.

“Howl!”

“Howl!”

Bent bodies appeared one after another, their faces with white fur and that single eye, similar to the primal chaos beast before, they jumped out from the weeds as fast as lightning, with one glance, there were at least a few hundred of them, some of their energies…some were obviously even stronger than the one earlier.

“Not good!” Luo Feng didn’t even think about fighting back.

Sou!

A silver white pyramid automaton ship appeared in mid air, however the primal chaos beasts were simply too fast.

“Hu! Hu!” A dark red vine extended around Luo Feng’s surface, tens of thick vines fiercely extended towards the large group of beasts rushing over, “Rumble…” The tall and huge leader of the group was whipped by the vines, he spit out fresh blood but was still alive.

……

Luo Feng rushed into the automaton ship and shut the cabin door.

“Rumble…” Outside the group of beasts were madly attacking the walls of the ship, however this was an e grade automaton ship, it wasn’t something these beasts that were at most universe level 9 could deal with.

“I understand now, how a group of geniuses, all of them having ships, with large amounts of wealth, able to acquire powerful laser weapons, Gatling guns, how they could still die!” Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief, if it wasn’t for the automaton ship, with the cloud contact vine he may have still gotten away, but it would have been difficult.

“Hunting the primal chaos beasts, yes, hunting.”

“Just like hunters, quietly, killing in an instant, absorbing the spirit, and immediately distancing oneself from the scene.” Luo Feng thought, “When it let out its howl to attract its companions earlier, I shouldn’t have fought on, but fleed immediately.”

……

In the air above primal chaos city, a silver white pyramid automaton ship appeared in mid air, following which the ship vanished and Luo Feng descended into the city from above.

However no one seemed to care about this scene at all.

In the black dragon mountain star field, the automaton ship was

rare and extremely valuable, however to those in primal chaos city, the sacred land of training for the entire humanity in the universe, the undyings here, most of them had wealth beyond that of Hu Yan Bo. An automaton ship…was simply too common.

Chapter 21 – Time Flowing like Water

Luo Feng landed on his own balcony.

“Primal chaos spirit…” Luo Feng frowned, clearly feeling the core within.

Within that core, Luo Feng’s soul essence had formed a whirlpool galaxy, revolving slowly, the glaring and dreamy whirlpool had a total of 8 spiral arms, back when he first reached the universe level 1, this whirlpool galaxy had 1 little black domain…a tiny black hole.

And now!

The golden horned beast had already reached universe level 9, naturally the core of his soul also reached universe level 9. The soul essence which had reached universe level 9, the whirlpool galaxy now had a large black hole, and each of the 8 spiral arms had their own little black hole, they all gradually swallowed the star dust around.

In the center of the black hole were 8 mini black holes.

The formation of these 9 black holes represented the universe level 9, and for the universe level 9 to breakthrough to the domain lord level, it required the 9 black holes to completely swallow the galaxy within, creating an absolute change.

Universe level to domain lord level!

This change was very difficult!

“Chi chi…”

A dark green light landed within the whirlpool and was swiftly dragged in, immediately swallowed by the center black hole. In the outer regions of the whirlpool galaxy where it couldn’t reach, mist engulfed the areas, engulfing the entire galaxy, a little change happened within the galaxy too.

……

“There’s change.” Luo Feng closed his eyes, his mind calm as still water, feeling the origin laws ripple within.

In terms of ripples.

The golden horned beast felt the ripples of the gold origin laws more clearly.

The Mosha clan felt the space origin laws more clearly.

The earth body, felt both ripples, both were blurry to him, as though there was a heavy mist surrounding them.

At this time!

“Improvement, there’s improvement.” Luo feng revealed a look of excitement.

Within that internal space where the vast golden continent was.

Just like a black mountain, the golden horned beast raised its head and let out a happy howl, beside, the black clothed Luo Feng that had produced almost 1,000 images also stopped and shouted excitedly, “They’ve all improved.”

Yes!

The 3 bodies all felt the origin law ripples a little clearer now.

The golden horned beast could feel the gold laws clearer, mainly because its horn, neck, body, wings, tail, claws were all covered in golden engravings, these engravings resounded with the universe itself and the gold origin laws, hence the golden horned beast naturally fit the golden origin laws better.

One theory.

The Mosha clan body, with the 10,081 surfaced crystal with golden engravings rippling, communicating with the universe space laws, even resonating with space itself, it not only improved its comprehension of the space laws, even when it unleashed it its power was much greater.

The 3 bodies had 1 soul core!

The soul core was undergoing change now, naturally all 3 bodies improved simultaneously!

The soul core within was undergoing change, just like the earth body's consciousness and spirit, the mosha clan's life crystal changed too.

The core soul, was something all 3 shared, it was also the core of the 3 bodies.

The moment it evolved, all 3 would improve.

If the core was unharmed, even if any of the 3 bodies was destroyed, it could be rebuilt, and even if all 3 were destroyed, as long as the core was fine, it could still keep producing the 3 bodies endlessly, this was one of its natural abilities, however it had its pros and cons!

The moment the core was destroyed, even if all 3 bodies were trillions of Li apart, they would all die simultaneously!

This was Luo Feng's Life gate.

"Good stuff, it actually evolved my spirit, indeed the 3rd treasure of Primal chaos city." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, "From the student level to the sector lord level, the soul constantly gets stronger, its essence itself doesn't evolve. Only from sector lord level to

undying will there be an absolute evolution.”

“Right now, using this primal chaos spirit, one can actually pre empt that evolution.”

“Even though the amount of evolution itself isn’t big, however with more quantity, the benefits are still huge.” Luo Feng was incredibly excited.

In terms of battle strength, his earth body was the weakest, the golden horned beast and the mosha clan bodies were the true killers...obviously this soul evolution had great benefits to those 2.

“Come on!”

“Primal chaos beasts!” Luo Feng’s eyes blazed with fire.

Such a treasure, if he didn’t get more of it, it would be such a waste.

Luo Feng once again walked out of Primal chaos city and into the wasteland engulfed in chaos energy.

“The chaos energy covers everything here, all the scanning and signal devices are all affected, otherwise I could rely on Babata’s scanning system.” Luo Feng thought, if one could scan his surroundings...so many geniuses wouldn’t have died, “These scanning devices, I wonder if they don’t work because we are in the primal universe, or because the management of primal chaos

city willed it this way?”

Luo Feng was suspicious, but he didn’t think much about it.

No matter, he had to rely on himself to kill the beasts.

……

5 minutes later, half squatting in the grass patch, carefully staring at a distant beast.

This was an extremely huge primal chaos beast, with a body of about 30m long, like a hill slowly moving, its skin on its head was shiny, almost like an alloy, also there were 2 curved horns on its head, its eyes completely white, only the center had pupils the size of little green beans.

Its gaze was ice cold, its thick strong hoofs slowly stomping on the ground, the ears erect, obviously on alert and ready.

“From its aura, it shouldn’t be stronger than that first ape beast I first met.” Luo Feng squatted in the grass patch, his gaze cold, “Heavenly blade formation!” Form behind, the dark golden long rod immediately shot out 81 beams of golden light, every 9 of them swiftly combining together and forming 1 chi long golden blades.

The 9 golden blades swiftly rose up and the rippling golden energy immediately formed the blade domain.

Rumble!

The golden rainbow shot towards that huge primal chaos beast's head!

"Howl..." the beast fiercely turned its head and immediately let out an enraged roar, quickly lowering its head to use its sharpest point on its body, its horns to clash with the golden rainbow.

"Chi!"

The golden blade infused with absolute power from the blade domain arced a little and brushed the horns, immediately piercing through the head of the beast. That alloy like head portion was extremely solid, with chi chi sounds coming from the blade, the golden blade finally barely managed to pierce in, and with another chi sound, pierced out from between its eyes.

Rumble, the huge beast crumbled onto the ground, following which the dark green spirit rose up and its body swiftly decayed into large amounts of chaos energy.

"Xiu." Luo feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle, using his spirit energy to wrap around the primal chaos spirit and vanished far away.

Several seconds later.

Rumble...About 10 huge primal chaos beast, all like thunder itself causing the land to tremor came running over. However in these few seconds, Luo Feng had already fled a few hundred km away.

A few hundred km away.

Hiding behind some rubble, feeling the comfortable feeling of his soul core absorbing the primal chaos spirit, Luo Feng smiled, “Very good, I’ll hunt the beast like that, I’ll at most attack a couple of times and whether I succeed or not, I’ll immediately flee. And fighting against these beasts allows me to test my comprehension levels too.”

.....

It began!

The period of hunting the primal chaos beasts had begun, as he hunted, Luo Feng realized that even though the stone tablet had said that this internal region’s beasts were all universe level, in truth, over 60% of them were universe level 1, the rest were universe level 2 to 9, all proficient in several origin laws.

The only weakness was...their low intelligence!

Just like several of earth’s animals that hadn’t evolved, simpler traps alone were enough to make them fall in.

.....

During the hunting process, he occasionally bumped into universe level 9 beasts, luckily the cloud contact vine was universe level 9 (effects of the long periods of usage of the swelling water fruit), otherwise he would have been in much more danger.

……

After 3 months since his hunting began.

“2 golden blades fusing, so it’s this way.” While unleashing the blade domain, Luo Feng finally succeeded in fusing 1 blade behind another, golden threads weaving through the both of them, forming a dreamy huge golden blade, this blurry huge golden blade, with the power of the blade domain had terrifying power.

Immediately killed 1 primal chaos beast.

“Universal!”

“Link! That one body feeling…” Luo Feng remembered that mysterious feeling, he couldn’t explain it clearly, naturally he understood…the reason he couldn’t explain it was simply because he hadn’t fully grasped the essence of the universe space law itself. He was studying the floating blood 108 words 1st blade form, and he only got a little bit of it.

Even though he had yet to fully grasp it, at least he could use it now.

“I’ll first unleash it, as for understanding the essence, I’ll take it slowly.” Luo Feng was incredibly excited, “I can now fuse 2 blades together, these 2 blades, with the help of the blade domain, I should be able to beat the heavenly bridge level 1’s 3 blades fusing right?”

Even though the enemy fused 3 blades together, he didn’t use a blade domain.

“No rush!”

“My power may still not be enough, hence he didn’t use the blade domain.” Luo feng wasn’t rushed at all, the 30 years in primal chaos city was for him to work on his basics, there was no need to rush, being grounded was the best.

……

8 months later.

“3 blades into 1!” Luo feng who was constantly testing himself against the primal chaos beasts, as to how to use his comprehension of the origin laws and transfer it into the Nan Shen Armament, he was understanding it clearer after time, and now he could control that mystical feeling before and combine 3 blades perfectly, forming a terrifying power.

Virtual universe, heavenly bridge.

On the island, dressed in a black star robe, the watchman Bevin looked shocked at the white robed blood blade youth.

“3rd level?” Bevin looked shocked at the youth before him, when the batch of 1,000 geniuses had first arrived, this Bolan had already cleared 2 levels at one go. This was already extremely rare within the history of primal chaos city, it hadn’t even been a year and now he’s returned.

“Hm.” Bolan nodded.

“Go on, I wish you success.” The watchman Bevin smiled.

Sou!

The white robed youth Bolan immediately headed towards the side of the island, heading to an endless bridge, of which 2 words on a stone tablet was shown there... Universe!

The 52 primal chaos tablets reflected the 52 bridges, of which the Huge Axe bridge had 32 levels, the highest, and the universe heavenly bridge had 30 levels, ranked number 2, as for the 9 universe, it has 27 levels, also amongst the highest, enough to rank in the top 5. The lowest bridge had 21 levels.

In terms of level numbers, it didn’t mean much, as long as one could pass 21 levels, he could already become a powerful universe country leader!

Luo Feng's group of geniuses, will there be one capable of becoming a universe country leader?

"Sou!" Bolan rushed towards the bridge.

Chapter 22 – Competition

After a while.

“Hm?” The watchman Bevin revealed a shocked expression. “He passed, he successfully passed? It’s only been that long in primal chaos city and he actually passed the 3rd level?”

Even though it was said that the initial improvements were easy, it would get harder and more profound later. Bolan was simply sick.

Of the other geniuses from that batch, Rong Jun had passed the 1st level. The rest had all failed, yet Bolan actually passed the 3rd level!

……

Within the warriors training in Primal Chaos city which formed the 52 sects, most of them had chosen the path of the Huge Axe, because many with backgrounds knew that this particular tablet was from the founder of the Huge Axe dojo. And amongst the 52 tablets, the Huge axe heavenly bridge had the highest number of levels!

The Huge Axe sect has the most people.

The universe sect had the least.

Universe, universe, why universe?

From the ancient times, the universe represented both space and time.

This sect was termed the universe sect mainly because it trained in both of the two biggest laws, space and time. As the two laws were the hardest to comprehend, being able to comprehend one was already incredibly difficult, much less both. However when one actually comprehended both, his power would be terrifying.

“He passed the 3rd level?”

“Passing the 3rd level, doesn’t that mean he can go listen to classes already?”

“I heard the number 1 from the latest genius battle, who has been in primal chaos city for less than a year had actually passed the 3rd level, its unbelievable. Normally, from the 1,000 geniuses from each genius battle, after training hard for 30 years in primal chaos city, only few manage to actually pass the 3rd level in the end. This Bolan…he’s far ahead of the others.”

Passing the 3rd level was a breakthrough!

The moment one passes the 3rd level, it meant he had already grasped the tablet’s basics. Only at this time did he have the right to go listen to the sect leaders speak, like True Yan Emperor, or Black Mist emperor, they all taught classes.

Passing the 18th level, one could become an eternal member of primal chaos city. These people were eventually able to open one's own sub sect and teach classes.

Virtual universe, Yu Xian Mountain primal region training grounds.

Wearing a bull helmet and carrying a huge axe, the strong looking warrior Long Yun looked at the screen on his arm and was completely shocked. "3rd level, Bolan actually passed the 3rd level?"

"How did he improve so quickly?"

"Why?" Long Yun couldn't help but grip his axe tightly. Crackling sounds could be heard as he grit his teeth and struggled, "How come I can't even pass the 1st level, why is the difference between me and Bolan so large?"

Long Yun, was similar to Bolan in the fact that they both entered the primal region from this genius competition.

Not long after entering primal chaos city, Bolan and Rong Jun took the spotlight, making Long Yun incredibly unhappy. It was because he was a member of the primal region! He was the number 2 of the competition! However now even the absolute beginning region Rong Jun had passed the 1st level, and yet, he hadn't. Hence, he had been working very hard.

A few days ago he had tried again.

However, he still failed!

Who would have thought that now Bolan actually even passed the 3rd level.

“Is the difference between us really that huge?” Long Yun knelt down painfully, grabbing the floor.

“What, Bolan passed the 3rd level?”

This news almost simultaneously reached Rong Jun, Luo Feng, Jiang Mo, Wuka and others. As they were spending large amounts of time within the city and outside hunting, they would bump into each other and get to know each other. When one acquired such news, he would immediately send it to inform the others.

“This Bolan has passed the 3rd level, I don’t believe that I can’t even pass the 1st.” Wuka waved his fist and his consciousness entered the virtual universe network.

“3rd level?” Jia Lai Xi also entered the virtual universe network.

“The difference can’t be that big.” Jiang Mo and Qian Shui, the siblings both entered to try the heavenly bridge.

“I was originally preparing to wait till my four blades became one. I wanted to try with full guarantee, who would have thought Bolan would improve this quickly. Then I’ll go try now.” Luo Feng was affected by Bolan too. Gritting his teeth, he went to the heavenly bridge as well to try.

A group of geniuses all training in Primal Chaos city, naturally they were all secretly competitive.

When they first arrived and Bolan passed both the 1st and 2nd levels, everybody accepted it, after all he was indeed very strong.

However now after 8 months, Bolan actually passed the 3rd level. One had to know 8 months earlier…he couldn’t pass the 3rd level, meaning his improvement over these 8 months was huge.

Also!

Each level on the heavenly bridge got increasingly difficult. Bolan’s improvement had sparked the pride within the other geniuses. From the remaining surviving 913 geniuses, about a 100 of them all chose to give it a shot after receiving the news.

Virtual universe, heavenly bridge.

That beautiful island was enshrouded by mist, the watchman Bevin still dressed in his black star robe. At this time youth after youth appeared on the island.

“So many people.” When Luo Feng appeared on the island, with a glance he spotted the Manka prince along with other Heaven and Ground region, Last phase region geniuses.

“9 universe bridge, Luo Feng.” Watchman Bevin smiled, “Go on, there’s currently no one.”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but smile.

“All the best Luo feng.” Wuka waved his fist and shouted.

“You too.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Let me inform you all, Jia Lai Xi from the same batch as you guys has just passed the 1st level.” Watchman Bevin shouted, “After Bolan and Rong Jun, he’s the 3rd to have completed the 1st level.”

Luo Feng who was just getting ready to fly towards the 1st level was stunned.

The surrounding group of youths were all stunned too.

Jia Lai Xi?

Hypnotist Jia Lai Xi?

Back then during the genius battle, his reputation was extremely high. Many had even regarded him as being able to make it to number 2. He was however defeated by madman Luo Feng, and was not able to enter the top 10. Hence he was dropped to the heaven and ground region. Even though he was in that region, strength was after all still strength!

This time, he had passed the 1st level.

“Jia Lai Xi actually passed the 1st level?” The group of youths couldn’t accept it.

“Jia Lai Xi?” Luo Feng snorted, becoming a beam of light and flying into the distant 9 universe bridge.

……

Primal chaos city was extremely vast, on a particular training balcony.

Long Yun was almost like a wild bull, standing on the balcony, staring into the distant sky and muttering, “Jia Lai Xi passed the 1st level, and he’s only a Heaven and ground region member. I’m from the primal region! However he managed to pass the 1st level and i’m still stuck…”Disarray, his mind and heart was in a complete mess.

This made Long Yun completely unable to train.

Pain! Rage! He couldn't accept it! All sorts of emotions were eating away within.

"Calm down."

"I need to stay calm."

Ling Yun's gaze slowly focused. He said softly, "I cannot let my primal region member status become my prison! I need to forget my status and work hard to improve step by step. Yes, just like before..." Long Yun was originally a very low profile and steady person. But once his position rose swiftly due to becoming a powerful and high ranked primal region member, and the fact that even the head of his guards was an undying, even undyings called him his majesty, causing him to change.

"No matter, there's only three that have passed the 1st level currently, I'm not that far behind!"

"Bolan, Rong Jun, Jia Lai Xi!" Long Yun's gaze was filled with battle spirit.

"Hm?" Long Yun frowned.

When his consciousness entered the virtual universe network, he received the latest mail.

"Luo Feng had just passed the 1st level!" The mail only had this one line, it was sent from Lancelot.

“Luo Feng?” Long yun stared wide eyed. In his mind the images of the mad black haired youth from before flashed. He was very clearly within the top 5 back then, his battle with madman... accurately speaking, madman didn’t lose by his hands, but rather by the shrinking battle space.

“I definitely have to pass the 1st level, definitely!” Long Yun’s mind didn’t have any other thoughts, just one, hard work!

.....

“Jia Lai Xi, Luo feng, they’ve all passed the 1st level?” Within Heaven and ground region in Yu Xiang mountain, within a villa, Gu Si Luo violently squeezed the wine glass in his hands. Red wine flowed down from the smashed glass, landing on the floor.

Gu Si Luo was a perfect genius.

During the training space round he was ranked overall number 2. And during the top 10 battle, he matched against Rong Jun. Their battle was the longest one of the lot, finally he lost and he could only helplessly enter the Heaven and ground region. However even though he was in this region, his strength was still recognized.

Gu Si Luo, Jia Lai Xi, they were all regarded as tragic geniuses in that competition, one losing to Rong Jun and the other to Luo Feng.

Both ended up in the Heaven and ground region.

“Jia Lai Xi, Luo Feng, they’ve all passed, why have I still failed?” Gu Si Luo gripped the broken shards, firmly gripping, the shards became powder and flowed down.

The geniuses were all proud. Just a genius competition wasn’t enough to make everyone submit. Even if they failed before...it didn’t mean that they would remain weak.

30 years in primal chaos city, this was the true period of laying their foundations.

They would all risk it all in these 30 years, wanting to best the other geniuses.

Virtual universe, absolute beginning villa 1,136, in the 3rd level of the building.

In the study.

“The 1st level, I passed it easily this time.” Luo Feng swiftly opened his laptop, his mood happy. The earlier battle in the 1st level wasn’t as bad as he thought it would be. That similar opponent on the dark cloud shuttle, using the Nan Shen Armament, didn’t unleash the heavenly blade formation.

He only relied on the 3 powerful golden blades to battle.

In truth.

Even though Luo Feng could control the 3 blades into one, they still weren't as perfect as the opponent's flexibility! Luckily he had the power of the blade domain...its power was boosted greatly, allowing him to kill his opponent immediately.

As for the 2nd level, he gave it a shot but was defeated in one blow.

"Treasure trove." Luo Feng opened the treasure trove mail and chose techniques.

"Too troublesome." Luo Feng had no patience to browse slowly, immediately entering the words floating blood.

Di!

On the laptop screen the Floating blood manual's introduction appeared.

Floating Blood technique, exchangeable for 800 points (Primal region 70%, Absolute beginning 80%, Heaven and ground 905 and Last Phase full price)

"Very well." Luo Feng smiled, "I'll buy it!"

Chapter 23 – A Blade of Floating Blood

Luo Feng pressed the button lightly to exchange for the floating blood manual.

“Exchange successful!”

With the discount, you’ve spent 640 points, with 360 remaining.”

“Please wait, someone will deliver the manual immediately.

A few mandarin words appeared on the screen.

Unlike buying weapons, or life fruit etc, items which need to be transferred in reality...buying a manual, could be obtained immediately within the virtual universe! The manuals were after all simply knowledge being transferred, and the virtual universe had a 100% simulation. Hence, it was the most effective and safest way of transfer.

In reality, one even had to prove one’s identity.

In the virtual universe however, the entire virtual universe was under surveillance and had great security. These manuals were sold by the virtual universe system itself! Naturally it was incredibly safe.

“There’s a call request.” Babata shouted.

“Receive it.”

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved and a screen appeared before him. On it was a beautiful jade, it was the manager of the absolute beginning region sector lord Lady Fox. Lady fox smiled and said, “Your majesty Luo Feng, we’ve just received your manual container, we require you to come down and accept it.”

“Alright, I’m coming.” Luo Feng smiled.

It was indeed fast!

Exchanging goods in reality, just the universe travel time alone would require a long time.

……

Sou!

Luo Feng flew out of his villa, becoming a beam of light on his dark cloud shuttle and swiftly reaching the structure in which the entrance was located, in the blink of an eye. Luo feng could see beside the entrance, sector lord Lady Fox was looking up and awaiting his arrival.

Luo feng surveyed below.

“Your majesty Luo Feng.” Lady fox smiled and welcomed him.

“Lady Fox, where’s the item?” Luo Feng looked around.

“Please wait a moment.” Lady Fox looked at the construct beside, a waitress carrying a silver briefcase ran over and transferred it to Lady Fox.

“Your majesty Luo Feng, these are the manuals our absolute beginning region just received. It’s what you purchased.” Lady Fox passed it over.

“Thanks.” Luo Feng received it with anticipation.

Yes.

The manuals were very important, he had really experienced it this time. Before, he had the Yun Mo Planet inheritance, along with the golden horned beast inheritance, he had never worried about techniques. However studying the 9 universe tablet, whether it was the Yun Mo Planet of the golden horned beast memories, both of them couldn’t help at all.

It was a waste that he had spent all his points initially. So much so that he had only studied just a bit of the 1st blade technique over these 8 months.

“The points are extremely valuable. Wanting to earn more is incredibly difficult. The initial points given to me...are to allow me

to lay down my foundation. Babata, you made me buy the techniques earlier on, that was really stupid." While in mid air flying back towards his villa, Luo Feng said unhappily to Babata on his shoulder.

"You can't blame me!" Babata's little face looked innocent, "How would I know what the primal chaos city is like. I only know one thing, that the earlier you spend your points on techniques, the earlier you can raise your strength."

"Stop quibbling."

"After this first loss, in the future when I acquire valuable and expensive items, I definitely won't use or lose them easily. Good steel should be used on the edge of a blade! The initial points they gave me was for my foundation, I wasted it on the illusionary techniques for the Mosha clan." Luo Feng shook his head.

Luckily he had passed the 1st level. For new people in the city, they awarded 10 times the points for those in their 1st 30 years in primal chaos city, hence he acquired 1,000 points.

Otherwise!

If he wasn't a new person, the 1st level would only give 100 points, 2nd level 200, 3rd level 400...it compounded on, showing just how difficult getting points was!

Sitting in the study, he placed his laptop to the side and put the

silver briefcase on the table. With a click, he opened it.

"Hummm!"

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

The briefcase was filled with many black books within. Every one of them had the universe language words 9 universe and floating blood on them, also with the numbering, "1st, 2nd, 3rd...110th!

"There's actually 110 books." Luo Feng was shocked. As the many training methods were all profound, hence using words alone would be extremely long. Just like when Luo Feng was studying the soul imprint before, just the preparation stages alone for the training took 1 entire book.

From his own inherited memories, the many techniques for the golden horned beast, many of them if calculated in universe language words, would have trillions of words in them.

"Floating blood is a basic manual, that alone is 110 books." Luo Feng was excited, picking up the top one, the 1st book!

On it the most obvious black words were the 9 universe 2 words. Beside it were the smaller words floating blood and finally bottom left, was the name Lian Luo.

Opening the book, Luo Feng began to read.

“9 universe tablet introduction?”

“Space origin law comprehension?”

“Floating blood training?”

Luo Feng looked at the synopsis. He was shocked to find that this 1st book alone had tens of thousands of words, yet they don’t even explain the 108 blade forms. But the author Lian Luo explained his own study of the 9 universe tablet, his recognition of the space origin laws, along with some information of the floating blood training he created.

In general.

This floating blood 1st book was a summary of the entire manual!

“I need to understand his thoughts, his training path before actually studying the 108 forms, that will be even more effective.” Luo Feng began to dig in and study.

The universe space origin law was broad and profound.

Wanting to completely study and comprehend it was almost an impossible thing altogether. Just from looking at the countless planets, one can barely calculate the number of humans in the universe there are. With new generations being born, growing,

and dying ...the cycle of life continued, for a thousand years, 10,000, trillion years...this cycle perpetuated over and over.

In the limitless and vast star fields, out of so many, one universe country leader would be born!

Wanting to become a universe country leader, one had to either be a time or space knight! That would mean completely studying and comprehending space or time at a peak level, that was extremely difficult!

9 universe tablet was one way to allow someone to become a space knight, which was one of the big paths to greatness!

The 9 universe tablet was incredibly profound, and they directly reflected the 27 levels of the heavenly bridge. Just passing the 21st level would mean one could become a space knight, hence becoming a universe country leader! And the final level was still 27. If one completely comprehended the entire 9 universe tablet, that would mean standing right a the peak of humanity in the vast universe itself.

9 universe tablet, a total of 9 pictures!

According to the 1st book's description, as long as one comprehended 7 pictures, he would be able to become a space knight and universe country leader!

The 1st rain drop picture, 2nd drizzle, 3rd rainstorm, these 3

pictures were increasing levels of layers about studying the space laws. Just like how the computers on earth used complex encoding, however in truth if one truly understood the basics and essence...

They were simply the construct of 0s and 1s.

The essence was very simple, just 2 digits forming sequences!

Or just like mandarin, mandarin was very complex, however it was simple strokes that were placed together to form large words. The strokes were considered the base and essence.

Or even English, no matter how complex it was, breaking it down all the way, it was made simply of letters, abcd...forming different words and combinations.

One theory!

Even though the universe origin laws were incredibly complex, the core and essence of the most complex things are still simple. These 1st 3 pictures, broke down the universe laws, separating them into 108 different wonders. If one said that mandarin was made of strokes and English was made of letters.

Then the universe laws were made of these 108 wonders, constantly interweaving and combining, finally forming one huge law!

The 1st 3 pictures were dissected to the deepest regions.

The 4th picture was a picture of stars, the 5th was a galaxy and the 6th was galaxy river.

Whether it was made of 2 digits, or brushes and strokes, or simple letters...just knowing these alone wouldn't be enough to create a huge computer digit or language or even this mysterious network world. One wouldn't be able to rely on just 1 stroke to write a large amount of mandarin words, making the heart trembling mandarin language and culture. Or even just those letters to make an English system.

Wanting to rely on the core essence to form an incredibly vast and full network world, mandarin world, English world.

Required large amounts of combinations, large amounts of grammar etc...

One theory!

108 wonders, these were the dissected pieces of shattered glass, the base 108 items.

The 1st 3 pictures...were a form of dissection!

The 4th to 6th pictures...were a grouping of the bodies!

Allowing these most basic core essences to combine and constantly expand, improving on them, broadening...until finally forming the perfect universe space origin law.

The 7th picture was an incredibly peculiar beast, that represented a perfect universe space law.

Comprehending the 7th picture, one could become a space knight or universe country leader!

“So it’s this theory.”

“I understand.” Luo Feng looked a the 1st book’s initial 2 portions which discussed the 9 universe tablet and the comprehension of the universe space law. He was getting excited, “Normal warriors comprehending the laws, training...it’s just like studying English, they learn a few words immediately and practice on how to write them. By learning some words today, some more tomorrow, over time, they get stronger and better. However if they don’t learn it with the set rules, it’ll remain complex and inefficient!”

“However by dissecting it first and grouping them later.”

“It’ll be like learning the most basic letters, learning the different grammar first and the rules and vocabulary later, structure etc.” Luo Feng smiled.

The theory was simple.

However the universe law, compared to mandarin or computer coding was at least a trillion times more complex. Undying souls' calculating speeds don't pale in comparison to even computers. However, many are still unable to break through to knight level even after trillions of years! It's because it was too complex. After all the universe origin laws contained simply too many things.

By using a 2 digit structure alone, one could build a network world.

These 108 wonders could explain 108 digits, just how terrifying was the universe origin law?

What's more, 108 wonders, every one of them was trillions of times bigger than the entire mandarin or English language or even computer coding. Much less the entire law itself.

Chapter 24 – Still For 10 Years

Floating blood technique, this was a manual that dissected the universe space law's essence, demonstrating through the many blade forms.

Floating blood's 1st book was a summary.

The 2nd to 109th book were training methods on the 108 wonders.

The 110th book was a summary of the 108 forms.

"Dissecting the essence is incredibly difficult! The revolution of the universe laws, with its perfect form...as for its essence, it requires one to constantly dissect it. Even the 1st 3 pictures of the 9 universe tablet only displayed the 108 wonders within those 108 drops of rain. These sort of complicated methods, I cannot function or dissect it!

I can only use blade forms to fully explain these 108 wonders.

Comprehension is incredibly difficult.

And these 108 wonders, the 1st 9 are the easiest, the middle 27 are hard (the 27 plus the first 9 forms the 2nd picture of the drizzling), the final 72 are the hardest (these 72 plus the earlier 36 form the perfect rainstorm).

The 1st 9, even though they are the easiest, unless one is an absolute genius with pinnacle comprehension and mental stability, it's extremely hard to train.

Back then I studied in primal chaos city for 3,000 years before I finally created the floating blood. If it were in the actual universe, it would take at least 10,000 years.

I have these two pieces of advice to the warriors in the future...

One, if you are in primal chaos city and you've trained for 20 years without comprehending the 1st blade form, give up on floating blood. Go learn from other paths and slowly comprehend them, this path doesn't suit you.

Two, if you are in the actual universe and you've trained for 200 years without comprehending the 1st blade form, similar to above, just give up."

.....

These final two lines in the 1st book made Luo Feng frown.

Yes!

Before on the balcony, seeing the large amount of words left behind by Lian Luo saying he studied for 3,000 years, this meant that it took a total of 3,000 years of study for him to accomplish this! Studying in primal chaos city, one could look up to see the

obvious universe laws revolve, even though the efficiency was much higher, he still took that long.

“20 years?” Luo Feng said softly, revealing a smile, “ If one hasn’t comprehended the 1st blade form in 20 years, give up on floating blood?”

“Absolute genius? Absolute comprehension and mental stability?”

“In terms of talent and comprehension, the Mosha clan clone is very capable.”

“In terms of stability and mental state, maybe I’m weaker than my two brothers. However at least I’m able to maintain absolute cold calmness.” Luo Feng thought, “Talent, comprehension and mental state, these three should be considered pretty high.”

The talent of his earth body in the vast universe could be considered not bad, however it could never reach the absolute state of which Lian Luo spoke of in the manual.

The Mosha clan body...

That was the strong body!

This was the ultimate assassin amongst countless races in the vast universe, the favored of space itself. In terms of talent, there wasn’t one amongst the human race that could match up to the

Mosha clan in terms of the Space origin law. The Mosha clan training the space origin law had the fastest comprehension, that along with Luo Feng's mental state.

The conditions were good!

Primal chaos city, the chaos energy revolved.

On a particular balcony of this ancient city, Luo Feng stood, gazing into the distant city and the wasteland outside.

"Floating blood technique is explained through blade forms. However the blade forms can be swiftly trained in." Luo Feng pondered, the 1st book had many explanations of the blade forms. Through incredibly complex blade forms, allowing one to experience and finally comprehend the 1st wonder that was the core of the 1st blade form.

Blade and saber, these were both close combat weapons.

The blade emphasized on piercing.

The saber emphasized on slashing.

However the illusionary saber that Luo Feng used forms from the blood illusionary forms. The entire length of the saber was 108cm, the edge was 80cm, and the width was 5.3 cm. It had some changes from the saber the one he used on earth, just from the appearance one could see that this one focused on piercing. There were a few

other two handed huge blades that were even more similar to a wild saber compared to Luo Feng's.

Having used the golden illusionary saber for long, changing to a blade now wasn't too difficult.

"In terms of close combat talent, especially when using a blade, of my 3 bodies, there's no doubt the Mosha clan is the strongest." Luo Feng thought.

"Then, let's begin!"

.....

Luo Feng sat crossed legged, raising his head to look at the splits in the sky that had crystal threads and revolving origin laws, it was simply mesmerizing. Like the thousands and tens of thousands of warriors in primal chaos city, Luo Feng began to quietly study.

The primal chaos spirits had beneficial effects on the soul.

However just like eating medicine, it lost its potency gradually as one consumed more. Luo Feng had hunted for over 8 months. Initially the spirits made his soul constantly evolve, however as it evolved more, the effects of the spirits diminished. Especially in the recent two months, the evolution itself became almost unnoticeable.

That's right!

If one could evolve limitlessly, than simply relying on the primal chaos spirits could make one's soul evolve to undying. It was a pity...there was no such good thing!

"No wonder they all simply sit and quietly study. Only newcomers would head outside the city to hunt. So...to many Domain lords and Sector lords, they've already had their fill of the primal chaos spirits."

"It's no wonder, there are still so many surviving beasts outside the city."

.....

Luo Feng sat on the balcony, looking up at the origin laws revolving about, experiencing it.

Within his internal world.

The Mosha clan body had taken the form of a black clothed Luo Feng, wielding the dark red blade. This blade was something Babata had created from using several machines and alloys within his storage space. With no special properties, it was a very simple alloy blade, completely fulfilling the conditions of the floating blood manual.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

Within the black clothed Luo Feng, the 10,081 surfaced life crystal had incredibly complex golden engravings on them all. These glowing engravings gave off a resonance and ripple with the universe space itself.

Sou...

Over 1,000 images appeared, the blade form was magnificent. The Mosha clan was naturally apt at using close combat weapons, especially bade forms that were infused with the space origin laws...it was suited for such skills.

“Not right.”

“It should be this way.”

“Yes, very good.”

The black clothed Luo feng and Luo Feng himself shared the same soul. The two naturally viewed the space splits and the universe origin laws revolving together, experiencing it and unleashing the blade forms. Luo Feng’s earth body himself would occasionally reflect against the 9 universe tablet and the manual within the virtual universe.

.....

Time flowed, days passed.

Even though Luo Feng had passed the 1st level of the heavenly bridge and received yet another chance to study the tablet, he was in no rush to go immediately. According to the explanation within the floating blood manual, every chance to study had to be grasped and treasured, one couldn't waste time within. One first had to completely understand and comprehend everything from before, and continue pondering and studying. Only when they left with a large amount of questions and doubts again should they go see the tablet once more.

As one would ponder for a long time, with large amounts of questions, going to see the tablet would easily answer much of it, understanding more from before.

This way!

The efficiency was high. After all the chances to study the 9 universe tablet were limited.

China 2075 June 9th, Luo Feng acquired the floating blood manual and began his training in primal chaos city.

Year 2075 september, Gu Si Luo passed the 1st level on the bridge, and after a few days, Long Yun too passed the 1st level.

Year 76 January, Luo feng entered the city leader's residence and began to study the tablet again. He spent 7 days, constantly comprehending answers to his questions about the 1st blade form in his mind, and even feeling something special. The 9 universe

tablet was completely for bringing one into the space origin law itself.

Year 76 to 77, the Manka prince Wuka, Qian Shui of the genius siblings...many from the absolute beginning had all passed the 1st level.

Even though it seemed like Wuka, Qian Shui and the others were slow.

In truth the time in the primal universe flowed slower, China had seen 3 years gone by and yet in primal chaos city, only 1 had passed! In truth, Wuka, Qian Shui and the others weren't slower than Luo Feng by even a year.

During the 2nd and 3rd year in Primal chaos city, the heaven and ground region, the last phase region's geniuses began to all pass through the 1st level.

This batch of 1,000 geniuses, with only a bit over 800 survivors, the last to pass the 1st level was during the end of the 4th year.

.....

Within primal chaos city, the other geniuses began to liven up, all heading out frequently and later realizing the effects diminishing. Everybody slowly began to stop heading out to hunt the beasts. Only occasionally heading out to use them as test subjects for their comprehension. Everyone spent their time

sitting on the balconies.

……

In the actual universe.

China year 2082 august, Luo Feng's older son Luo Ping had married and had a child in the same year. After all during the base era, many usually married at the age of 19, and this year, Luo Ping was already 22.

Luo Feng was speechless.

He had already become a grandfather?

Year 86, Earth's bases began to expand, as it had already been over 20 years since the swallowing beast incident. Over these 20 years, with the earth's upper echelon not controlling the masses and birth, many were encouraged to have more children. Since humanity at risk before, it was better to have more children.

However now, after earth began to interact more with the universe, discovering how vast it was with trillions of other races, earth's humans were simply too little, naturally they wouldn't control them. And with technology advancing at an extreme rate, feeding and housing everybody became a much easier thing to do.

Year 88, Earth's humans, they occupied more territory, the humans of earth also got stronger and stronger. In truth, the

reason behind why they never fully killed all the wild beasts...to the earth humans, they were the perfect training ground for the fighters.

Year 89, Luo Feng's smaller son Luo Hai began to enter the universe to explore. His older son Luo Ping was more steady, however Luo Hai worshipped his father and headed into the universe to explore. Luo Feng couldn't help it, he could only arrange for him to enter the Ganwu dojo.

Year 92, Earth's humans, in the pacific, Indian ocean and many other oceans, a few large constructed cities on islands were build. This represented the humans of earth finally entering the sea areas.

Year 99, The expedition to Mars began.

.....

Of course the most stunning thing for Luo Feng was...

China year 2103, his own grandson, also Luo Ping's son from before his marriage, also got married.

My god.

If this kept going...his time in primal chaos city was over 30 years, the actual universe time was over 100 years. 100 years...he feared that his own great grandchildren and great great grand

children would have been born by then.

“No wonder, these ancient beings after trillions of years, have trillions in their imperial family. This multiplication is indeed too fast.” Luo Feng was helpless.

……

And when 30 years had passed on earth, only 10 years had passed in Primal chaos city.

Earth had huge transformations.

And in the distant ancient primal chaos city, Luo Feng had quietly sat there for 10 years.

Chapter 25 – Jade Emperor

Primal chaos city.

As the sacred land of humanity had existed for trillions of years, there was hardly any change within these 10 years.

Chaos energy still engulfed it, there were still countless warriors on their balconies.

If there was a camera recording the images of the for the last 10 years, one would realize that majority of the warriors hadn't moved at all!

"He's coming."

"Hm."

In the air above primal chaos city stood two powerful looking silhouettes. One was an ape man in golden armor, his eyes seemed like they could see through space itself. Beside him was another slightly skinnier man with pale complexion in white armor with two black horns. The space around him seemed to be warping, the most peculiar thing was he kept his eyes closed.

"Rumble..." In the distance a dark blue arc universe ship appeared.

“True Yan, Tong Nan!” A clear voice resounded. Dressed in a dark blue armor, with purple long hair, a beautiful lady flew out the cabin door as the ship behind her vanished.

“Jade!” True Yan’s voice was cheerful.

That white robed skinny man who had his eyes closed also smiled and shouted, “Jade, it’s been awhile.”

“You two have been staying in primal chaos city and studying, rarely even entering the virtual universe. And I’ve been in the actual universe, how can we even meet?” Jade smiled. Her entire being was almost like a jade statue, giving off a clear dreamy feeling, almost like she wasn’t in the same space and time at all.

“Come to where I am staying.” The white robed skinny man smiled.

……

In a moment.

In a peculiar construct, where light and darkness were incomparably harmonious.

True Yan Emperor, Tong Nan Emperor and Jade Emperor, these three were absolute beings with high amounts of power within the virtual universe, they sat around each other.

“Chi chi, tastes good.” Jade lifted a crystal wine glass and took a sip. This liquid which had stars floating and revolving within looked extremely beautiful.

“Haha, to be able to drink this 5 star galaxy, I’ve gotten some of the benefits from Jade.” True Yan strongly swallowed the wine liquid in one gulp and rubbed his chin gently after. His eyes staring wide, he complemented, “Tong Nan this blind man is very petty. He’s been with me for over a hundred million years, and only let me drink this once.”

“It’s very expensive!” Tong Nan said softly, “You just drank 30,000 mixed elements!”

“Don’t be so petty, give me some more. Back then when you were in the universe secret area, you earned quite a bit. Yet, just drinking a bit of wine makes you feel the pinch?” True Yan laughed and mocked, grabbing the bottle again.

The entirely black cylinder was on the table. Tong Nan emperor didn’t even stop him, allowing True Yan to grab it.

“Tsk!” True Yan shot a glance at Jade emperor, “Jade, your reputation is still bigger.”

Jade emperor smiled and looked at Tong Nan emperor.

As eternal beings that have been around for so long, even if they

helped their families live for 1,000 eras, as time flowed like a river, their close ones had all still died. Hence, True Yan Emperor, Jade emperor and Tong Nan emperor didn't have any family left. To them, these friends that had been through thick and thin with them were their family.

True Yan, Tong Nan, Jade, they all used to be a team, they were good friends in life and death situations!

They experienced peril time and again!

Their bonds were deep, especially between Tong Nan and Jade. These two had even a trace of romance. However these two had never actually acted upon it, even though they understood each other's thoughts, they still maintained their distance. They were used to this feeling too. Afterall, they were good friends and partners.

"Your arrival this time is for?" Tong Nan emperor asked.

"On knight's orders." Jade smiled.

"9 blade knight?" True Yan asked shocked, "What is the knight making you do here?"

"The knight pays close attention to this new batch. They need to stay in primal chaos city for over 30 years, and one third of the time has already passed. As such, there should already be some definite progress." Jade smiled, "And the knight himself will only

come on the last day itself to receive this new batch. As for regular supervision...naturally he would send people under him. Hence I've come."

"Ah." Tong Nan the blind man nodded, "Right, this new batch was received by 9 blade knight. If a strong warrior emerges, he will be under 9 blade knight."

"Right." Jade smiled, "Even though this batch's chances of becoming undying are very low, there should still be a few! With their talent and our Virtual Universe Company's heavy nurturing....the moment they become undying, they will definitely be more than ordinary. Naturally the knight has to pay attention to his future underlings."

For every genius battle and warrior battle, the Virtual Universe Company would send a knight to host it!

Whoever hosts, any genius that later becomes undying would then be arranged to be under that host. If there wasn't such a reason...with the knight's status, would there be a need for him to send the new batch into primal chaos city and later personally receive them again?

"This new batch is not bad, especially that Bolan. Half a year ago he already cleared the 4th level! Tong Nan emperor lifted his wine glass, gently sipping, "From the others, seven of them have passed the 2nd level. The rest have only passed the 1st level so far. These 7 are...Gu Si Luo, Long Yun, Jia Lai Xi, Tao, Qian Shui, Wuka and Rong Jun."

“Rong Jun broke through the 2nd level in his 4th year.” True Yan smiled, “Tao did so in the 7th year. Gu Si Luo, Long Yun, Jia Lai Xi all passed the 2nd level in their 8th. Wuka and Qian Shui in their 9th.”

Jade smiled, “I know. In terms of strength, Bolan is number 1 and Rong Jun is 2nd. The six behind them…Tao, gu Si Luo, Long Yun, Jia Lai Xi, Wuka and Qian shui don’t have huge differences in levels. Perhaps. that blood axe Tao is leading by a little. Right… wasn’t there a Luo Feng with good performance earlier?”

“Not clear.” Tong Nan shook his head, “True Yan would know. He’s been keeping an eye on that punk.”

“True Yan.” Jade looked at the ape man warrior.

“This Luo feng…” True Yan rubbed his chin, and then his head. He was frowning, “How do I put it. When he first came, his performance was good. However, these 10 years have been peculiar. This punk spent some time hunting the beasts outside, after which he has been sitting on the balcony studying. He has not once attempted the bridge.”

“Ah?”

Jade nodded, smiling, “I’ve come this time specifically to observe them, the first target is Bolan.”

“The knight had also complemented Bolan. Each level of the heavenly bridge gets increasingly more difficult. The difficulty rises in a compounding ratio. I initially thought that he would take 20 years to pass the 4th level. Who would have thought he would do so in 10 instead.” Jade exclaimed and smiled, “The 2nd is Rong Jun, he was number 2 in this batch. I estimate he will pass the 3rd level in these few years.”

“Hm.”

“Right.”

Tong Nan and True Yan nodded.

“Four years after coming to Primal chaos city and passing the 2nd level. Especially this year, he’s already tried twice…he’s not far from passing the 3rd level!” True Yan laughed, “And with the Yuan Chen universe country leader as his personal teacher, how could his improvement be slow?” Even though they were complimenting Rong Jun, within he was still unsatisfied.

It was because Rong Jun and Bolan both weren’t from the 9 universe sect.

“My sect’s Luo Feng is studying the floating blood, was it a mistake? Dissecting the universe space law essence is incredibly difficult, has it stumped him?” True Yan was worried within. Going down the wrong path was a waste of time, if he didn’t pass that path, then Luo Feng would have wasted 10 years of time.

……

Jade emperor, under the 9 blade knight's orders had come to observe the new batch.

With Jade emperor's strength, observing them from far away was not a problem at all. This new batch wouldn't even detect or feel her.

"This Bolan is really not bad, indeed a number one genius from 10 million years." Jade floated above amidst the chaos energy. Looking at the distant Bolan training in the wastelands, Bolan's gaze was firm and strong, almost as though nothing could influence him.

……

"This Rong Jun is a natural born warrior. However, just what about him has attracted the two country leaders?" Jade stood in the air, surveying another distant balcony. That messy haired bare footed Rong Jun was practicing his forms, occasionally looking up to observe the universe laws revolving.

……

"Long Yun, hm, he is very steady. If he can work on his strength, his future is limitless."

……

“Wuka is indeed a genius of the Manka generation. His battle talents aren’t that far away from Rong Jun’s.”

……

Jade slowly observed each of the new batch, making deductions within and getting ready to return and report to the 9 blade knight.

“This is Luo Feng?” Jade walked within an alley of primal chaos city. Looking in the not too distant balcony, there was a black youth in dark grey armor who had his eyes shut and was motionless. 10 years of time had caused his hair to grow long and draped over his shoulders.

“Has his study reached a fork?” Jade emperor thought.

Universe warriors studying the universe origin laws would occasionally make a wrong turn in their studies. Sometimes they would only realize their mistake after a few years. As for reaching a fork in this study…in the vast universe, the many races of warriors had all seen this frequently.

They weren’t afraid of these forks.

They were only afraid of making a wrong turn and not realizing it.

“These 30 years are your most precious 30 years, little punk, all the best.” Jade emperor turned and left.

……

On that balcony.

Luo Feng sat crossed legged, no one knew that in his internal world.

The mosha clan was engaged in mad training over and over. For a total of 10 years, the Mosha clan had never even stopped training. He was immersed in the thrill of dissecting the universe origin law essence and did not even feel the flow of time.

“Rumble!”

On the balcony, the energy around Luo Feng who was sitting quietly crossed legged shook, dust dispersed and he opened his eyes.

Hua!

He stood up completely. As he gazed into the distance, primal chaos city was still exactly the same, time left absolutely no trace on it at all.

“How long was I training this time?” Luo Feng asked.

“This time was longer than those before, 3 years and 9 months.” Babata replied.

“Hm.”

Luo Feng gently waved his hand, leaving behind a palm print in space. He was smiling, “If I cannot comprehend this in 20 years I have to give up? Luckily it was only 10 years, I’ve spent 10 years to finally completely comprehend the 1st blade form. At least I have the right to train this floating blood, hm, I should go attempt the heavenly bridge.”

Chapter 26 – Luo Feng's Blade

Virtual universe, heavenly bridge.

Dressed in full armor and boots, Luo Feng appeared at the center of the island, causing the watchman Bevin to get a shock as he looked over, smiling, "It's been about 10 years, how come you haven't come at all? Your comrades all try a few times each year."

"I didn't want to get distracted from training." Luo Feng smiled and walked over.

"Hm?" The watchman Bevin was surprised as he looked at the black haired youth. He felt like Luo Feng wasn't the same as before.

"I want to attempt the 9 universe bridge, can I go in now?" Luo Feng asked.

"There's no one on the 9 universe bridge now." Watchman Bevin smiled.

"Thanks."

Luo Feng's every step, shua! Shua! Shua! Left behind a trail of images, while his actual being had already reached the 9 universe bridge itself.

“He feels different from before.” Watchman Bevin muttered.

9 universe heavenly bridge, it was built over a vast ocean, reaching way past the horizons.

Luo Feng had already passed the 1st level hence he could fly directly towards the 2nd level. At the end, there was a huge cloud mist, from the mist a voice resounded, “Choose your opponent, you can choose a fighter, spirit reader controller or hypnotist. Pick anyone and win over your opponent and you’ll have completed your 2nd level.”

“I choose…” Luo Feng slowly descended from mid air, firmly landing on the bridge, “Fighter!”

Sou!

A black liquid flew out from the mist and it swiftly gathered and formed a mysterious person who was wearing a mask in black armor. This mysterious man carried 2 blades, he was slightly taller and bigger than Luo Feng and he emitted a powerful aura as he stared coldly at Luo Feng.

“Chi chi…”Luo Feng used his right hand to brush past his forehead. The blade energy around his hand was extremely sharp. With a brush, he immediately cut his long hair off, returning to that 3 inch length hair style from before.

Whatever he looks like in reality, the virtual universe too would

automatically simulate.

"I'm really not used to long hair." Luo Feng smiled,

"Hmph"

The mysterious man carrying 2 blades stared coldly at Luo Feng, "Take out your weapon."

"I'll satisfy you." Luo Feng smiled. Two weapons immediately appeared in his hand. In his left was a 6 edged shield, the absolute void shield and in his right was a blood shadow blade, the golden shadow blade.

Yes!

Luo Feng was going to use his own blade techniques to pass the 2nd level. After understanding the universe space origin law's 1st basic wonder, whether it's the Nan Shen Armament or blade techniques, it could be used with anything. This was just a path, once one understands the path, he can swiftly meld it with different weapons and techniques.

"Hmph!" The black clothed man let out a snort and with a swish, he immediately landed fiercely on the bridge. He rushed towards Luo Feng, almost like lightning as he brandished his two blades.

"Bring it!!!"Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with madness and his mad battle spirit exploded!

Rumble!

Luo Feng rushed forward, leaving behind an image on the ground while another appeared before the black armored man.

“Bury!” His eyes were piercing. With a roar, the blood shadow blade in his right hand slashed with intense power. It was almost as if it was slashing through a mountain range or even the ocean, right towards the black armored man.

“So fast!” The black armored man was shocked. He quickly used both blades in his arms to block it.

Peng!

The black armored man was knocked so hard that he knelt on the ground with one knee and slid backwards. Weng! When his knee hit the ground it caused the bridge to shake slightly.

“What a powerful blade.” The black armored man was shocked, following which he fiercely stood up.

Sou!

The black armored man flew up and 6 images appeared in mid air. All of them wielding two blades. The most peculiar thing, they all seemed to be unleashing different techniques altogether,

simultaneously attacking Luo Feng.

“Haha…” Luo Feng actually laughed madly and rushed in, “World’s end!!!”

Xiu!

The blood shadow blade in his hand left behind a blurred image in mid air. It slashed past the 6 images and causing the 6 black armored men to immediately fly backwards and crumble, leaving behind only 1 real body.

Hatred! Luo Feng immediately appeared above the black armored man. His right arm violently warped, causing the armor to expand. The muscles that appeared through the armor seemed to be steel reinforced bars, seemingly extremely powerful. With a flash of madness, this blade immediately slashed down, the black armored man could barely withstand it with his two blades.

Rumble!

The black armored man was immediately knocked downwards. With a loud clash, he smashed into the bridge. He couldn’t help but spit out fresh blood, and later landing within the mist filled ocean.

“I don’t believe!” From the ocean he roared and floated back towards the sky.

Luo Feng rushed back towards the bridge and smiled widely, “I’ll defeat your belief!”

“Illusion!”

“Nightmare!”

“Hatred!”

“Pensive!”

“Bury!”

“Heaven’s end!”

Luo Feng was almost like a hard to follow fighter. That peculiar movement appeared time again before the black armored man, and each blade was hard to receive. Be it fierce and mad or hard to predict, the most peculiar thing was...every blade form was extremely terrifying and mixed up. It made the black armored man have no way to resist.

“Relying on these 6 moves will take a bit of time.” Luo Feng stood on the ocean surface, thinking.

He was using the Mosha clan’s Illusionary 7 blades that his mosha body had been studying.

The illusionary 7 blades had 7 techniques in total. They were Nightmare, Illusion, Pensive, Bury, Dutchman's Pipe, Heaven's end and Hatred. Naturally these names were simply Luo Feng's translation from universe language. However, in mandarin the names were barely close to the original meanings.

These 7 blades, none of them were weaker or stronger than the other.

Some were fit to fight against numbers, while others were fit for assassination. Some were fit for close combat, while others were more strength based. All these moves had their own usages! When training the illusionary 7 blades, different people would have different strengths.

Luo Feng's favorite was...Dutchman's pipe, it was like picking one of the flowers.

Back when the Mosha clan studied the Illusionary manual, it emphasized on this Dutchman pipe technique. This move was suited for assassination. It was like dancing on the edge of a blade, a situation where one would close up completely with the opponent and slash it out. In the universe, as the warriors had extreme speeds, even fighters wouldn't close in completely on an opponent.

This move was an extremely close technique! It was meant to stick completely to your opponent!

When the blades clash and the flower appears, one would take

the opponent's life!

As he had studied it for a long time, this move...after Luo Feng had comprehended the 1st wonder of the space law, he was able to infuse this Dutchman's pipe with this 1st wonder. Hence he didn't have time to infuse the 7 illusionary 7 blades' other 6 techniques with the 1st wonder yet.

In the past...Luo Feng was simply relying on 10 years of study and his comprehension of the laws to oppress his opponent!

Luo Feng descended from mid air and landed on the bridge.

"If you want to kill me, it won't be that easy." In mid air the black armored man wielding 2 blades was obviously in a sorry plight. He landed on the bridge too, his eyes fixed on the black haired youth.

"The next move I am about to unleash is called the dutchman's pipe." Luo Feng smiled at the black armored man, "To be able to die by this move is your honor."

"Hmph." The black armored man snorted.

Sou! Luo Feng immediately rushed towards the black armored man. He flipped the way he held the blood illusionary blade, an extremely swift and moving arc beam of light rushed forward!

"Ah!" The black armored man stared wide eyed, "No!"

Weng...

The 2 blades in his hands immediately became countless images, covering himself entirely.

“Dang!” The beautiful arc beam of light slashed through.

“Blocked it.” The black armored man relaxed for a moment and thought suspiciously, “Why was it so light?”

Luo Feng’s blurry image followed that arc beam of light and suddenly lit up, appearing right before the black armored man. At this point, the distance between the two of them was less than 2m. With a sudden blurry movement, the arc beam of light lit up again and slashed past the man immediately. It was so fast that he didn’t even have time to react, having his throat cut.

Chi!

The slash cut right through and his head was split open, as fresh blood spewed out.

“Too fast...” The black armored man stared wide eyed. Not even having the time to say anything, he died and his body returned to the black liquid within the white mist.

Dutchman’s pipe of the illusionary 7 blades!

“Right, it’s fast.” Luo Feng flipped his hand and the blade appeared before him. Blowing it with with a light breath, the blood dripped off the edge. His eyes filled with glee, “The moment the dutchman’s pipe appears, it follows the space ripples most essential arc. This blade is truly fast and vicious!”

Only after comprehending the 1st wonder of the space law, did Luo Feng’s blade have the right to be called the dutchman’s pipe. As for the other 6 techniques, they were simply in the beginner form.

“3rd level!” Luo Feng looked at the mist before him dissipate, and headed towards the 3rd level of the bridge.

“This 3rd bridge, I can’t be too flashy here. the blade techniques are after all due to the Mosha clan’s proficiency. I’ll use the Nan Shen Armament in the 3rd level.” Luo Feng thought. His earth body’s strongest technique was still spirit weapons, following which he swiftly flew into the air and followed the bridge to the 3rd level, right to the end of where one could see.

……

Primal Chaos City, Tong Nan Emperor looked below.

True Yan emperor, Tong Nan Emperor and Jade Emperor sat together.

“Leaving so early?” True Yan was shocked.

“I’ve been in primal chaos city for close to 20 days. Whatever I need to observe, I’ve seen. Bolan and Rong Jun are the most exceptional, the other’s have their own specialties.” Jade emperor smiled, “It’s time to return and face the knight.”

Tong Nan Emperor frowned.

“Hm?” True Yan naturally frowned too, shocked.

“What’s up?: Tong Nan and Jade emperor looked over shocked.

“It’s that Luo Feng punk, he just passed the 2nd level.” True Yan could barely contain his happiness, smiling, “Just!”

“2nd level?” Jade nodded, “He is afterall one of the exceptional ones. He should have passed the 2nd level much earlier. Even though he’s a little slower than the others now, but it’s just a little. Wuka and Qian Shui only passed the 2nd level in their 9th year.”

“No, he passed it using close combat!” True yan said.

“Close combat?”

Tong Nan and Jade were shocked.

Everybody had their specialties. A controller was a controller, a fighter was a fighter! The strong usually focused on what they were proficient in, and Luo Feng was a controller.

“Just relying on close combat he passed the 2nd level? His close combat ability is no weaker than Wuka or Long Yun then.” Jade’s eyes gleamed, “Let’s go quickly to the heavenly bridge.”

“Let’s go.” Tong Nan said too, at least Jade wasn’t leavening immediately.

“Haha, I definitely saw something in him earlier, he’s not average.” True Yan laughed loudly, muttering within, “This punk… his close combat is comparable to Long Yun or Wuka, truly demonic.”

Hu!

The 3 absolute beings sent their consciousness immediately into the virtual universe network heavenly bridge.

Chapter 27 – Learning While Fighting

Virtual universe network, Heavenly Bridge.

Three silhouettes appeared on the beautiful island. They were all absolute warriors of the Virtual Universe Company.

“True Yan emperor, Tong Nan Emperor, Jade Emperor.” The watchman Bevin bowed respectfully.

“Has Luo Feng’s battle on the 3rd level already begun?” Jade asked.

“It’s just about to, he just reached the end of the 3rd level.” The watchman Bevin said. Bevin was the watchman of the entire heavenly bridge, he was the most familiar with everybody’s conditions and progress. Even True Yan or Tong Nan Emperor, that level of absolute warriors, they couldn’t immediately detect others battling on the bridge. They all relied on Bevin.

“Broadcast his battle situation.” Jade emphasized.

“Yes!” Bevin waved his hand and a 10m long and 8m wide screen immediately appeared. The footage on it was a heavenly bridge shrouded in white mist. Luo feng was standing and staring at the mist.

“It’s about to begin.” Jade’s eyes gleamed.

“Looking at his form, he seems confident.” True Yan smiled, “He probably isn’t using close combat this time.”

“Hm!” Tong Nan replied.

3 absolute beings all watched the screen.

Jade Emperor was watching under the orders of the 9 blade knight, monitoring the progress and prospects of the new batch.

Tong Nan Emperor was simply following Jade and True Yan over to watch.

True Yan was the one who truly wanted to watch this, as Luo Feng was a youth with good prospects from the 9 universe tablet sect.

“Let me see your progress from these 10 years. I knew you training in Floating blood was the right choice.” True Yan thought within.

At the end of the 3rd level.

“I choose…” Luo Feng looked at the mist before him, “Controller!”

The large mist before him reacted just like the previous 2 levels. A black liquid flew out and immediately formed a black clothed

man. This one was on a dark cloud shuttle, carrying a golden long rod. His mask revealed his eyes that were locked on Luo Feng, “You wish to pass the 3rd level?”

“Right.” Luo Feng smiled.

Rumble, immediately golden energy rippled around him. The dark golden long rod behind him immediately shot out beams of gold light. This immediately formed 9 blades covered in light! These 9 blades acted as the foundation and resonated with each other, causing countless amounts of blade energy to emanate, almost like an army being directed.

Nan Shen Armament 3rd level, Heavenly blade, also blade domain.

Compared to before, Luo Feng was truly able to control this blade domain like his own arm. The energy within it gathered into one body.

“Heavenly blade?” The black clothed man laughed coldly.

Rumble...the black clothed man’s surroundings too began to fill with golden energy. In an instant, a similar blade domain was formed.

“Peng! Peng!” The 2 round blade domains clashed time and again, causing large amounts of blade energy to ripple about.

“Don’t think that just because you’ve passed the 2nd level, you can easily pass the 3rd.” The black clothed man stood far in mid air, laughing, “This 3rd level is much harder than the 2nd level. Go!” He pointed at Luo Feng and immediately from the 9 blades within his blade domain, 8 of them united. The golden threads interweaved between them, becoming a huge blurry golden blade.

Chi!

Luo Feng’s blade domain was immediately broken apart. The huge golden blade was like a huge ship steering past the waves.

“Go!” Luo Feng pointed.

The 9 blades around immediately gathered, a large amount of complex golden engravings interweaved, swiftly forming a huge golden blade. With a rumble, Luo Feng controlled the huge blade and matched the opponents huge blade in mid air. In the blink of an eye, they had exchanged over 1,000 times.

“Just relying on 8 blades into 1, you think you can defeat me?” Luo Feng looked at the black clothed man in mid air.

“Haha, no rush!” With a maniacal laughter, “Since you are looking to die fast, I’ll fulfill your wish.” Immediately the final blade from around the black clothed man joined the others into that huge blade, causing the huge blade to grow even more.

Luo feng and the black clothed man both fused 9 blades.

However their outer layer had their differences. Luo Feng's size itself was larger, and the black clothed man's huge blade seemed more condensed, with more golden threads. But, it was overall smaller.

"You will lose." The black clothed man's eyes burned with fire.

Rumble!"

The 2 huge blades clashed again and Luo Feng's blade was immediately knocked backwards. The black clothed man immediately controlled his to pierce towards Luo Feng.

"Indeed its powerful." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. The dark cloud shuttle began to warp and immediately the surroundings were filled with 100 of his images. The 100 images completely surrounded the area with a diameter of 1,000m, also his unpredictable movement had reached an absurd level, every dodge was extremely fast.

Sou!

Sou!

Sou!

Just like lightning, it made the opponents huge golden blade

completely unable to catch up to him, and Luo Feng simultaneously controlled his blade to block the opponent's.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Every clash, in terms of offense, Luo Feng seemed disadvantaged. However in terms of movement...just relying on it alone, Luo feng was able to dodge every attack, it was unbelievable.

.....

On the beautiful island.

The tall and sturdy True Yan emperor, the skinny Tong Nan Emperor, the beautiful Jade Emperor all watched the broadcast on the screen and laughed.

"Haha, this punk, he is treating the heavenly bridge as a chance to learn and advanced further." True Yan laughed loudly.

"Hm." Jade Emperor nodded, "His movement has already reached the 3rd level. Hmmm, 100 threads? but just relying on the this 100 thread level, he shouldn't be able to so easily dodge the Nan Shen Armament's attack. The main thing is Luo Feng. His movement...he's obviously begun to comprehend the foundation of the universe space law. Hence, every movement he makes resonates with that."

"Right, he's truly begun to understand it." Tong Nan Emperor

nodded.

"The foundation of the universe space origin law, he's gotten a glimpse of it already." True Yan smiled and nodded.

What kind of level were these 3 people?

They were all given the title Emperors. They were beings that could immediately receive the title of eternal member within primal chaos city, far exceeding that general 13 from before, or the Yun Mo Planet master! If Luo Feng could be said to have begun to understand a bit of the foundation of the universe space law, then these 3 could be said to have reached the absolute foundation of either the space or time laws!

They were just a little step away from completely understanding them fully, hence they could naturally see Luo Feng's progress.

"Touching a little of the foundation of the law. As long as he doesn't fall, his accomplishments in the future won't be bad at all." Jade emperor smiled and complimented.

"Look at how beautiful his movement is, that arc movement is so clean and precise. It follows the time ripple arc." True Yan complemented and exclaimed, "Even that Bolan, studying both time and space, his movement was able to produce close to 10,000 images. Yet, that arc isn't as perfect and precise!"

"Hm." Jade nodded and smiled.

Luo Feng was using the 100 threads movement. With the grasp he had on the space law foundation, every time the opponent's golden huge blade pierced towards him, he would follow the most perfect and optimal route to dodge. Almost like the undercurrent of the ocean, using the least energy and method to swim!

"His 9 blades converged into 1. When compared to mine, it is indeed different." Luo Feng relied on the heavenly blade formation and movement to block, simultaneously observing and studying the opponent on how he used the Nan Shen Armament."

"Firstly, his 9 blades fusion is more condensed, this reflects his stronger understanding of the raindrop picture."

"Secondly, after his 9 blades have fused, his attacks are unpredictable and the blades forms within constantly change This is extremely mystical. So if I just relied on the 9 blades into 1, I cannot block it." Luo Feng thought, "Obviously, his 9 blades into 1....each of the 9 blades represents the raindrop picture's different forms, conditions, interchanging and profoundness!"

"And I am not able to do this yet."

"My only strength is...I've already touched a thread of the origin law foundation!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, "Alright, let's end it!"

In mid air.

The black clothed man raged, “If you have the skills, don’t dodge. What’s the point of dodging?”

“Then…” Luo Feng suddenly stopped, all the images completely disappeared.

“Hm?” The black clothed man was surprised but happy within.

“Go and die!” Luo Feng coldly pointed at him.

Xiu!

The huge golden blade Luo Feng was controlling wasn’t as clumsy as before, but immediately followed a mysterious perfect arc. With unbelievable speed, it reached right before the black clothed man’s face. It was fast, too fast.

“What…” still lost in his surprise, the black clothed man was shocked to discover that the opponent’s huge golden blade had already reached before him.

“Dang!”

He barely managed to block it with the golden long rod on his back, using the entire long rod to block the blade. With a clash, the golden huge blade slightly moved and the incredibly sharp edge arced and brushed right through the man’s head, immediately piercing through his head.

“The time spent on dissecting the foundation may take longer, requiring extremely high amounts of comprehension and conditions. However its power...when compared to these simple superficial ways of usage, is much stronger.” Luo Feng revealed a smile and looked ahead. The mist dissipated and the 4th level appeared, heading upwards.

Rumble...In the distance ahead, Luo Feng could clearly see the bridge shrouded in a terrifying blade like grey mist.

“Floating blood once mentioned that passing the 3rd level is a breakthrough. I didn’t expect that from the 4th level onwards, even the scenery changes.” Luo Feng laughed as he flew up and rushed towards the grey squall.

In the center of the beautiful island.

“That easily?” Jade emperor was shocked.

“It should not be that simple. He only managed to get a glimpse of the foundation of the law, it shouldn’t be that simple to defeat the 3rd level.” Tong Nan emperor too was shocked.

“It’s his consciousness.”

True Yan emperor’s eyes gleamed, “His consciousness strength is a few times stronger than any other universe level 1 genius! And because of this... when he controls his weapon, its power is

stronger by quite a bit than what's expected."

Luo Feng's consciousness was the golden horned beast's consciousness.

Strong!

That was normal!

While True Yan, Jade and Tong Nan were discussing, waiting beside them was Bevin who thought within, "According the orders from above to promote competition amongst this batch of geniuses, I have to send this information out to Rong Jun, Jia Lai Xi, Bolan etc." Watchman Bevin immediately sent the news of Luo Feng passing the 3rd level to the group of geniuses training hard.

Rong Jun, Jia Lai Xi, Bolan, Qian Shui, Tao, Gu Si Luo, Wuka...

They all received the news at exactly the same time.

Chapter 28 – Optimum Power

Rong Jun was within the training grounds in the primal universe, this was a luxurious universe city.

Within a skyscraper's balcony.

"It's been over 10 years since we've come to primal chaos city." Barefooted, messy haired Rong Jun who wielded the ground splitting blade was standing at the top of the skyscraper and was surveying the city below. This was a city he was extremely familiar with, and he had many good memories, "Father, father…"

Rong Jun muttered softly.

"How long!"

"How much longer will it take for me to become an undying and for me to regain the name Tuman. How long more before I can kill that bastard!" Rong jun said softly, "Father, this is hard for me, my heart feels very heavy." His eyes were filled with tears.

"I have to bear with it!"

"I will endure, in the Virtual Universe Company. I will become the most exceptional talent in our generation…right now compared to Bolan I am weaker. However in 50 years, 100 years, 1,000 years, I will definitely exceed him! Until finally I will have the strength to personally kill that bastard myself. I will go to his

imperial planet, break into his god country and destroy everything that belongs to him, allowing him to regret as he faces death!”

Gripping his fists, tears in his eyes.

This grudge was carved into his soul and he had to vent it out once in awhile.

“Rumble!” Rong Jun waved his hand, immediately the simulated image disappeared, returning to the vast endless training grounds. This training ground had a length and width of a few hundred km, and was even larger than Luo Feng’s!

“Teacher demonstrated the 1st form for me. As long as I pass the 3rd level, at least I can go listen to the classes from the others in the Huge Axe tablet sect, This will in turn increase my improvement speed even further.” Rong Jun thought, “With my strength, I should be able to pass the 3rd level in the next couple of years.”

“Right now, my only aim is to exceed Bolan!” Rong Jun thought.

As for the others, he felt no threat from them at all as he had passed the 2nd level in his 4th year. This speed far exceeded everybody else.

“Di!”

“Hm?” Rong Jun looked down curiously at the screen on his arm.

On it displayed a new message, causing him to be suspicious, “Ah, it’s a mail from Watchman Bevin. Did someone else breakthrough? Everybody else passed the 2nd level after me, and the 3rd level is much harder than the 2nd. They can’t be earlier than me. Is it Bolan? But Bolan just passed the 4th level half a year ago. As it goes further, the difficulty rises greatly…it’ll be at least 10 years before he has any hopes of passing the 5th level.”

Filled with curiosity, Rong Jun ordered, “Open.”

The mail automatically opened.

“Luo Feng, for whom this was the 1st time attempting the heavenly bridge in 10 years had just passed both 2nd and 3rd levels. He is now attempting the 4th level.”

Rong Jun immediately stared wide eyed.

My god!

“The 3rd, 3rd, he has passed the 3rd level?” Rong Jun couldn’t believe it, “I passed both the 1st and 2nd levels earlier than him, and I even had a teacher to instruct me after, how can it be…”

“Madman, madman…” Rong Jun stared wide eyed, filled with shock.

……

Heaven and ground region.

In a particular villa garden, the black robed Jia Lai Xi appeared out of mid air.

“There’s a mail?” Jia Lai Xi pointed in mid air and a screen appeared, a letter displayed and he gently tapped to open it.

The details of the mail were simple…

“Luo Feng, for whom this was the 1st time attempting the heavenly bridge in 10 years had, just passed both 2nd and 3rd levels. He is now attempting the 4th level.”

……

“How can this be?” In a villa right beside Jia Lai Xi’s that fat huge warrior Tao too was shocked with rage as he looked at the screen, roaring, “Madman, that madman, he, he actually attempted the bridge for the 1st time in 10 years and passed both the 2nd and 3rd levels. Madman, he’s really mad!”

……

“Not possible!” The handsome absolute beginning member Jian Mo, who had green hair and engravings on his face was shocked as he looked at the screen, “I haven’t even passed the 2nd level and he

actually passed the 3rd?”

……

After Luo Feng’s explosion, amongst the group of geniuses… Bolan had passed the 4th level and Rong Jun and the other 7 had passed the 2nd, everybody else had only passed the 1st!

One had to know.

Of the 7 who passed the 2nd level, Long Yun was in the primal region. Tao, Jia Lai Xi and Gu Si Luo were from the Heaven and ground region. The only ones from the absolute beginning were Rong Jun, Qian Shui and Wuka.

That meant that the others that entered the absolute beginning region Jiang Mo, Lancelot and Ai Chen etc were still stuck at the 1st level.

“Not possible!”

“How can this madman improve so much?”

“Our Heaven and ground region has close to 100 people. Their difference from Luo Feng shouldn’t be that huge. How can it be like this?”

When the news of Luo Feng’s breakthrough spread, it made the

group of geniuses that were secretly competing all stunned. Luo Feng had already begun his 4th level attempt.

Amidst the dark squall, the bridge was engulfed in the mad winds.

Luo Feng stood at the bridge and his eyes gazed at the distant end of the squall. From within a voice resounded, “Choose your opponent, fighter, controller, hypnotist, choose anyone, defeating him will allow you to attempt the 5th level.”

“Controller.” Luo Feng said directly.

Rumble!

A human silhouette suddenly flew out from the squall. Dressed in silver white armor, white boots and stepping on the dark cloud shuttle, while carrying a dark golden long rod, his eyes beneath the silver white mask were staring at Luo Feng.

“According to floating blood’s calculations, the difficulty rises greatly as it goes further, and the jump in levels gets more and more absurd.” Luo Feng thought, “I don’t know just how strong this 4th level is.” As floating blood had several details on the heavenly bridge itself, Luo Feng had some estimates within. He was confident in passing the 3rd level before, as for the 4th…he didn’t seem to have any guarantee at all.

However even without it, he still had to give it a shot!

“Silver clothed person, I hope you use your strongest abilities.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Strongest?” The silver clothed man stood on the dark cloud shuttle, saying solemnly, “I only know one move, if you can block it, I will lose.”

“You only know one move?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Receive it!”

The silver clothed man pointed at Luo Feng. Simultaneously the dark golden long rod shot out countless blurry golden little blades. Right, it was simply a blur, large amounts of the blades immediately floated before him, infused with golden origin law threads which were weaving and joining them.

“1,600 little golden blades.” Luo Feng’s gaze swept over, very quickly counting accurately.

When one’s soul consciousness reaches Luo Feng’s level, it may not be at AI level, but at least it would still be much stronger than the computers on earth from his past.

“There are a total of 10,081 little blades in the Nan Shen Armament. The 9 levels of the Nan Shen Armament uses all of the blades to form one terrifying attack.” Luo Feng thought, “He’s using 1,600 blades, then it should be the 4th form.”

The 3rd form was the Heavenly blade, when using 9 true blades, every one of them consists of 81 little blades, hence the 3rd form alone uses a total of 729 little golden blades.

The 4th form, Optimum power, requires 1,600 little blades. This formed a close to 10m tall golden pillar, almost like a pillar of a huge room. To be able to use this at the universe level 1, one would definitely be deemed invincible, and it would be hard to find any opponent at all.

……

Before that silver clothed man, the 1,600 little blades floated about with some distance. With countless complex golden threads weaving through them, the entire appearance of the pillar was extremely complex, almost like a totem pillar altogether.

Nan Shen Armament 4th form, Optimum power!

“This…no wonder he only has one move.” Luo Feng was staring with eyes wide open. The 4th form is extremely difficult, to form a totem pillar…the requirements on space and gold laws are extremely high. It means to completely put the blade domain into that totem pillar, and once unleashed, it will have unbelievable amounts of power.”

The totem pillar had extreme power.

The moment it was formed, a casual swing could decimate a large mountain or ocean and create a tsunami.

“Receive it!” The silver clothed man roared.

“I will see just how strong this move is!” Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and unleashed his 100 thread movement. His movement was already mystical and perfect, while dodging, he swiftly unleashed the heavenly blade 9 blades into 1, that golden huge blade immediately formed an arc and pierced towards the silver clothed man.

With some comprehension of the space law foundation, Luo Feng’s attack was extremely fast.

Before when he used the illusionary 7 blades, Dutchman’s pipe to pass the 2nd level, the opponent could only rely on his 2 blades to madly defend himself, basing his defense on luck to deflect Luo Feng’s attacks. However while the actual final pierce seemed simple, it was so fast the opponent couldn’t even react.

During the 3rd level, it was similarly absurdly fast and along with his consciousness strength advantage, he killed his opponent.

“Rumble…” The huge totem pillar began to roll.

The surrounding space was instantly warped. At this point, the totem pillar rolling seemed to suppress the surrounding space.

“Peng!”

The pillar was simply too huge. With a slight roll, it closed a huge distance and clashed with Luo feng’s golden huge blade. With just one clash, the huge blade was immediately knocked apart and separated back into 9 blades.

“Hu…”

The totem pillar in mid air immediately swept over and the space warped around affecting Luo Feng’s movement. “It’s too fast!” Luo Feng couldn’t even dodge and the pillar immediately clashed with his body.

4th level, failure!

Heavenly bridge, center of the island.

True Yan emperor, Jade Empror and Tong Nan emperor watched the screen floating before them. The battle was extremely short, and within a few seconds it was over.

“It’s normal for him to lose.” True Yan nodded.

“Hm.” Tong Nan spoke too, “The Nan Shen Armament has a total of 9 forms. However, they are split into 3 main levels. The 1st form to 3rd form, the 4th to 6th and finally the 7th to 9th. The 3rd form is ultimately still based on the 1st level, and the 4th’s power is obviously much much higher, it’s normal for him to lose.”

“He’s only been training in primal chaos city for 10 years, we can’t expect too much.” Jade smiled, ”Just 10 years and he’s gotten a glimpse of the essence of the space law, and his consciousness level is that strong. An unexpected surprise, this Luo Feng is an unexpected surprise from my trip here. He’s even stronger than Rong Jun!”

“From what I see, he might be able to surpass Bolan in the future.” True Yan said.

“Haha.”

“Still too early, don’t get too cocky, Bolan has too much of a lead.”

Tong Nan Emperor and Jade emperor both laughed.

“Anyway, I’m expecting great things from him.” True Yan said.

At this time…

At the center of the island, Rong Jun appeared, and following him, the fat warrior Tao, Wuka…many more started to appear.

Chapter 29 – Stepping into Domain Lord Level

True Yan emperor, Tong Nan emperor and Jade emperor couldn't help but laugh as they saw the group of youths arrive. At that same time, they left the virtual universe and disappeared.

"Mr. Bevin." Wuka shouted, "Luo Feng passed the 3rd level?"

A group of human youths of different races looked at Watchman Bevin.

"Hm." Watchman Bevin smiled, "Yes, just now."

"The 4th level?" Savage Rong Jun asked. Immediately the group around him held their breaths, Luo Feng passing the 3rd level was already high enough...if he passed the 4th level too, the group would probably crumble.

No matter how big the difference, it shouldn't be that huge!

"He was not successful." Watchman Bevin said.

"That's good."

The group let out sighs of relief. As least he was still within range of chasing, however after which many of them began feeling helpless. They were all absolute geniuses within the universe...and

right now they were forced by someone to feel like they couldn't keep up.

"Before coming to Primal Chaos city, he and I didn't have too much of a difference in strength. But now, I can't even pass the 2nd level and yet, he's passed the 3rd already." Jiang Mo gripped his fists tight.

Shrouded in chaos energy, the ancient city that had been around for trillions of years...primal chaos city.

"I'm really not used to long hair." Luo Feng waved his hand, a sharp energy wrapped around it and he swiftly cut his hair to its original short state, following which he jumped down from the balcony onto the alley.

"Luo Feng, you've successfully passed both the 2nd and 3rd level. You've been rewarded 6,000 points and another 2 chances to study the tablet, what are your plans?" Within his mind Babatas voice resounded.

"I've passed the 3rd level. Since that is the case, I have the right to go listen to the strong warriors give classes." Luo Feng smiled, "As for the 6,000 points, I cannot waste them. It's only because I am a newcomer that I get 10 times the amount. When I leave primal chaos city...I am afraid that acquiring points would be extremely difficult."

"Points, I can only acquire them according to the Virtual Universe Company's methods, hence I have to save them."

“As for the 2 times of study.”

“It’s been about 10 years since I’ve studied the 9 universe tablet. Since I have many questions by now, I’ll go use one of those chances today.” Luo feng walked in the alley, very quickly reaching a main path, “As for the 2nd chance, there’s no rush at all. I’ll use it in the future.”

His movement was like lightning.

Very quickly reaching the entrance of the city leader’s residence. This territory was huge. Luo Feng followed the familiar paths quickly to the huge secret room alley. Following that route, he could see the huge bronze doors along the side, and he very quickly reached the one with the words 9 universe.

“Lord Kandeli.” Luo Feng bowed at the 3 eyed guard before the door.

“Hm.” Kandeli smiled and nodded, after which he closed his eyes for a second and opened them, “Not bad, you’ve improved quite a bit, you have two chances to study now.”

“I’m prepared to use one now.” Luo Feng emphasized.

“Your luck is good, there’s no one inside right now.” Kandeli smiled and pointed at the huge bronze door behind him. With a rumble, the door gradually opened and the thick chaos energy

revolved within. The inside seemed like a complete blur. Luo Feng however was happy, “Thank you Lord.”

Sou! He rushed into the secret training room.

……

Within the room, the chaos energy revolved around a huge primal chaos tablet.

“Every chance to study this is extremely valuable. Even though there are many people in primal chaos city, occasionally requiring us to queue and wait to enter, however at times there’s only me.” Luo feng immediately rushed to stand before the tablet. His gaze landing on the 1st picture of the tablet, the raindrop picture.

That picture had 9 drops, and hiding within it was unbelievable amounts of power and mystery, immediately captivating Luo Feng’s attention and consciousness within.

At this time!

Luo Feng’s 3 bodies were all immersed in the rain drop picture. Every drop represented different simulations within their minds. However, there was only 1 drop that held no more mystery to Luo Feng. He had completely seen through and comprehended that 1 drop’s foundation.

Rain drop picture, there were a total of 9 drops and mysteries.

When normal warriors studied the raindrop picture, as long as they understood each mystery, they could use it and that would be considered as passing. Luo Feng however was not satisfied with just that. He wanted to completely study its foundation and comprehend it fully!

For example, in a test paper, there were normal questions and extra questions.

Finishing all the normal ones would get one 100 points.

If one finishes all that and the extra ones too, they would get 150 points!

Normal warriors' comprehension of the raindrop picture would usually only reach the 100 points level!

And right now Luo Feng had about 90 points worth towards the other 8 drops. As for the one drop, he had reached the 150 points level!

The 9 drops, if one understood all of them, normally they could pass the 3rd level.

Luo Feng however had 8 of them close to a passing level, and one of them fully perfected!

“What I must do now is not to rush into studying the drizzling rain picture but to completely reach the perfection level for the raindrop picture.” Luo Feng was very clear on what he needed to do.

……

While immersed within the 9 universe tablet, Luo Feng’s large amount of comprehension of the it began to surface. The moment he reached a new height of comprehension, he couldn’t help but smile.

“Come out!” A voice entered his mind.

“Come out! Come out! Come out! Come out! The voice got louder constantly, resounding continuously within his mind, forcing Luo Feng to awake from that mystical dream world within and grit his teeth and fly out, “What a pity, it’s time again.”

Outside the room, there were already 3 people waiting.

“What a pity.”

“If only I could stay in there longer.” Luo Feng walked along the alley outside the residence He felt a sense of longing to return in. Studying the tablet was simply too wonderful a feeling. It wasn’t the same as the usual mentally tiring study, there wasn’t any sense of fatigue at all while staring at the tablet.

Even to the point where one didn't have to actively study it. But as long as one got captivated by it, that alone led to much of the comprehension.

"Right now, as far as the other 8 wonders of the raindrop picture are concerned, I should have passed." Luo Feng thought. If they were considered to be at a level of 90 points before, right now they should all be 100."

"However..."

"My aim is to get all of them to be at a level of 150 points." Luo Feng smiled.

The further he went, the harder it became.

The extra questions were always much harder than the normal ones. The reasoning for this was that comprehending the entire foundation compared to simply using it, the difficulty was much higher.

"Breathe..." Luo Feng looked up at the sky, he hadn't been this relaxed in a long time.

Looking at the distant sky, its many crystal threads were weaving in between the spaces, and the complex large amounts of engravings revolved...the universe was such a vast thing. Its laws were in plain sight for others to see right now, however even with it revealed, understanding it still required a very long time.

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“Finally, finally broken through?” Luo Feng became a blur and rushed to his own training quarters not far from the city leader’s residence, within the resting room.

……

Luo Feng’s internal world.

Within the vast golden continent, the black mountain like golden horned beast and the Mosha clan black clothed Luo Feng were all looking at the sky with glee.

“It’s finally breaking through!”

“Finally breaking through to the domain lord level!”

From the universe level 9 to the domain lord level, normal evolution would require about 500 years, at times plus or minus a hundred years, there was no definite number. And Luo Feng, using the optimum metal groupings, had raised the evolution and internal world expansion to a efficiency of 56 times!

In theory, Luo Feng’s 7th or 8th year in the primal chaos city should have been the year of the beast’s breakthrough.

However it was late a total of 3 years!

One of the reasons was because the evolution took more time. However, the second reason was that it was Luo Fengs fault altogether!

As Luo Feng was immersed in his study the past 10 years, the 3 bodies all were training rigorously. Every time he awoke was usually once between 3-4 months. The internal world's swallowing of metals was like one's meals! It required frequent doses! Just like a normal person starving for 3 days, after 3 days he'd still be unable to take all 3 days worth of food in one go.

One theory.

The internal world's one large intake of metals could usually last for 1 to 2 months.

However, as Luo Feng's study normally took 3 to 4 months, every time he woke up, he could only let it at most consume another 1 to 2 months worth of metals! This slowed down the evolution speed.

……

Luo Feng's studying was extremely important. Since Babata didn't dare disturb him in critical times, this naturally happened! And whether it was Luo Feng or Babata, they were both very clear…these 30 years in the primal chaos city were very important. He had to use his full strength to study. As for the delay of 2 to 3

years for the golden horned beast to evolve, that was still a negligible matter!

Studying the laws was the more important factor!

……

“Rumble…” Countless golden fogs and energies covered the vast continent. The continent expanded continuously, large amounts of the continent appeared, it took awhile for all the tectonic plates to completely form.

Everything went silent.

The internal world’s evolution was a success.

From the 9,000km length and width from before, it had suddenly expanded to 100,000 km!

……

Luo feng’s core within.

Within the core, the whirlpool galaxy was beautiful. At its core was a big black hole, with 8 arms and 8 little black holes. After the successful evolution of the internal world, immediately the whirlpool galaxy began to change at a shocking rate.

“Rumble…”

The center black hole along with the 8 other black holes strength in swallowing began to rise greatly, the surrounding planets and stars began to all get swallowed up, especially since the center black hole grew bigger and bigger, slowly, even the the other little ones were getting drawn to the center.

Swallow!

The center black hole began to swallow all that it could, getting even bigger and gradually joining with the other 8.

At this time.

The whirlpool galaxy had completely vanished leaving behind one huge black hole.

“Rumble..” The extra large black hole suddenly violently crumbled. The entire black area began to shrink within the core, its shrinking was visible even to the naked eye. This black hole collapse…was heart trembling. In the blink of an eye, the entire black hole had vanished and in that spot where the center black hole was, a grey round ball had appeared.

Chi!

The grey round ball was like a shedding snake. One layer of the grey outer shell shed off, and this outer layer began to expand and

inflate...

Bigger and bigger!

The outer shell continued to grow, until it was as large as the entire core, and later it grew until the balls shell even began to fuse with the core itself completely without a sound. This caused Luo Feng's core...internal core to go through a special change.

.....

As the core began to change, the two bodies within the internal world too changed.

The golden horned beast and the Mosha clan simultaneously evolved!

Chapter 30 – Evolution

The golden horned beast which was like a huge black mountain slowly extended its scaled wings. Simultaneously a shocking change begin to happen to its entire body as large amounts of golden fog descended from the skies down low, shrouding the entire scaled surface of the beast. As its body continued to absorb it, one could see with the naked eye as the black dense scales grew in size.

Its bones also got thicker and larger, even more condensed!

Its claws grew stronger and sharper!

Like an armor that covered its entire body, the golden engravings grew along with the body. Not just the exterior, but the internal parts of the golden horned beast too had changes that were even more shocking. Every cell and every bone began to go through an earth shattering amount of change, a change that occurred right from the very essence within.

Universe level to domain lord level, it was a huge evolution in the body's essence!

"Howl!" The golden horned beast raised its head and let out a carefree howl.

Not far from what had just happened, a black life crystal filled with incomparably complex golden engravings on its surface began to shoot out golden beams of light. This was the Mosha clan's true

appearance! The Mosha clan was basically a life crystal, the energy it released allowed it to take any shape or form.

Hence!

The Mosha clan's evolution in truth was an evolution of the life crystal.

Since their life forms were completely different, their evolutions were different too. For flesh and blood life forms, the main thing was for the body to evolve at the same time as the soul.

And for the energy life forms, the life core had to evolve!

And the Mosha clan's core was a being of this life crystal. With training, the life crystal could absorb more energy to change its body. Just like a human's body evolution, this life crystal too could get stronger and more solid and durable. However its evolution process also had a bottleneck. It required willpower, the life crystal, genetic energy and many other factors working together for it to break through.

However Luo Feng's Mosha clan was unlike the others.

As the core of this Mosha clan was not the life crystal, even if this was destroyed, it could still regenerate! Luo Feng's three main bodies weren't important as they all relied on the main core within. As long as that was fine, they wouldn't die, but if that was destroyed, the three great bodies would die!

Right now the main core's soul had broken through to Domain lord level 1.

Hence, the three bodies could all train to that level. The only problematic one was the physical bodies. The earth human body had a very slow evolution. As for the life crystal, it could evolve extremely quickly with limitless energy absorption. However, the golden horned beast evolved the fastest!

"Ding..." After a few hours, the revolving black life crystal began to emit noises.

The entire life crystal had shrunk an entire size.

"Hu hu..."

From within the crystal, large amounts of black energy were emitted and later formed a person...a black clothed Luo Feng!

Primal chaos city, Luo Feng was within his training quarter's resting room.

"Domain lord?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, "No wonder the slave traders don't have any Domain lord level slaves."

From the Universe level to the Domain lord level, the galaxy within will get completely swallowed by the black hole. This was

nothing short of a miracle. This was that grey round ball that was within his internal core when he evolved, that represented the step into Domain lord level!

That miracle dot, even though it was extremely small, it was incredibly heavy!

In theory...

As an extremely small dot that was formed from swallowing countless galaxies, an internal world would be produced and nurtured, this was the process of Domain lord level 1 to 9! Once the nurturing was successful, a change would happen right at its very core and the world within would form a true world!

That would be the Sector lord level!

Sector lord, with a true world within, could at a wave of one hand have the power of a world itself. The world of a sector lord could actually allow people to survive, store items, etc, similar to a real world!

The internal world of a golden horned beast however was special. as every single living thing or item placed within would get digested. If too much was placed within and it couldn't digest it, the internal space would explode from it! This internal world would gradually grow...

Until sector lord level, this was when the internal world would

undergo a change in its essence.

Only at that time could it allow humans and items to be placed within.

And now? It only allowed Luo Feng's body to enter.

"The golden horned beast's talents are incredible. It's inherited memories are even more shocking, and it's lifespan is 10 times that of a human sector lord. Yet after many generations of golden horned beast, it is still extremely difficult for them to breakthrough to undying. Many die at the pinnacle of Sector lords." Luo Feng understood one thing during the evolution to Domain lord earlier.

One had to know!

For a sector lord to become undying, one had to break his internal world from the shackles, melding it with the crevices within the universe space itself, forming a stable and powerful space...god country!

Breaking the shackles.

These shackles were the miracle dot from before.

This dot, would constantly get more condensed as it grew, getting more and more solid. Hence breaking it would be extremely difficult.

However the golden horned beast had it even harder, 10 to 100 times harder than a human!

As the golden horned beast naturally had a miracle dot from when it was born the main core within would establish the internal world. Hence, when Luo Feng reached the Domain lord level, when the galaxies within crumbled into the black hole and formed the dot, this dot actually broke through its shell and fused with the main core. As time passed, the dot became one with the main core itself.

This was because they were originally one body.

The main core after fusing was even more solid, much more solid than a normal human's dot.

"Domain lord level 1 golden horned beast. Its internal world has a length and width of 100,000 km." Luo Feng exclaimed, "When it reaches Sector lord, what would that be like?"

The bigger the internal space, the better.

However it also represented that the main core within was even more solid. When Luo Feng reaches the Sector lord level 9, against an immovable main core...he would know why generations of golden horned beast were helpless against it.

"Breaking the shackles. I have to form a god country with my

internal world and space itself. However this is only the last requirement to becoming undying. There are many preceding it." Luo Feng shook his head, "Becoming undying, I'm only at the Domain lord level now. The distance is still very far, I'll slowly train. Lian Luo who created the floating blood, he became an undying in less than 100,000 years, immediately gaining the title Official."

"Is it possible that even though I have 10 times the lifespan of a human sector lord, I can't become undying with that?" With that thought, Luo Feng laughed.

Life, only has 1 core and 1 internal world.

Luo Feng's three bodies share 1 core and 1 internal world.

They thrived together and fell together!

"Master, there's someone here to see you." An electronic voice resounded within the training quarters.

"Hm." Luo Feng got up and walked out of the resting room. Opening the door to the living room, outside stood a tall lady dressed in a black robe, her pupils were purple.

"Black robed warrior?" Luo Feng thought.

"Luo Feng, congratulations on passing the 3rd level of the heavenly bridge." The black robed lady smiled, "In primal chaos

city, as long as one passes the 3rd level, it represents that one has reached a certain level in the study of the tablets. Thus, they have earned the right to listen to the sect leaders' lessons. These are the 18 sub sect leaders in the 9 universe sect and their information. You can go to anyone of them to listen to their classes."

Following which, she handed over a black surfaced book about as thick as one's thumb.

"Thank you." Luo Feng received.

"Some advice, even though you can go to anyone to listen, your 1st visit and who you pick is extremely important." The black robed lady emphasized, "I believe that the book explains the details within, I shall not speak more."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Following which he watched as this messenger of the city leader left. Listen to classes? There was no rush now. Afterall he had just studied hard for 10 years, passing 2 levels continuously, plus he just broke through to the Domain lord level. At this time of glee, Luo Feng really wanted to share everything with his family, his eyes were filled with anticipation, "It's been awhile since I visited my family, I should go see them."

Virtual universe network, Ganwu continent.

Ganwu continent's Meng Ka City was an extremely huge city,

larger than the Black Dragon Mountain island by 10 times.

Ping Hai Company was considered a larger company within this city, ranking amongst the top 100.

Ping Hai company's skyscraper, level 86, meeting room.

"How do you do, very nice to meet you Mrs Luo."

"It's my honor too, to be able to meet the Virtual Universe Company's Meng Ka station Bo Te Lai bureau chief."

Dressed in a red chinese robe, Xu Xin was shaking hands with a tall and huge sharp nosed man.

The two of them sat at the two ends of the conference table within the meeting room.

"Accurately speaking, it's Bo Te Lai Si bureau chief." The sharp nosed man smiled, "Haha, I believe this talk should not have too much stress on Mrs Luo. Your husband is a high level member within our Virtual Universe Company, your Ping Hai company becoming one of our flagship companies has many benefits for you."

Xu Xin smiled, "My husband may be a majority stockholder but I decide everything."

“Hm, Mrs Luo, whatever you have on your mind, just speak.” Bo Te Lai smiled, “If everybody simply speaks their mind, anything can be discussed.”

“Firstly, this company has to be controlled by me.” Xu Xin emphasized.

“Mrs Luo!”

Bo Te Lai smiled, “You should know that our Virtual Universe Company, when we buy into such companies with potential, we have to have a certain amount of controlling shares! The lowest we ever go is still 51% of the shares.”

“I understand. I’m only saying that the company has to still be run by me. Your company cannot interfere with the operation, but can only enjoy the benefits and returns.” Xu Xin said.

“Ah?” Bo Te Lai nodded, “Continue.”

“I believe you know too.” Xu Xin smiled, “Our Ping Hai company has 3 main businesses. The main one being the chain of restaurant management, the second being the financial investments, the third being real estate. Just my little brother Luo Hua, even the universe 1st bank has even sent people to headhunt him before. This profit ability, you should already know.”

“Ping Hai company’s investment abilities, I’m very clear of it.” Bo Te Lai smiled, “This is also the reason behind my company

giving you 6 times the usual price.”

“No, I require 12 times!”

Xu Xin looked at Bo Te Lai, “I believe Mr Bo Te Lai should understand the complexity behind my Ping Hai Company’s restaurant business.”

“12 times? Definitely not.” Bo Te Lai shook his head.

“Mr Bo Te Lai!” Xu Xin was just about to continue speaking.

“Hm?” Suddenly she lowered her head to look at her wrist. On it a small message appeared on the screen, she couldn’t help but smile with glee, “He’s finally returned to visit.”

Chapter 31 – Home

After a while.

At the higher levels of Ping Hai Company, a group of people passionately sent the Ganwu investment department from the virtual universe company away.

“Mrs Luo’s intentions I fully understand.” Bo Te Lai smiled, “However 12 times is simply impossible, please be mentally prepared. As for the statistics you’ve given me…I will definitely give it to my chief.”

“Thanks.” Xu Xin smiled.

Bo Te Lai left after which followed by some of his staff.

Outside the building, there stopped a flat streamlined shaped universe ship, the cabin door opened and 8 armored single horned men received him respectfully, Bo Te Lai took his staff and flew into the ship, the bodyguards followed suit and the cabin door closed and the ship quickly left.

“Big sister Xu, the ingredients our restaurant has ordered…” Standing beside Xu Xin was a short haired lady, she shouted.

“I have other matters, I’ll let you handle the company affairs.” Xu Xin ordered.

“Yes.” The short haired lady answered.

Xu Xin waved towards the sky.

Immediately a carriage pulled by winged horses began to descend from above, Xu Xin immediately jumped on, “Go to the teleportation point.”

“Go!”

The coachman shook the reins, the winged horses immediately took off.

Virtual universe, black dragon mountain island 9 star bay little district.

“Dad, right now at 9 star bay, the entire east region is ours, we’ve hired the best designers and borrowed from the many constructs of the universe to build.” A clean cut man with a firm yet friendly voice pointed at the surrounding constructs that were like an imperial palace.

“Hm, not bad.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Luo Ping, your mum isn’t back yet?” Luo Feng asked.

“I’ve already informed her, only right now the company headquarters is in the Ganwu continent, and she has to go there

everyday, you hardly ever return, hence she transferred her appearance point to there and stays in the company." Luo Ping said, under normal circumstances, one's appearance point in the virtual universe would be the home residence.

Xu Xin however had set it as her company.

"She stays in the company?" Luo Feng was regretful about the fact that only returned once in a long while.

"Dad."

Luo Hua pointed at the distant luxurious mansions, "Because you live here, the entire 9 stay bay district's land value has soared! These little living quarters have mostly been sold off to people with status. And these figures...they wanted to get as close to you as possible, after all you are considered within the black dragon mountain star field as someone of prominence."

"Ah?" Luo Feng laughed shocked.

Right.

As a member of the absolute beginning region in the virtual universe company, the leader of his guards was a sector lord recognized by the origin laws! In terms of position, Luo Feng was even higher than the black dragon mountain empire emperor. Even the Undyings behind the black dragon mountain empire... had to show respect to him.

A small star field, was but a dot in the vast universe!

A group of powerful and rich figures wanting to get closer to Luo Feng which wasn't strange at all.

"Mr Luo Ping!" In the distance a bald fat man with a furry 3m tall pet, with 2 underlings behind him, was walking about carefree, spotting Luo Ping, he shouted passionately.

"Backson." Luo Ping laughed and shouted.

This bald fat man, had scales on the top of his head, was shocked as he saw Luo Feng, Mr Luo Ping, this man is..."

"This is my father." Luo Ping smiled.

"Ah, Lord Luo Feng." The bald fat man bowed respectfully, he bowed till his face reached his fat belly, following which he raised his head and said excitedly, "Lord Luo Feng, it's my honor to meet you, I just moved here 8 years ago, I've always been idolizing Lord Luo Feng, I didn't expect to be able to meet you today, it's, it's really an honor for me Backson."

Luo Feng smiled, "How do you do Backson."

"Ah!" This Backson was immediately so excited his face flushed red.

“Dad, Mum is back!” Luo Ping pointed in mid air.

“Xu Xin?” Luo Fen turned to look.

In mid air, Xu Xin sat in the carriage and slowly descended.

“Xu Xin.” Luo Feng immediately ran over.

Xu xin who was in the carriage looked down at Luo Feng, a few tears appearing in her eyes, she waited till the carriage had fully descended before jumping off and landing on the grass.

“At least you know how to come back!” Xu Xin stared at Luo Feng.

“Eh…” Luo Feng was remorseful.

“How long, how long since you last returned?” Xu Xin stared at him, Luo Feng felt bad to answer her.

“10 years! You haven’t returned in 10 years!” Xu Xin couldn’t help but rage, “I know you are studying in primal chaos city, but returning once in awhile to visit your children, me, your parents, is that so hard?”

“Sorry.” Luo Feng said softly.

Yes.

10 years.

His latest study period in Primal chaos city was 3 years 9 months, and because time flowed slower in the primal universe, the 3 years and 9 months there equated to over 10 years in the actual universe! And the virtual universe time flowed according to the actual universe.

“10 years!” Xu Xin stared at Luo Feng.

“Alright.” Luo Feng gently extended his arms to hug her, “I promise I will come back every year in the future, unless something special happens.”

“Hm.” Xu Xin nodded.

She just wanted to remind him, as the recent over 30 years, whether it was earth or the Luo family, they all underwent major changes! Just like how the people of earth gained status within the milky way galaxy and the Luo Family power growing stronger, everyone was clear this was all because of Luo Feng!

Luo Feng, was a core member of the virtual universe company, one of the 5 great leviathans of humanity!

“Let’s go, let’s go home.” Luo Feng said.

“Hm, home.” Xu Xin nodded.

The 3 immediately headed home, Xu Xin got a glance at the fat man, saying softly, “That fatty Backson owns over 30,000 life planets, controlling over a trillion human slaves, he’s a large slave trader, he may seem earnest and stupid but he’s vicious.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng was shocked as he looked over.

That fatty?

Owns over 30,000 life planets? Isn’t he even more powerful than the Nuolan Shan family from before?

“Before our house naturally he’s very low profile, very amicable.” Xu Xin shot a glance of disdain, “Luo Ping, don’t mix around so much with such people.”

“Yes, your mother is right.” Luo Feng nodded.

With difference in status, their vision and perspective was different too.

Back when they were nothing but little figures of earth, maybe the Nuolan Shan family was a huge thing, Backson, this level of slave trader was something to be feared. However now, with Luo

Feng's bodyguard leader a sector lord, with an order, he could easily destroy the families with power within this little starfield.

"Dad, mother, we have to get to know a little of all the paths of life." Luo Ping smiled.

"You are really different from your younger brother." Luo Feng couldn't help but exclaim.

"Thirdie!"

"Thirdie!"

A booming voice resounded from not too distant.

"It's 2nd brother?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

Since the last time he visited 9 star bay district, it had been over 10 years.

This return home, Luo Feng discovered...his family was already considered a large family now, even his grandchildren, many had built their families, many things within the milky way galaxy regarding the Luo Family, were all controlled mostly by his big son Luo Ping and Xu Xin, as for the younger son Luo Hai, he was a martial arts fanatic!

Chasing after the limits of humanity, becoming a strong warrior

within the universe.

For what? One was for his own dream, the other was for his family and home!

Luo Feng stayed in 9 star bay for 3 days before he returned his consciousness back to primal chaos city! The only thing that disappointed him was...he didn't meet Hong, from what Thunder god said, Hong seemed to be undergoing a very important training, blocking all messages and calls, completely incommunicable.

.....

Level 89 of Ping Hai company.

Xu Xin stood before the full sized window, surveying the beautiful and huge city.

"Dong, dong, dong." Knocks on the door.

"Come in." Xu Xin shouted.

A graceful bodied short haired lady in uniform walked in, smiling, "Big sister Xu, how were the past 3 days?"

Xu Xin smiled.

“Big sister Xu, this is the document Bo Te Lai sent.” The short haired lady handed it over.

“Ah?” Xu Xin received it.

Virtual universe company, it was separated into the business and martial departments, naturally the both upper echelon members belonged to the core, the upper echelon within the core, those were the true governing bodies!

Business, was a very important side of the virtual universe company.

However in this virtual universe world, even the virtual universe company didn’t undertake all the businesses to handle themselves, as they were very clear...if they monopolized everything, it would adversely affect and limit the economy, affecting and limiting the economy flow in reality itself.

Creating a fair market environment, only then would the true superpowers in reality be willing to dish out the money!

If it was unfair, monopoly, the huge leviathans and powers, who would dare invest in this place?

Hence!

In the virtual universe, there were many types of companies and organizations that were competing etc. and several very powerful

companies would normally be bought over by the larger companies.

“Big sister Xu, the universe 1st bank too has agreed to buy over our company, and their conditions are extremely good, why have you decided to reject them immediately?” The short haired lady spoke.

“I’m not worried about the cash.” Xu Xin lowered her head to read the document.

“Since that’s so, why decide to have talks with the virtual universe company?” The short haired lady asked curiously.

Xu Xin was stunned.

“I’m very curious.” The short haired lady asked sincerely, “Big sister Xu, I’ve followed you for close to 40 years, our every step in development, even creating a F&B chain according to our china’s culture...many members within are trained on earth, with barriers around its infrastructure, making others hard to imitate, our Ping Hai chain...the name has long been established! And with large amounts of capital, and melding with Mr Luo Hua being in charge of the capital investment department, the amount we earn, with Mr Luo Huas 2 fold returns, this level of earnings is extremely quick, our returns are incomparably exceptional! That plus the Ganwu universe country...because of Lord Luo Feng, giving us support and protection, our expansion definitely has no problem, there’s no need to sell our shares to anyone else.”

“Right.” Xu Xin nodded.

Entering the virtual universe and beginning, it’s been close to 40 years, this business was akin to another child, how could she bear to share it with others?

“However it’s different.” Xu Xin said softly, “The virtual universe company and the universe 1st bank are completely different.”

“How are they different?” The short haired lady asked curiously.

“Because, my husband is in the virtual universe company.” Xu Xin turned, looking through the glass windows, at the skies outside, “Luo Feng is very exceptional and powerful, on earth, he’s the most exceptional! However, because of that he’s left to be so far behind, like this time, he didn’t return for over 10 years.”

The short haired lady opened her mouth wide, speechless.

Luo Feng was the pride of earth. However to Luo Feng’s family… he had indeed left them behind.

“I don’t blame him.”

“I’m proud of him.” Xu Xin looked outside, revealing a smile, “Only thing is, I don’t want him to leave me further and further behind, I wish…to be able to stand by his side, the closer the better.”

“Big sis Xu…” the short haired lady wanted to speak, but she didn’t know what to say.

“Becoming part of the virtual universe company, I too would become a member within the virtual universe company.” Xu Xin smiled, “As long as I can make this business reach a high enough level, I will be absorbed too as an internal core member. When that time comes, I too would be able to enter Yu Xian Mountain.”

“Core member?” The short haired lady was shocked.

She didn’t expect Big sis Xu’s aim to be that high.

“The one thing I’m really wishing for, is to be at Yu Xiang Mountain…meeting with Luo Feng.” Xu Xin said softly.

Chapter 32 – Taking on a Master?

Humanity's sacred training land primal chaos city, within an unimportant looking training quarter's resting room.

Luo Feng sat in a chair, lowering his head to look at the books the black robed messenger had left before, there were these words on the book.

"If one is able to pass the 18th level, he would be a true elite amongst humanity, a sub sect leader amongst the undying, they will immediately receive the right to become eternal members of primal chaos city, also able to open a sub sect within the city and accept students, receiving respect from others!"

"And the people who come here to train, as long as they pass the 3rd level, they can go listen to these classes."

"You can listen to any one of the leaders teach."

"However if you want to become a particular leader's student, then the 1st time you go listen…you have to choose that particular leader as a show of respect, and requesting to be his disciple later! If the leader agrees, than that would be a success."

"Remember!"

"Unless you have no intentions of finding a master, otherwise whoever you want to be a student of, that 1st attendance has to be

at his door, that is respect.”

……

Finishing up the text, Luo Feng understood why the black robed messenger emphasized the importance of the 1st attendance.

“Finding a master?” Luo Feng frowned.

“Finding a teacher is good, Luo Feng, those able to teach in primal chaos city are sub sect leaders among the undyings, all with the title emperor.” Babata shouted excitedly, “When you are weak and small, having an absolute being to guide you is an incredibly important matter. For example…if True Yan emperor hadn’t given you the advice to learn floating blood, you might have taken a wrong path like other normal warriors.”

“I already have a teacher.” Luo Feng was troubled.

“No problem!”

Babata didn’t seem to care, “The strong within the universe have incredibly long life spans. They may find a teacher in the star traveller level, another in the universe level, and when they become sector lords, another one after. At different levels of strengths they have different perspectives, the teacher they require will be different too. A warrior having tens of teachers is very normal.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng nodded.

……

The universe was like that, to be able to rank amongst the top 1,000 of geniuses in the entire universe, who doesn’t have a few teachers? Also, if any of them were to be accepted by universe country leaders as disciples, they’d all be extremely excited. Back when Rong Jun was accepted by the Yuan Chen country leader, it made many green with envy.

……

“Who do I choose?” Luo Feng looked at the 18 sub sect leaders and their information on the book within the 9 universe sect.

These were all leaders, leaders amongst undyings!

Much stronger than his previous teacher of the Yun Mo Planet, the Yun Mo planet master could barely gain the title Official, and these leaders…were all strong even amongst the emperors, many of their disciples were all undyings!

“Who do I choose?”

“Who?”

Luo Feng muttered, very quickly scanning all their information,

“Hm, within primal chaos city, there are a total of 18 leaders under the 9 universe. These 18, 4 of them belong to the virtual universe company, they are Flame Dragon Emperor, True Yan Emperor, 1,000 Dream Emperor and Blade Emperor, they all seem really terrifying.”

“Flame Dragon Emperor? I’ve seen him in action!” Babata shouted excitedly, “Back when your teacher and I entered the universe secret area, enduring a perilous journey through a planet engulfed in ice, I personally saw within that ice, Flame Dragon Emperor immediately became a star and burnt 10 undyings who surrounded him to a crisp, they couldn’t be more dead!”

“He became a star?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Even more terrifying than a normal star! Undyings could easily destroy a star, however the star that he transformed into... in terms of temperature, was much higher than a normal star, with one move destroying 10 undyings, of which 2 were humans and the rest were automaton and other races, flame dragon emperor...was an extremely terrifying being.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng held his breath.

“Even the bastard that killed your teacher back then couldn’t kill your teacher in one move. I didn’t expect him to actually be teaching here in primal chaos city now.” Babata exclaimed.

Flame Dragon Emperor, True Yan Emperor, 1,000 Dream Emperor and Blade Emperor.” Luo Feng looked at these 4’s

information, his eyes filled with anticipation.

The warriors within primal chaos city were mostly separated into 5 main groups...virtual universe company, huge axe dojo, universe 1st bank, universe galaxy bank, universe mercenary alliance, only very few had no huge power backing them.

Within a mansion.

“Haha, Blade Emperor, don’t get overconfident.” The Apeman warrior True Yan laughed loudly.

“Why don’t you take a look.” A man in purple armor and carrying a golden blade on his back laughed loudly, “Of you 3, one’s an Apeman, another a dragon man, and another always cold and gloomy...only I, look the most like a human of earth, if he doesn’t choose me, who will he choose?”

“Blade, looking for a master doesn’t rely on looks!” With 2 dragon horns and a face full of red scales, eyes as though they were 2 mini planets.

“Flame Dragon, in terms of strength, I don’t lose to you.” Blade emperor laughed.

“Blade is too proud, from what I see, he’s miscalculated this time.” A dreamy like appearance, a blurry man in a black robe sat at a side, “However this Luo Feng is indeed considered a rare seedling from over a hundred million years within our 9 universe

sect, he actually managed to comprehend the 1st blade form of the floating blood in 10 years, his talent is really high, very powerful."

"Hence, he has to be my disciple, I use a blade." Blade emperor laughed.

The 4 of them.

Were of the 9 universe sect, all members of the virtual universe company, leaders amongst the undying, teachers in primal chaos city, naturally their relationships were good.

Once in awhile, the 4 would gather and chat and discuss, even compete and learn from another.

As for Luo Feng...

He was an unexpected surprise for the 9 universe sect.

Every group of geniuses from the competitions had the most outstanding, like this time's was Bolan, even considered the most outstanding for ten million years! Luo Feng initially didn't gain too much recognition from these 4, however after he passed the 2nd and 3rd level consecutively, it was obvious he had comprehended the 1st blade form in 10 years.

This talent, others didn't know, only these 4 studying the 9 universe tablet were extremely clear!

Terrifying!

Extremely terrifying!

To be able to study the essence of what Lian Luo did with the space laws, one had to be an absolute genius, with strong mentality and comprehension! If one couldn't comprehend the 1st form in 20 years that meant he had no hope, and Luo Feng did it in 10.

"Bolan had too much of a lead initially, if we don't count his initial lead, just in terms of improvement speed, this Luo Feng doesn't lose to Bolan at all!" The black robed man said softly, complimenting, "Maybe in the past hundred million years there were others comparable to him, however they didn't necessarily pick our 9 universe."

"Our 9 universe, has hardly seen a genius like this in the past hundred million years." Flame dragon exclaimed.

"How can we not nurture a genius like that?"

The 4 all heavily recognized Luo Feng, this sort of rare gem seedling, it was normal for all of them to favor him, because this level of genius...if he didn't fall, would have high chances of later becoming an official or emperor. To be able to nurture a disciple that would become an emperor, their own position would be raised greatly.

The student master relationship was a very reliant one.

“Blade, no use being confident now, just wait, we’ll see who he picks.” True Yan rubbed his golden fur on his chin, laughing.

“Then we’ll see!” Blade Emperor said confidently.

Flame Dragon and 1,000 Dream Emperor both laughed.

……

After a few days, in a special spot in the virtual universe.

In a majestic shrine floating in the clouds, True Yan immediately appeared within the plaza, in it stood many guards, some tall and short, however they all had one common similarity…they were all Apeman! Be it black fur, golden fur or long armed, their color, height and structures all had differences, but they were all Apeman.

“Hmph.”

True Yan’s expression was heavy as he took big strides through the door of the shrine.

“Your Majesty.”

“Your Majesty,:

The guards all bowed respectfully.

True Yan immediately rushed into the shrine, in the thrones within there were already 16 other Apeman, all their expressions changed as they saw True Yan enter.

“What’s the matter?” True Yan rushed in, his gaze sweeping past the 16, roaring, “The namelist for the Large alliance, how come there’s only one slot for my Kahon clan?”

“True Yan, you didn’t care about matters being in primal chaos city, this is something we and the other leaders discussed and decided on.” A 20m tall black fur Apeman’s voice rumbled, resounding across the entire hall.

“Rubbish!”

True Yan pointed at the huge Apeman before him, “Our sacred Apeman shrine has 18 leaders, now that the Sage doesn’t meddle in the affairs, everything is decided by the 18 of us. I am one of the leaders, usually I couldn’t care less, however don’t push things too far, if your King Kong clan can have 4 slots, why has my Kahon clan only been given 1?”

“True Yan…” That black Apeman roared.

“Shut up!” True Yan’s gaze swept past every one of them, “Just

because I don't usually bother with these affairs, don't play me for a fool, if you are really unhappy, I don't mind having a real match in reality, I'll immediately seal all of you!"

The other 15 were stunned, yet they didn't dare make a sound.

True Yan emperor was indeed an absolute warrior amongst the Apeman race, he was also a being closest to receiving the title knight, he normally didn't care much about the Apeman matters.

"1 thing, I don't wish to bully anyone, but don't take me for a fool." True Yan gazed at everyone, "If any such matter happens again, I won't be discussing this in the virtual universe with you, but I'll head straight to where you live. Hmph!" Finishing, True Yan turned and left.

Apeman, they were highly populated throughout the humanity of the universe, they could be seen anywhere.

But even the Apeman race was separated into tens of thousands of clans.

This Apeman sacred shrine was the upper echelon of all of them.

"This True Yan, actually bothers about such matters, isn't he training in primal chaos city to become a knight?" A skinny Apeman leader with fiery red eyes sad softly.

"Looks like True Yan still keeps a watch on his Kahon clan."

These leaders were helpless.

Chapter 33 – 2nd Tier Company

Virtual universe Ganwu continent, Ping Hai company's 86th level meeting room.

One side was the upper echelon of Ping Hai company, the other was the virtual universe company's Ganwu division's investment side upper echelon.

Xu Xin and Bo Te Lai exchanged documents, on it were their signatures.

"Pleasure doing business with you!"

"Pleasure doing business with you!"

Xu Xin smiled and stood up, lifting a wine glass, "After signing, we have to down our drinks in celebration, that's a practice of earth, Mr Bo Te Lai, you should try our newest tea drink from Ping Hai Company."

"Ah?" Bo Te Lai smiled and received it, "Down our drinks in celebration? That's new."

The 2 lifted their glasses and raised them together.

"Hmm, not bad at all, this bitter taste revolves in your mouth, really wonderful." Bo Te Lai nodded, "I like the name tea too." Bo

Te Lai pronounced the word tea awkwardly.

Xu Xin smiled, “I like it too, because it can bring about great profits.”

“Yes, that’s is true.” Bo Te Lai’s eyebrows lifted.

With the universe technology, analyzing several tastes and flavors of earth wasn’t difficult, however any particular flavor they produced was specially protected in the virtual universe. Back then Xu Xin took many special flavors of earth and swiftly registered these flavors on a large scale, even if other companies managed to imitate them, they couldn’t copy them, or they would be fined heavily for the usage.

“The future of Ping Hai company will be up to you Mrs Luo.” Bo Te Lai said, “Otherwise, any failed business, I have to take responsibility for.”

“Rest assured.” Xu Xin smiled.

“Haha, Ping Hai company’s staff and management are exceptional, I can definitely rest assured.” Bo Te Lai smiled, “Then I’ll look forward…for the day Ping Hai company rises to become a 2nd tier company, hopefully in the next 1,000 years.”

“My aim is a 100 years.” Xu Xin smiled.

“Ah!”

Bo Te Lai's eyes immediately gleamed, "Right, in a hundred years, the earlier the better."

"Please Mr. Bo Te Lai, go take a rest, I've already prepared a banquet." Xu Xin smiled, following which she arranged for people to lead the investment department of the virtual universe Ganwu division to rest.

Within the meeting room, only Xu xin and the short haired girl remained.

"Big Sister Xu, we've succeeded." The short haired girl said excitedly.

"With a price of 10.2 times, allowing them 51% shares, it's still ok." Xu Xin smiled, "With this huge investment, our Ping Hai company's overall capital has reached 32,882 mixed elements."

……

Back when Luo Feng was awarded 1,000 mixed elements as reward, he gave 300 to his younger brother Luo Hua to invest and another 200 to Xu Xin!

However later on…

Xu Xin's company, as the returns from storing the funds in the

bank was simply too low, it was better for her to let Luo Hua invest it. Hence Luo Hua too entered the company...becoming a very important division, the investment department.

Back then the shares were divided this way.

Luo Feng had 50%, Luo Hua had 25% and Xu Xin had 25%, the capital of the company was a total of 600 mixed elements back then.

Luo Feng had been in the primal chaos city for 10 years, however in the real universe, over 30 years had passed.

These over 30 years, Xu Xin managed the company and Luo Hua was in charge of investments...over 30 years, their capital rose from close to 600 mixed elements to close to 3,000 mixed elements. While it seemed like a small increase, by just a few times, if placed on earth, the efficiency would simply be too little and not worth mentioning.

However in truth, such a return in the universe was already considered extremely high, as the higher the investment, the harder it was for returns!

The bigger the investment, the easier it was for it to attract huge powers and firms notice.

The moment they weren't careful, they would make losses.

over 30 years, earning over 5 times in profits? That was hard!

Many Undyings with trillions of years of life spans, even getting 1 time in return for their investments was extremely difficult.

As there were many ancient beings in the virtual universe, with life spans in the trillions, along with the virtual universe system regulations...making it so that the currencies hardly ever inflated, imagine 1 mixed element of 1 hundred million years ago, after that period of time, its buying power had almost no change whatsoever!

This led to!

Large corporations investments finding it hard to make any money.

Even Ping Hai Company, relied on the swift expansion of the food and beverage chain along with investments to have such returns.

.....

With the split in shares, the Ping Hai company had 49% of the shares, the virtual universe company took 51% of it. In truth...the main shareholders Luo Feng, Luo Hua and Xu Xin before had huge increases in wealth. Even though they had less shares now, the capital of the company had risen from close to 3,000 mixed elements to close to 33,000 mixed elements!

Luo Feng, Luo Hua and Xu Xin added together, immediately had

over 16,000 mixed elements in shares!

"A flagship company of the virtual universe company is separated into 3rd tier, 2nd tier and 1st tier and finally special tier companies." Xu Xin looked at the document in her hands, "Reaching a capital of 1,000 mixed elements puts one in the 3rd tier, breaking 100,000 puts one in the 2nd tier!"

"Breaking 10 million mixed elements puts one in the 1st tier."

"Going past 1 billion puts one as a special tier."

The business and martial departments were the 2 biggest departments of the virtual universe company.

"The manager of a 3rd tier is still considered an outside member."

"The manager of a 2nd tier can become a Last Phase region core member."

"1st tier manager equates to a Heaven and Ground member."

"Special tier manager equates to an Absolute beginning member."

Xu Xin looked at the document, her eyes gleaming.

“Our company’s capital is reaching 33,000 mix elements, it’s not far from the 100,000 mark. “Xu Xin said softly, “We’ll reach there in 60 years!”

“60 years?” The short haired lady beside her was shocked.

The higher the investment, the higher scale, the harder it was to earn, rising was hard too.

1 hundred million universe dollars, Luo Feng could easily raise it to 1 billion universe dollars.

However if it were 1 hundred million mixed elements, even if it was given to Luo Hua with a million to 10 million years, wanting to make it grow by ten times, that was simply a dream. If one could easily turn it to 1 billion mixed elements. The virtual universe company would immediately hire him as a VIP with protection, arranging for an undying to be his bodyguard!

Because!

This level of earning speed, was even more terrifying than an emperor undying!

Hence, little fights and squabbles do not bother them at all.

This earning ability was truly what the huge leviathans were competing for. Obviously the virtual universe company favored Ping Hai company more.

“Hm. 60 years.” Xu Xin nodded.

“60 years to rise to a 2nd tier company, that’s too hard.” The short haired lady shook her head.

“We’ll work hard.”

Xu Xin smiled, thinking within, “60 years here will be just the amount of time he’ll take to finish primal chaos city training, before he finishes, to be able to meet at Yu Xiang mountain…I guess his expression will be priceless.” Xu Xin’s eyes were filled with anticipation.

Primal chaos city.

“Right here!” Luo Feng walked until he reached the entrance of a mansion, at the time, there were many warriors there entering.

“True Yan is teaching today, I heard he’s explaining the 9 universe tablet’s 1st to 3rd picture.”

“Hm, even though I’m studying the 4th picture, there’s always benefits from listening to the basics.”

“Me too.”

“Sub sect leaders are indeed leaders.”

The sector lords and undyings all entered the mansion, Luo Feng followed. The scanner on the entrance scanned through Luo Feng without any resistance, obviously he had the passed the requirements to listen to the class.

Within the mansion.

It was a 10km long and wide plaza, there a few hundred warriors had already gathered to listen.

“There’s quite a lot of people.” Luo Feng sat in the corner.

“Young one, 1st time?” A bald old man laughed as he sat not far away from Luo Feng, from one look...he could tell this youth was only a universe level.

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Able to come attend the class at universe level, looks like you were chosen from the genius battle, and are probably among the top 2.” The old bald man laughed, at this time, over a thousand people had gathered in the plaza.

Rumble...

A formless pressure immediately engulfed the plaza, over a thousand warriors gathered there all went silent as a form of

respect, a golden armored tall and sturdy apeman walked onto the plaza, every step he took flashed a few km, behind him tens of warriors followed.

"Teleportation, that's teleportation."

"True Yan's teleportation has already reached an unbelievable level." With hushed voices, discussions sprung all over, however the noise was still extremely low.

"Those following True Yan are his disciples, if we can take him as our master, that would be great."

"That depends on your capability, without it, why would he accept you?"

Luo Feng held his breath and watched.

In the distance, True Yan sat cross legged, beside him were tens of disciples. As for the others incapable of becoming his disciples, the thousands of them could only come attend his classes.

"Today I will clearly explain the 9 universe tablet's 3rd picture, this 3rd picture is the basic." True Yan pointed into mid air and a complex engraving appeared, similar to the golden engraving on his armor, "This 1st picture, goes with the origin law this way…"

In mid air, the complex golden engravings revolved, almost like a mechanical wheel, infused with mysterious law energies.

“So mystical.” Luo Feng watched with his mouth wide open.

……

True Yan explained the class in detail, even his calculations were very clear, the group of warriors were still stunned however by the lesson.

According to each person’s comprehension, the feeling was different.

“Alright, today I’ll end here.” 3 days later, True Yan said indifferently.

“Thank you teacher!”

Over 1,000 warriors bowed respectfully.

At this time, a black haired youth walked out from the amidst the thousand, immediately walking ahead of the group, the group all turned to stare, filled with shock, “This punk wants to request True Yan as his teacher?”

Sitting right above, a smile appeared on True Yan’s face.

……

“This Luo Feng is really going with True Yan as his teacher!” In another mansion of primal chaos city, Blade Emperor who was quietly meditating shook his head, helpless.

Chapter 34 – Training for 30 Years

Towards the sect leader True Yan emperor before him, Luo Feng was filled with gratitude.

“Back when I first came to primal chaos city, I was simply a small figure. True Yan’s one pointer allowed me to walk the most correct path. Maybe to him it was a casual pointer, but to me…it probably affected my next trillion years of training.” Luo Feng bowed respectfully, according to primal chaos city customs, with over a thousand other warriors looking at him, he shouted respectfully, “I earnestly request to become a disciple of yours.”

“I earnestly request to become a disciple of yours!” The sound resounded throughout the plaza.

Over 1,000 warriors all looked at True Yan emperor.

Will he accept?

“Haha…” True Yan emperor looked at Luo Feng and laughed carefreely, “From today, you’ll be a disciple of I, True Yan Emperor!”

Hua!

There was chaos below.

“Follow me.” True Yan stood up and took Luo Feng along with the rest of his disciples.

……

“What, True Yan really accepted Luo Feng as his disciple?” A handsome Gu Si Luo frowned, “Right now both Luo Feng and Bolan have sect leader Undyings as their teachers! And Rong Jun, he has a universe country leader as his teacher, they were already leading ahead, with a teacher giving help now, their improvement will be even more shocking!”

Gu Si Luo gritted his teeth, “I have to grasp my time and quickly pass the 3rd level, that way I can find a teacher!”

……

“Madman, he really cannot be undermined.” In the training grounds, covered in perspiration, Rong Jun said softly, “My opponent is not just Bolan, but Luo Feng as well!”

……

“Damn! True Yan really accepted him?” The Manka prince Wuka could only roar softly, then return to working hard.

……

The group of geniuses all felt the pressure, as actually succeeding in getting a sect leader as one's teacher wasn't easy.

Firstly!

One had to pass the 3rd level as a requirement, and normally from the 1,000 that come from the genius competition, the number that could actually pass the 3rd level within the 30 years in primal chaos city could be counted with one hand! From previous competitions...the number able to pass the 3rd level mostly stayed under 5. Even if there were more geniuses or exceptional geniuses in a batch, it never exceeded 10!

Even after passing the 3rd level, those undying sect leaders hardly ever accepted either.

These old weird things, mostly existed for over a trillion years.

It usually was a long while before they truly accepted a disciple.

As time flowed, these geniuses never let up for a moment, especially with a large amount of targets and goals to chase before them, these geniuses improved with shocking speed.

1 year, 2 years, 3 years, 4 years, 5 years...

In the 13th year after they arrived in primal chaos city, Rong Jun passed the 3rd level.

In the 19th year, Luo Feng passed the 4th level, and on that day Bolan too passed the 5th level! The 2 far exceeded everybody else. That day, it spurred Rong Jun and many others to give it a shot, however none succeeded.

In the 21st year, Wuka passed the 3rd level.

In the 25th year, Long Yun and Jia Lai Xi passed the 3rd level.

In the 28th year, Qian shui passed the 3rd level.

……

In the blink of an eye, 30 years had passed!

……

Within primal chaos city, True Yan Emperors mansion.

“Luo Feng, there’s only 10 days before you have to leave primal chaos city.” True Yan laughed as he looked at Luo Feng, “After leaving, if you meet any hard questions while training, you can ask me. As for other world matters, I hope you can settle them yourselves, unless you really meet something that you have no way to solve, come look for me, understood?”

“Yes teacher.”

Still dressed in a dark red armor, the black short haired youth stood there, even though compared to True Yan and the others he was skinny and small. However that suppressed fierce intrepid energy he emanated made hearts tremble.

Compared to 30 years ago when he first came, he was no longer as young and tender.

There was a fierce toughness!

It was one that stemmed from comprehending the universe origin laws, one that formed from melding that comprehension deep within one's bones, a special aura.

"Hm." True Yan nodded his head satisfied, he was extremely satisfied with this student.

"Go on!" True Yan smiled.

Luo Feng knelt down hard, causing True Yan Emperor to shake his head and laugh, "Stand up."

"Thank you teacher for the 20 years of guidance." Luo Feng remained kneeling, "Your disciple will not let you down." Within, Luo Feng was filled with gratitude, this huge golden fur warrior that looked like a golden apeman...even though his position was extremely high, he was usually very sincere and close to his disciples.

20 years!

How long has Luo Feng been living?

Even though he was grateful towards his teacher Hu Yan Bo from the Yun Mo Planet, they never really interacted. However in Primal chaos city, he had been interacting with True Yan emperor for 20 years, that teacher student relationship had naturally become deep.

“Haha, won’t disappoint me?” True Yan rubbed the fur on his chin, laughing, “My first goal for you is to enter the primal secret region! The 2nd goal is to become an undying and getting the title emperor! Understood?”

“Yes!” Luo Feng answered firmly, resonating loudly.

“Haha…Over countless years, I’ve had close to a hundred disciples, yet only your 3rd senior has every truly immediately become undying and later becoming an emperor.” True Yan laughed, his eyes squinting, “Now it’s up to you.”

Luo Feng was very clear, his teacher had a total of 92 disciples, 23 had already fallen, and the number following him in primal chaos city was only 35.

Some had the title official.

Only 1 had become emperor, that was the 3rd senior, called Tie Jun, an absolute warrior from the Nakamon clan, he had become a disciple a very long time ago. His teacher had existed for over a trillion years, to be able to be called the 3rd senior, that was definitely one that he accepted in the previous hundred million years, currently this senior was the idol amongst the group of disciples.

Tie Jun, with his title Bloodthirsty Emperor.

In terms of reputation, he was even more prominent then his teacher True Yan, of course his teacher was a being close to a universe country leader, in terms of strength he was still stronger.

“Go on, go on.” True Yan smiled and waved his hand.

“Yes.”

Luo Feng got up to leave.

……

Walking out of his teacher’s mansion, he turned to look, feeling bittersweet within.

“The last time was leaving earth, this time it’s leaving my teacher.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“You are still young, when you’ve trained for 10 million years, you’ll get used to it.” In his mind Babatas voice resounded.

“Alright, “Luo Feng frowned, “Training for 10 million years is a thing for the future. Right now, I haven’t even lived for 100 years, there’s no need to talk about such far away matters.

Walking along the alley.

Luo Feng sighed.

“30 years!”

“In a flash, it’s over.” Luo Feng was happy within, “I’m already much stronger than when I came.”

His earth body, as he hadn’t been training it, remained at universe level 1. However the moment he leaves primal chaos city...he could use the life pool and easily reach universe level 9. As he didn’t have any bottleneck, he could easily breakthrough straight to domain lord.

The Mosha clan was the same level as the golden horned beast.

Before coming to the primal universe, Luo Feng had already prepared a large amount of required metals for the domain lord level, hence it maintained its normal evolution speed.

A total of 30 years in primal chaos city.

A little more than 10 years ago, it broke through to domain lord level 1!

And domain lord level 1 to 3 required 150 years.

4 to 6 required 600 years.

7 to 9 required 3,600 years.

Domain lord level 9 breaking through to sector lord required about 5,000 years.

Using the optimum metal groups during the domain lord level could at most raise its evolution efficiency by 52 times, it had been 20 years in primal chaos city, meaning its normal evolution had been going on for over a thousand years! Hence...the current golden horned beast and Mosha clan had both reached domain lord level 6!"

"If I go to the life pool, and evolve to universe level 9, I have to stop there. If I breakthrough to domain lord..." Luo Feng thought, "That would be troublesome, in theory, the moment I'm domain lord level 1 I can rise straight to domain lord level 9. However I'm different from others, my growth is limited by the internal world."

Since his internal world was domain lord level 6, then there was no bottleneck before then.

However if the internal world didn't grow, his body's soul had no way to grow at all.

"When the golden horned beast and Mosha clan both reach domain lord level 9. Then I'll make my human body rise to domain lord level 9." Luo Feng thought.

"In primal chaos city, my biggest improvement is in the comprehension of the origin laws." Luo Feng exclaimed.

Studying the 9 universe tablet, plus the teachings of his teacher True Yan emperor, along with the study of floating blood, his improvement was indeed huge.

10 years ago, he had completely comprehended Floating Bloods 1st blade form.

The beginning was the toughest, with experience and his teacher's pointers, what's more the 108 blade forms were the most compatible with the raindrop pictures 9 blade forms, hence with 3 years of work, Luo Feng had comprehended the 2nd blade form and after another 3, finished the 3rd.

...The further he got, the higher the efficiency.

In the 28th year of being in primal chaos city, Luo Feng had comprehended the 9th blade form! At this point, the 9 universe tablet's raindrop picture didn't hold much mystery at all to Luo

Feng anymore, he had completely comprehended it!

The 1st 9 forms were easy.

The middle 27 however were much harder, much less the final 72.

Now that it was about time to leave primal chaos city soon, Luo Feng hadn't even comprehended the 10th blade form.

"Even though I haven't finished the 10th, the 2nd Drizzle picture, I've had great improvements over these 3 years." Luo Feng thought, "There's another 10 days before I leave, before that I'll try the heavenly bridge one more time and see if I can pass the 5th level! If I pass, I'll get another chance to study the tablet! With that final study chance, I'll be able to absorb it slowly after I leave."

……

A large fish was flying in that unstable universe between the primal and actual universe.

Within this large fish.

"Sir knight, of the 1,000 geniuses from this batch, there are 816 still surviving." Dressed in jasper armor was Jade emperor who was bowing, she continued, "Of which the most exceptional is Bolan, he's already passed the 5th level currently. Next is Luo feng, he's passed the 4th. The next 5 have all passed the 3rd level! The

most shocking of the group is Luo Feng, in his 19th year, he already passed the 4th level, far exceeding the others, he is the closest to Bolan."

The other 10 Undyings all reacted but remained respectful.

9 Blade Knight however, sat in the throne and listened, nodding, saying softly, "Bolan? Luo Feng?"

Rumble...

The ship continued advancing.

9 Blade Knight sat in the ship headed to primal chaos city, he was prepared to receive Luo Feng's batch back in to the actual universe.

Chapter 35 – Excitement

Ping Hai company's 86th level meeting room.

"Big sister Xu, it should be fine right?" The short haired lady looked at Xu Xin.

"No problem." Xu Xin sat calmly.

Luo Feng had been in primal chaos city for over 30 years, however in the actual universe, it had been over 100 years, it might seem like a long time, however in the vast universe, it was simply a little flash. Especially with the eternal body, Xu Xin's appearance hasn't changed at all over the hundred years, only her gaze and aura...it had obviously matured from before, just like light sharpening and shaping a gemstone, revealing her beauty.

"I don't know if we can make it in time." Xu Xin closed her eyes, muttering within, "Luo Feng is just about to leave primal chaos city, I hope we pass the inspection in a few days."

"Pa! Pa! Pa!" Several knocks on the door.

"Come in." Xu Xin opened her eyes, her gaze deep and wise, this was formed from managing a large corporation, for long periods of time, something that formed naturally over the course itself.

The door pushed open and a very formally dressed Bo Te Lai bureau chief, accompanied by a silver haired green eyed middle

aged lady walked into the meeting room, followed by 8 other staff behind them.

"How's the inspection?" Xu Xin smiled and stood up.

"Haha, I knew Mrs Luo wouldn't let me down." Bo Te Lai laughed loudly, beside him the middle aged lady also smiled, "Mrs Luo, according to our audit department's inspection, your half year report is completely accurate, with a marginal error of only 0.01%."

Xu Xin immediately grew excited.

"Big sister Xu, we've succeeded." Beside, the short haired lady cheered excitedly.

"Congratulations, Mrs Luo!" The middle aged lady smiled and extended her arm, "Shaking hands is a formality of earth right?"

"Thank you, thank you." Xu Xin fought hard to suppress her excitement as she shook her hand, however her eyes were already filling with tears of joy, her hard work was all for this day, finally...finally, they managed to reach it just in the nick of time.

"Mrs Luo."

Bureau chief Bo Te Lai smiled, "According to the half year report, Ping Hai company's current capital value is at 100,012 mixed elements, according to our levels given to the companies under the

virtual universe company, Ping Hai company's capital has already reached the 2nd tier level, hence...I will immediately request, within a day, for the changes within Ping Hai company, Mrs Luo, you too will be rewarded with the respective power."

"Yes." The silver haired green eyed lady nodded, "In a while, the main department will send people over to arrange matters for Mrs Luo to enter the core."

"Congratulations, congrats." Bureau chief Bo Te Lai laughed loudly, "Mrs Luo you've entered the core level as a last phase member, Mr. Luo is in the core absolute beginning region. Husband and wife have both entered the core of the virtual universe company, this is definitely a fairytale."

Xu Xin could barely contain her excitement and joy.

"Thanks, my company has already prepared a banquet for everybody..." Xu Xin said.

"Mrs. Luo." The silver haired green eyed lady shook her head and smiled, "I need to leave immediately to report the results back to the management, also request for your company's rise in tier, hence I won't be staying."

"Yes, the change in tier of a company is extremely important, we do not dare to stay ." Bureau chief Bo Te Lai said too.

After a while.

The group from the virtual universe company left quickly, only Xu xin and her helper were left.

“Big sister Xu, Big sister Xu.” The short haired lady cheered excitedly, “We did it, we’ve succeeded, truly, we really did it before Mr Luo Feng returned, we’ve made the company huge, becoming a 2nd tier company. My god, this is simply unbelievable, too unbelievable!”

“Hm.” Xu Xin nodded, her face filled with excitement. “As long as we work hard, we can do anything.”

“We did it.”

“We really did it.” Xu Xin turned, looking out through the huge glass window, in it showed her reflection, compared to the time when the swallowing beast incident happened on earth, her appearance hadn’t changed at all, still as beautiful, her figure still slim, over the hundred years of change, she hardly ever got this excited anymore.

At this time however.

The lady reflected in that full sized window, was almost like a teenage girl falling in love for the first time, filled with excitement and anticipation.

“I don’t know, just what expression he will have when he meets

me in Yu Xiang Mountain.” Xu Xin said softly, her eyes filled with anticipation.

……

When Luo Feng was in primal chaos city close to 20 years, 60 years had already passed in the actual universe.

Over 60 years, Xu Xin had turned the initial 30 thousand mixed elements from their merger into a huge corporation, over 60 years, raising it to over 100,000 mixed elements! There was Luo Hua’s work in it too, however Xu Xin as the main person in charge and had played a critical role.

Over 60 years, earning over 60,000 mixed elements!

This speed of profits, even the master of the Yun Mo Planet couldn’t compare. Of course the only reason Xu Xin was able to do such a thing…was because she had the initial capital to begin with. As Luo Feng had given large amounts of wealth to his younger brother and wife, making Ping Hai company’s initial formation already having a value of 600 mixed elements.

600 mixed elements!

It was comparable to a wealthy sector lord, even a poorer undying, this level of wealth, even the black dragon mountain empire emperor couldn’t fork out such a sum immediately.

The starting capital was huge!

Naturally the scale of their operations started big, if one began a new company with only one hundred million universe dollars (That's considered extremely wealthy in the black dragon mountain empire), that little bit of capital could at most buy a few hundred life planets, however after ten million years of struggle, increasing their wealth by ten thousand times...that would only be 1 trillion universe dollars, simply 1 mixed element!

Hence the starting capital was very important.

Due to Luo Feng, Ping Hai's starting capital was close to 600 mixed elements, and later due to Xu Xin's leadership and skills, Luo Hua's investment abilities...they grew on a very large but difficult scale, through this virtuous cycle, they attracted the virtual universe company's investment, allowing their scale to take another huge jump and advance forward.

Finally!

A hundred years of time, Ping Hai company's net capital finally exceeded 100,000 mixed elements, this was a huge sum that would make many Undyings hold their breaths.

Primal chaos city.

The energies revolved, Luo Feng sat crossed legged in his own training quarters balcony, on the other balconies too were

warriors either standing or sitting, with a glance, tens of thousands of warriors were treasuring their time and looking at the skies, those visible origin laws almost like gears revolving, they glanced at them before returning to train.

And Luo Feng, even though it looked like he was studying.

In truth his consciousness had entered the virtual universe training grounds and was going through simulations.

“The 9 universe tablet secret room will open again tomorrow afternoon for another batch of warriors to enter.” Luo Feng had checked earlier, “Then I’ll go to the heavenly bridge again tomorrow, as for now...it’s my last chance to train, putting together everything I’ve learnt over these past years, raising the power of the Nan Shen Armament to its limit.”

Studying was very important.

Unleashing what one studied, was important too.

“Hm?”

On the balcony Luo Feng opened his eyes.

“Come meet me now!” A voice immediately resounded within his mind, “Come meet me now!” Come meet me now! Come meet me now!” The sound reverberated time again, causing the surviving 816 geniuses of the initial 1000 to stop their training.

“It’s the knight?” Luo Feng immediately rushed into the sky.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

From the vast wastelands, from the different corners of primal chaos city, silhouettes rushed into the sky, a total of over 900 silhouettes headed towards the same direction.

In the skies of the city, a dark blue fish that was a 1,000 m long, almost like a strange beast waving its tail broke through the condensed primal chaos space and flew over, that powerful energy that made people submit emitted from within that blue fish ship.

Ka!

The cabin door opened and 10 silhouettes flew out, leading them was a green armored purple scaled man. The large fish that was floating in mid air immediately vanished.

At this time, Luo Feng and the rest of the 816 geniuses and close to 100 Undyings had already gathered in the air above, respectfully waiting.

“Greetings knight!” A group of Undyings bowed.

“Greetings knight!” Luo Feng and the vast group of geniuses too bowed respectfully in mid air.

“Hmph!”

A snort, just that sound alone fell like a heavy hammer on the group’s hearts, the green armored purple scaled man was like a god, coldly gazing down on the floating group, and the tens of thousands of warriors in primal chaos city could all feel that pressure, not daring to look at him.

“Terrifying.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but feel cold sweat bead down his forehead.

It was almost like!

Almost like an ant being stared at by a huge and powerful dragon.

“I didn’t expect the knight’s rage to be so terrifying.” Luo Feng held his breath.” Back then we first met the 9 blade knight in the virtual universe, maybe the virtual universe network could at most hold some of his consciousness, hence his pressure wasn’t that strong. When he came the last time, he controlled his aura too, I didn’t expect that simply letting it out a little…”

Silence.

Close to 100 Undying’s, and over 800 geniuses didn’t dare make a sound.

“Primal chaos city is the safest place we’ve arranged for you all.” The green armored purple scaled man stood in mid air, almost like a god, surveying the group below him, “And 1/5th of the 1,000 died here, it’s very disappointing!”

Silence.

In the air above the city, Luo Feng and the group could only listen obediently and not make a sound.

“There’s still 10 days before you have to leave primal chaos city.” The man said coldly, “When that happens, you’ll discover that it won’t be as safe as before, if you can lose 1/5th of the group in such a safe place like primal chaos city, then when you return to the actual universe, I fear that within a hundred years, only 500 of you will be left.”

“Hmph.”

“Grasp your final 10 days, whoever needs to try the heavenly bridge go ahead, whoever needs to study the tablets go ahead. When you leave primal chaos city…it’ll be a long time before you ever return here again.” The green armored purple scaled man waved his hand and ordered, “Go.”

“Yes!”

The large group replied.

With that the group dispersed and headed in all directions in the city. The pressure exerted by the knight was simply too much.

Chapter 36 – Attempt!

The green robed purple scaled man took a stride and vanished immediately from the skies above primal chaos city, appearing in a desolate area's huge mansion that was enormous but yet plain and simple.

This mansion had a completely black door.

"Haha, it's rare a good friend pays me a visit." With a laugh, the black door automatically opened, a 3 eyed old man dressed in what seemed like a sack cloth walked out, this old man was the guardian of the primal chaos tablets, the one that had 52 clones, Kandeli.

"It's been awhile, hence I came to see you." 9 blade knight was smiling.

The 2 walked side by side into the living room of the mansion, sitting facing each other, the 3 eyed old man smiled and poured some wine, "9 blade, you wouldn't look for me here without a reason, speak, what's the matter?"

"Haha, then I'll be direct."

9 blade knight smiled, "We just discovered a new universe secret area, from our calculations, it belongs to an extremely high level."

"Ah?" The 3 eyed old man's eyes gleamed.

Universe secret areas, they were naturally formed phenomenon that occur while the vast universe was changing. Through its normal change, stars and planets of the sorts were usually formed...however under special circumstances, mystical universe secret areas as big as the black dragon mountain starfield may appear.

The actual universe, was known as the most vast and ancient universe.

The secret areas within the universe secret areas have different levels of dangers, the treasures within too differed, however normally even the lousiest of new secret areas required at least sector lord level to explore.

“How high?” The 3 eyed old man asked curiously.

“Anything below knight, would most certainly die if they entered.” 9 blade knight smiled, “Those emperor knights, their chances of survival are extremely low.”

“Ah? Interesting!” The 3 eyed old man’s heart jumped.

Within the actual universe, there were very few things left that could harm an undying. A secret area that could make anything below a knight die as they go in, then this secret area must be terrifying...however the more terrifying it was, it also meant that it was easier to get universe treasures within, treasures that would excite even the knights.

“It’s been discovered not too long ago, we wouldn’t invite anyone we didn’t trust, I came personally this time to invite you.” 9 blade knight looked at the 3 eyed old man, “Kandeli, will you go?”

Kandeli hesitated.

“Anyway your clones can protect the primal chaos tablets. What’s more there’s the city leader here, there’s no danger here at all.” 9 blade shook his head, “And the primal universe is only a small universe that’s still evolving, not even 10 millionth of our actual universe! Our actual universe is the true center, it has been tens of thousands of eras since you’ve left, its time to go explore, there might be some huge discovery!”

The 3 eyed old man’s eyes gleamed.

“When you gather, inform me.” The 3 eyed old man looked at 9 blade knight.

“Haha, with you, we’ll have a much bigger guarantee.” 9 blade knight laughed.

Kandeli was an ancient being within the universe, his power was absolute, all the absolute warriors and races call him primal chaos city’s guardian, this name, resounded even more than 9 blade knight’s reputation.

And his cloning, was the move that gained the most reputation.

His cloning was simply splitting part of himself, to Undyings, producing a clone was simple, however Kandeli wasn't the same, every clone he produced had about 60% strength of the original! Hence in times of danger, using them to explore and scout was the safest option. Even if a clone was destroyed, it didn't affect Kandeli much.

……

Kandeli, 9 blade knight, these 2 absolute beings, chatted for awhile, suddenly 9 blade knight frowned.

"What's the matter?" Kandeli frowned too.

"Small matter." 9 blade smiled indifferently, "our newest batch of genius punks, the Rong Jun who was accepted as Yuan Chen country leader's disciple just passed the 4th level of the heavenly bridge."

"4th level? Not bad, not bad at all." Kandeli complimented, "New batches from the genius competitions coming to primal chaos city, it's extremely rare for any of them even pass the 4th."

"Hm, plus Rong Jun, this batch already has 3! Bolan, Luo Feng and Rong Jun." 9 blade knight revealed a smile.

"These 3 punks are very exceptional, they may eventually become your right and left arms." Kandeli said.

9 blade laughed.

On a balcony of a training quarter.

“What!” Luo Feng who was originally sitting crossed legged with his eyes closed stood up and frowned, “Rong Jun passed the 4th level?:

Rong Jun had passed the 3rd level in the 13th year of coming to primal chaos city.

However.

Every 3 levels was a threshold, from the 3rd to 4th level was extremely difficult, whether it was Bolan or himself, they all took awhile before passing the 4th level.

“He’s passed the 4th, then right now!” Luo Feng’s eyes were filled with fighting spirit, “I’ll go try the 5th level now!”

Mental state and emotions too could affect one’s battle abilities.

Luo Feng was currently filled with fighting spirit, following which he immediately headed towards the heavenly bridge!

……

“Rong Jun passed the 4th level? Another 4th level?” The other geniuses almost simultaneously received the news.

……

Virtual universe heavenly bridge.

In the center of the beautiful island, silhouettes appeared.

“So many people.” The moment Luo Feng appeared, he saw in the surroundings there were already over 20 youths, and more were still appearing, obviously the over 800 geniuses all wanted to give it a shot before leaving primal chaos city, Rong Juns breakthrough had spurred everybody to come give it a shot.

“Luo Feng, there’s someone on the 9 universe bridge currently, you’ll be next.” The black robed watchman Bevin smiled.

“Wuka, the Huge Axe bridge has someone, you’ll be next.”

Watchman Bevin was arranging the order for everybody, some of them however could attempt straight away.

“Luo Feng, you are here to try?” Wuka stood beside Luo Feng muttering, “You are already leading by so much.

“Rong Jun has caught up too, I cannot relax.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Hm?” Luo Feng and Wuka spotted a silhouette that just appeared beside, still in the same white robe, carrying that blood blade.

Death god Bolan!

“He’s here too?” Luo Feng frowned.

That white robed youth spotted Luo Feng and nodded at him, saying softly, “Luo Feng…”

“Bolan!” Luo Feng’s eyes were filled with fighting spirit.

Around them over a hundred geniuses had already gathered, these geniuses all looked at Luo Feng and Bolan and discussed softly.

“The 2 have met again.”

“The last time Luo Feng passed the 4th level and Bolan passed the 5th. Will the 2 of them pass again today?”

“The heavenly bridge isn’t so easy.”

“However amongst our batch, the only one able to match up to Bolan is Luo Feng.”

……

Luo Feng and Bolan only glanced at each other without speaking, however within they were feeling competitive.

“Luo Feng, you can enter the 9 universe bridge.” Watchman Bevin said, “Bolan, the universe bridge has someone, you’ll be the one after the next person.”

Luo Feng glanced at Bolan and Bolan glanced back.

Sou!

Luo Feng became a beam of light and flew straight into the distant 9 universe bridge.

9 universe heavenly bridge, the first 3 levels were shrouded in mist.

The 4th and 5th levels were shrouded in squall, reaching the peak, the 5th level’s distance from the ocean was extremely high, one could only see the mad winds from the 4th level amidst the darkness, not even the ocean.

“5th level.”

Luo Feng stood on the bridge looking at the tornado ahead.

That continuous tornado let out a sound: “Choose fighter, controller, hypnotist, choose one, defeat your opponent and you can proceed to the 6th level.”

“Controller!” Luo Feng didn’t even hesitate.

“Chi Chi…”

From the tornado a silver armored silhouette swiftly flew out, wearing a silver mask, the skinny man stood on a dark cloud shuttle carrying a dark golden long rod. His weapons etc were still similar to Luo Feng’s.

“Coming to try the 5th level at universe level, you must be very confident.” The silver armored man sneered, “Take out all your strength, otherwise once I attack you won’t even be able to defend.”

“Arrogant punk.”

Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle coldly gazing at the silver armored man before the tornado.

Hu huh… the dark golden long rod behind him swiftly shot out gold beams of light that covered the sky, large amounts of little golden blades floated before Luo Feng, countless threads weaving through them, every little blade kept a small distance between each other, on each the complex engravings shot out more golden thread, a total of 1,600 little golden blades shooting out gold origin

law infused golden threads that weaved and connected, swiftly forming together a blurry huge Totem pillar!

Nan Shen Armament's 4th level... Optimum power!

The totem pillar floated before Luo feng.

"Only the 4th level?" The silver clothed man smiled coldly, "To be able to use the 4th level of the Nan Shen armament at universe level is very impressive, however, to pass the 5th level, that's just a dream!"

Rumble!

While speaking, the golden long rod on his back was like a secret weapon shooting in all directions large amounts of golden light, in an instant almost like a glaring sun itself, countless golden light swiftly condensed, every 81 of them forming 1 golden blade, a total of 36 true golden blades that were 1 chi long, all floating before him.

Chi chi...36 golden blades fused together, large amounts of golden threads weaving and linking them.

A 3m long dark golden blade, almost like a true golden blade, one couldn't even see any slits between, without careful examination, one couldn't even see the golden threads in between. This huge blade floated before the silver armored man.

Nan Shen Armament's 5th level...Space slicer!

"5th level?"Luo Feng thought, "So it's that way, this 5th level opponent, uses the 5th level of the Nan Shen Armament, right now my grasp of the Drizzle picture and comprehension of the gold origin laws still cannot produce the 5th level of the Nan Shen Armament. However..."

"The 1st picture, the rain drop picture, I've completely seen through the 9 wonders, fusing the 9 into 1 body. My totem pillar... is much stronger than any other totem pillar!"

Luo Feng very clearly remembered.

Back when he first attempted the 1st level, his Heaven piercing blade was defeated by the opponents 3 blades into 1. This meant 1 thing...it didn't mean that the higher the level, the higher the strength and power!

"Go and die!"

The silver armored man coldly gazed at Luo Feng.

Xiu!

The 3m long dark golden long blade immediately tore through the sky and became a gold blur.

“Rumble…” The totem pillar began to roll.

Chapter 37 – Comprehension

“I’ll make you understand that the 5th level of the Nan Shen Armament isn’t necessarily stronger than the 4th!” Luo Feng thought within, standing on the dark cloud shuttle, the gold blur was already piercing towards him from the distance, Luo Feng however had long shot out what seemed like a golden energy ball that wrapped around the totem pillar.

Rumble…the totem pillar rolled and while it seemed slow, however in an instant it blocked the gold blur.

“He actually blocked it? Slice through it!” The silver armored man in the distance gazed coldly.

“Chi chi chi…”

The dark golden long blade was like lightning immediately piercing the totem pillar, with a loud clash, the surface of totem pillar shook violently, the spot where it sliced had broken golden threads, little golden blades began to float up.

“Rejoin.” With a thought, the floating little golden blades immediately re entered the totem pillar, the law infused golden threads weaved through them and the totem pillar was once again formed.

“What a powerful space slicer, indeed the 5th level.” Luo feng was shocked within, he didn’t just specialize in studying the space laws, his golden horned beast had never relaxed once on studying

the gold origin laws, gold itself was an immovable and solid law, making the totem pillar extremely hard to destroy.

He didn't expect the 1st clash alone to actually cause the totem pillar to partially crumble.

"Haha..." The distant silver armored man's eyes were filled with disdain, laughing loudly, "Punk, trying to attempt the 5th level at universe level, stop dreaming! Go back and train for another 1,000 years."

Xiu!

The dark golden long blade once again pierced through the sky.

Luo Feng's expression grew cold, "9 thread loop!"

Rumble...the totem pillar rolled in mid air, almost like a giant grabbing the totem pillar and swinging it forward, the totem pillar once again clashed against the golden blade that tried to dodge it, with a loud clash, the golden blur was knocked back and the totem pillar only slightly shaken.

"Hm?" The silver armored man's expression changed, "He blocked it again?"

Xiu!

The dark golden long blade once again became a blur and the space around it began to shake, with a blur, it pierced towards Luo Feng again.

“Rumble!” The totem pillar in mid air left an image in mid air and once again ‘slowly’ rolled to right before the extremely quick long blade and clashing again.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The dark golden long blade became a golden blur and just like a fish in space, time and again pierced towards Luo Feng, the totem pillar however strangely enough seemed slow but managed to block the blade over and over again. Every clash didn’t even make the totem pillar crumble.

“How can it be so quick?” The silver armored man frowned.

“My 4th level is different from that opponent in the heavenly bridge level 4’s Nan Shen Armament 4th level.” Luo Feng revealed a smile, thinking within.

Right!

This was his trump card for the 5th level…9 thread loop!

Rain drop picture, after seeing through it completely and understanding the 9 blade forms, every blade form represented a

wonder of the essence itself...able to make a weapon follow the optimum ripple thread movement to attack, however as the space ripples were complex, with different and various kinds of ripples, it was like the undercurrent of the ocean, Luo Feng was still unable to use all of it.

Only meeting a suitable undercurrent, was he able to make his speed reach unbelievable speeds.

And the 9 wonders that Luo Feng had comprehended, were considered amongst the space laws the most superficial and basic 9.

Hence in any space, there would be at least 1 of them, allowing Luo Feng to rely on these 9...making his totem pillar reach shocking speeds.

Also!

With these properties, Luo Feng using the 9 thread flow from the 10,000 thread, fusing into 1...creating, from his point of view, a perfect way to control, the 9 thread loop!

“With myself as the center, within a 500m diameter area, this is my 9 thread loop’s absolute control area!” Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and fiercely rushed towards the distant silver armored man, “Yes, absolute control!”

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Rumble!

The totem pillar immediately became 9 totem pillars, within that 500m ball like area, time and again blocking the golden long blade.

“Go and die!” Luo Feng controlled the totem pillar on one end while swiftly heading towards the 2, closing their distance, dragging him into his own absolute area, as long as he entered within he could easily use the totem pillar to kill his opponent!

“Hm?” The silver armored man’s expression changed, immediately stepping on the dark cloud shuttle, hu, 1,000 images appeared in mid air, fleeing far away.

“I admit you are very strong, but to beat me? You must be dreaming!” The silver armored man communicated via genetic energy, the distant fleeing silver armored man was raging, roaring at the not too distant totem pillar of Luo Feng’s, “Break!!!”

Immediately the extremely fast and unpredictable golden blade that was trying time and again to dodge the totem pillar didn’t dodge anymore, it instead chose to destroy the totem pillar itself!

“Rumble!” The golden blade became a beam of golden light and madly clashed against the totem pillar, smashing the surface violently, immediately a large amount of the golden threads were broken from the surface, the little golden blades floated, this made the originally very confident Luo Feng change in his expression, “Not good!”

The golden long blade didn't stop at all, once again clashing hard into the totem pillar, causing Luo Feng who was controlling through spirit energy to go pale, this 2nd fierce attack had made his expression go ugly.

This was troublesome.

The Nan Shen Armament's 5th level, space slicer, its power was much stronger than what he expected!

Originally, he thought he could rely on the 9 thread loop and drag his opponent into his 500m absolute area, once that happens he could swiftly control the totem pillar to destroy his opponent! As long as the opponent was within his area, the totem pillar's speed exceeded that of the golden long blade.

However!

The Nan Shen Armament's 5th level space slicer, the long blade that was formed had 2 properties, one was its speed and the 2nd was its strength.

Initially the silver armored man wanted to use the long blade to dodge past the totem pillar and kill Luo Feng, hence in terms of control, he was focusing more on the speed, however since Luo Feng unleashed the 9 thread loop and made the speed of his totem pillar within the 500m area extremely fast, blocking the long blade easily time and again, his speed fell behind.

The 1st property speed was ineffective, however it still had its 2nd!

The 5th level, why was it called space slicer!

Luo Feng finally understood!

“Chi!”

Just like a beam of light shooting over, Luo Feng didn’t dare not block it, if he hadn’t, that long blade would have easily sliced right through his head!

“Rumble! That golden blade pierced straight into the totem pillar, Luo Feng felt his consciousness shake hard, the entire totem pillar’s surface which was struck almost crumbled totally, Luo Feng could only madly use his spirit energy to reform it.

“What strong consciousness, I’ll see how many times you can block!” The silver armored man roared.

If his consciousness wasn’t strong, with one clash the totem pillar would have crumbled.

The golden horned beast was currently domain lord level 6, hence in truth Luo feng’s consciousness was…the domain lord level 6 golden horned beast’s, naturally it was strong. Otherwise, he couldn’t even receive 3 attacks!

“Not good, just 3 fierce attacks have used up close to 30% of my spirit energy, and my mental spirit is fatigued.” Luo Feng was pale, staring hard at the opponent before him.

“Rumble!”

4th time!

“Rumble!”

5th time!

Luo Feng’s lips were pale, staring hard at his opponent, reforming the totem pillar time and again as it almost fully crumbles.

“I don’t believe you can keep blocking, even if your consciousness can withstand it, I don’t believe your spirit energy won’t wear out!” The silver armored man roared, “Go again!”

“Rumble!” 6th time!

The totem pillar was once again knocked until two thirds of it almost fully crumbled, Luo Feng’s entire consciousness entered a state of half blur, as he had used his full strength to control the pillar, requiring a large amount of spirit energy to maintain its form, and spirit energy is linked to ones consciousness, every clash

was a hit on his consciousness itself.

"Reform!" Luo Feng grit his teeth, his spirit couldn't accept defeat, reforming the totem pillar yet again.

"Gather!"

Large amounts of spirit energy almost like countless little hands grabbed the scattered over 1,000 little golden blades, according to space and golden laws, once again mystically gathering and forming the totem pillar, each of the blades formed together through the law infused golden threads...

"Not right!"

While reforming the totem pillar, in a blurred state of mind, Luo Feng's mind recalled the 9 universe tablet's raindrop picture, this picture had a total of 9 drops, according to theory, Luo Feng had long completely comprehended this picture, understanding its essence.

However at this time...

"It's this way, it's this way." Luo Feng's eyes gleam brighter and brighter.

"Totem pillar!"

Luo Feng's energy soared, quickly completing the reforming of the totem pillar.

"Go and die!" Luo Feng pointed at the silver armored man, the totem pillar began to roll, the surrounding space was almost like flatbread being rolled, "Peng!" The distant dark golden long blade once again pierced over, however as it drew close it's speed seemed to strangely decrease, when it finally clashed, it had already lost a great deal of its original power.

"How can this be?" The distant silver armored man was filled with shock.

Rumble!

The almost undamaged totem pillar seemed slow in its roll, immediately flashing and appearing before his face, Pu Chi!: Almost like crushing an ant, immediately rolling over him leaving nothing but minced meat.

On the dark cloud shuttle in mid air, the pale Luo Feng's eyes were filled with light, muttering, "Yes, before when I comprehended the raindrop picture's 9 drops, I however...didn't comprehended the entire picture." Luo Feng looked at the space before him, almost as though he was looking at 9 types of space ripples flowing together and separating, resonating with the 9 drop picture, it was pleasing.

5th level!

Successful!

Chapter 38 – Basics

“It’s no wonder that when I went to study the 9 universe tablet and saw the raindrop picture, I always felt it was perfect, but I didn’t realize then…I finally get it now!” Luo Feng became a beam of light and headed towards the 6th level of the bridge. However, he could feel the incredible rush of adrenaline within him.

“So, the 9 drops of the raindrop picture, through their interaction and relationship, they can perfectly form 1 true body.” Luo Feng was incredibly happy. Floating blood was a manual that dissected the 108 wonders. However in truth, the 9 universe tablet was still something left behind by some absolute ancient being from before.

That being, would he carve out a raindrop picture that was that simple?

“Just like an octopus’s tentacles…affecting space.” Luo Feng muttered.

It was too wonderful.

When he unleashed the totem pillar earlier, it originally had kept all of the blade domain within, as it rolled forward to smash the enemy. Hence the name Optimum power. And with Luo Feng’s comprehension of the raindrop picture as not being solitary, but having interweaving relationships and interaction to form 1 perfect body, the totem pillar …seemed to extend 9 formless arms in the surrounding space, affecting the surrounding space itself.

Hence!

The opponent's dark golden long blade was pressured by the surrounding space so much, that it slowed down, and the totem pillar brutally smashed the enemy!

"If one said that while comprehending the 9 wonders in the past, I was simply using the universe space ripples to make my attacks faster. Then now!" Luo Feng thought, "With the 9 as one, I've reached a level through which I can actually affect the space itself."

A fish swimming within the ocean.

And Luo Feng was this fish, in the space which was the ocean, could affect the ocean itself to pressure the enemy.

From flowing in space to affecting it, it was an impressive step.

Of course...

Compared to those who could easily slice through space or warp it, or even other methods which could completely morph the space coordinates etc, Luo Feng was still far from those! However his comprehension now exceeded even some sector lords.

Luo Feng attempted the 6th level just for the sake of trying. The

5th itself was extremely difficult. Hence, he deduced that he was still far from the 6th level. However, attempting it would give him an estimate.

The 6th level opponent still used the Nan Shen Armament's 5th level, Space slicer.

"Pu Chi!"

One slash brushed past Luo Feng's totem pillar, straight through Luo Feng's head.

Luo Feng's attempt at the 6th level lead to a failure! An extremely straightforward failure!

"According to the floating blood manual, I have to completely comprehend the 2nd picture to a passing level before I can pass the 6th level. I've already reached the peak of comprehension for the raindrop picture. As for the 2nd drizzling picture, I've only just begun. To pass the 5th level is already my limit." Through his failure, Luo Feng understood.

A solid foundation was extremely important.

However the level of comprehension itself was also very important. The 2nd picture was much more profound than the 1st, its power was also much stronger!

Heavenly bridge, in the center of the bridge, over 300 geniuses

were waiting for their turn to attempt it.

"Bolan, you can enter!" Watchman Bevin stood in the distance and said.

The white clothed youth immediately rushed towards the bridge.

"Informing everyone, just now, Luo Feng had passed the 5th level!" Watchman Bevin shouted loudly. The originally bustling over 300 geniuses went silent, especially the members of the heaven and ground, absolute beginning and primal region. They were all filled with shock.

"5th level?" The white clothed Bolan who was rushing towards the bridge stopped suddenly.

"5th level?" Bolan's eyes gleamed, "Then, I definitely have to pass this 6th level, definitely!"

Sou!

Bolan accelerated and flew straight for the Universe bridge.

"Luo Feng passed the 5th level?"

"How is it so easy for him to pass it? According to the previous batches of genius competitions, even the most exceptional ones only passed the 4th level in the 30 years."

“The higher it goes the harder it gets. Passing the 5th level is extremely difficult, how did he even pass it? He’s even caught up to Bolan already.”

“Bolan too is only on the 5th level!”

“Mad, mad, that Luo Feng is too mad.”

……

This group of geniuses, along with some that returned their consciousness to primal chaos city were all stunned.

“I just passed the 4th level. Luo Feng, you passed the 5th already?” Rong Jun gripped his Earth splitting blade while his eyes were raging.

“It’s good that you know you are falling behind. As for this Huge Axe tablet’s 2nd form, I’ll demonstrate it to you one more time.” Beside him a silhouette said slowly, causing the space around to reverberate.

“Yes teacher.” Rong Jun said respectfully.

Primal chaos city, within True Yan’s mansion.

True Yan emperor, Tong Nan Emperor and Jade emperor all sat

about casually and chatted, very happy.

"Hm?" True Yan revealed an expression of glee.

"Congrats, congrats." Jade smiled and looked at True Yan, "True Yan, you've accepted an exceptional student."

"Haha..." True Yan laughed loudly.

"What?" Tong Nan was suspicious suddenly.

"A while ago, True Yan's newest student just passed the heavenly bridge's 5th level." Jade smiled. Jade was the informant and collector of data for this batch of geniuses. Hence, she had naturally ordered Watchman Bevin early on to inform her whenever anyone from that batch passed a level. As for True Yan, he had done the same earlier.

"5th level?" Tong Nan put down the wine glass, smiling and clapping, "Rare, truly rare indeed. The last batch of virtual universe 1,000 geniuses most exceptional one had only passed the 4th level in his 30 years."

"Hm."

Jade smiled and nodded, "Of the most recent 1,000 batches of virtual universe geniuses, including 1,000 batches from before, 4,168 passed the 3rd level in the first 30 years!"

“926 passed the 4th!”

“32 passed the 5th!”

“No one has passed the 6th!”

The Virtual Universe Company organized a competition every 10,000 years. From every batch, those that passed the 3rd level could be counted with one hand. On average only one passed the 4th! If the standard for that year was lower, no one would even pass the 4th. If it was higher, maybe 2 or 3 would pass the 4th.

As for Luo Feng’s batch!

Bolan, Luo Feng and Rong Jun, the 3 of them had passed the 4th!

“On average, it takes about 30 competitions for one genius to pass the 5th.” Jade smiled at True Yan. “And these absolute geniuses don’t necessarily choose the 9 universe tablet, this Luo Feng is truly a rare seedling for your 9 universe sect in 10 million years.”

“Haha…” True Yan laughed loudly.

“Hm, I will pass this information to the knight.” Jade immediately informed him. She didn’t go personally this time, because 9 blade and guardian Kandeli were discussing important matters.

……

Primal chaos tablet’s guardian Kandelis mansion.

The two absolute beings were chatting.

“Hm?”

“Good news?”

“Hm, Luo Feng passed the 5th level.”

“Luo Feng? I thought that within your Virtual Universe Company’s group of punks, the most exceptional was Bolan. His comprehension of the space laws is extremely high! Many sector lords can’t even compare to him. In these 30 years, he has been spending his time studying the time laws. Who would have thought…this Luo Feng is just as exceptional!”

“We just received the news, Bolan passed the 6th level!”

“No surprise there. This Bolan is a rare genius in 10 million years. Over these past 10 million years, there hasn’t been anyone from your Virtual Universe Company’s new batches to pass the 6th level, its time one appeared. The one that surprises me is Luo Feng, in terms of improvement speed, these 30 years, his improvement is even bigger than Bolan’s!”

“Kandeli, you like Luo Feng?”

“Right!”

“Kandeli, Luo Feng is not bad, but I still prefer Bolan. The Universe tablet, reaching the 6th level is not easy, it could be said to be the hardest tablet of all.”

“9 blade, diversity cannot compare to specializing. Being too ambitious is not good, to simultaneously control both time and space, how difficult is that? Even you and I can’t do that, much less that Bolan. However this Luo Feng is more grounded. I just got the footage from Watchman Bevin…wow! Luo Feng only used the Nan Shen Armament’s 4th level to pass the 5th level. Hehe, his foundation is very solid. I didn’t care too much about him before, but I’m liking this punk more and more.”

“Nan Shen Armament 4th level? Let me see the footage…solid, what a solid foundation! Kandeli, you speak right, this Luo Feng… will be a shocking existence in the future.”

“Haha…”

Luo Feng couldn’t hear the two absolute beings speaking. However, he received mail from watchman Bevin…Bolan passed the 6th level!

“He actually passed the 6th level?”

On his balcony, Luo Feng felt a surge of emotions.

“What’s there to be shocked about? Luo Feng, right now you can at most unleash a few hundred images when you move. During the genius competition before, Bolan could already produce over a 1,000.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind. “If Bolan had chose to focus only on space, he would have passed the 6th level much earlier. He however chose the Universe tablet, because he was slowed down by the time laws, hence he only passed the 6th today.”

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded.

Back during the genius competition, he could only unleash 9 images. Bolan however could easily produce over a 1,000.

The starting line for him was far behind Bolan’s.

“At least now I’ve closed the distance between us.” Luo Feng thought.

……

The 2nd day afternoon.

Luo Feng came to the primal chaos city leader’s mansion, within that secret training room passage.

“Lord Kandeli.” Luo Feng bowed respectfully at the 3 eyed old man guardian.

“Hm.” The 3 eyed old man smiled and nodded, “Wait a moment, the batch inside will be coming out soon.”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded, but felt curious within. He felt as though this guardian of the tablets was different. He seemed closer than before.

After a while.

The 6 studying within came out.

“Go on in.” The 3 eyed old man smiled. “Work hard. After this study, it’ll be quite a while before you return to primal chaos city. You should be studying the 2nd and 3rd picture of the 9 universe tablet now. The remaining 6, you have no need to study them now.”

“Yes!” Luo Feng nodded.

Following which he rushed into the room and ordered Babata, “Babata, close all contact from the virtual universe, reject any requests, mail etc, I cannot be interrupted during these 7 days of study.”

“Understood. For this sort of thing, I don’t even need you to order me to do it.”

……

Entering the room, standing before that huge tablet shrouded in primal chaos energies, Luo Feng began his last study of the tablet before he had to leave.

Chapter 39 – Meeting on Yu Xiang Mountain

Ganwu continent, Ping Hai company's 89th level, Xu Xin's office.

"Your Majesty Xu Xin, congratulations. From now on, you'll officially be a core member of the Virtual Universe Company." A tall and skinny silver eyed old man in a simple white robe smiled. "You have living quarters in the Last Phase region of Yu Xian mountain in the virtual universe, and also one on the Last Phase regions secret region. You can choose to actually head over there."

"Last Phase secret area? Where is that?" Xu Xin asked curiously.

"Very far."

The white robed old man smiled. "The company can arrange for a universe ship to pick you up. You'll have to fly for a few years in the dark universe."

"Is it close to the absolute beginning region?" Xu Xin asked.

"No." The white robed old man shook his head. "The 4 secret regions were born in the vast universe a very very long time ago. They are very far from each other. The last phase region and the absolute beginning region are in different star sectors."

"Star sector?" Xu Xin was disappointed.

Star sector, was considered the largest denominator within the universe.

1 star sector was normally the size of an entire universe country! That was an extremely huge territory.

If the absolute beginning was close to the last phase region, then Xu Xin was actually considering going there. This way, she could meet with her husband in reality.

“Your majesty Xu Xin, you are a member of the business side. You have to no need to head to the distant Last phase region.” The white robed old man smiled. “The universe secret region environment is helpful only for warriors. Almost all of the business members stay within their homes. Of course, should you wish to go, we can send a request.”

“No need.” Xu Xin shook her head.

“Everything has already been relayed. Your majesty Xu Xin, I’ll leave first.” The tall and skinny old man bowed and left.

Only Xu Xin was left in the office.

Looking at the documents on the tablet, Xu Xin’s eyes were filled with excitement.

“Pa! Pa! Pa!” three knocks were heard on the door.

“Enter.” Xu Xin shouted.

“Big sister Xu, Big sister Xu.” The short haired lady ran in shouting. “Did the entering of the core member request go through?”

“Hm.” Xu Xin was filled with glee, nodding.

“That’s great.” The short haired lady cheered excitedly. “Big sister Xu, you’ve finally succeeded.”

“Hm, Ah Lan, thanks for your many years of support.” Xu Xin was filled with gratitude as she looked at this good sister of hers. The lady who was beside her was a good partner of hers when she started her own business on earth. These past many years, the two of them were considered a gold combination, and this sister of hers Dong Lan had enjoyed many benefits due to Xu Xin too. For example, over these 100 years, Dong Lan’s appearance had hardly changed too.

“Why say such things, quickly go inform that guy.” The short haired lady teased and smiled.

“Hm.”

Xu Xin took a deep breath.

How long has it been...

How long has she fought for this day...

“Request call.” Xu Xin sent a request to Luo Feng. It was however cut off the moment it was dialed.

“Hm?”

“The request was denied?” Xu Xin was shocked. “This doesn’t seem right. There should be about 7 days before he leaves Primal chaos city. There shouldn’t be any important things going on these last days.”

“What’s wrong Big sister Xu?” The short haired lady asked curiously.

“I can’t seem to connect.” Xu Xin shook her head.

Primal chaos city.

Luo Feng walked out from the leader’s residence. Many images of the 9 universe tablet floated in his mind, different levels of comprehension were occurring throughout.

“I have to treasure my time. There are only 2 more days before I leave primal chaos city.” Luo Feng became a beam of light and headed towards his training quarters, “I have a large amount of

things to digest from my study of the tablet. Things to make my own. Looking at the origin laws in the sky will help my study."

Sou!

Luo Feng landed on his own balcony. He sat crossed legged and closed his eyes to recap on the past 7 days of studying the 9 universe tablet, occasionally looking at the sky, observing the splits in space flowing and weaving with origin laws, interweaving, happening throughout.

1 day, 2 days...

"Time to leave!" A voice suddenly resounded within Luo Feng's mind.

"Hm?" Luo Feng awoke shocked. In the distance he spotted a large outline of a dark blue fish shaped ship floating in the air above primal chaos city, as many silhouettes were rushing towards the sky.

"Time to go?" Luo Feng immediately flew up too.

About 800 people flew towards the ship from within the city.

While heading towards the universe ship, Luo Feng looked down at the ancient city shrouded in chaos energy, "Teacher!"

“When you go out, it’ll be hundreds to thousands more times more dangerous than primal chaos city. Be careful, don’t throw the face of True Yan.” A voice pierced through 10,000 Li right into Luo Feng’s ears.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

After interacting for 20 years with his teacher, their relationship was definitely deep.

……

Silhouettes followed the stomach cabin door of the fish and flew into the ship.

Within the resting room of the ship.

816 youths entered in and were chatting comfortably with each other.

“Luo Feng, you are vicious. And you too Rong Jun.” The Manka prince Wuka was unsatisfied. “The two of you, one passed the 5th level and the other the 4th. You’ve left me far behind, it’s too, too…heartbreaking!”

“Since you know the difference, then work harder.” Luo Feng patted his shoulder.

Wuka was shocked.

“Hm, you do need to work harder.” Rong Jun walked over too and patted his shoulder.

“Damn you two punks! Bastards, I’m already this heartbroken and you don’t even console me.” Wuka snorted back at them. Luo Feng and Rong Jun both laughed. While Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka were teasing and laughing, the others returned to their old cliques, forming groups of 3 to 5 and chatting.

However there were still some loners who didn’t interact with others.

Like that white robed youth with the blood blade on his back, who was always alone in the corner and not interacting with anybody.

“Rumble…”

With that, a green armored silhouette entered the large hall. That heart palpitating aura made everyone go silent, not daring to make a sound.

“Primal chaos city’s basic training for 30 years has ended.” 9 blade knight’s gaze swept past the 816 youths before him. All of them immediately looked down, not daring to make eye contact. “Your group’s death rate was pretty bad. However, in terms of results it’s considered very exceptional. Especially Bolan, Luo Feng

and Rong Jun. These three, not bad at all.”

Immediately there was some movement amongst the group of youths as many of them turned to look at the mentioned three.

Bolan had passed the 6th level! His initial lead was too much, everybody had gone numb to it.

Luo Feng passed the 5th level!

Rong Jun passed the 4th!

Amongst these three, everybody was already numb to Bolan.

Towards Rong Jun, they felt envy, envying that he had a universe country leader as a teacher.

Towards Luo Feng however, they felt shock and respect. Even without a universe country leader as a teacher, he actually passed the 5th level and improved at such a shocking rate!

“Hm?” Luo Feng turned to look, the white robed youth Bolan was looking over.

The two of them made eye contact.

Bolan nodded.

Luo Feng nodded too.

These two had deemed each other as rivals. Luo Feng's aim was to catch up and exceed him. While Bolan's was to improve at a shocking rate and leave him far behind.

At this time...

"Luo Feng?" In the corner of the group, Long Yun looked at the distant Luo Feng. "The distance between us is getting bigger, I'm a primal region member!!!"

.....

Experiencing that uncomfortable shift through time again, the universe ship finally arrives in the actual universe.

"We've already left the primal universe." The green robed purple scaled man looked at the group of youths before him. "This represents that your training in the safest primal chaos city has ended! From now on you will be divided into 4 groups to be sent back to the primal region, the absolute beginning region, the heaven and ground region and the last phase region."

"It won't be as safe and secure as primal chaos city in the future. I wish you all the best of luck. Hopefully, when the next time I see you all, there's still at least 500 alive." The green robed purple scaled man finished.

Rumble...

The universe ship slowed down and after a while, the cabin door opened.

Luo Feng and the group flew out of the ship, with glances spotting the distant mountain ranges, with many ships flying about, silhouettes flashing past the skies and many stars and heavenly bodies above.

“We’ve arrived at the virtual universe headquarters.” Luo Feng flew out and descended. “Right, Babata, open connections to the network.”

“Understood.”

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang Mountain Absolute beginning villa 1106.

Within the study.

“There’s actually 111 requests from Xu Xin?” Luo Feng appeared within the study and opened his laptop, “This urgent, did something important happen?”

Di!

From the laptop, he quickly connected through the call requests and on the screen Xu Xin's image appeared.

"You called so many times, what's so important?" Luo Feng asked nervously.

"It's a very important matter." On the screen, Xu Xin replied.

"What's the matter?" Luo Feng asked again.

"Head to Yu Xiang mountain's common region's Wan Yu tower to meet someone." Xu Xin said.

"Yu Xiang mountain's common region?" Luo Feng was suspicious, anybody he meets in Yu Xiang Mountain would all have to be at least core members, and the number of core members he knew weren't too many. Which core member would request an audience with him through his wife? There's no such person!

"Who is it?" Luo Feng was filled with questions.

"Go and you'll know." Xu Xin said, "Hurry, it's very important."

"Ah?" Luo Feng grew even more suspicious.

……

Luo Feng walked through the entrance of the absolute beginning region and became a beam of light heading towards the common region.

“She actually knows the common region has a Wan Yu tower? And to request to meet me in the common region, just who is this person?” Luo Feng thought. “Even in the entire Black Dragon Mountain starfield, there aren’t too many core members.”

The more Luo Feng thought, the more suspicious he got…

Common region, it was very luxurious.

As the only common gathering point between all of the 4 region’s core members, one must know that anyone who could become a core member must be extremely wealthy. Hence, the businesses here were bustling and advanced.

“Wan Yu Tower.”

“Wan Yu Tower.” Luo Feng glanced at the distant 9 level black tower’s name. This tower was surrounded by many rare types of plants and flowers, causing the air about to emanate fragrance. Luo Feng landed amongst the crowd and walked towards Wan Yu Tower.

“Just who is it?”

Luo Feng sniffed the flowers and walked towards the entrance,

suddenly stopping.

In the distance...

At the entrance of Wan Yu tower, beside the beautiful flowers stood a pretty silhouette, she was looking at him.

The two of them faced each other at the entrance of Wan Yu tower.